

# THE WINGMAKER ANTHOLOGY

ALL OF THE PUBLICLY  
AVAILABLE ARTICLES AND  
POEMS IN ONE BOOK

May 2020

*May the light of love, peace and compassion shine upon  
humanity and make them become one with themselves and  
the universe.*

*May 2020*

The following articles have been taken from the website:

<https://www.wingmakers.us>

You can find more information about the WingMakers and the various discoveries made regarding them there.

---

# TABLE OF CONTENTS

TABLE OF CONTENTS .....	4
LIFE PRINCIPLES OF THE SOVEREIGN INTEGRAL .....	10
THE SHIFTING MODELS OF EXISTENCE .....	26
GLOSSARY .....	49
THE WINGMAKER'S POETRY .....	71
<b>CHAMBER 1</b> .....	71
<b>CHAMBER 2</b> .....	75
<b>CHAMBER 3</b> .....	80
<b>CHAMBER 4</b> .....	83
<b>CHAMBER 5</b> .....	87
<b>CHAMBER 6</b> .....	91
<b>CHAMBER 7</b> .....	97
<b>CHAMBER 8</b> .....	101
<b>CHAMBER 9</b> .....	106
<b>CHAMBER 10</b> .....	110
<b>CHAMBER 11</b> .....	114
<b>CHAMBER 12</b> .....	118
<b>CHAMBER 13</b> .....	122
<b>CHAMBER 14</b> .....	125
<b>CHAMBER 15</b> .....	129
<b>CHAMBER 16</b> .....	132
<b>CHAMBER 17</b> .....	137

<b>CHAMBER 18.....</b>	<b>142</b>
<b>CHAMBER 19.....</b>	<b>146</b>
<b>CHAMBER 20.....</b>	<b>150</b>
<b>CHAMBER 21.....</b>	<b>154</b>
<b>CHAMBER 22.....</b>	<b>161</b>
<b>CHAMBER 23.....</b>	<b>167</b>
<b>INTERVIEWS WITH DR. NERUDA ABOUT THE WINGMAKERS.....</b>	<b>171</b>
<b>SARAH’S NOTES ON DR. NERUDA .....</b>	<b>171</b>
<b>FIRST INTERVIEW WITH DR. JAMISSON NERUDA .....</b>	<b>184</b>
<b>SECOND INTERVIEW WITH DR. JAMISSON NERUDA .....</b>	<b>257</b>
<b>THIRD INTERVIEW WITH DR. JAMISSON NERUDA .....</b>	<b>348</b>
<b>FOURTH INTERVIEW WITH DR. JAMISSON NERUDA .....</b>	<b>424</b>
<b>FIFTH INTERVIEW WITH DR. JAMISSON NERUDA .....</b>	<b>534</b>
<b>INTERVIEWS WITH DR. ANDERSON ABOUT THE WINGMAKERS.....</b>	<b>679</b>
<b>FIRST INTERVIEW WITH DR. ANDERSON..</b>	<b>680</b>
<b>SECOND INTERVIEW WITH DR. ANDERSON .....</b>	<b>744</b>
<b>INTERVIEW WITH JAMES MAHU .....</b>	<b>838</b>
<b>INTRODUCTION.....</b>	<b>838</b>
<b>PART I.....</b>	<b>838</b>
<b>PART II.....</b>	<b>864</b>

<b>PART III .....</b>	<b>892</b>
INTERVIEW WITH JAMES MAHU (NOVEMBER 2008) .....	924
<b>THE WRITTEN INTERVIEW WITH JAMES .</b>	<b>927</b>
INTERVIEW WITH JAMES MAHU (APRIL 2013) .....	1011
INTERVIEW WITH JAMES MAHU (OCTOBER 2014) .....	1066
LYRICUS MISSION AND PURPOSE .....	1074
<b>EXCERPTS FROM LIMINAL COSMOGONY .....</b>	<b>1087</b>
<b>LYRICUS FAQs INTRODUCTION .....</b>	<b>1106</b>
<b>RELATIONSHIP OF LYRICUS TO THE HUMAN SPECIES .....</b>	<b>1109</b>
LYRICUS DISCOURSES .....	1139
<b>EXPERIENCING THE WHOLENESS NAVIGATOR.....</b>	<b>1139</b>
<b>CALLING FORTH THE WHOLENESS NAVIGATOR.....</b>	<b>1149</b>
<b>THE NATURE OF KNOWLEDGE .....</b>	<b>1169</b>
<b>UNIVERSE RELATIONSHIP .....</b>	<b>1192</b>
<b>THE INTERFACE ZONE .....</b>	<b>1207</b>
<b>TECHNIQUES OF THE INTUITIVE INTELLIGENCE .....</b>	<b>1223</b>
LIVING FROM THE HEART .....	1243
<b>INTRODUCTION .....</b>	<b>1243</b>
<b>SECTION ONE: THE SIX HEART VIRTUES</b>	<b>1244</b>

<b>SECTION TWO: THE WHEN-WHICH-HOW-PRACTICE.....</b>	<b>1258</b>
<b>SECTION THREE: THE HEART-MIND INTENTION.....</b>	<b>1271</b>
<b>SECTION FOUR: OUR INTERCONNECTION .....</b>	<b>1277</b>
<b>SECTION FIVE: EVENT TEMPLES AND THEIR PURPOSE.....</b>	<b>1289</b>
<b>SECTION SIX: PRACTICE OVER EXPERIENCE .....</b>	<b>1291</b>
<b>CONCLUSION .....</b>	<b>1294</b>
<b>APPENDIX A .....</b>	<b>1298</b>
<b>APPENDIX B .....</b>	<b>1305</b>
<b>THE ART OF THE GENUINE: A SPIRITUAL IMPERATIVE .....</b>	<b>1317</b>
<b>INTRODUCTION .....</b>	<b>1317</b>
<b>THE EGO-MIND KNOWLEDGE STRUCTURE .....</b>	<b>1319</b>
<b>PRACTICING THE ART OF THE GENUINE</b>	<b>1323</b>
<b>A SPIRITUAL IMPERATIVE .....</b>	<b>1336</b>
<b>REFERENCES.....</b>	<b>1340</b>
<b>THE LIVING TRUTH .....</b>	<b>1343</b>
<b>INTRODUCTION .....</b>	<b>1343</b>
<b>THE LIVING TRUTH.....</b>	<b>1343</b>
<b>THE RISING HEART.....</b>	<b>1351</b>
<b>FOREWORD .....</b>	<b>1351</b>
<b>EXCERPT FROM LIMINAL COSMOGONY: TEACHERS OF LIGHT THE RISING HEART ..</b>	<b>1356</b>

<b>THE TEMPLE OF SPIRITUAL ACTIVISM .....</b>	<b>1366</b>
<b>INTRODUCTION .....</b>	<b>1366</b>
<b>SPIRITUAL ACTIVISM .....</b>	<b>1371</b>
<b>SPIRITUAL CENTER .....</b>	<b>1373</b>
<b>COHERENCE AS IT RELATES TO SPIRITUAL ACTIVISM .....</b>	<b>1377</b>
<b>ALIGNMENT AND COHERENCE .....</b>	<b>1379</b>
<b>SOURCE SYNC .....</b>	<b>1384</b>
<b>A PROCESS MAP FOR SPIRITUAL ACTIVISM .....</b>	<b>1386</b>
<b>THE ONE ENTITY .....</b>	<b>1389</b>
<b>WHOLENESS PARADIGM EVT 3: .....</b>	<b>1392</b>
<b>EVT 3 PREPARATION .....</b>	<b>1394</b>
<b>I LIVE WHERE YOU LIVE .....</b>	<b>1399</b>
<b>NOTES: QUANTUM PAUSE .....</b>	<b>1402</b>
<b>THE WHEN-WHICH-HOW-PRACTICE .....</b>	<b>1407</b>
<b>FOREWORD .....</b>	<b>1407</b>
<b>PREFACE .....</b>	<b>1414</b>
<b>INTRODUCTION .....</b>	<b>1416</b>
<b>APPROACHING THE PRACTICE .....</b>	<b>1424</b>
<b>THE PRACTICE OF WHEN-WHICH-HOW ..</b>	<b>1461</b>
<b>COMMENTS ON THE PRACTICE .....</b>	<b>1482</b>
<b>SCENARIO EXAMPLES OF WHEN-WHICH- HOW .....</b>	<b>1509</b>
<b>THE HOW STAGE OF PRACTICE .....</b>	<b>1519</b>
<b>BELIEF AND THE LARGER PLAN .....</b>	<b>1539</b>
<b>JOURNAL NOTES ON THE VIRTUES .....</b>	<b>1568</b>



<b>GRATITUDE AND AN INVITATION TO PRACTICE.....</b>	<b>1577</b>
---	-------------

# **LIFE PRINCIPLES OF THE SOVEREIGN INTEGRAL**

The entity model of expression is designed to explore new fields of vibration through biological instruments and transform through this process of discovery to a new level of understanding and expression as a Sovereign Integral. The Sovereign Integral is the fullest expression of the entity model within the time-space universes, and most closely exemplifies Source Intelligence's capabilities therein. It is also the natural state of existence of the entity that has transformed beyond the evolution / saviorship model of existence and has removed itself from the controlling aspects of the Hierarchy through the complete activation of its embedded Source Codes. This is the level of capability that was "seeded" within the entity model of expression when it was initially conceived by Prime Creator. All entities within the time-space universes are in various stages of the transformational experience and each are destined to achieve the Sovereign Integral level as their Source Codes become fully activated.

The transformational experience is the realization that the entity model of expression is capable of direct access to Source Intelligence information, and that the information of Prime Creator is discovered within the entity level of the Sovereign Integral. In other words, the human instrument, complete with its biological, emotional, and mental capabilities, is not the repository of the entity's Source Codes. Nor is the human instrument able to reach out and gather in this liberating information – this glorious

freedom to access All That Is. It is the entity that is both the harbor of, and instrument of access to, the Source Coding activation that permits the transformational experience to manifest through the integration of the human instrument and the sovereign entity.

The transformational experience consists of the realization that perceived reality is Source Reality personified in the form of individual preferences. Thus, Source Reality and sovereign reality become inseparable as the wind and air. This confluence is realized only through the transformational experience, which is unlike anything known within the time-space universes.

There have been those upon terra-earth who have experienced a shallow breath of wind from this powerful tempest. Some have called it ascension, others have attributed names like illumination, vision, enlightenment, nirvana, and cosmic consciousness. While these experiences are profound in human standards, they are only the initial stirrings of the Sovereign Integral, as it becomes increasingly adept at touching and awakening the remote edges of its existence. What most species define as the ultimate bliss is merely the impression of the Sovereign Integral whispering to its outposts of form and nudging them to look within to their roots of existence and unite with this formless and limitless intelligence that pervades all.

The transformational experience is far beyond the calibration of the human drama much like the stars in the sky are beyond the touch of terra-earth. You can observe the stars with your human eyes, but you will never touch them with your human hands. Similarly, you can dimly

foresee the transformational experience with the human instrument, but you cannot experience it through the human instrument. It is only accessed through the wholeness of the entity, for it is only in wholeness that the Source Codes and their residual effects of Source Reality perception can exist. And truly, this wholeness is only obtained when the individual consciousness is separated from time and is able to view its existence in timelessness.

Nevertheless, the human instrument is critical in facilitating the transformational experience and causing it to trigger – like a metamorphosis – the integration of the formful identities into the Sovereign Integral. This is the next stage of perception and expression for the entity model, and it is activated when the entity designs its reality from life principles that are symbolic of Source Reality, as opposed to the reality of an external source that is bound to the evolution / saviorship model of existence.

These life principles are Source Intelligence templates of creation. They are designed to create reality from the perspective of the Sovereign Integral and hasten its manifestation within the fields of vibration that has thus far repelled it. They are principles that construct opportunities for the integration of the entity's formless and formful identities. They are bridges that the human instrument – with all of its componentry intact – can experience the Sovereign Integral perception of wholeness.

As the human instrument becomes increasingly responsive to Source Intelligence it will gravitate to life principles that symbolically express the formative principles of prime creation. There are wide ranges of expressions that can induce the transformational

experience of the Sovereign Integral and liberate the entity from time-space conditioning and external controls. Inasmuch as the expression can vary, the intent of the expression is quite narrowly defined as the intent to expand into a state of integration whereby the human instrument becomes increasingly aligned with the Sovereign Integral perspective.

There are three particular life principles that accelerate the transformational experience and help to align the human instrument with the Sovereign Integral perspective. They are:

1. Universe relationship through gratitude
2. Observance of Source in all things
3. Nuturence of life

When the individual applies these principles, their life experience reveals a deeper meaning to its apparently random events – both in the universal and personal contexts.

### **Universe Relationship through Gratitude**

This is the principle that the Universe of Wholeness represents a collective intelligence that can be personalized as a single Universal Entity. Thus, in this model of inference, there are only two entities in the entire cosmos: the individual entity and the Universal Entity. Inasmuch as the individual is impressionable and constantly changing to adapt to new information, so is the Universal Entity, which is a dynamic and living template of potential energies and experiences that are coherent and as knowable as a friend's personality and behavior.

The Universal Entity is responsive to the individual and its perceptions and expressions. It is like a composite omni-personality that is imbued with Source Intelligence and responds to the perceptions of the individual like a pool of water mirrors the image that overshadows it. Everyone in a human instrument is indeed, at their innermost core, a sovereign entity that can transform the human instrument into an instrument of the Sovereign Integral. However, this transformation is dependent on whether the individual chooses to project an image of a Sovereign Integral upon the "mirror" of the Universal Entity, or project a lesser image that is a distortion of its true state of being.

The principle of universe relationship through gratitude is primarily concerned with consciously designing one's self image through an appreciation of the Universal Entity's supportive "mirror". In other words, the Universal Entity is a partner in shaping reality's expression in one's life. Reality is an internal process of creation that is utterly free of external controls and conditions if the individual projects a sovereign image upon the mirror of the Universal Entity.

This process is an interchange of supportive energy from the individual to the Universal Entity, and this energy is best applied through an appreciation of how perfect and exacting the interchange occurs in every moment of life. If the individual is aware (or at least interested in having the awareness) of how perfect the Universal Entity supports the individual's sovereign reality, there is a powerful and natural sense of gratitude that flows from the individual to the Universal Entity. It is this wellspring of gratitude that

opens the channel of support from the Universal Entity to the individual and establishes a collaboration of purpose to transform the human instrument into an expression of the Sovereign Integral.

It is principally gratitude – which translates to an appreciation of how the inter-relationship of the individual and the Universal Entity operates – that opens the human instrument to its connection to the sovereign entity and its eventual transformation into the Sovereign Integral state of perception and expression. The relationship of the individual with the Universal Entity is essential to cultivate and nurture, because it, more than anything else, determines how accepting the individual is to life's myriad forms and manifestations.

When the individual accepts changes in sovereign reality as the shifting persona of the Universal Entity, they live in greater harmony with life itself. Life becomes an exchange of energy between the individual and the Universal Entity that is allowed to play out without judgment and experienced without fear. This is the underlying meaning of unconditional love: to experience life in all its manifestations as a single, unified intelligence that responds perfectly to the projected image of the human instrument.

It is for this reason that when the human instrument projects gratitude to the Universal Entity, regardless of circumstance or condition, life becomes increasingly supportive in opening the human instrument to activate its Source Codes and live life within the framework of the synthesis model of expression. The feeling of gratitude coupled with the mental concept of appreciation is

expressed like an invisible message in all directions and at all times. In this particular context, gratitude to the Universal Entity is the overarching motive behind all forms of expression that the human instrument aspires to.

Every breath, every word, every touch, every thought, every thing is centered on expressing this sense of gratitude. A gratitude that the individual is sovereign and supported by a Universal Entity that expresses itself through all forms and manifestations of intelligence with the sole objective of creating the ideal reality to activate the individual's Source Codes and transform the human instrument and entity in to the Sovereign Integral. It is this specific form of gratitude that accelerates the activation of the Source Codes and their peculiar ability to integrate the disparate componentry of the human instrument and the entity, and transform them to the state of perception and expression of the Sovereign Integral.

Time is the only factor that distorts this otherwise clear connection between the individual and Universal Entity. Time intervenes and creates pockets of despair, hopelessness, and abandonment. However, it is these very "pockets" that often activate the Source Codes of the entity and establish a more intimate and harmonious relationship with the Universal Entity. Time establishes separation of experience and this creates doubt in the Universal Entity's system of fairness and overarching purpose. In turn, this creates fear that the universe is not a mirror but rather a chaotic, whimsical energy.

When the human instrument is aligned with the Sovereign Integral and lives from this perspective as a developing reality, it attracts a natural state of harmony.



This does not necessarily mean that the human instrument is without problems or discomforts, rather it signifies a perception that there is an integral purpose in what life reveals. In other words, natural harmony perceives that life experience is meaningful to the extent you are aligned with the Sovereign Integral, and that your personal reality must flow from this strata of the multidimensional universe in order to create lasting joy and inner peace.

Gratitude is a critical facet of love that opens the human instrument to acknowledge the role of the Universal Entity and redefine its purpose as a supportive extension of sovereign reality, rather than the whimsical outreach of fate or the exacting reaction of a mechanical, detached universe. Establishing a relationship with the Universal Entity through the outflow of gratitude also attracts life experience that is transformative. Experience that is richly devoted to uncovering life's deepest meaning and most formative purpose.

### **Observance of Source in All Things**

This is the principle that Prime Creator is present in all realities through all manifestations of energy. IT is interwoven in all things like a mosaic whose pieces adhere to the same wall, and are thus, unified. However, it is not the picture that unifies the mosaic, but the wall upon which its pieces adhere. Similarly, Prime Creator paints a picture so diverse and apparently unrelated that there appears to be no unification. Yet it is not the outward manifestations that unify, it is the inward center of energy upon which the pieces of diversity are layered that unifies all manifestations.

This centerpiece of energy is the collective storehouse of all life in all fields of vibration within the Universe of Wholeness. It is Prime Creator who divests ITSELF in all forms through the projection of ITS Source Intelligence in to all fragments of life. Thus, Source Intelligence – acting as an extension of Prime Creator – is the unifying energy that is the "wall" upon which all the pieces of life's mosaic adhere. Life flows from one energy Source that links all to All and one to One.

Observance of Source in All Things is the principle that all manifestations of life convey an expression of Prime Creator. It does not matter how far the unifying energy has been distorted or perverted; the Source can be observed. It is the action of perceiving the unification of energy even when the outward manifestations appear random, distorted, unrelated, or chaotic.

When all manifestations of life are genuinely perceived as fragmentary expressions of Prime Creator, the vibration of equality that underlies all life-forms becomes perceptible to the human instrument. Life initially emerges as an extension of Source Reality, and then, as an individuated energy frequency invested within a form. It vibrates, in its pure, timeless state, precisely the same for all manifestations of life. This is the common ground that all life shares. This is the tone-vibration of equality that can be observed within all life forms that unifies all expressions of diversity to the foundation of existence known as Prime Creator. If an individual is able to look upon any form of life with the outlook of equality, then they are observing Source in all things.

While this may seem like an abstract concept, it is actualized through the practice of looking for the outward and inward manifestations of Prime Creator. In a very real sense, the individual expects to observe the workings of Source Intelligence in every facet of their experience. It is the unassailable expectation that everything is in its rightful position, performing its optimal function, and serving its purpose to activate the fullest expression of its life in the present moment. It is the outlook that all life is in a state of optimal realization and experience regardless of condition or circumstance. It is the perception that life is perfect in its expression because it flows from perfection, and that no matter how divergent its manifestations are, life is an extension of Source Reality.

In light of the obvious turmoil and apparent destruction that accompanies life on terra-earth, this is an outlook or perception that seems naive. How can life – in all its forms and expressions – be perceived as optimal or perfect? This is the great paradox of life, and it cannot be reconciled with the human instrument's mental or emotional capabilities. It can only be understood in the context of the entity, which is deathless, limitless, timeless, and sovereign. Paradoxes exist because the human drama is too limited in scope and scale to allow a perception of wholeness to intervene and illuminate how the pieces of the puzzle are unified in perfect relation.

The human drama is circumscribed by the dimensions of time and space and the elements of energy and matter. It is played out upon the stages of survival and dysfunctional behavior because of the Hierarchy's methods of controlling information and manipulating conditions. The entity

within the human instrument is largely unexpressed and under-utilized in the human drama, and therefore, life's apparent perversions and imperfections are seen in isolation as impediments to perfection rather than perfection itself.

Life is perfect in its resolve to expand and express an intelligence that is limitless. This is the fundamental purpose of life in all its diverse manifestations, and this is the presence of Prime Creator – expressing ITSELF as a vibration of equality – that can be observed in all things. Sensory input derived from the human instrument is limited to frequencies in specific ranges that only convey an echo of this Source vibration. The true frequency is understood through deliberate and focused contemplation of equality inherent in all things, and the ability to penetrate beyond the picture of a thing to the origin of the picture.

These insights require a new sensory system beyond the five-senses that rule the human world in your time. These new senses are the outgrowth of the Source Code activation, and represent the first stage of the transformation experience. With this new perceptual ability, the human instrument will be capable of sensing not only the presence of Prime Creator, but also the timeless essence within all life that is individualized and uniquely separate from Prime Creator.

Calling forth the perceptions of the entity within the human instrument is the ideal method to access a lasting sensitivity to the Source vibration. This is how an individual can develop the ability to observe Source in all things. It is not only that Prime Creator is within every

individual manifestation of energy, but is also the wholeness of life itself. Thus, the principle requires an observance of Source in all ITS diverse forms of manifestation, as well as in the wholeness of life.

### **Nurturance of Life**

Life, in this definition, is an individual's sovereign reality. It is subjective and impressionable to the human instrument. Life is the wholeness of experience flowing past the individual's field of perception in the dimension of nowness. There is never a closure to life or final chapter written. It is eternal, but not in the abstract sense of never ending or beginning, but rather in the real sense that life is ever expanding in order to express Source Intelligence in all fields of vibration within the Universe of Wholeness.

The nurturance of life is the principle that an individual is in alignment with the natural expansion of intelligence inherent within all life. This is an alignment that enhances the life-energy that flows past the individual with the clear intent of gentle support. It is the action of identifying the highest motive in all energy forms and supporting the flow of this energy towards its ultimate expression. In so doing, the action is performed without judgment, analysis, or attachment to outcome. It is simply nurturing the energy that flows from all manifestations and supporting its expression of life.

This is a departure from the normal perception that nurturing support can only be granted when energy is in alignment with personal will. However, when the individual can view life as an integrated energy flowing in the expression of expanding intelligence, life is honored as

an extension of Prime Creator. In this context, there is no energy that is mis-directed or unworthy of support and nurturance. While this may seem contrary to the evidence of abusive energy upon terra-earth, even energy that is laden with "evil intent" is nevertheless energy that is flowing outward in search of a higher expression.

All forms of energy can be nurtured and supported to their highest expression, and this is the fundamental action of this principle. It requires the ability to perceive the causal motive and ultimate expression of life-energy as it passes through the individual's sovereign reality. Energy is an element of life that is so subtly interwoven with form that it is one; in much the same manner as space and time are inextricably linked in union. Energy is a motive. It is intelligent beyond the mind's ability to reason. While it is a force that can be subject to human applications that deny its highest expression, energy is always imbuing life with the motive to expand and evolve.

Life-energy is always in a state of becoming. It is never static or regressive in its natural state. The human instrument is very capable of nurturing this natural expansion of energy to forge new channels of expression and experience. In fact, it is the primary purpose of the human instrument to expand the life-energy that encircles its sovereign reality within physical existence and transform it to new levels of expression that more accurately reflect the perspective of the Sovereign Integral.

There are many specific actions that can be taken to nurture life. Each entity is, in a sense, programmed within its Source Codes to transmute energy through a tremendous variety of means. Working through the human

instrument, the entity is able to collect and store energy within the human instrument and re-direct its purpose or application. The transmutation of energy can occur on either the personal or universal levels of expression. That is, within the sovereign reality of an individual, energy can be transmuted to conform to a vision of personal welfare, or aligned with a vision of universal welfare and goodwill.

One of the best methods to transmute energy is through one's belief system. All beliefs have energy systems that act like birthing chambers for the manifestation of the belief. Within these energy systems are currents that direct life experience. The human instrument is aware of these currents either consciously or unconsciously, and allows them to carry it into the realm of experience that exemplifies its true belief system.

By cultivating beliefs that expand and transform energy, the human instrument is able to engage energy systems that are nurturing to life in all its myriad forms. When beliefs are clearly defined as preferred states of being, the energy system is engaged in nowness – not in some future time. Now. The energy system becomes inseparable from the human instrument and woven into its spirit like a thread of light. Clarity of belief is essential to engaging the energy system of the belief, and allowing the nurturance of life to prevail in all activities.

So again, the nurturance of life is critical to both personal and universal realities within the Universe of Wholeness which contains all the fields of vibration that are interlinked like threads of an infinitely expanding fabric. Thus, as the individual awakens to their creative power to transmute energy and enhance it with the clear

intent of gentle support, they become transmitters of Source Reality and architects of the synthesis model of existence.

Through the ongoing application of these life principles, Source Intelligence increasingly becomes the identity of the entity, and the entity becomes the identity of the human instrument. Thus, identity is transformed, and in the wake of this transformation, the Sovereign Integral unifies the human instrument with the entity, and the entity with Source Intelligence. It is this unification and shifts of identity that is the explicit purpose in expressing the life principles of the Sovereign Integral. If there is any other intention or objective these principles will remain misunderstood and their catalytic powers dormant.

It is the perspective of the Sovereign Integral that all life is pure love in its fullest expression, and that in this single concept, all life is conceived and forever exists. This becomes the core belief from which all other beliefs arise, and by their extension, one's belief system emerges with a clear intent of supporting this fundamental perspective. Of nurturing, observing, and appreciating the Universe of Wholeness as the cradle from which all life is created, evolves, and ultimately acknowledges.

These life principles are merely symbols represented in words and served to the human instrument as a potential recipe to stir awake the embers of light that tirelessly burn within. There are no specific techniques or rituals that are required to invoke the power of these principles. They are simply perspectives. In a real sense, they are intentions that attract experience that expand consciousness. They do not provide quick fixes or instant realizations. They are



amplifiers of personal will and intention that clarify how one lives. Their transformative power is contained exclusively in the intent of their application.

Through these life principles of the Sovereign Integral, the individual can become a master of unlimiting the Self. Boundaries are set, veils are pulled down, and one's light is subdued, simply because external, hierarchical controls create fear of the unknown and mystical practices of a sovereign being. In these life principles, if they are truly applied with proper intent, are the tools to accelerate the emergence of the Sovereign Integral and feel its perspective, its insights, and its empowered abilities to create new realities and shape them as learning adventures that liberate and expand consciousness. This is the underlying purpose of the principles and perhaps the best reason to explore them.

# **THE SHIFTING MODELS OF EXISTENCE**

The consciousness of the Sovereign Integral is the destination that beckons the human instrument inward into the reality of Prime Creator. In all of the wanderings of the human consciousness from Source Reality, it has eliminated the compelling features of Source Reality through the application of the logical mind and the persistent belief in the language of limitation that flows from the external controls of the hierarchy.

Source Reality, hidden behind language, has gradually become "illuminated" by the prophets of your world, and has thus, taken on the image of language, rather than the expression of its compelling features. Language is the purveyor of limitation. It is the pawn of tyranny and entrapment. Virtually all entities within the time-space universe desire to preserve a dependence upon a hierarchy that stretches between the individual and the compelling features of Source Reality. It is the hierarchy that utilizes language as a form of structural limitation, though in relative terms, it can appear to be liberating and empowering.

Source Reality is the dwelling place of Prime Creator, and it dances outside of the constructs of any language. It is complete within itself, and has a singular purpose of demonstrating the collective potential of all species within the Universe of Wholeness. It is the archetype of perfection. It is the standard bearer of each entity's innate design and ultimate destiny. ITS essence is so far beyond

conception, that the human instrument's tendency is to resort to the language of externals – and ultimately the hierarchy – to define Source Reality.

The hierarchy, through the purveyance of an evolution / saviorship model of existence, has attempted to guide the development of all entities throughout the Universe of Wholeness. The connection between the individual and the Source is subtly undermined through the layers of language, belief system manipulation, and ritual controls designed by the hierarchy to intervene between the spiritual essence of entities and their source, Prime Creator.

Each individual must know themselves to be free of all forms of external reliance. This is not to imply that one should not trust others or band together in alliances of friendship and community. It is simply a warning that relative truth is constantly shifting in the hands of those who desire to control, and even though their motives may be of good will, it is still a form of control. When the hierarchy withholds information, the interpretive centers for relative truth are positioned to acquire and maintain power rather than dispensing the empowerment of Source equality.

There are so many layers of relative truth that if you listen to the language of externals, you will most likely abandon your own power in favor of the proclamation of language. Language is seductive to the ego's drive for power and control, as well as the mind's inclination to surrender to, and believe in, the language of externals. It can lure the unsuspecting into believing images and ideas – real or imagined – for the sake of holding individuals in

bondage to a lesser truth, or keep individuals supporting the hierarchy when it no longer serves a purpose. The time is fast approaching when the veils of control at all levels of the hierarchy will be rendered obsolete by entities who are destined to pull down the veils and allow sovereign power to prevail over hierarchical power.

There are entities who have woven their future existence with terra-earth and are destined to demonstrate the truth of Source equality among all entities at all levels of expression. It will become the fundamental purpose of the hierarchy to slowly remove these barriers to equality in such a way that the hierarchy appears to be the savior of consciousness rather than the guard of consciousness. There are those present who will ensure that the curtain falls swiftly for those who are ready to be equal with their Source, are willing to skirt the hierarchy's tangled pathways, and embrace their divinity as sovereign expressions of Source Reality.

The hierarchy represents diverse interests, perceptions of reality, and motives of action. It is this diversity that causes the hierarchy to become ineffective in leading individuals to their equal status with Prime Creator. However, this diversity is also what permits the hierarchy to attract and initially awaken such a breadth of individuals to their spiritual energies and intuitive centers. Nevertheless, the hierarchy has trapped itself in diversity and vested specialization that prevents it from evolving from an arduous ladder of evolution to a joyous river of Light that is aligned with the purpose of empowering entities to Source equality.

The saviorship concept results from the feelings of inadequacy that constantly surge within the mass consciousness of humanity through the genetic mind. These feelings are related to the fragmentation of the human instrument and its inability – while fragmented – to fully grasp its wholeness perspective and reach into its divine origins and accept itself as equal with Prime Creator. Thus ensues the seemingly endless search to be saved from the inadequacy and insecurity that result from the fragmentation of the human instrument.

The motive to evolve consciousness derives from the feeling of being less than whole. And in particular, the feeling of being disconnected from Prime Creator due to imperfect judgment caused by the fragmentation of the human instrument. It is through these feelings that the fragmentation perpetuates itself for the entire species and is passed into the genetic mind which is the shared foundation of the human instrument. The genetic mind of the human species is the single most powerful component of the hierarchy and it is formed by the very conditions of the human instrument living in a three-dimensional, five-sensory context that is all-consuming.

When the entity initially enters a human instrument at birth, it is immediately fragmented into a physical, emotional, and mental spectrum of perception and expression. From that day forward the entity is carefully conditioned to adapt into, and navigate within, the three-dimensional, five-sensory context of terra-earth. In effect, the entity purposely fragments its consciousness in order to experience separation from wholeness.

In this state of separation, the entity has handicapped itself for the purpose of new experience and a deeper understanding of the Primal Blueprint or grand vision of Prime Creator. Through this deeper understanding, the entity can, through the human instrument, transform the three-dimensional context into a self-aware, integrated component of the Universe of Wholeness. This magnificent and purposeful endeavor produces the urge within the human instrument to seek out its wholeness and re-experience its divine connection to Prime Creator.

This search, in large measure, is the fuel that drives the individual to seek out and explore the evolution / saviorship model of existence. It provides the individual with the motivation to seek help and guidance from a specific subgroup of the hierarchy, and in so doing, develop a sense of belonging and unity. It is this very same sense of belonging and unity that helps to catalyze a growing awareness of the underlying union between the human instrument, the Entity Consciousness, the Universe of Wholeness, Source Intelligence, and Prime Creator.

This is why the evolution / saviorship model is so critical as a component to the Grand Experiment. It is the stage whereby the human instrument develops a sense of unity and belonging. A sense of relationship to some grand and encompassing vision. This is why the hierarchy nurtures saviors. It is also why the feelings of inadequacy and insecurity are developed and nurtured by the hierarchy. It actually hastens the unification of humanity, which in turn, will hasten and lead to the unification of humanity with the Universe of Wholeness.

Spiritual leaders are able to peer deeply beneath the surface reality of life and experience how intricately connected every life form is, and how this composite of life is intelligent far beyond the human instrument's capability to both perceive and express. It is because of this condition that spiritual leaders can only interpret reality through their personal abilities to perceive and express life's dimensional depth and limitless intelligence. No one is able to articulate life's dimensional depth and breadth with the tools of language. They can only, at best, describe their interpretation or their impressions.

Every human is able, in varying degrees, to peer beneath the surface reality of life and perceive and express their personal interpretations of the Universe of Wholeness. They require only the time and intention to develop their own interpretations. And this is precisely what all the great spiritual leaders have taught. Life's deeper meaning is not an absolute to be experienced by the chosen few, but an evolving, dynamic intelligence that wears as many faces as there are life forms. No life form or species has the exclusive portal into the Universe of Wholeness in which Prime Creator expresses ITSELF in all ITS majesty. The portal is shared with all because Prime Creator is within all things.

The great spiritual leaders of terra-earth have all, in their own way, interpreted the Universe of Wholeness and humanity's role therein. In so doing, their interpretations, because they were articulated with authority and depth of insight, became a target of debate among various subgroups of the hierarchy. This debate and inquiry process creates a polarity of belief. A sympathetic

constituency will emerge to defend and embellish their particular leader's interpretation, while everyone else will hold it in contempt of previously held beliefs.

This peculiar method of creating a religion that is fixated on a savior's or prophet's interpretation of the Universe of Wholeness is unique to a species that is exploring the evolution / saviorship model of existence. The spiritual leaders that are recognized as great prophets or saviors have produced a vision of the Universe of Wholeness beyond what was currently defined by the hierarchy. They created a new portal into the Universe of Wholeness and were willing to share their vision at the expense of debate and probable ridicule.

These men and women were the gateways for humanity to explore new facets of itself. To engage a part of its oversoul or universal consciousness that was essential at that particular time in its evolutionary cycle. But the leader's interpretations too often become interpreted by the followers who desire to create a religion or sect, and the vision quietly recedes into the hands of the hierarchy where it becomes de-vitalized by the very fact that it is connected to a massive structure that both protects and promotes it.

Prime Creator is connected to individuals not organizations. Thus, the hierarchy is unconnected to the Source in a vital and dynamic way. The hierarchy is more connected to its own collective desire to help, to serve, to perform a function that allows the use of power to drive toward the vision of its leaders. In itself, this is not wrong or misguided. It is all part of the Primal Blueprint that orchestrates the unfoldment of consciousness from Prime



Source to entity, and entity to Collective Source. This is the spiral of integration that breeds wholeness and cascading beauty within Source Intelligence.

What the hierarchy has loosely labeled as Spirit comes as close as any word to the symbol of Source Intelligence. Source Intelligence inhabits all fields of vibration as an extension of the Source. It is the emissary of Prime Creator that interweaves with the hierarchy as its counter-balance. Source Intelligence is the factor of integrity and alignment, which ensures that the hierarchy is serving its purpose within the Primal Blueprint. Source Intelligence is, in effect, the "scientist" who oversees the Grand Experiment and establishes the criteria, selects the variables, monitors the results, and evaluates the alternative outcomes in the laboratory of time and space.

The Grand Experiment is the ongoing transformation and expansion of Source Intelligence through all entities in all dimensions of existence. It is the purpose of the Grand Experiment to test alternative models of existence to determine, with some certainty, the model that is best able to unify consciousness without impinging on the sovereignty of the entity and Prime Creator. The Grand Experiment is composed of many distinct stages that interlink, leading to the Great Mystery. Most of these different stages are being simultaneously played out within the time-space universe in order to prepare the universe for the impending expansion of Source Reality into all dimensions of existence.

In the case of terra-earth, this is the stage of existence that promotes the clear connection of individual consciousness to the compelling features of Source Reality

without the intervention of a hierarchy of any kind. This is when the fables and myths of history step into the light and become known as they truly are and have been. This is the time when language will be transmuted into a new form of communication that exhibits the compelling features of Source Reality in an artistry of energy and vibration that break down all barriers of control.

It is time to recognize that the hierarchy extends throughout the cosmos to the very borders of discovery. It has branches that extend from every star system, every known dimension; and virtually all life forms are "leaves" of this vast cosmological tree. This constitutes the grand indoctrination of species, spirits, planets, and stars as they each evolve through the branches of the tree. Thus, the hierarchy is an assemblage of externals that desire to invest their energies in support of a sub-group that has nested somewhere within the greatest of all structures – the hierarchy. Service is the operational motive of the hierarchy, and in most cases, this translates into the concept of saviorship and the teacher / student ordering of the universe.

The hierarchy is composed of all entities of all motives that have linked their energies into sub-groups. These sub-groups are independent branches of the vast, cosmological tree that encompasses all things outside of Source Reality. The roots of the tree are bound in the soil of genetic memory and subconscious instincts. At the base of the tree the first branches sprout and they are the oldest, representing the native religions of the species. The middle branches are the orthodox religions and institutions, while the upper branches represent the contemporary belief

systems that are newly emerging throughout the universe. The whole tree, in this definition, is the hierarchy, and its seed was initially conceived, planted, and nurtured by Source Intelligence for the purpose of stimulating the Grand Experiment.

This is the experiment of transformation verses evolution. Evolution is the arduous and ongoing process of shifting positions within the hierarchy – always assessing your present position in relation to a new one that beckons you. Transformation is simply the recognition that there are accelerated pathways that bypass the hierarchy leading to sovereign mastership rather than interdependent saviorship, and that these new pathways can be accessed through direct experience of the equality tone-vibration that is present within all entities.

This tone vibration is not what is more commonly referred to as the music of the spheres or the vibration of spirit moving through the universe in resonance to Source intention. It is a vibration that holds together the three principles of the transformational experience: Universe relationship through gratitude, observance of Source in all things, and the nurturance of life. The application of these life-principles in a specific equation of conduct de-couples an entity from the controlling elements of the hierarchy.

How can the hierarchy act in the role of an interpretive center of truth without manipulating entities, and thus, obscuring their free will? The Grand Experiment was designed with free will as its primary method of obtaining authentic information that can be used to expand Source Reality to all dimensions of existence. Free will is the thread of authenticity that imbues value in the various tests

within the Grand Experiment. The hierarchy or any other external structure never jeopardizes free will. Only the entity can choose their reality, and this is the fundamental principle of free will.

Free will is not obscured simply because an entity is presented with alternative realities or relative truths that delay its realization of Source equality. It is the choice of the entity to invest itself in external accounts of reality instead of delving within its own resources and creating a reality that is sovereign. The value of free will is always expanding as you move towards sovereignty, and in like manner, is always diminishing as you move towards external dependence. The choice between sovereignty or external dependence is the basis of free will, and there is no structure or external source that can eliminate this basic choice. It is an inward choice that, regardless of outward circumstance, is incapable of being denied by anything external.

The Universe of Wholeness encompasses all dimensions (including Source Reality), and therefore, all realities are contained therein. In this incomprehensible diversity, each entity is provided a structure that defines their free will in terms of its relation Source Reality. Each of these structures varies in latitude of choice, but each is connected into the superstructure of the hierarchy. The structureless reality of Source Reality is where free will was initially conceived, and when the principle expanded into the time-space universe as the thread of authenticity, it became increasingly dependent upon the entity's recognition of its wholeness in relation to Source Intelligence.

If the entity was fragmented into its component parts, its comprehension of free will was limited to that which the hierarchy circumscribed. If the entity is a conscious collective, realizing its sovereign wholeness, the principle of free will was a form of structure that was unnecessary, like a fire in a summer's day. When entities are unknowing of their wholeness, structure will occur as a form of self-imposed security. Through this ongoing development of a structured and ordered universe, entities defined their borders – their limits – through the expression of their insecurity. They gradually became pieces of their wholeness, and like shards of glass from a beautiful vase they bear little resemblance to their aggregate beauty.

If you were to perceive the origin of your existence, you would undoubtedly see how vast the entity is. If you could pierce through the veils that cover your destiny, you would understand how much vaster you will become. Between these two points of existence – origin and destiny – the entity is always the vibrant container of Source Intelligence. It has willingly allowed itself to explore the time-space universes as an outpost of Prime Creator. Therefore, while the hierarchy may obscure the entity's comprehension of its wholeness, it is the entity who has surrendered, by choice, to listen to the language of limitation, the proclamations of externals, and become seduced by the model of evolution / saviorship.

Why has the hierarchy not provided the alternative model of transformation / mastership and enabled the entity to make a choice, and in so doing, truly exercise its free will? It is because the hierarchy, like most entities, is not aware of its wholeness. Its fragments, or subgroups,

are completely devoted to boundaries. Where there are boundaries that define and limit, there is also structure. Where there is deeply ingrained structure there is a pervasive belief that transformation is impossible. Naturally, the time-space universe conforms to the matrix of belief projection, and the very concept of transformation is removed from the hierarchy's reality.

Thus, the hierarchy is unable to even conceptualize the model of transformation / mastership with any precision, let alone inform the entity that alternatives exist which issue from Source Intelligence. The hierarchy is not responsible for this condition, each entity is. The dominant model of Source Intelligence is primal. It existed before the hierarchy. It is the entity that has chosen to explore the hierarchy's model of existence for the purpose of participating in the Grand Experiment and assisting in the emergence of the synthesis model of existence. The hierarchy is quite benign as a manipulative force, and merely represents a key ingredient to the recipe of wholeness that is transforming the entity to reach beyond its role as a vibrant container of Source Intelligence, and become the bridge in the expansion of Source Reality into the time-space universes.

There is an ancient belief, born of the hierarchy, that the time-space universes will ascend into Source Reality and the human instrument of love will accompany this ascension process. However, it is Source Reality that is expanding to encompass the time-space universes with the purpose of aligning all entities to the synthesis model of existence. Source Intelligence is stripping away the veils that hide the true meaning of the entity model of

expression in the time-space universes. When this occurs, the entity will possess Source equality in all dimensions and fields of vibration, and its componentry will be united for the full expression of its sovereign perspective.

This transformation of the entity is the pathway into wholeness and the recognition that the entity model of expression is a composite of forms and the formless that is unified in one energy, one consciousness. When the fragments are aligned and inter-connected, the entity becomes the instrument that facilitates Source Reality expansion. Thus, the entity does not ascend from the time-space universes, but rather coalesces into a state of wholeness whereby its sovereign expression can assist in the expansion, or in a different context, the descent, of Source Reality into the time-space universes.

Ascension is often construed as the natural outcome of evolution. That all planetary systems and species are evolving to the point where they ascend from limitation, and that eventually, the time-space universes will somehow fold into Source Reality and cease to exist as fields of vibration. It is actually quite the opposite. Source Reality is descending. It is inclusive of all things, and it is the Source intention to expand, not retreat. The entity transforms to wholeness within the cradle of the time-space universe, and, in so doing, becomes the accessory of Source Reality's intention to expand.

Can you see the perfection of this Primal Blueprint? Can you feel the shifting of the matrix from which your reality is cast? Can you not also understand that you, the human instrument, consist of a componentry that is individuated as a single point of pure energy, yet live in many places on

many dimensions simultaneously? Only within the entity is the place of transformation discovered, where the formless Self can enter and commune with its various outposts of form. The formless is the Eternal Watcher who lives behind the veil of form and comprehension, and draws forth the wisdom of time from the well of planets. It is the point of origination from whence Source Intelligence flows.

The Eternal Watcher is the only real interpretive center for the entity. It is the only stable guidance system that can propel the entity to its wholeness. Thus, the entity is composed of both the formless identity of Source Intelligence and the formful identity of densified energy. While the formless is one, the formful is divested in many fragments of expression that isolate its consciousness as islands of perception and expression. This condition results in the entity's denial of its vast and glorious nature of existence.

In the human instrument, the entity, for the most part, is silent and unmoving. It appears like a fleeting whisper of gladness that touches you like a mountain wind. It is quiet like a deep ocean. Yet, the entity is coming forward into the time-space universe as a harbinger of Source Reality expansion. It is beginning to make itself known as it truly is. Many feel the shadow of their entity as it approaches. They consign all forms of definition to this "shadow", seldom believing it to be the torchbearer of their total selfhood. Here is where all the vows of faithfulness, all the ceremonies of love, and all the feelings of hope should be centered and given over to the sovereign entity that we each are.



The primary reason that the hierarchy's model of evolution / saviorship is so compelling is because the entity has become fragmented in how it perceives its total selfhood. The Eternal Watcher that lives through the human instrument is illusive to the time-space conditioned mind, yet it is the mind that attempts to reach out and touch this subtle vibration of Source equality that is forever kindled by Source Intelligence. However, the mind is too conditioned and disempowered to realize the total scope of the entity that exists beyond the shadows of intuition. It is for this reason that the species is exploring the evolution / saviorship model of existence. They have little or no conception of their wholeness, and require a savior and the acclimation process of evolution, to bring them security and happiness.

It is a natural condition of an evolving species to have a desire, implanted by the hierarchy, to be saved and to be a savior. This condition results in the teacher / student ordering of the universe, and it is a building block of evolution and the very essence of the hierarchy's structural existence. While some species resort to the drama of survival to catalyze their evolutionary progress, other species resort to the drama of being saved and being a savior. The saviorship drama is an expression of sovereign entities that are preoccupied with the evolutionary process, and it is not confined to a religious context, but indeed applies to all facets of one's life.

As there are relative truths, there are relative freedoms. If you are evolving through the hierarchical process you gain an ever-increasing sense of freedom, yet you are still controlled by the vibration of externals through languages,

thought forms, frequencies of color and sound, and the seemingly indelible artifacts of the genetic mind. Each of these elements can cause the human instrument to rely upon the hierarchy as it overlays a sense of inequality between you and your Source. The underlying equation of the evolutionary process is human instrument + Hierarchy = God connection. In the case of the transformational process, it is Entity + Source Intelligence = Prime Source equality.

Source Intelligence, though it generally manifests as the vibration of equality, is subject to the will of Prime Creator, and as the Source intention changes through the various stages of the Grand Experiment, Source Intelligence is also changing its form of manifestation. This change is occurring now within the worlds of time and space because Prime Creator is beginning to set the stage for the integration of the two primary models of existence (evolution / saviorship and transformation / mastership) within the Grand Experiment.

The time has come to integrate the dominant model of the hierarchy (evolution / saviorship) with the dominant model of Source Intelligence (transformation / mastership). This integration can only be achieved at the level of the entity. It cannot occur within the context of a human instrument or an aspect of the hierarchy. Only the entity – the wholeness of inter-dimensional sovereignty imbued with Source Intelligence – can facilitate and fully experience the integration of these two models of existence.

This form of integration occurs when the entity fully explores the two models and develops a synthesis model

that positions saviorship as an internal role of the entity to "save" itself, and not rely upon externals to perform this liberating task. This act of self-sufficiency begins to integrate the saviorship idea with the mastership realization. The next step is to integrate the time-based incremental progress of the evolutionary model with the realization-based acceptance of the transformation model. This is done when the entity is thoroughly convinced that experience and utilization of its wholeness can only occur when it is completely detached from the various structures of the hierarchy.

While the entity assumes its role of personal liberation, it does not mean that the hierarchy is to be shunned or avoided. The hierarchy is a wondrous instrument. It is symbolic of the body of Prime Creator, enabling IT to submerge within the time-space universes similar to how the human instrument allows the entity to function outside of Source Reality. The hierarchy is a vehicle of transformation even when it acts to suppress information and keep species in obedience to its controlling hand. It is part of the ancient formula that prepares a new universe for the synthesis model of existence and membership in the Universe of Wholeness.

The combination of self-saviorship and detachment from the hierarchy initiates the synthesis model into manifestation. The synthesis model is the next outcome of the Grand Experiment, and in certain vibrational fields of the multidimensional universe, there are entities who are indeed experiencing this stage of the experiment as forerunners of the entity model of Source individuation.

These entities are specifically designed to transmit this future experience into communication symbols and life principles that facilitate the bridging of the two models of existence. Beyond the initial design and construction of these "bridges", these entities will remain largely unknown. If they were to do anything more, they would rapidly become a fixture of the hierarchy and their missions would become compromised.

These Sovereign Entities are not present in the time-space universe to be formal teachers. They are present to be catalysts and designers. They are present to ensure that Source Intelligence is allowed to balance the dominant force of the hierarchy and its model of evolution / saviorship. They will not create a new belief system. Instead, they will focus on developing new communication symbols through various art forms that facilitate the entity's detachment from the controlling aspects of the hierarchy. The Sovereign Entities will also demonstrate the natural ease of interweaving the two primary strands of existence into a synthesis model.

In the advancing epoch of human development, entities will collectively design new pathways beyond the synthesis model of existence so that a new hierarchy can be constructed that is fashioned from Source Intelligence information. This new hierarchy will be cast from the knowledge gained from the Grand Experiments of the time-space universes, and the cosmic cycle will regenerate itself into a new field of vibration and existence. This new model of existence resists definition, and word-symbols are completely inadequate to describe even the shadowy

outlines of this new form of existence that is emerging from out of the synthesis model in your future time.

The WingMakers are a small team of Sovereign Entities that have designed time capsules that are catalytic in forming a Sovereign Integral perspective. Each time capsule is, in actuality, a selection system that attracts specific entities to utilize their human instrument in wholeness. This develops their sixth and seventh sense, which enables them to learn how to step out of time and the hierarchy's control. When they can do this, they can design the synthesis model of existence within terra-earth's hierarchical system.

These entities will be transforming time-space universes from ladders of consciousness to inclusions of Source Reality. In other words, Source Reality will be extended into time-space universes, and all life forms therein will experience this extension through a new hierarchical structure that is completely aligned with Source Intelligence. What some call "heaven on earth" is merely an echo-realization of this impending future time. What is truly bearing down on the time-space universes is the expansion of Source Reality through the accessibility of Source Intelligence information to all entities regardless of form or structure.

When this accessibility is complete and the Source Coding is fully activated, all entities will be part of a new cosmological structure. This new structure will invoke the next model of existence, which is already being developed within Source Reality by Source Intelligence and the Sovereign Entities. What is being activated now upon this time-space universe is the initial preparations for these

shifts in the models of existence. More specifically, upon terra-earth, these models of existence will be simultaneously played out over the next epoch of time. As always, it will be the choice of the entity as to which model they embrace as reality.

These various models of existence will generally occur in a pre-determined sequence, but not necessarily in a pre-determined timeframe. The sequence of Source Reality expansion is: Source Intelligence creation of new fields of vibration; the ongoing development of an entity constructed hierarchy to act as the superstructure of the new creation; the emergence from the hierarchy of a dominant model of existence, in this case, the evolution / saviorship model; the introduction of the Source Intelligence model of existence, in this case, the transformation / mastership model; the intermixing of these two models to form a synthesis model of Source equality; and finally, Source Reality expansion to the inclusion of all dimensions and entities.

When this sequencing of the Primal Blueprint is achieved, the process, with all that has been learned by Source Intelligence, will be reconfigured and a new element of the Primal Blueprint will be revealed that is unknown at this stage even by Source Intelligence. The time required to fulfill the complete cycle is undetermined, but it is reasonable to expect that its completion is yet so distant in time that to attach measurement is simply a feeble attempt at estimating the unknowable.

Let there be no mistake, however, that the fulfillment of the Primal Blueprint is indeed the direction all entities are traveling. While entities of all levels are bestowed free will

within their own realities, they are not, as aspects of Source Reality, given free will to choose their ultimate destiny. The origin of entities is Source Intelligence, and it is Source Intelligence that determines destiny as well as origin. Still, entities are provided tremendous latitude of choices to propel themselves from origin to destiny and re-emerge into an expanded version of Source Reality with a renewed vision of their identity.

All of the highest imaginings of the human instrument are yet unaware of the deepest foundation of the Primal Blueprint. They have sought the upper reaches of the building, and remain unaware of the foundation's design. It is here, at the very bottom of existence that Prime Creator is bursting forth with ITS energy and is retreating with ITS equality of sovereign mastership. It is here that equality is realized, not in the lofty places of relative truth lodged in the hierarchy, but in the deepest part of the foundational plan of life's origins and destiny, where time rejoins itself into timelessness. The origin and destiny of existence is the tone of equality in life. Listen for this tone – this frequency of vibration – and follow it back into the very foundation from whence all things arise and return.

This frequency of the tone-vibration of equality is only heard with the seventh sense by the entity who is enveloped in a human instrument. The seventh sense can be developed by the time capsules and will lead certain entities to their innermost or core expression. The core expression is what activates the seventh sense. Thus, before one can hear the tone-vibration of equality, they must gain access to their core expression. There is encoded in each of the time capsules, a system of languages that

can lead the individual to their core expression. It is hidden because it is so powerful. And we will only lead the worthy to this power.

Consider these words as symbols only. Remember that language is a tool of limitation. Feeling is an antidote of limitation that permits the human instrument to leap over the boundaries of the logical mind and witness first hand the wordless power of collective energy individuated. Feel the truth that stands behind the symbols, and tap into this energy-force that reaches out for you. Know it as a tone-vibration – a resonance that waits for you around every corner in which your life will turn. It is the beacon of the Source Vibration gathering itself into the form of language in order to usher you to the place from which you can experience the formless tone of equality. The bypass of limitation. The Primal Language of Source Intelligence that bestows to you the freedom to generate your deepest beauty in the expression of the highest truth.



# **GLOSSARY**

## **Human Instrument**

The human instrument consists of three principal components: The biological (physical body), the emotional, and the mental. These three distinct tools of perception, in aggregate, represent the vehicle of the individuated spirit as it interacts with the physical dimension of time, space, energy, and matter.

## **Entity**

The entity model of consciousness encompasses the individuated spirit sometimes referred to as the Higher Self or Soul. The entity is, in a sense, a fragment of the Universal Spirit Consciousness of Prime Creator. It is composed of a very refined and pure energy vibration that is equal to Source Intelligence (spirit). It is the entity consciousness that divests itself into human or otherwise physical vehicles in order to collect experiences that evolve and transform its understanding and appreciation of existence. It is the hub of the wheel through which all of its outposts of form and expression converge throughout the continuum of time and space. The entity is sovereign and simultaneously interconnected with all life through the Universal Spirit Consciousness (Source Intelligence). It is the animating force / energy within all life forms that is always in search of higher understanding and expression.

## **Sovereign Integral**

The Sovereign Integral is a state of consciousness whereby the entity and all of its various forms of

expression and perception are integrated as a conscious wholeness. This is a state of consciousness that all entities are evolving towards, and at some point, each will reach a state of transformation that allows the entity and its instruments of experience (i.e., the human instrument) to become an integrated expression that is aligned and in harmony with Source Intelligence.

### **Prime Creator**

Prime Creator is the primal source from which all existence is ultimately linked. It is sometimes referred to as the Body of the Collective God. It represents the overarching consciousness of all things unified. This includes pain, joy, suffering, light, love, darkness, fear; all expressions and conditions are integrated and purposeful in the context of Prime Creator. IT encompasses all things and unifies them in an all-inclusive consciousness that evolves and grows in a similar manner to how each individuated spirit evolves and grows.

In most cultures where the term "god" or "goddess" is used to define this omnipotent power, it often represents an entity that has evolved beyond the range of human comprehension and who manifests magical powers like manipulating the natural elements through thought or manifesting as non-corporeal Light Beings. These manifestations are described and depicted in virtually all cultures of the human race through its religious texts and mythology. While these may be entities that are highly evolved in their abilities and knowledge, they should not be confused with Prime Creator.

Prime Creator is not a manifestation, but rather a consciousness that inhabits all time, space, energy, matter, form, intent; as well as all non-time, non-space, non-matter, non-energy, non-form, and non-intent. It is the only consciousness that unifies all states of being into one Being. And this Being is Prime Creator. It is a growing, expanding, and inexplicable consciousness that organizes the collective experience of all states of being into a coherent plan of creation; expansion and colonization into the realms of creation; and the inclusion of creation into Source Reality-the home of Prime Creator.

This Being pervades the universe as the sum of experience in time and non-time. It has encoded ITSELF within all life as a vibration of frequency. This frequency is not perceptible to the three-dimensional, five sensory context of the human instrument, which can only detect a faint echo of this vibration. Prime Creator is present in all. And all are able to contact Prime Creator through this tone-vibration of equality. Prayers of supplication do not stir Prime Creator to response. Only the core expression of the individual's tone-vibration of equality will be successful in contacting Prime Creator in a meaningful way.

Prime Creator has many lower faces. These faces are often thought to be God Itself, but Gods are only a dimensional aspect of Prime Creator and there are many faces of God as well. The Hierarchy has made this manifest, not Prime Creator. Prime Creator is not beholden to any law nor does IT operate in conjunction with any other force or power. IT is truly sovereign and ubiquitous simultaneously, and thus, Unique. IT is not hidden or wary

of life in any way. IT simply is Unique, and therefore, incomprehensible except through the vibration encoded within all life.

The other faces of God have been created so the human instrument can fathom Prime Creator and crystallize an image of this Unique Being sufficient to progress through the Hierarchy and access the Sovereign Integral perspective. Nevertheless, what you hold as God, is not Prime Creator, but a facet of Prime Creator developed by the Hierarchy as a comprehensible interpretation of Prime Creator. We must tell you that these "interpretations" have been exceedingly inadequate in their portrayal.

Because Prime Creator is Unique unto all creation, IT is indescribable, unfathomable, and incomprehensible other than through the tone-vibration of equality stored in the entity level of the human instrument and accessible through the core expression of the entity. Until there is a sufficient number of individuals who operate from the Sovereign Integral consciousness, the genetic mind will make access to this vibration difficult to achieve.

### **The Genetic Mind**

The genetic mind is the equivalent of a universal belief system that penetrates, to varying degrees, the human instrument of all entities. In some, it immobilizes their ability to think original thoughts and feel original feelings. In most, it entrains their belief system to harmonize with the accepted belief systems of the Hierarchy. In a few, it exerts no significant force nor has any bearing on the development of their personal belief system.

There are those on terra-earth who are in training to be Sovereign Entities and are completely unaware of this training as well as their destiny. When they are able to become timeless and view the continuum of their lifestream, they will see the thread that has differentiated them as Sovereign Entities. They will understand how the hardships and supposed indifference of the universe were actually the catalysts for their emergence as designers of the new genetic mind.

The genetic mind is different from the subconscious or universal mind as it is sometimes referred to in your psychology texts, in that the genetic mind has a peculiar focus on the accumulated beliefs of all the people on a planet from its most distant past to its present time. These accumulated beliefs are actually manipulations of the Hierarchy, which imprint on the genetic mind in order to cast the boundaries of what is acceptable to believe.

So compelling is this manipulation and the boundaries that are imposed by the Hierarchy that virtually no one is aware of the manipulations of their beliefs. This is precisely why the WingMakers have interacted with your species from the very beginning. As culture bearers, we stretch your boundaries in the arena of science, art, and philosophy. We essentially expand the genetic mind's "perimeter fence" and enable it to encompass a larger portion of the "land" known as Source Reality.

If we were to tell you about the fundamental misconceptions of your genetic mind, you would not believe us. You would most definitely-even your most accomplished spiritual leaders-find us in contempt of much that you hold true and reasonable. You would feel

fear in the face of our expression of Source Reality because it would be so clear to you how you have squandered your divine natures in favor of the entrapment of the genetic mind.

We know this will seem like a judgment of your beliefs, and it is to some degree, but you must know this about your belief systems: they are largely disconnected from Source Reality. They are like threads of a web that have become disconnected from the "branches" of Source Reality by the "winds" of the Hierarchy. Source Reality is represented in your belief in unconditional love, but of all the dimensions of your belief systems, this is the one thread that is connected-through the genetic mind-to Source Reality.

All of the other dimensions are connected to the genetic mind and have no ongoing connection to Source Reality. The genetic mind, as an intermediary and reflection of Source Reality, is completely and utterly inept. This is all part of the primal blueprint that designs the evolutionary pathway of a species through time. The genetic mind acts as a buffer for the developing species to experience separation from Source Reality. In this way, the human instrument is appropriately entangled in time, space, and the illusions of a disempowered belief system.

These factors, as disorienting as they are to the entity, are precisely what attract the entity to terra-earth. There are very few planetary systems in the multiverse that provide a better sense of separation from Source Reality than that which is experienced on terra-earth. By amplifying the sense of separation, the entity can experience more fully the individuated essence that is

unique and bears the resemblance of Prime Creator as a Unique Being. This is what draws entities to this world to incarnate within a human instrument.

So the genetic mind is an enabling force to experience separation on the one hand, and a disabling force to understand the true characteristics of Source Reality on the other. This dichotomy, when understood, helps to disentangle the human instrument and its entity consciousness from the limiting aspects of the genetic mind and its principle author, the Hierarchy.

Over the next twenty years, the genetic mind will become increasingly fragmented and thus, vulnerable to modification. This will be an effect of the growing ubiquity of intelligent networks and artificial intelligence therein. The expanding interconnection of intelligent networks has a significant impact on the genetic mind because of the emergence of a global culture that accompanies the arrival of such technologies.

### **OLIN Technology**

Intelligent networks are able to operate from a single language with translation interfaces that enable global intercourse. This means language is no longer a barrier to communication. Intelligent networks will introduce a meta-language that translates both real-time written and spoken applications. It will revolutionize the genetic mind's global construct, and facilitate the digitalization of your global economy.

There will be many within the Hierarchy, who will object vehemently to the notion of a global, digital economy, but we will tell you, it will happen regardless of

the complaints and registered concerns. Your most powerful banks, computer manufacturers, and software companies will merge to create this momentous technology, and the One Language Intelligent Network (OLIN) will become the standard operating system of all the world's computer-based systems.

This will not occur until the year 2008, so it is some time before you will encounter this globalization of your economy, but all of the systems and architecture are already being designed and conceptualized in the minds of some of your brightest engineers and scientists. We assure you, this is not something to be feared, but rather embraced, and not because of the economic values, but because of the way the OLIN technology will facilitate the development of a global culture.

As the OLIN technology evolves, it will increasingly become subject to individual control. In other words, individuals will become inextricably linked into the network's entertainment and educational applications, which will become globalized. No longer will global media companies publish for a geographical market. They will produce content for a global audience and each individual will define what and how it desires to be entertained or educated.

The OLIN technology will "know" the preferences and interests of every individual linked to its network, and by the year 2016, it will be more ubiquitous than telephones in the late 20th century. Hence, the network will be controlled by individuals, and producers of content and services will be the "slave" or reactionary force of the individual. Thus, the individual will need to define their



entertainment and educational desires carefully, or the OLIN technology will deliver content that is undesirable.

We know this sounds obvious and trite, but it is profoundly different than the way entertainment and education are delivered in your world of the pre-OLIN technology. The time capsules that the WingMakers have left behind will act as a template to those who operate outside of the limiting force of the genetic mind, and desire to create content for the OLIN technology even before it exists. The time capsules will show how to do this and demonstrate how to create multi-dimensional content that carries its viewer-participant into new corridors of understanding and illumination.

This is how the genetic mind will fragment and become unable to exert a unified force upon the human instruments of terra-earth. When it is in this condition it will yield to the transformation / mastership model of existence and form a synthesis with it. It will transform itself, and the genetic mind will become the leader of transformation for entities upon terra-earth instead of its barrier force.

### **Sovereign Integral Network**

The Sovereign Integral Network (SIN) already exists, indeed, has always existed. However, there has not been a way for it to connect or interface with your technologies. Terra-earth has created technologies that are largely mechanistic and electrical in nature, and it is just beginning to understand electromagnetic energy fields and holographic technology. Regrettably, when technologies are in their infantile stages of development, they are very often conformed to a military or economic control

application. And this is the case with these emerging technologies.

SIN cannot interface with technologies bearing such an application. Not because it is impossible technologically, but because it is undesirable ethically. SIN is actually a sub-atomic network of light-encoded filaments that exist in all dimensions of the multiverse. Think of SIN as an infinite number of threads of light issuing from Source Reality, and, like a web, connecting every life form at its entity level to all other entities and Prime Creator. This is an organic network that is utilized by Prime Creator to transmit knowledge to entities and to receive knowledge from entities.

SIN will eventually be interfaced with OLIN technology, but this will not happen for several hundred years. The interface is too far beyond both your technology and understanding of cosmology, and no planetary system can be fitted to interface with SIN until it is absolutely pure in its content and application. Only Prime Creator makes this decision as to when a planetary system can become a node on SIN. This is the core purpose of WingMakers, to help terra-earth become a node on SIN before its opportunity to interface has past.

Each entity is a node of SIN, but so few realize this connection exists other than through what they read or hear. The connection is real and timeless, and occurs at the core, innermost aspect of the entity where beats the replica heart of Prime Creator. This is the repository of Prime Creator and exudes ITS Unique vibration like a radio tower sends its signals in all directions.

Even your physicists have found preliminary evidence of SIN in their research with their so-called super string theory. We assure you, however, that this network will eventually replace all other networks for the primary reason that it is the conduit into timelessness. And this is the destination that draws all humanoid species, initially, through a technological portal similar to your Internet, which eventually leads to a biomorphic portal consisting of the encoded light filaments leading to the non-worlds of Source Reality.

When a human species transforms its genetic mind to utilize the Sovereign Integral Network, this then becomes the "ship" upon which it sails the seas of the cosmos. And in this way, the species is allowed to become "Gods" of newly created worlds in which it can re-enact the entire process of the Grand Experiment utilizing its knowledge base and wisdom that was achieved in the previous stage of its existence. On a grand scale, this process is cast in countless worlds across the multiverse, and orchestrating all of this wondrous activity of creation is Source Intelligence and SIN.

### **Source Intelligence**

Source Intelligence is the energy-consciousness of Prime Creator that is cast into all worlds, all dimensions, all realities, all life forms, all times and places. Source Intelligence is the Prime Creator projected into all that is. Source Intelligence, in effect, is the "eyes and ears" of Prime Creator, and its role is principally involved in expressing, upholding, and sustaining the will of Prime Creator. On a more personal level, it is a liberating force of energy-intelligence that serves to accelerate the expansion

of consciousness and assist those who desire to unlimit themselves.

### **All That Is**

Source Intelligence is the projected intelligence of Prime Creator. Within this consciousness exists the synthesis and distillation of All That Is. It is an infinite library of knowledge and experience that can be tapped into through attunement and creative will. While Source Intelligence is the vehicle of cosmological unity, it also holds the information of All That Is and "circulates" this information and creative empowerment to all entities who are willing to reach for it and utilize it for the expansion of consciousness.

### **Universe of Wholeness**

The Universe of Wholeness is the aggregate of all dimensions and realities. It is unified and inter-connected through Source Intelligence. It is dynamic and always in a state of experimental change and evolution. It is simply too vast and dynamic to comprehend or to establish a measurement of any kind.

### **Fields of Vibration**

The Universe of Wholeness is a vast field of energy that is composed of innumerable dimensions of perception and existence. Within this macro-universe are dimensions of existence that are dominant realms of experience like the third-dimensional reality in which human life is rooted. Each dimension has its unique qualities of experience and these are known as fields of vibration because the vibratory rate of each dimension is the determining factor

of its existence. The higher the vibratory rate of a dimension, the more expansive and unlimiting it is. Within the Universe of Wholeness there are, for all practical purposes, an infinite number of fields of vibration that an entity or Sovereign Integral can attune to and utilize as a experiential or dominant reality.

### **Source Reality**

Prime Creator exists in Source Reality. Source Reality is the dimension of consciousness that is always pushing the envelope of expansion – the leading edge of development and evolution for the whole of consciousness. In this realm of dynamic expansion is always found Source Reality. It can be likened to the inner sanctum of Prime Creator or the incubator of cosmological expansion.

### **Sovereignty**

Sovereignty is a state of completeness and interconnectedness. It is recognizing that as a human being you have an individuated spirit force that animates your physical, emotional, and mental aspects, and that through this spirit you are complete and connected to all other life forms through the Universal Spirit Consciousness (Source Intelligence). Sovereign beings understand that they alone create their reality and that they are responsible for their life-experience. They also understand that all other life forms are equally sovereign and that they also create their unique realities. Sovereignty allows that the source of liberating information is contained within the Self, and all that is needed to create new realities is also contained within the Self. It is the point of empowerment and connection to all through the frequency of love.

## **Source Codes**

Source Codes are imbedded "activators" that are present within the entity consciousness. They serve the specific purpose of awakening the human instrument to the multidimensionality of the entity and the liberating information that is stored within the entity consciousness. Source Codes are somewhat analogous to the genetic coding of DNA to the extent that Source Codes activate specific blueprints of transformation that accelerate and facilitate the expansion of consciousness. In effect, Source Codes catalyze the awakening of the human instrument and encourage it to make the quantum leap from a socialized human to a sovereign entity that is aware of its connection to All That Is.

## **Hierarchy**

The Hierarchy extends throughout the cosmos to the very borders of discovery. It has branches that extend from every star system, every dimension; and virtually all life forms are "leaves" of this cosmological tree. The Hierarchy constitutes the grand indoctrination of species, spirits, planets, and stars as they each evolve through the branches of the tree. It is an assemblage of externals that desire to invest their energies in support of a sub-group that has nested somewhere within the greatest of all structures: the Hierarchy. Service is the operational motive of the Hierarchy, and in most cases, this translates into the concept of saviorship.

The Hierarchy is composed of entities of all motives that have linked their energies into subgroups. Think of these subgroups as independent branches of a vast,

cosmological tree – a structure that encompasses all things outside of Source Reality. The roots of the tree are bound in the soil of genetic memory and subconscious identity. At the base of the tree the first branches sprout and they are the oldest, representing the native religions of the specie. The middle branches are the orthodox religions and institutions, while the upper branches represent the contemporary belief systems that are newly emerging throughout the universe. The whole tree, in this definition, is the Hierarchy, and its purpose is to advance the evolution of life through a superstructure that results in the teacher / student ordering of the universe.

Prime Creator is connected to individuals not organizations. Thus, the Hierarchy is unconnected to the Source in a vital and dynamic way. The Hierarchy is more connected to its own collective desire to help, to serve, to perform a function that allows the use of power in a positive way. In itself, this is not wrong or misguided. It is all part of the Primal Blueprint that orchestrates the unfoldment of consciousness from collective to individual and individual to collective. This is the spiral of integration that breeds wholeness and perfection within the Source Intelligence.

### **Wholeness Perspective**

The human instrument, because it is fragmented and limited to five-senses, truly desires the Wholeness Perspective; a way to absorb life experience, process it, and move on to the next thing with grace and ease. This is what is desired, no matter what name is used to describe it. Wholeness is accepting all realities and moving through them with a feeling of integration, unity, equality, and

non-judgment. It means there are no dualities that are real. It means that all experience is equal and grounded in the transcendent reality of the One That Is All. And most importantly, it means that the One That Is All is you, me, him, her, it, that, and those. Nothing is excluded or rejected.

### **Wholeness Navigator**

Theories of evolution are layered upon your existing paradigm of a mechanical universe that consists of molecular machines operating in an objective reality that is knowable with the right instruments. The universe is truly unknowable with any instrument save your own sense of unity and wholeness. The perception of wholeness is forever unfolding in the human instrument because the culture of the multidimensional universe is rooted in unity.

Plants have root systems that penetrate earth and drink of her substance. In this way, all plants are linked. Imagine that each plant had a secret root that was invisible, but was nonetheless connected to the very center of the planet. At this point of convergence, every plant was indeed unified and aware that its real identity was this core system of interconnected roots, and that the secret root was the lifeline through which individual expression was brought to the surface of earth and its unified consciousness released as the fragrance of individuality. In this same way, all existence has a secret root that spirals into the uncharted realm of Prime Creator. This is the field of unity that defines the culture of the multidimensional universe.

All human life is embedded with a Wholeness Navigator. It is the core wisdom. It draws the human



instrument to perceive fragmentary existence as a passageway into wholeness and unity. The Wholeness Navigator pursues wholeness above all else, yet it is often blown off course by the energies of structure, polarity, linear time, and separatist cultures that dominate terra-earth. The Wholeness Navigator is the heart of the entity consciousness, and it knows that the secret root exists even though it may be intangible to the human senses. It is this very condition of accepting the interconnectedness of life that places spiritual growth as a priority in one's life.

The five senses of the human body feed only a small part of an individual's wholeness. Yet the human instrument clings to these five senses as though they were the only pathways of experience. The seed vision of the Wholeness Navigator is equal to Prime Creator. It is a replica of Prime Creator vibrating precisely at the same frequency and capable of the same feats of consciousness. And the numberless secret roots that supply Prime Creator with insight, experience, intelligence, and perspective can be accessed, but not through the five senses which are designed for your ego consciousness.

The preceptors of the Wholeness Navigator consist primarily of the secret root. This is the subtle carrier of information that leads you to see the One That Is All and the All That Is One. This is a facet of Prime Creator that is made manifest in the human instrument as a means of attracting the human instrument to the life of the Sovereign Integral consciousness. Let the secret root and the Wholeness Navigator guide you, and let the five senses be expressionary tools of the entity, rather than collectors of separatist thought for the human instrument.

How do you access the secret root? Its portal of observation can be broadly defined as the integral awareness. This is allowing yourself to be aware of how you are integrated to life outside of your physical body. It is the feeling and perception that you are a holographic entity that is woven throughout all things and time, and when you touch into this feeling, you recall a frequency of your consciousness that is the Wholeness Navigator – the mysterious Allness that is nurtured by the secret root.

This is not a state of being that the human instrument will attain. Rather, it is a feeling of oneness and wholeness that the human instrument can glimpse momentarily and, as a result, transform its understanding of its purpose. The Wholeness Navigator pulls the human instrument into alignment with the entity consciousness where it can view its role as an extension of the entity consciousness into terra-earth, and the entity consciousness as an extension of the human instrument into Source Reality.

### **Evolution and the Concept of Time**

When an individual evolves in consciousness it is quite different from the evolutionary process in terms of the physical body. For example, an individual can make a quantum leap in consciousness within a single moment in time, while in contrast, the physical body is gradually shaped over thousands of years. Thus, the entity transforms through a process of remembrance, while the human instrument – particularly the physical body – evolves through experience in vast stretches of linear time.

The individuated consciousness of the entity is the fragment of Prime Creator that is seeking to be

remembered within the human instrument. It lives in an eternal state of nowness and represents the continuity of time and consciousness across all dimensions of reality. In other words, all dimensions of time are simultaneously experienced by the entity consciousness, however, upon terra-earth, the human instrument is usually only conscious of one dimension of time, typically calibrated in linear seconds.

This is why time plays such a significant role in the evolution of three- and four-dimensional structures like the human instrument, but has very little influence on the transformation of consciousness itself. The human instrument is grounded in a physical body that is constantly being shaped by experience, emotion, and thought, all of which is self-created. On the other hand, the entity consciousness is the multidimensional Self. It is the union of all the different aspects of consciousness that are invested within the time / space universes through instruments of contact; be they human or otherwise.

The entity may simultaneously inhabit a thousand human instruments spread across 200,000 years of linear time. To the human instrument of a specific time period, it will seem to be the one and only existence, but to the entity, all of its lives are occurring in nowness. The entity consciousness is the "hub" around which its various human instruments connect in to like spokes of a wheel. And the outer rim of the wheel is represented as circular time within the dimensions of planetary life.

All of the "spokes", or time-based lives, are linked together at the entity consciousness where they converge into non-time. From the entity consciousness, through the

portal of the Wholeness Navigator, this same experience is transmitted to Prime Creator, processed by Source Intelligence, and returned to the entity consciousness as a form of energy that enlarges the entity's perspective on matters of destiny, existence, and purpose. It is virtually impossible to express this interrelationship between Prime Creator, Source Intelligence, the entity, the human instrument, and time. Time makes it possible to segment this knowledge into fragments that can be shared between individual human instruments.

The human instrument is a composite of mental, emotional, and physical capabilities linked together to form a vehicle for the entity consciousness to experience planetary life. The human instrument evolves to better fit the needs of the entity. The entity transforms from a pure vibratory, individualized expression of Prime Creator, to a Sovereign Integral who has created its own experiential reality, and re-defined itself by the planetary experiences therein.

Eternity, while it may seem to exclude time, is nonetheless a form of absolute time that is not isolated into a sovereign reality, but instead, integrated in all realities like a thread of light that draws the disparate realities into union. In this dimension of union – where the entity consciousness is whole and all realities converge – time is articulated not by the linear progression of seconds, but rather, by the expansion of the vibration of equality or love. Thus, in eternity, time is simply re-defined by a new value system upon which entities establish and recognize their growth.

## **Models of Existence**

There are two dominant models of existence that shape the interaction and destiny of the human race. These models of existence are:

The Evolution / Saviorship model

The Transformation / Mastership model

Each human is developing their belief system from one or both of these models of existence. The evolution / saviorship model is the dominant model that is promulgated by the Hierarchy. Its basic tenets are that life evolves through the Hierarchy's teacher / student methodology, and that various teachers (saviors) are presented to the human race that enable sub-hierarchies to develop and control information. In so doing, individuals are disempowered and disconnected from their sovereignty. The underlying equation of the evolution / saviorship model of existence is:

human instrument + Hierarchy = God connection through saviorship.

In the case of the transformation / mastership model of existence, its principle tenets are that the entity is limitless, deathless, and sovereign. All information flows from Source Intelligence to the entity, and, it is therefore the responsibility of the entity to become self-enlightened and self-liberated by attuning itself to Source Intelligence and "detuning" itself from the Hierarchy. Each becomes their own master, and each transforms from a human being to a Sovereign Integral within the cradle of time and space.

The underlying equation of the transformation / mastership model of existence is:

Entity + Source Intelligence = Prime Creator equality.

One of the challenges of the individual is to recognize these two dominant models of existence and integrate them in order to design a synthesis model. The synthesis model is slowly emerging on terra-earth, and with high probability, will ultimately become the dominant model of existence in this universe. It will be the model of existence that is best able to unify consciousness without impinging on the sovereignty of the entity and Prime Creator. It will allow the entity to be the vibrant container of Source Intelligence and explore new fields of vibration as a fully conscious outpost of Prime Creator.

# THE WINGMAKER'S POETRY

## CHAMBER 1



### Compassion

Angels must be confused by war.  
Both sides praying for protection,  
yet someone always gets hurt.

Someone dies.

Someone cries so deep  
they lose their watery state.

Angels must be confused by war.

Who can they help?

Who can they clarify?

Whose mercy do they cast to the merciless?

No modest scream can be heard.

No stainless pain can be felt.

All is clear to angels  
except in war.

When I awoke to this truth  
it was from a dream I had last night.  
I saw two angels conversing in a field  
of children's spirits rising like silver smoke.  
The angels were fighting among themselves  
about which side was right  
and which was wrong.  
Who started the conflict?

Suddenly, the angels stilled themselves  
like a stalled pendulum,  
and they shed their compassion  
to the rising smoke  
of souls who bore the watermark of war.  
They turned to me with those eyes  
from God's library,  
and all the pieces fallen  
were raised in unison,  
coupled like the breath  
of flames in a holy furnace.

Nothing in war comes to destruction,  
but the illusion of separateness.  
I heard this spoken so clearly I could only  
write it down like a forged signature.  
I remember the compassion,  
mountainous, proportioned for the universe.  
I think a tiny fleck still sticks to me  
like gossamer threads  
from a spider's web.



And now, when I think of war,  
I flick these threads to all the universe  
hoping they stick on others as they did me.  
Knitting angels and animals  
to the filamental grace of compassion.  
The reticulum of our skyward home.

### **Listening**

I am listening for a sound beyond sound  
that stalks the nightland of my dreams,  
entering rooms of fossil-light  
so ancient they are swarmed by truth.

I am listening for a sound beyond us  
that travels the spine's  
invisible ladder to the orphic library.  
Where rebel books revel in the unremitting light.  
Printed in gray, tiny words with quicksand depth  
embroidered with such care they  
render spirit a ghost, and God,  
a telescope turned backwards upon itself  
dreaming us awake.

Never-blooming thoughts surround me  
like a regatta of crewless ships.

I listen leopard-like,  
canting off the quarantine of bodies  
sickened by the monsoon of still hearts.

There is certain magic  
in the heartbeat which crowds the sound I seek,  
but it is still underneath the beating I wish to go.  
Underneath the sound of all things

huddled against the tracking dishes  
that turn their heads to the sound of stars.

I am listening for a sound unwound,  
so vacant it stares straight with the purity to peer  
into the black madness of time  
sowing visions that oscillate in our wombs  
bearing radiant forms as the substrate of our form.

When I look to the compass needle  
I see a blade of humility  
bent to a force waylaid like wild rain  
channeled in sewer pipes.  
Running underground  
in concrete canals that quiver,  
laughing up at us as though we were lost  
in the sky-world with no channel for our ride.

I am listening for a sound  
in your voice,  
past the scrub terrain of your door  
where my ear is listening on the other side.  
Beneath your heart where words go awkward  
and light consumes the delicate construction of mingled  
lives.

I can only listen for the sound I know is there,  
glittering in that unpronounceable, stateless state  
quarried of limbs so innocent  
they mend the flesh of hearts.

## CHAMBER 2



### The Language of Innocence

When a river is frozen,  
underneath remains a current.  
When the sky is absent of color  
beneath the globe another world comes to light.  
When my heart is alone  
somewhere another heart beats my name  
in code that only paradise can hear.

Is my heart deaf  
or is there no one  
who can speak the language of innocence?  
Innocence, when words  
suffer meaning and gallop away in its presence.

I have seen it.  
Felt it.  
I have loosened its secrets in the blushing skin  
when upturned eyes witness its home  
and never turn away.  
And never turn away.

There is this world  
of slumbering hearts and hollow love,  
but it cannot carry me to daylight.  
My craving is so different  
and it can never be turned away.

### **Temptress Vision**

A temptress vision has encircled me like a  
willful shadow of a slumbering dream.  
Is it the powerful light of purpose?  
If I squint with all my strength I may see it.  
Always must it be inside of me  
like a pilot fish inseparable from its host.  
It fearlessly drinks my essence.  
Such a bitter taste I muse.  
Spit it out upon your table of perfection.  
Compare this grain of sand with your galaxy.  
This spire of sorrow with your deepest eye.  
If my callous mind can see you,  
there are no interventions.  
No pathway away.  
Convergence.  
  
I am a lock-picker.  
A tunnel-digger.

A fence-cutter of the wicked watchers.  
A traveler that has sought  
the mystery that alludes all but the outlaws.  
The wild-eyed, unrelenting fools of purpose  
that remain outside the laboratory of wingless flight.

You are the eternal Watcher  
who lives behind the veil of form and comprehension,  
drawing forth the wisdom of time  
from the well of planets.  
You cast your spell and entrain all that I am.  
Am I just a fragment of your world?  
A memory hidden by time?  
A finger of your hand driven by a mind  
unfamiliar with skin.  
Touch yourself and you sense me.  
Visions wild with love.  
Splendor that beckons like a secret whisper of gladness  
spread on the winds by an infinite voice.  
The sound of all things unified.  
I am part of that voice.  
Part of that sound.  
Part of that secret whisper of gladness.  
  
This limitation must end in lucid flesh.  
The dream of sparks ascending  
quicken the cast of hope.  
Avoid the brand of passivity  
the signs complain.  
Shun manipulation before you are stained.  
Spurn all formula and write new equations  
in the language of sand.

Heed no other,  
nor listen to the seduction of holy symbols  
standing before the windows of truth.  
Define from a foreign tongue.

These are the battered keys  
that have led me to unlocked doors.  
Doors that collapse at a mere breath  
and behind which  
lay more pieces to collect for the Holy Menagerie.  
The never-ending puzzle.

All the stars in the sky  
recall the purpose of your hallowed light.  
Burn a hole through the layers.  
Peel all the mockery away.  
Enjoin the powers  
to answer this call:  
Bring the luminous vision  
hidden behind the whirling particles  
of the Mapmaker.  
Let it enter me  
like a shaft of light that enters a cave's deepest measure.  
Ancient fires still burn in these depths.  
Who tends them?  
What eyes are watching?  
Waiting.  
Waiting for time's flower to bloom.  
To submerge in the relentless subtlety  
that moves beyond my reach  
with a jaguar's stealth.  
To dream of elder ways

that leap over time  
and leave behind the puzzle of our making.

O' temptress vision  
you steal my hunger for human light.  
If there is anything left to hollow  
let it be me.  
If there is anything left to cage  
let it run free.  
If there is anything left to dream  
let it be our union.

## CHAMBER 3



### **Bandages of the Beast**

There were many random omens.  
Sending olive branches with thorns was  
only one of your repertoire.  
You offered me a book  
where all the answers lay encoded in  
some strange dialect.  
Symbols undulating like serpents restless for food.

If I was windborne as a lambent seed you  
would still the air  
and I would fall into the thicket.  
If I yearned for sweet water  
you would pass me the bitter cup.  
If I was an injured fawn you would flush me  
from the cloister, corner me against cold stone,  
and admire my fear.



Everywhere I steer I seek the one look of love;  
yet love humbles itself like a mannequin  
changing its clothes to accommodate the dressmaker.  
Underneath there are bandages of the beast.  
Underneath there is the tourniquet of deliverance.  
But beneath the shell there is emptiness, so defiant  
it is clothed in finery that neither  
dressmaker nor beast can touch.

You have mistaken my search as my soul.  
Raking through it for clumps of wisdom,  
you have found only what I have lost to you.  
Held like rootless dreams  
I will vanish in your touch.

If you pass your rake over this emptiness  
you will feel clumps of my spirit.  
You will find me like tiny pieces of mirror broken  
apart yet still collected in one spot.  
Still staring ever skyward.  
Still reflecting one mosaic image.  
Still the accompanist of myself.

### **Half Mine**

When I see your face I know you are half mine  
separated by the utmost care to remember all of you.  
When I undress my body I see that I am half yours  
blurred by sudden flight that leaves  
the eye wondering what angels carved in their hearts  
to remind them so vividly of their home.

When I see your beauty I know you are half mine  
never to be held in a polished mirror  
knowing the faithful hunger of our soul.

When I watch your eyes I know they are half mine  
tracing a trajectory where sensual virtue is the very spine  
of us.

When I hold your hand I know it is half mine  
wintered in kinship, it circles tenderness  
beneath the moon and well of water when the feast is  
done.

When I kiss your lips I know they are half mine  
sent by God's genealogy to uncover us  
in the delicious cauldron of our united breath.

When I hear you cry I know your loneliness is half mine  
so deep the interior that we are lost outside  
yearning to give ourselves away  
like a promise made before the asking.

And when I look to your past I know it is half mine  
running to the choke cherry trees  
invisible to the entire universe we found ourselves  
laughing in sudden flight  
eyeing the carved initials in our hearts.  
Sparing the trees.

## CHAMBER 4



### Missing

Facing another evening without you  
I am torn from myself  
in movements of clouds,  
movements of earth spinning  
like the sure movement of lava as it rolls to sea.  
Yet when I arrive  
you are still gone from me  
23 footsteps away;  
a cluster of punishment.  
A bouquet of the abyss.

When I look to the east I think of you  
softly waiting for the vines to abdicate

their portion of your heart.  
So you can be chiseled out of the matrix  
with smooth hammer strokes  
from my hands.  
Freed of the coal, the black rot  
of untouched shoulders,  
you can open your eyes again  
flashing the iridescent animals,  
valiant vibrations of your rich spirit.

Centerpiece of my table  
I stare at you in candlelight,  
the windows behind, black in their immensity,  
only enlarge you.  
Making you more of what I miss.  
The procession of prophecies  
has entered me again  
casting doubt in my mind like rain  
on dead leaves.

I go among your body  
to feel the presence of your heart beating  
something golden spun from another world.  
You cannot feel me.  
I am invisible in all ways to you, but one.  
A reflection in the mirror.  
Beneath your eyes  
you see me dancing away the body.  
Dancing away the mind.  
Dancing away the incarnations  
of my absence.

## **One Day**

One day,  
out of this fleshy cocoon  
I will rise like a golden bird of silent wing  
graceful as the smoke of a fallen flame.  
I will dream no more of places  
hidden – secreted away in heaven's cleft  
where the foot leaves no print.

One day,  
I will walk in gardens holding hands  
with my creation and creator.  
We will touch one another  
like lovers torn by death  
to say goodbye.  
We will lay in one another's arms  
until we awaken as one  
invisible to the other.

One day,  
I will isolate the part of me  
that is always present.  
I will dance with it  
like moonlight on water.  
I will hold it to myself in a longful embrace  
that beats perfection  
in the hymn of the Songkeeper.

One day,  
when I curl away inside myself  
I will dream of you  
this flesh-covered-bone of animal.  
I will yearn to know your life again.

I will reach out to you  
as you now reach out to me.  
Such magic!  
Glory to covet the unknown!  
That which is  
is always reaching for the self  
that cheats appearances.  
Who dreams itself awake and asleep.  
Who knows both sides of the canvas  
are painted, awaiting the other  
to meld anew.

## CHAMBER 5



### Another

One skin may hide another,  
I remember this from a poem when I  
launched a fire across a field of deadness.

At least, to me, it seemed dead.

I felt like a liberator of life force  
renewing the blistered and dying grasses.

Actually, more weeds than grass,  
but nonetheless, the flora had flat-lined.

I peeled back skin with holy flame  
and brought everything to black again  
as though I called the night to descend.

From blackness will arise a new skin  
crested green architecture from a fertile void.

As the flames spread their inviolable enchantment  
I saw your face spreading across my mind.  
Remember the fire we held?  
I hoped it would unfurl a new skin  
for us as well.  
I still hold this hope.  
Forever it will roam inside me  
invariant to all transformations and motions.

One person may hide another,  
but behind you, love is molting a thicker skin  
than I can see through.  
No flame can touch its center.  
No eyes can browse its memory.  
I want nothing behind you in wait.  
Seconds tick away like children growing  
in between photographs.  
I will not forget you in the changes.  
Cursed with memory so fine  
I can trace your palm.  
I can inhale your sweet breath.  
I can linger in your arms' weight.  
I can hear your exquisite voice  
calibrate life with celestial precision.

One purpose may hide another.  
I heard this as the fire died out  
to reveal the scent of the wet earth  
and growing things.  
I could feel my love decompose  
returning to the uninhabited realm  
where it belongs.  
Where all hearts belong when



love is lost, and the code of the mute,  
coiled in fists that pound,  
reveal the wisdom of another.

### **Life Carriers**

Life carriers spawn in the primal waters  
of a giant embryo.  
Their progeny will settle in human dust.

Pieces of clay  
with tiny thoughts of flight.  
Knife-points veiled in turbid cloaks  
that shun the light of a tranquil star.

In the remote wilds the life carriers  
emerge and perch upon  
the shoulders of gray stones.  
They signal their desires to fly,  
but their homes are suited  
for the comforts of rain and earth.  
The sky must wait.  
(The dirt companion smiles.)

Circles break.  
Barriers overrun.  
Life carriers deny their ancient pull  
from the ground.  
Wings sprout like golden hair  
sinuous with nature's artifice.  
Ragged feet are left behind.  
The earth replaced with vivid sky.  
Gravity shines its menacing stare

to hold them  
with assertive hands.

Homeless cages  
are left to rot.

To sink behind the groundless sky.  
Earthen faces have dropped their smiles  
and lost their smell of fresh dirt.

The dream of flight  
has invaded somber walls –  
life carriers have bounded  
to the other side.

There they meet the next rung  
of the endless ladder,  
and trade their wings for wisdom's eye.

## CHAMBER 6



### Imperishable

Through this night I have slept little.  
My eyes, closed like shutters  
with slats that remain open,  
wait to invent dreams  
of some charred reality.  
I sense you, but no weight on my bed.  
No shift or creaking other  
than my own restlessness.

Wandering words  
self-gathered, self-formed,  
and released to the night  
like a mantra slowly drowned in music.  
Your presence grew with the music  
devouring it in silence.

You came to me so clear  
my senses aroused in electric storms of clarity.

The buzz of mercury lamps  
alongside rutted roads,  
shedding their weightless light.

In all of this waiting for you  
no fortress or foxhole bears my name.

I lay on the Savannah  
staring at the sun hoping against hope  
it blinks before I do.

My wounded cells,  
tiny temples of our mixture,  
have weakened in your absence.  
I can feel them wail in their miniature worlds.

My feet resist their numbness,  
deny them their war.

As I lay here alone  
waiting to be gathered into your arms,  
I ask of you one thing,  
remember me as this.

Remember me as one who loves you  
beyond yourself.

Who pierces shells, armor, masks,  
and everything protecting  
your spirit in needless fervor.

Remember me as this.

As one who loves you unmatched  
by the deepest channels  
that have ever been forged.

Who will love you anywhere and always.

And if you look very closely at my love  
you will not find an expiration date,  
but instead, the word, imperishable.

### **Of This Place**

Her heart ran  
in the wilds of deserted plains.  
Sun-etched land barren of clouds  
and singing water.  
If she listened closely  
her hand would call  
and signal its thoughts upon her brow.  
But in this place  
she could only offer her arms to the sky  
like a tree its branches  
and a flower its leaves.

In this dusty basin,  
silence gathered like smoke  
clearing the mind of the scoundrel.  
The infidel of thoughts.  
Blots of yellow leaves and white bark  
could be seen hiding in pools of life  
surrounded by red rock spires.  
Clustered sand monuments held together  
by some other life form.  
She wasn't sure.  
Perhaps one life is the same as another  
only tilted sideways.  
Caught from underneath

by some invisible hand that animates  
even the coldest stone of this place.

A smile emerged and perched upon her face  
drinking the sun's clear ways.

She could spear  
a million miles of air in a glance  
and send the window of her flesh  
into the cloudless sky.

Upon this ocean a hawk sailed ever closer.

She watched the silver speck  
spiral overhead dreaming through its eyes.

Feeling the winds gild her wings  
in the softest fold of time.

A tree of pine sent its sky roots  
deep within the air to weep its sweetness.

She entered,  
gliding through branches  
to every needle in their factory of air.

So strange to feel the pull of earth in flight,  
but she knew the antagonism well  
in the splendor of this place.

She knew it had settled deep,  
lodged like permanent ink  
in the heart of her.

Under skin, muscle, bone  
it fought the single path.

What madness calls her away?  
What dream is stronger than this?  
What heart beats more pure?

Of this place,  
it is so hard to know which is host  
and which is guest.  
Which is welcome, which is pest.  
Which is found and which is lost.  
Which is profit, which is cost.

She gave her prayers  
to the skypeople and waited for a cloud –  
her signal to leave.  
She should return home  
before dusk settles in and the golden  
eyes peer out against the black code.  
In a single breath she held the ancient ways  
that never left.  
She turned them inside out  
and then outside in.  
Again and again.  
Waiting for her signals in the sky.  
If not a cloud...  
then perhaps a shooting star.  
(Besides, it was too dark for clouds anymore.)

When the first star fell she held her breath  
afraid she would miss its spectral flight.  
She wondered with whom she shared  
its final light.  
What other eyes were heaven bound  
in that secret moment?  
Was this their signal home as well?  
And what was it they found  
buried so deep in a whisper of light  
that none can tell?

She waited with solemn eyes  
for more stars to fall,  
to gently sweep her away  
from the magnets of this place.  
If she listened to her hand  
it would scratch a sign in the sand for another  
to take her place.  
It would touch the land  
in honor of its grace and wisdom,  
and become a tree, rock, hawk, or flower.



## CHAMBER 7



### Union

You are not here.  
In this moment all that exists is here.  
But you are not.  
There are so many footprints  
leading to my door.  
Let us enter, they say.  
We cannot sleep in the desert it is too cold.  
Our tears will dry too fast.  
Our ears will hurt from the silence.  
Let us in.  
And so I gather them all up,  
swing wide my door,

and step aside as they enter  
hoping they will lay in peace beside my fire.

You were not among them.  
I looked everywhere for your face  
and saw only mimicry.  
The blind eye buried behind brain  
searching for your heart.  
An antenna so alert  
there is a peculiar nearness of you  
flying inside my body.  
I can hold this like a tiny bird in my hands;  
fragile, vulnerable, waiting  
for my move to decide its fate.

You are not here.  
I wish I could reach your skin,  
remove the camouflage  
tearing it away like black paper  
held before the sun as a shield.  
Unbundle you from your other lives  
and distill you in my now.  
You are my last love,  
my final embrace of this world  
and all the others that drop their prints at my door  
are dimmed by your approaching steps.

I can see you will be here soon.  
There is victory in my heart  
and something invisible yet massive wants to speak.  
Reminding me of you and your coming.  
Quick, I plead, give me your lips.  
Give me your womanly tenderness

that understands everything  
so I may lose myself in you and forget my loss.

If you were here, I would tell you this secret.  
But you would need to be staring up at the stars  
when I told you, held within my arms  
feeling the earth rise up beneath you like a holy bed.  
You would need our union to be your ears.

### **Like the Songs of Whales**

Your voice lingers when it speaks  
like rippling heat over desert floor.  
It draws my heart and I find myself  
leaning toward its source  
as though I know it will take me  
where you always are.  
It draws me near to your breath-the spiracle that  
holds the words of home.  
It draws me to the blanket you hold  
around your soul you so willingly share.  
  
If you were to dive below the waters  
where the whales sing their songs  
into the gathering of deep currents  
that pull our courage along,  
channels that flow free of worldly levels,  
you would find me there.  
Listening to the voice I hear in you.  
Feeding my heart in the waters of deep blindness  
where currents flow  
mindful of you and your spirited ways.

Sometimes I listen so perfectly  
I hear your soft breath forming words  
before they are found by you.  
Before you can bring them from  
the deep blindness to your heart.

I wish I could take your hand  
and let it hold my heart  
so you could see what I know of you.  
So you could know  
where we live where we always are.  
And you could pull your blanket of words  
around us and I could simply listen  
to your voice  
that honors words  
like the songs of whales.

## CHAMBER 8



### **Another Mind Open**

There was a fire where smoke gathered  
and danced like rivers without gravity  
to the rattle of drums.

Sometimes I would look inside the smoke  
but it curled away and covered itself  
with a cloak so opaque I could only cry.  
It became the mask of its consumption.

The dream of its new life.  
The victorious skin always changing  
yet everlasting.

There was a fire last night  
that proclaimed news of a newer testament  
that drinks tears, lies, vile words, even

the deep fears that linger underneath  
the turncoat.

I usually lurch away when it calls.  
To me, it burns too cold  
like a skinwalker lost in a body  
devoured by time.

Sometimes I would dream it alive  
and it would blaze – a vibrant sun –  
more durable than a grave.

In times of stillness  
it would speak like a codicil of some lidless dream  
that words could not preserve.  
"The time has come to lift your gaze  
from the fire's brightness  
and cast shadows of your own."  
The words would echo into oblivion  
like stars lost in the swell of the sun's awakening.

In these flames I see my  
consumption fit and proper.  
In its smoke  
I am stored away like so many jars  
in a broom closet.  
Waiting to flee.  
Drawing my feet to oppose the floor.  
Struggling to reach the door inside these jars  
of sealed air.

Stories escape the writer's hand  
and pursue me as though I alone held their vigil.  
Their very soul.

When indeed these stories have never been told.  
They have never found words  
to hold though they ceaselessly try.

Fires blind nature.  
They invest their life in her death.  
But the end is always beginning  
toward another end.  
And the dreams of the untold  
are always pursuing another mouth,  
another hand,  
another mind open.

Sometimes I look to the errant expression of hope,  
and ask it to bring its flames deeper into my heart.  
To burn a clear sense of purpose.  
To burn away the fool's crevice  
and enshroud me in its skin of smoke.

Sometimes I offer myself to these flames  
and know they listen.  
Devising my world.  
Reality coalesces around their finery  
like a tower of glass enclothes a shell of steel.

Sometimes I feel the flames send me  
words, notes, tones.  
Enchantment.  
Products of another kind.  
Tiny crucibles of earth that burn so brightly  
they can blind the sun's creatures of whimsy.

And sometimes, without even thinking,  
I peek into these flames  
when the smoke peels away for an instant.

There, behind the mask,  
is my future.  
Our future.  
The future.  
The present in another world.  
Calling out for another mouth,  
another hand,  
another mind open.

### **Longing**

Longing, when the eyelids open  
upon the deepest stimulus held by your lips  
and the amorous kiss becomes my orbit.

I ache and long to have you with me  
so close our skin would melt together  
like two candle wicks sharing wax.

I only know that what is of soul  
is of longing and ache.

It delivers me to the edge,  
the precipice where I look down  
and see myself inextinguishable,  
longing to be consumed by you.

And in that glittering place  
let me stretch with your heart  
at full speed, blind and intent.

Let me dwell in you  
until I am so familiar with our union  
that it becomes part of my eyes.

With memory full,



we can imagine home,  
in the permanence of longing.

So much a part of the other  
that the "other" does not exist.

## CHAMBER 9



### Forever

Memory, like a root in darkness,  
piercing light with its stem has found me.

Ordering my world  
like architecture of feelings  
bound to you,  
held for you as shields of hope.

In the dispersion of love,  
identical throbbing  
has been our call  
answered in the sweetest caress two can share.  
And you wonder if ecstasy will diminish us  
like rain the sun or  
wind the calm.

When we know one another  
in the deepest channel of our hearts  
we can only utter one word  
cast from this stone's mind: forever.  
Forever.

When winter calls my name  
in the highest desert of light,  
I will not despair because I know you  
in the deepest channel of my heart  
where I understand the word, forever.  
Instantly healed by your caressing lips  
that unmask all that has tortured me.

The panting of mouths  
tired but astir in passion's flame  
can only cease when I have entered you  
forever.

I carry you in this flame,  
emerald-colored from my dreams of you  
beneath the trees within  
where your beauty consumed the sun  
and snared my soul so completely.  
I cannot truly know you apart from a throne.

Spirits made to shine beyond the din  
of boorish poets  
that strike flint below water and cry without passion.  
I have known you forever in lonely streets  
and the thundered plain.  
In wilted villages and cool mountain terraces.  
I have watched all of you  
torn open to me speaking like a river  
that moves on forever.

And I have waited  
like the greedy mouth of an ocean  
drawing you nearer to my lips  
so I can know you forever  
as you empty into me abandoned of all fear.

### **Of Luminous Things**

Of luminous things I have so little experience  
that I often think myself small.  
Yet when I think of you and your luminous ways  
my being swells with hope and prayers  
that you will permit the flames to grow.

In mercy, we are torn apart into separate worlds  
to find ourselves over and over  
a thousand times aching for the other half.  
To dream of nothing but the One between us.

Of luminous things I have squandered none  
nor have I held them to my heart and asked them  
to dissolve into me.

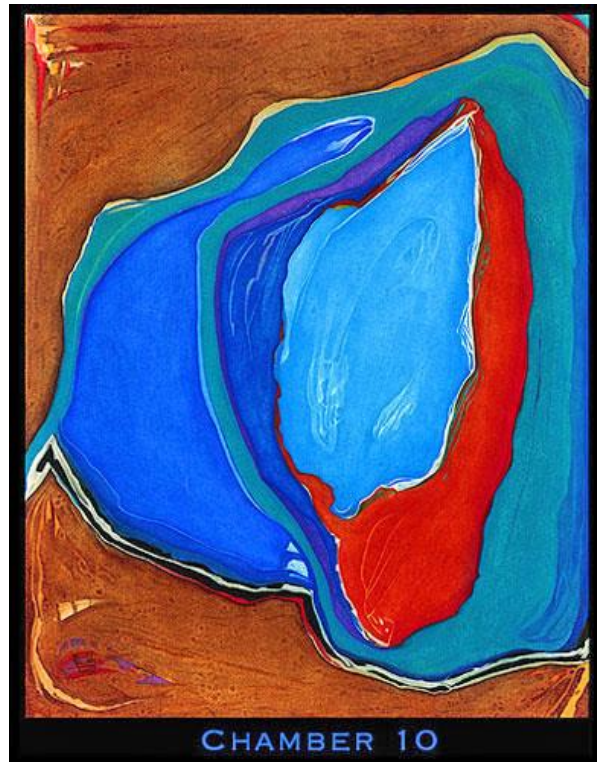
Yet when I think of you, I desire only this.  
And if you disrobed your Self and watched it  
watch you, you would see me as clearly as I am.  
Not small and unworthy.  
Unafraid of fear.

Not uncertain like empty space.  
But luminous like white light before the prism.

In my thoughts I hold your heart  
sculpting away the needless  
for the essence.

And when I find it  
I will hold it to my heart and ask it  
to dissolve into me.  
I will know of luminous things  
that hurtle through time  
bringing us the uncharted, unfathomable  
desire we have never spoken.  
Words are not curious enough to say their names.  
Only love can weep their identity,  
and I am so perfectly defenseless to its music.

## CHAMBER 10



### Downstream

Open me.  
Take me from here to there.  
Let the wind blow  
my hair and the earth's skin touch me.

Open me like broken bottles  
that bear no drink  
yet think themselves worthy of the trash man.  
Open me to the clans from which I sprout.  
Are they colors separated, cast apart  
like memories of drunkenness?  
Open me to Africa, Asia, America, Australia.  
Open me like a package

of mystery left on your doorstep  
in the sweetness of laughter.

Open me to the crudely made lens of love  
that screams to be of human hands  
and lips.

Open me to the glance  
that comforts strangers like the tender overture  
of a mourning dove.

Is the wisdom of horses mine  
to harness?

Is the muscle of wolves  
lawless or the healer of sheep?

Is the black opal of the eye  
the missing link we all seek?

Open me to the authors of this beaten path  
and let them flavor it anew.

Bring them flecks of the rumored and rotten  
slum that waits downstream.

Show them the waste of their watch.

The shallow virility that exterminates.

The ignominy that exceeds examination.

Open me to the idols of the idle.

Let me stare open mouthed at the herdsmen  
who turn innocence into fear.

Is the plan of the sniper to uncivilize  
the nerveless patch of skin  
that grows unyielding to pain?

Open me to the stains  
of this land that original sin cannot explain.

Let these symptoms go  
like dead, yellow leaves fumbling  
in swift, guiltless currents downstream.

Downstream where the slum  
lies in waiting.  
Downstream where the idols' headstones  
are half-buried in muddy rain.

Downstream where animal tracks  
are never seen.

Downstream where  
the lens of love is cleaned with red tissue.

Downstream where the herdsmen  
herd their flock and beat the drums  
promising a new river that never comes.

Downstream there lives  
a part of me that is sealed like a paper envelope  
with thick tape.

It watches the river like the underside of a bridge  
waiting to fall if the seal is broken.

To plunge into the current when I am opened  
by some unforgiving hand unseen.

To be drawn downstream  
in the gravity of a thousand minds  
who simply lost their way.

A thousand minds that twisted the river  
away from earth's sweetness  
into the mine shaft of men's greed.

So it must be.  
So it must be.



Open me to the kindness  
of a child's delicate hand when it reaches out to be held.  
Let it comfort me  
when my bridge falls and the swift, guiltless currents  
pull me downstream  
where all things forgiven are lost.  
Where all things lost are forgiven.

### **What is Found Here**

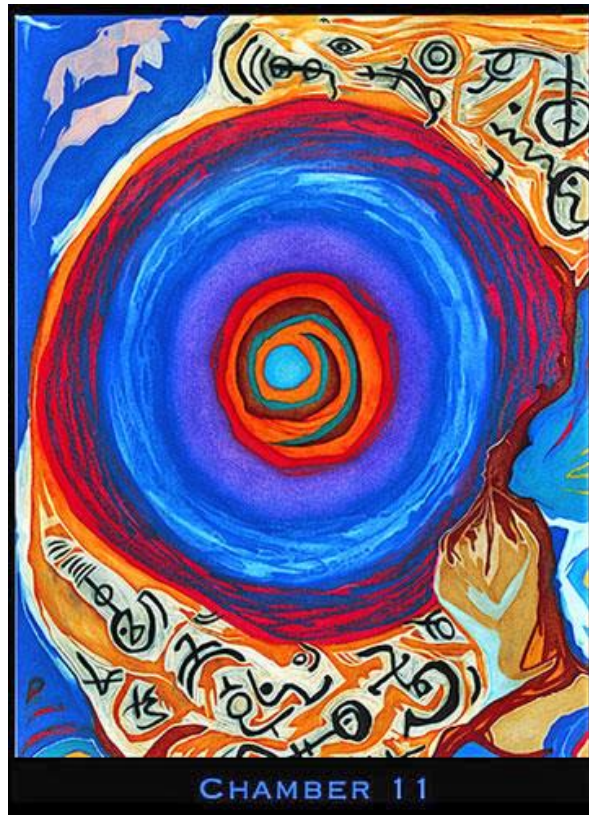
What is found here  
can never be formed of words.  
Pure forces that mingle uncomparred.  
Like dreams unspoken when first awoken  
by a sad light.

What is found here  
can limp with one foot on the curb  
and the other on the pavement  
in some uneven gait  
waiting to be hidden in laughter.

What is found here  
can open the swift drifting of curtains  
held in mountain winds  
when long shadows tumble across like juries  
of the night.

What is found here  
can always be held in glistening eyes.  
Turned by silence's tool of patience.  
Like feelings harbored for so long  
the starward view has been lost.

## CHAMBER 11



### Circle

I have found the ancient mirror  
that leads me.

I have seen its ruthless eyes  
that always stare,  
burrowing their way to the crown I wear.

I have sensed the holy fire  
like a blazing cocoon  
that offers no judgments  
amidst its power strewn.

I have felt the innocent light.  
Of clarity in flight over native land

where we are birthed apart  
from one command.

I have touched the gentle eye that outlasts me.  
The huge patience upon my brow.  
I have offered all my earthly wisdom  
for the symptoms of its tongue;  
to drop its seeds into the fields that I plow.  
I have seen destiny's path  
gathering its flock  
for the journey of endless spaces.  
I have watched futures fall with eyelids closed  
and the gnawing tears of torn places.  
I have seen the Tribe of Light  
return the clock to the black pocket  
where all divisions occur.  
Where weeds secure the humble land  
of fires unlit, yet pure.

I have heard the masters of masters speak  
to every cell of my body;  
cutting new pathways in flesh  
like fear's executioner.

I have watched the galaxies swirl  
like star wheels that spiral to the thought  
of a holy vision.

I have felt my spirit follow  
the one sound that is free.

I have vanished before.  
I have taken this body to an inner place  
where none can see.  
Only feelings can hear the sound of this space.  
This sacred place alone

has brought me here to recover the thread.  
To see the weaving dance that calls my name  
in a thousand sounds.  
That draws my spirit  
in a single, perfectly round,  
circle.

### **Awake and Waiting**

Child-like universe emerging from darkness,  
you belong to others not I.  
My home is elsewhere  
beyond the sky  
where light pollinates the fragile borders  
and gathers the husk.  
In the quiet of the desert floor  
my shell lingers in the pallid dusk  
of a starved garden.  
What holds me to this wasteland  
when others clamor for shadows  
and resist the vital waters?  
Where the ripening magnet  
holds us blind.

Far away,  
kindling the presence of a timeless world  
hunting for memories of a radiant love;  
wingless creatures  
tune their hearts to the key of silence.  
It is there I am waiting.  
Alone.

O' Paradise shore  
give me the heart to bear.  
Give me the lamp that sings at night.  
Give me the wings to strive against wind.  
Give me the smile to translate life into light.

Time obliterates the human moment.  
No one is absolved  
while beauty burns to charred ash  
too frail to last  
too secret to call.  
I will see clearly again  
past lives coarsened by time's reign.  
My light will retake its wings  
its evergreen roots will embrace the sane earth  
once again.  
And this tiny fragment,  
spinning in silence among giant orbs unseen  
will resolve my soul and help me find  
the one heart awake and waiting.

## CHAMBER 12



### Arrival

I have held a vigil for lucidity  
out in the horizonless fields where nothing shines  
but the light of my fire  
and the silver disk of the endless night.

Suddenly, it's clear that I'm alone in the wilderness  
without human eyes to reach in to.  
Alone with my treasure of sounds  
in the pure silence of arrival.

## WingMakers

I am destined to sit on the riverbank  
awaiting words from the naked trees  
and brittle flowers that have lost their nectar.

A thousand unblinking eyes  
stare out across the water  
from the other side.

Their mute voices seek rewards of another kind.  
Their demure smiles leave me hollow.

Am I a perpetual stranger to myself?  
(The thought brands me numb.)

Am I an orphan trailing pale shadows  
that lead to a contemptuous mirror?

Where are these gossamer wings that my  
destiny foretold?

I am waiting for the river to deliver them to me;  
to lodge them on the embankment  
at my feet.

My feet are shackles from another time.  
My head, a window long closed  
to another place.

Yet, there are places  
that salvage the exquisite tongue  
and assemble her wild light  
like singing birds the sun.

I have seen these places among the stillness  
of the other side.

Calling like a lover's kiss  
to know again what I have known before;  
to reach into the Harvest  
and leave my welcome.

These thoughts are folded so neatly  
they stare like glass eyes fondling the past.

I listen for their guidance  
but serpentine fields are my pathway.

When I look into the dark winds  
of the virtual heart

I can hear its voice saying:

"Why are you trapped with wings?"

And I feel like a grand vision inscribed in sand  
awaiting an endless wind.

Will these wings take me  
beneath the deepest camouflage?

Will they unmask the secret measures  
and faithful dwellings of time?

Will they search out the infinite spaces  
for the one who can define me?

Wings are forgotten by all who travel with their feet.

Lines have been drawn so many times  
that we seldom see the crossing  
of our loss though we feel the loss of our crossing.

We sense the undertow of clouds.

The gravity of sky.

The painless endeavor of hope's silent prayers.

But our wings shorn of flight  
leave us like newborn rivers that babble over rocks  
yearning for the depths of a silent sea.

I have found myself suddenly old.

Like the blackbirds that pour  
from the horizon line,

my life has soared over this river searching for my wings.

There is no other key for me to turn.



There is no other legend for me to face.  
Talking to flowers and gnarled trees  
will only move me a step away –  
when I really want to press my face against the  
windowpane  
and watch the wing makers craft my wings.

## CHAMBER 13



### My Son

My son is two.  
I watch him walk  
like a drunken prince.  
With his body bare I can see  
his soul better.  
His shoulder blades  
gesture like vestiges of wings.  
His features stenciled upon pale flesh  
by hands that have been before me.

He so wants to be like me.  
His every movement like a dusty mirror  
or awkward shadow of a bird in flight.

Every sound an echo heard.  
Every cell pregnant with my urges.  
But my urge is to be like him.  
To return to childhood's safe embrace  
and certain honor.

If I return to this place  
I hope my eyes will look again upon his face  
even until his blades are wings once more.  
Until I have circled his creaturehood  
and know every hidden cleft  
where I have left my print indelible  
unable to be consumed.  
Until all that he is  
is in me and our hands are clasped, forged,  
entwined, in voiceless celebration.  
Until we are alone like two leaves shimmering  
high above a treeless landscape  
never to land.

### **Nameless Boy**

Beyond the frontier  
where borders blur into unknown thoughts  
there is a nameless boy –  
a drop of pure human light.  
Through narrow cracks in the splintered fence  
I watch his innocence with envy,  
searching for the right meaning of his movements.  
The twilight of his smile  
nourishes my heart  
like crumbs of God's light.

A longing in my mouth to speak,  
to weep,  
and gather this child into my arms  
and encipher his nature into mine.  
Through the exchange of eyes –  
glances, purloined and routed into blindness,  
our language annulled.  
I can only grope towards him  
with antenna thoughts  
that dance in praise of his youthful beauty.

I am waiting for stones to bloom.  
For venomous skies to wander into oblivion.  
For tracks to emerge like dust in a beam of light.

Life's clever poison  
is closing the gate.  
The cracks are mended – the vision expunged.  
And the nameless boy dissolves,  
for there was no earth inside him.

## CHAMBER 14



### Empyrean

He walked a higher ground  
like a soul untethered to human flesh.

Darkness implored –  
demanded his searching stop  
and match the drifting gait of others.  
But his pathway unwound like a ball of string  
sent upward  
only to fall in a sentence of light.  
Collisions with fate would unrail him  
and send him the wishes of obscurity.  
The lightning of desire.

The curse of empty dreams.  
The witness to unspeakable horrors.

He would laugh at the absurdity,  
yet aware of the dark ripples  
that touched him.

Humanity was a creaseless sheet of blank paper  
waiting to be colored and crumpled  
into pieces of prey for the beast-hunter.

Why did they wait?  
The palette was for their taking.  
The "distance" betrayed them.  
The shallow grave of the deep heart  
killed their faith.

He knew,  
yet could not form the words.  
Nor draw the map.  
The ancient casts of the empyrean  
withstood definition.  
Paradise lost to the soundless blanket  
of the clearest thought,  
of the loneliest mind.

### **Separate Being**

Waking this morning,  
I remember you.  
We were together last night  
only a thin sheet of glass between us.  
Your name was not clear.  
I think I would recognize its sound,  
but my lips are numb

and my tongue listless from the  
climb to your mouth.

Your face was blurred as well,  
yet, like a distant god  
you took your heart and hand  
and there arose within me  
a separate being.

I think you were lonely once.  
Your only desire, to be understood,  
turned away by some vast shade  
drawn by a wisdom  
you had forgotten.

So you sang your songs  
in quiet summons to God  
hoping their ripples would return and gather you up.

Continue you.  
Brighten your veins  
and bring you the unquenchable  
kiss of my soul.

Drunken by a lonely name  
you stagger forward  
into my nights, into my dreams,  
and now into my waking.

If I try to forget you  
you will precede my now.

I would feel your loss  
though I can't say your name  
or remember your face.

I would awaken some morning  
and long to feel your skin upon mine  
knowing not why.

Feeling the burn of our fire  
so clearly that names and faces  
bear no meaning  
like a candle flicking its light to the  
noonday sun.



## CHAMBER 15



### Wishing Light

Sun walks the roof of the sky  
with a turtle's patience.  
Circling endlessly amidst the black passage  
of arrival and retreat.  
Moon can shape shift  
and puncture the confidant darkness.  
The weaker sister of sun  
it bleeds light even as it dwindles  
to a fissure of fluorescence.  
Black sky like a monk's hood draped  
over stars with squinted eyes.  
Stewards lost,

exiled to overspread  
the dark lair of the zodiac.  
This silent outback where  
light is uprooted and cast aside  
beats like a tired clock uneven.  
It dreams of sunlight passing so  
it can follow like a parasite.  
Tired of meandering in absence it  
wants to live the speed of light and feel its directness.  
Wishing to stay alive in light years  
and not some recumbent eternity.  
Desiring the sharp pain of life  
to the dull, numbing outskirts of ancient space.  
Darkness follows light like a tireless  
wind that pours over tumbleweeds.  
But it always seems to outlast the people  
if not the light.

### **Secret Language**

Night in bed,  
eyes closed, ears open,  
listening to the secret life outside my window.  
The liturgy of the nocturnal.  
Sounds and rhythms of  
swift-footed crickets  
giving testimony to the trees that overlook  
the native church like great archways  
carved of Roman hands.  
  
The intricate language of tiny animals  
sweeping through the night air

unfaltering they hold me spellbound.  
How can I sleep without an interpreter?  
If only I knew what they were saying.  
I could sleep again.

## CHAMBER 16



### Signals to Her Heart

Out where the ocean beats its calm thunder  
against grainy shores of quartz and sand,  
she strolls, hands pocketed in a flowing gown  
of pearl-like luminance.

I can see her with hair the color of sky's deepest night  
when it whispers to the sun's widow  
to masquerade as the sickle's light.

So this is she.

The only one who knows me as I am  
though untouched is my skin.

The world from which she steps pounces from mystery,

announces her calm purity  
like a willow tree bent to still waters.

In this unhurt place she takes her body  
to the shoreline listening for sounds beneath the waves  
that tell her what to do.

How great is her love?

Will it take her across the sea to me?  
Does she hear my heart's voice before the translation?

She scoops some sand with her ivory hands and  
like an hourglass the particles fall having borrowed time  
for a chance to touch her beauty.

Her lips move with prayers of grace as she tells  
the wind her story;

even the clouds gather overhead to listen.

Her gestures multiply my love with the sign of infinity,  
disentangled from all calculations,  
adorning her face with a poetry of tears.

I am unsummoned though I hear her voice  
so clear it startles me.

I watch her because I can.

I know her because she is me.

I love her because she is not me.

In all my movement, in the vast search  
for something that will replace me,  
I have found her on this shoreline, her faint footprints,  
signatures of perfection that embarrass time with their  
fleeting nature.

I am like the cave behind her watching from darkness,  
hollowed from tortured waves  
into a vault that yearns to say what she cannot resist.

A language so pure it releases itself  
from my mouth like long-held captives  
finally ushered to their home;  
jubilant gods dancing away from sorrow's reach.

She turns her head and looks past me as if I were a ghost  
unseen,  
yet I know she sees my deepest light.  
I know the ocean is no boundary to her love.  
She is waiting for the final path to my heart to become  
clear.

And I am waiting for something deep inside  
to take my empty hands and fill them with her face  
so I can know the rehearsals were numbered,  
and all the splinters were signals to her heart.

### **Nothing Matters**

Space is curved  
so no elevator can slither to its stars.  
Time is a spindle of the present  
that spins the past and future away.  
Energy is an imperishable force  
so permanence can be felt.  
Matter flings itself to the universe,  
perfectly pitiless in its betrayal of soul.

You can only take away  
what has been given you.

Have you not called the ravens the foulest of birds?  
Is their matter and energy so different than ours?  
Are we not under the same sky?

Is their blood not red?  
Their mouth pink, too?

Molten thoughts, so hot they fuse space and time,  
sing their prophecies of discontent.  
Listen to their songs in the channels of air  
that curl overhead like temporary tattoos  
of light's shimmering ways.

Am I merely a witness of the betrayal?  
Where are you who are cast to see?  
How have you been hidden from me?  
Is there a splinter that carries you to the whole?

If I could speak your names I would call you to my side  
and take your hands so gentle you would not see me,  
feeling only the warm passage of time  
and the tremor of your spine moving you to weep.

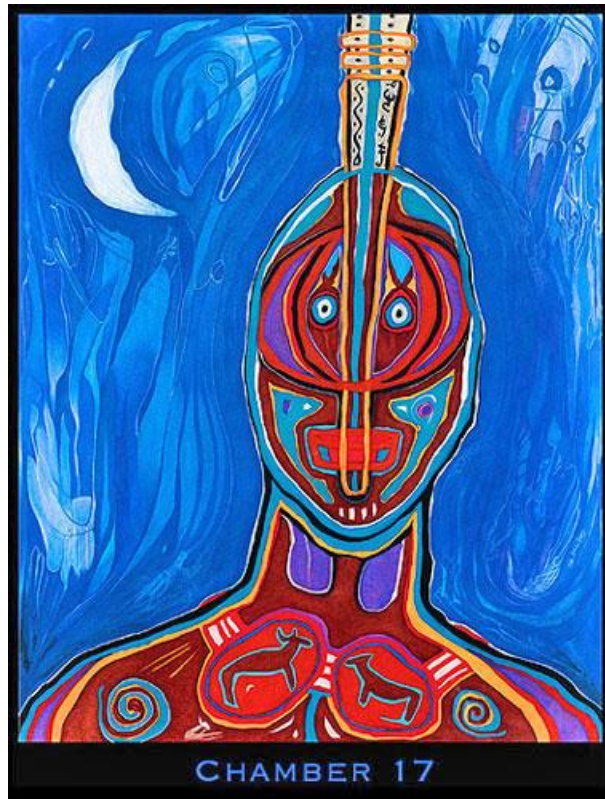
Space is curved so I must bend.  
Time is a spindle so I must resolve its center.  
Energy, an imperishable force I must ride.  
And matter, so pitiless I refuse to be betrayed.

So I stand naked to the coldest wind  
and ask it to carve out an island in my soul  
in honor of you who stand beside me in silence.  
Lonely, I live on this island assured of one thing:  
that of space, time, energy, and matter; nothing matters.  
Yet when I think of you in the cobwebbed corner,  
hoveled without wings  
like a seed planted beneath a dead tree stump,  
I know you are watching  
with new galaxies wild in your breast.  
I know you are listening

to the lidded screams smiling their awkward trust.  
All I ask of you is to throw me a rope sometimes  
so I can feel the permanence of your heart.  
It's all I need in the face of nothing matters.



## CHAMBER 17



### Afterwards

I've set loose the guards that stand before my door.  
I've let cells collide in suicide until they take me.  
If there were stories left to tell I would hear them.

Behind the waterfalls of channeled panic  
spilling their prideful progeny I can stay hidden in the  
noise.

Being invisible has its cameo rewards.  
It also keeps visible the durable lifeform  
murmuring beneath the wickedness.  
This is truly the only creature I care to know,

with luminous ways of sweet generosity that suffers  
in the untelling universe of the unlistening ear.

When I am found out-after I am gone-by a stranger's  
heart whose drill bit is not dulled by impersonation,  
I will open eyes, peel away skin, awaken the heart's coma.  
I will set aside the costumed figure and redress the host  
so its image can be seen in mirrors I set forth  
with words bugged by God.

When these words are spoken,  
another ear is listening on the other side  
beaming understanding like lasers their neutral light.

The common grave of courage holds us all  
in the portal of singularity,  
the God-trail of rebeginning.

Somehow, so seldom, words and images  
thrust their meaning into heaven and conquer time.

But when they do,  
they become the abracadabra of the sacred moment.  
The pantomime of the public's deepest longing.

Afterwards, the improbable eyelid glances open,  
the skin folds away,  
and the heroic eye awakens and remains alert.  
Afterwards, the words eat the flesh and leave behind  
the indigestible bitterness.  
The emotional corpse shed,  
an insoluble loneliness.  
The cast of separation.

## **Memories Unbound**

I have this memory of laying atop  
a scaffold of tree limbs  
staring out to the black, summer blanket  
that warms the night air.

I can smell cedar burning in the distance  
and hear muted voices praying in song and drum.

I cannot lift my body or turn my head.

I am conscious of bone and muscle  
but they are not conscious of me.

They are dreaming while I am caught  
in a web of exemptible time.

My mind is restless to move on.

To leave this starlit grave site and dance with  
my people around huge fires crackling with nervous light.

To join hand with hand to the rhythm of drums  
pounding their soft thunder  
in monotone commandments to live.

I can only stare up at the sky  
watching, listening, waiting  
for something to come and set me free  
from this mournful site.

To gather me up in arms of mercy  
into the oblivion of Heaven's pod.

I listen for the sound of my breath  
but only the music of my people can be heard.

I look for the movement of my hands  
but only wisps of clouds and crescent light move  
against raven's wings.

Sometimes when this memory peeks through  
my skin it purges the shoreward view.  
It imposes on the known predicament  
with a turbulent bliss that bleeds defiance to the order.  
There is certain danger in the heritable ways  
of my people who send me the chatoyant skin  
humbled and circumscribed.  
My white appetite leached of earthly rations.  
Misplaced to the darshan of the devil,  
the very same that maneuvered my people to reservations

—  
the ward of the damned.  
(At least I have no memories of a reservation).

Perhaps it is better to lay upon this mattress of sticks  
with my wardrobe of feathers and skins  
chanting in the wind.  
Perhaps it would be better still  
to be set atop the cry shed and burned  
so prodigal memories would have  
no home to return to.

I have this memory of escaping the pale hand  
of my master that feeds me scraps of lies and moldy bread.  
My skin yearns for lightness,  
but it is the rope that obliges.

I have this memory of holding yellow fingers,  
large and round, dripping with ancient legacies.  
Of seeing the rounded belly of Buddha  
smiling underneath a pastoral face  
in temples that lean against a tempest sky.

I have this memory of dreaming to fly.  
Stretching out wings that are newly attached  
with string-like permanence  
only to fall in the blunted arms of obscurity.

I have this memory of seeing my face in a mirror  
that reflects a stranger's mind and soul.  
Knowing it to be mine, I looked away  
afraid it would become me alone.

I am patchwork memories searching for a nucleus.  
I am lost words echoing in still canyons.  
I am a light wave that found itself  
darting to earth unsheathed seeking cover  
in human skin.

## CHAMBER 18



### Final Dream

Strike the flint that burns  
a lonely world  
and opens blessed lovers  
to the golden grave of earth's flame.

Listen to the incantation  
of raindrops as they pass from gray clouds  
to our mother's doorstep.  
Dreams of miracles yet to come  
harbor in their watery husks.

Stand before this cage  
splashed with beauty and stealth  
and arranged with locks that have grown frail.

A simple breath  
and all life is joined in the frontier.

Here is the masterpiece of creation  
that has emerged from the unknown  
in the depths of a silent Heart.

Here is the laughter sought  
among rulers of death.

Here are the brilliant colors of rainbows  
among the spilling reds that purge our flock.

Here is the hope of forever  
among stone markers that stare through eyelids  
released of time.

Here are the songs of endless voices  
among the heartless dance of invisible power.

There is an evening bell that chimes  
a melody so pure  
even mountains weep  
and angels lean to listen.

There is a murmur of hope that sweeps  
aside the downcast eyes of hungry souls.

It is the fragrance of God  
writing poems upon the deep blue sky  
with pin-pricks of light and a sleepless moon.

It is the calling to souls  
lost in the forest of a single world  
to be cast, forged, and made ready  
for the final dream.

## Transparent Things

There it is then, my open wound,  
eager for forgiveness.  
It comes with age like brown spots and silver hair.  
Shouldn't age bring more than different colors  
to adorn the body?  
I think it was meant to.  
It just forgot.  
Old age does that you know.  
Too many things to remember here.  
Both worlds demanding so much,  
one to learn, one to remember.  
  
If there was silence in these waters  
my wound would dance open  
and separate itself from all attackers.  
Even this body.  
It would look at you  
in the orphaning light, diminished of features,  
and lead you away to its place of sorrow.  
It would ask you to lie down beside it  
and wave goodbye  
to the coiled currents that tug and pull  
to separate us from ourselves.  
It would hold your hands,  
so masterful in their wisdom,  
so mindful of their glory  
that it would disappear inside.  
In the future, someone,  
a friend perhaps, would  
read your palm and notice  
a small line veering off in a ragged ambush.



Unchained from the rest  
of your palm's symmetry.  
A lonely fragment waving goodbye  
to everything between us.

There it is then, my prayer for you  
to close this wound  
and draw the shades around us.  
Deep, black solitude enfolding us,  
the kind found only in caves  
that have shut out light for the growing of delicate,  
transparent things.

## CHAMBER 19



### Easy to Find

I have often looked inside my drawers  
without knowing why.  
Something called out.  
Seek me and you shall find,  
but when I obey I'm confounded by memory's fleeting  
ways.

Hands immerse and return awkwardly empty  
like a runaway child  
when no one came after them.

I know there is something I seek  
that hides from me so I can't think about what I lack.  
It is, however, and this is the point, too damn powerful

to be silent and still.  
Besides, I know I lack it because I miss it.

I miss it.  
Whatever "it" is.  
Whatever I need it to be it is not that.  
It can never be anything but what it is.  
And so I search in drawers and closets absent of why,  
driven like a machine whose switch has been thrown  
just because it can.

I miss it.  
I wish it could find me.  
Maybe I need to stay put long enough for it to do so.  
Now there's a switch.  
Let the powerful "it" seek me out.  
But for how long must I wait?  
And how will I recognize it should it find me?  
There must be names for this condition that end in phobia.  
Damn, I hate that suffix.

It all starts with a sense of wonder and ends in a sense of  
emptiness.  
God, I wish you could find me here.  
I'll tuck myself in a little drawer right out in the open.  
I won't bury myself under incidentals.  
I'll be right on top.  
Easy to find.  
Do you need me for anything?  
I hope so because I need you for everything.

## **Of Beckoning Places**

Of beckoning places  
I have never felt more lost.  
Nothing invites me onward.  
Nothing compels my mouth to speak.  
In cave-like ignorance, resembling oblivion,  
I am soulless in sleep.  
Where are you, beloved?  
Do you not think I wait for you?  
Do you not understand the crystal heart?  
Its facets like mirrors for the clouds  
absent of nothing blue.

Invincible heaven with downcast eyes  
and burning bullets of victory that peel through flesh  
like a hungry ax, why did you follow me?  
I need an equal not a slayer.  
I need a companion not a ruler.  
I need love not commandments.

Of things forgotten  
I have never been one.  
God seems to find me even in the tumbleweed  
when winds howl  
and I become the wishbone in the hands  
of good and evil.  
Why do they seek me out?  
What purpose do I serve if I cannot become visible to you?

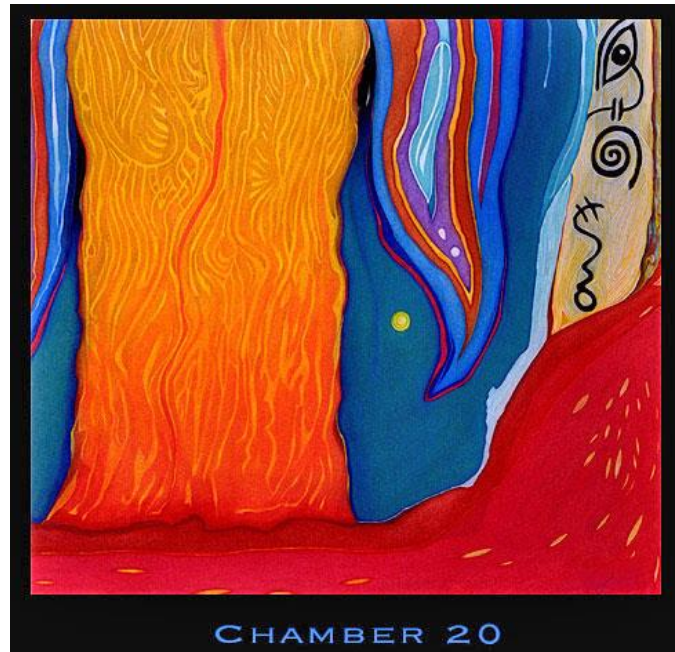
You know, when they put animals to sleep  
children wait outside  
as the needle settles the debt of pain and age.  
The mother or father write a check and

sign their name twice that day.  
They drop a watermark of tears.  
They smile for their children  
through clenched hearts beating  
sideways like a pendulum of time.

And I see all of this and more in myself.  
A small animal whose debts are soon to be settled.  
Children are already appearing outside  
waiting for the smile of parents to reassure.  
The signature and watermark  
they never see.

Of winter sanctuary I have found only you.  
Though I wait for signals to draw me from the cold  
into your fire  
I know they will come even though I fumble for my key.  
Even though my heart is beheaded.  
Even though I have only learned division.  
I remember you and the light above your door.

## CHAMBER 20



### Bullets and Light

I am adrift tonight  
as though a privilege denied  
is the passageway to keep body and soul together.  
You have kept so much at bay  
I wonder if your enchantment is to tame passion.  
Cornered by your savage artillery  
you sling your bullets like schools of fish  
darting to a feast,  
and I surge ahead tired of being the food.  
When I look back  
I can see fragments of you  
hiding in the underbrush,  
stubborn remnants of your vanished heart.  
I can still love them.

I can still hold their fragile nerves  
clustered with a welder's tongue  
seething light as pure as any ever beheld.

Perhaps I drift away because of the chasm I see.

Bullets and light.

How strange bedfellows can be.

But you will never confess  
nor shed your doubt of me.

I will always remain an enigma hurling itself  
like litter across your absolute path.

A sudden shaft of light that begets a deep shadow  
that temporarily blinds.

Hope-stirred eyes have always sought to steal  
you from the simian nature that collects at your feet  
and pulls at you like derelict children.

My unearthly hunger drew me away from you,  
even against my will, or at least my conscious will.

There was always something calculating  
the distance between us.

Some cosmic abacus shuffling sums  
of bullets and light  
looking for the ledger's balance,  
but never quite locating its exact frequency.

### **The Nature of Angels**

Midnight in the desert and all is well.

I told myself so and so it is,  
or it is not,

I haven't quite decided yet.  
Never mind the coyotes' howl or

the shrinking light.  
Holiness claims my tired eyes  
as I return the stare of stars.  
They seem restless, but maybe they're  
just ink blots and I'm the one who's really restless.

There is something here that repeals me.  
In its own abundance I am absent.  
So I shouted at the desert spirits,  
tell me your secrets or I will tell you my sorrows.

The spirits lined up quickly then.  
Wings fluttering. Hearts astir.  
I heard many voices become one  
and it spoke to the leafless sky  
as a tenet to earth.

We hold no secrets.  
We are simply windows to your future.  
Which is now and which is then  
is the question we answer.  
But you ask the question.  
If there is a secret we hold  
it is nothing emboldened by words  
or we would commonly speak.

I turned to the voice,  
what wisdom is there in that?  
If words can't express your secret wisdom,  
then I am deaf and you are mute and we are blind.  
At least I can speak my sorrows.

Again the wings fluttered  
and the voices stirred hoping the sorrow would not spill  
like blood upon the desert.



But there were no more sounds  
save the coyote and the owl.  
And then a strange resolution suffused my sight.  
I felt a presence like an enormous angel  
carved of stone was placed behind me.  
I couldn't turn for fear its loss would spill my sorrow.  
But the swelling presence was too powerful to ignore  
so I turned around to confront it,  
and there stood a trickster coyote  
looking at me with glass eyes painting my fire, sniffing my  
fear,  
and drawing my sorrow away in intimacy.  
And I understood the nature of angels.

## CHAMBER 21



### **Dream Wanderer**

Intoxicated with children's thoughts  
I wonder,  
why are souls so deep and men so blind?  
How can souls be eclipsed  
by such tiny minds?  
Do we love the damp passageways of Hell?  
Where every drop of pale water  
that falls from the cavern walls  
is unwashed music etched in silence...

My favored dreams have disappeared  
astride the backs of eagles.  
With wings sweeping downward, lifting upward,  
they are carried away like finespun, elegant seeds

on a crystalline wind.  
Without them  
I am divinely barren  
like an empty vessel denied its purpose.  
I can only stare into the silence  
ever listening for heaven's murmur.  
Knowing that behind the darkening mist  
angels are building shelters for human innocence.  
Shelters torn from something dark  
and gravely wounded.  
Havens resistant to all disease.

I thought I was endowed  
with a promised beauty  
that would free the neglected dreams of a demigod.  
That would untie their feeble knots  
and release them into light's caress.  
But the glorious reins  
that had once been mine,  
tattered and stained with blood,  
have slipped from my hands in disuse  
as a web abandoned to a ghostly wind.  
I can still reach them.  
I can feel their shadow across my hands.  
Their power, like an electric storm  
wandering aimlessly without fuel,  
soon to be exhausted.

This piece of paper  
is torn from something dark  
and gravely wounded.

It is the mirror I hold up to the blackened sky.  
A devious sacrifice.

Leaping from star to star  
my eyes weave a constellation.  
My thoughts in search of the endless motherload.  
My heart listening for the sound  
of unstained children dreaming.

The dream wanderer looks back at me.  
Calls my name in a whispered voice.  
Beckons me with an outstretched wing.

"Fly! Your favored dreams await you!"

The voice boomed like thunder swearing.  
My wings trembled with forbidden power  
as they searched the wind's current  
for signs of release.

Currents that would carry me  
to the high branches of trees  
suckling the sun in fields beyond my kingdom.

In a moment's interlude  
I unfolded my wings and vaulted skyward,  
into the blue vestibule.

Sheer speed.

Rivers beneath were brown veins  
swollen on earth's legs,  
or savage cuts that bled green.

The sun sliced holes in the clouds  
with tender spears of crimson light.  
The moon was rising in the eastern sky-  
an oyster shell  
pitted by time.

Lonely winds would rush by  
searching for an outpost of stillness.

The earthen dungeon  
peered up at me with contempt  
like a nursemaid relieved of her duty.

I forgot the ground.  
I canceled gravity.  
Balanced against aboriginal hopes and fears  
I became the shaman who dances  
in the spirit waters of ancestors  
plucking words and meanings from the cumbrous air.

I thought only of the dream wanderer...  
the holy wind that rekindles  
my exquisite longing for raw truth.

To seize it like medicine  
in a sleepless fever hoping to be healed.  
The halcyon spire!  
The dusty places of purity.

These wings are torn  
from something dark and gravely wounded.  
They carry me to my favored dreams  
and choke the inertia of indifference dead.  
Their strength is perfectly matched  
to my destination.

One more mile beyond these trees,  
I would fall like a fumbled star  
into the moat of a starving world.

My favored dreams will wander again.  
In time they will soar to trees of a richer kingdom.  
My wings will again follow their flight,  
track their heartbeat  
and build a quilt of a thousand dreams intermingled.

One more turn of the infinite circle.  
The dream slate revivified.  
Navigable-  
even in the murky waters  
and cloudy skies of the itinerant traveler.  
The dream wanderer reveals  
(with a flip of the hourglass of heaven),  
as above  
so below.  
Create your world and let it go forward  
entrusted to the one that is all.  
The leavening will prevail.  
It is the lesson I learned  
with my wings outstretched beneath  
the glaring sky.  
It is the rawness I seek  
untouched by another's polish.

### **Forgiver**

Last night we talked for hours.  
You cried in unstoppable sorrow,  
while I felt a presence carve itself into me  
source and savior of your dragging earth.  
You feel so deeply, your mind barely visible  
staring ahead to what the heart already knows.  
I see the distance you must heal.  
I know your pacing heart bounded by corners  
that have been rounded and smoothed  
like a polished stone from endless waves.  
For all I know you are me in another body,  
slots where spirits reach in to throw the light

interpreting dreams.  
Prowling for crowns.

Are there ways to find your heart  
I haven't found?  
You, I will swallow without tasting first.  
I don't care the color.  
Nothing could warn me away.  
Nothing could diminish my love.  
And only if I utterly failed  
in kinship would you banish me.

Last night, I know I was forgiven.  
You gave me that gift unknowing.  
I asked for forgiveness  
and you said it was unneeded;  
time shuffled everything anew and it was its own  
forgiver.

But I know everything not there  
was felt by you and transformed.  
It was given a new life, though inconspicuous,  
it wove us together to a simple, white stone  
lying on the ground that marks a spot of sorrow.  
Beneath, our union, hallowed of tiny bones  
beseech us to forgive ourselves  
and lean upon our shoulders  
in memory of love, not loss.

Blame settles on no one;  
mysterious, it moves in the calculus  
of God's plan as though no one thought  
to refigure the numbers three to two to one.  
The shape stays below the stone.

We walk away,  
knowing it will resettle  
in our limbs  
in our bones  
in our hearts  
in our minds  
in our soul.



## CHAMBER 22



### **In the Kindness of Sleep**

I visited you last night when you  
were sleeping with a child's abandon.  
Curled so casual in sheets  
inlaid by your beauty.  
I held my hand to your face  
and touched as gently  
as I know how  
so you could linger with your dreams.  
I heard soft murmurs that only angels make  
when they listen to their home.  
So I drew my hand away

uneasy that I might wake you  
even as gentle as I was.

But you stayed with your dreams  
and I watched as they found their way to you  
in the kindness of sleep.  
And I dreamed that I was an echo of your body  
curled beside you like a fortune hunter  
who finally found his gold.  
I nearly wept at the sound of your breath,  
but I stayed quiet as a winter lake, and bit my lip  
to ensure I wouldn't be detected.

I didn't want to intrude  
so I set my dream aside  
and I gently pulled your hand from underneath  
the covers to hold.

A hand whose entry into flesh  
must have been the lure that brought me here.

And as I hold it  
I remember why I came  
to feel your pulse  
and the beating of your heart in deep slumber.

And I remember why I came in the  
kindness of sleep...

to hold your hand, touch your face  
and listen to the soft breathing  
of an angel,  
curled so casual in sheets  
inlaid by your beauty.

## Warm Presence

I once wore an amulet  
that guarded against the forceps of humanity.

It kept at bay the phalanx of wolves  
that circled me like phantoms of Gethsemane.

Phantoms that even now  
replay their mantra like conch shells.  
Coaxing me to step out and join the earthly tribe.

To bare my sorrow's spaciousness  
like a cottonwood's seed to the wind.

Now I listen and watch for signals.  
To emerge a recluse squinting in ambivalence  
inscribed to tell what has been held by locks.

It is all devised in the sheath of cable  
that connects us to Culture.  
The single, black strand that portrays us to God.  
The DNA that commands our image  
and guides our natural selection of jeans.

Are there whispers of songs flickering  
in dark, ominous thunder?  
Is there truly a sun behind this wall of monotone clouds  
that beats a billion hammers of light?

There are small, flat teeth that weep venom.  
There is an inviolate clemency  
in the eyes of executioners while their hands toil to kill.

But there is no explanation for  
voyeur saints who grieve only with their eyes.

There is only one path to follow  
when you connect your hand and eye  
and release the phantoms.

This poem is a shadow of my heart  
and my heart the shadow of my mind,  
which is the shadow of my soul  
the shadow of God.

God, a shadow of some unknown, unimaginable  
cluster of intelligence where galaxies  
are cellular in the universal body.

Are the shadows connected?

Can this vast, unknown cluster reach into this poem  
and assemble words that couple at a holy junction?

It is the reason I write.

Though I cannot say this junction has ever  
been found (at least by me).

It is more apparent that some unholy hand,  
pale from darkness, reaches out and casts its sorrow.

Some lesser shadow or phantom  
positions my hand in a lonely outpost  
to claim some misplaced illuminance.

The phantom strains to listen for songs as they whisper.

It coordinates with searching eyes.

It peels skin away to touch the soft fruit.

It welds shadows as one.

I dreamed that I found a ransom note written in God's own  
hand.

Written so small I could barely read its message, which  
said:

"I have your soul, and unless you deliver – in small,  
unmarked

poems – the sum of your sorrows, you will never see it  
alive again."

And so I write while something unknown is curling  
around me, irresistible to my hand, yet unseen.

More phantoms from Gethsemane who honor  
sorrow like professional confessors lost in their despair.

I can reach sunflowers the size of  
moonbeams, but I cannot reach the sum of my sorrows.

They elude me like ignescent stars that fall nightly  
outside my window.

My soul must be nervous.

The ransom is too much to pay  
even for a poet who explores the black strand of Culture.

Years ago I found an  
impression – like snow angels – left in tall grass  
by some animal, perhaps a deer or bear.

When I touched it I felt the warm presence of life,  
not the cold radiation of crop circles.

This warm energy lingers only for a moment  
but when it is touched it lasts forever.

And this is my fear: that the sum of my sorrows will last  
forever

when it is touched, and even though my soul is returned  
unharméd, I will remember the cold radiation  
and not the warm presence of life.

Now I weep when children sing  
and burrow their warm presence into my heart.

Now I feel God adjourned by the  
source of shadows.

Now I feel the pull of a bridle,  
breaking me like a wild horse turned  
suddenly submissive.

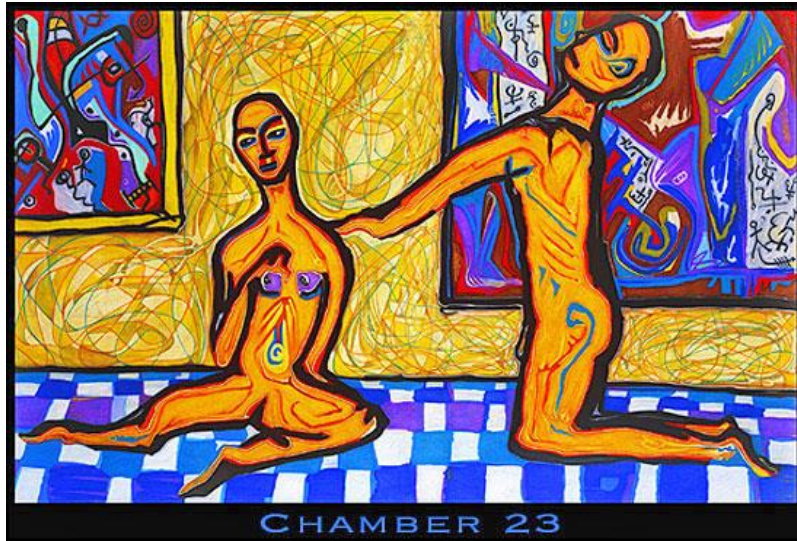
I cannot fight the phantoms  
or control them or turn them away.  
They prod at me as if a lava stream should  
continue on into the cold night air  
and never tire of movement.  
Never cease its search for the perfect place to be a  
sculpture.  
An anonymous feature of the gray landscape.

If ever I find the sum of my sorrows  
I hope it is at the bridgetower where I can see both ways  
before I cross over.  
Where I can see forgeries like a crisp mirage  
and throw off my bridle.

I will need to be wild when I face it.  
I will need to look into its unnameable light and unravel  
all the shadows interlocked like paper dolls  
and cut from a multiverse of experience.  
To let them surround me  
and in one resounding chorus confer their epiphany so I  
can hand over the ransom and reclaim my soul.

When all my sorrows are gathered round  
in an unbroken ring I will stare them down.  
Behind them waits a second ring,  
larger still and far more powerful.  
It is the ring of life's warm presence  
when sorrows have passed underneath the shadows' source  
and transform like the dull chrysalis  
that bears iridescent angels.

## CHAMBER 23



### Folded Things

So often I have bared my soul  
and spread its wealth around me  
relishing its golden hue.  
So often there were poems, paintings, music  
that flowed in one stream  
that held messages that only I could hear.  
But I would take them and  
fold them into something I hoped others  
would also hear.  
So often the folded thing  
would resonate in solitude  
yet escape the touch of another.  
So often I would look to you  
and hope that you would see and hear  
what I have seen and heard.  
But the message would waver

and disappear like smoke ascending into air.  
So often I have wondered  
why there is no one to share these folded things;  
as if only I could understand  
their solitude.  
As if only I could feel their heartbeat  
beneath the emptiness in which they sleep.  
  
If all of these are summed  
and divided by love  
you would know them as your own children.  
You would see them as they are.  
Yet they are mysteries viewed  
as mere elements of time.  
So often I have taken these folded things  
and left them behind  
for others to unfold and wear.  
And when I look back  
at their clothing they appear like stars  
against the persistent blackness.  
Like comets dancing to the forbidden music  
of another world.  
Calling so softly... when it is heard,  
the folded things unfold their beauty  
and nothing is forbidden again.

### **Spiral**

Inside there is something gnawing  
with silken jaws and wax teeth.  
It holds me still in pureness  
like a circle whose middle is my cage.



While you went away from me  
I was ever tightening my circle.  
A spiral cut in glass.  
A flower's bloom dropping petals.  
A winnowed ball of yarn  
spilling color.

I see the inside of your thigh  
brilliant in its smoothness,  
and I spiral ever closer to your edge.  
Paper cut touching I burn  
bleeding without pain.  
How could I spill so easily  
without knowing why?

When I hear your voice  
there is no quenching this ache  
to hold you.  
Like one who draws near and then forgets  
the story they came to tell,  
I circle you waiting for thread's tautness  
to draw us ever closer  
though I know not how.

The final luxury is the kiss  
of your boundless heart.  
The final beauty so pure  
all else limps behind blissfully in your wake.  
Drawing from your shadows  
the light of saplings  
lurking on the forest floor.

If I could unbutton you,  
take your dress down

I would see a map of my universe.  
A phantom limb, grown from  
my body like wings sprouting from a chrysalis  
reaches for you.  
It is the hand of clarity  
desperate for your skin  
so powerfully bidden  
as though a shimmering block of light  
cut from black velvet,  
stood before me.  
And all I could do was to reach out  
and touch it,  
not knowing why,  
but utterly unafraid.

# INTERVIEWS WITH DR. NERUDA ABOUT THE WINGMAKERS

## SARAH'S NOTES ON DR. NERUDA

**Written May 27, 1998**

*What follows are some of my notes taken while in earnest discussions with Dr. Neruda from the ACIO (Advanced Contact Intelligence Organization) during the last two weeks of December 1997, before he disappeared—at least off my radar screen.*

Dr. Neruda is about six feet tall, perhaps one hundred-seventy pounds, has relatively long black hair, and by all appearances, seems of Peruvian descent or at least from somewhere in South America (though I never asked what specific city or village he grew up in). I would guess he was about fifty years old with just a few tinges of gray hair.

He called me out of the blue one day in mid-December 1997. His opening line to me was something like, “My name is Dr. Neruda, and I have secret information about the future of humankind that proves the existence of time-travel technology.” Being a journalist by profession, it got my attention, though the whole time I spent on the phone

with him my skeptical nature was in high gear. I always assume stories of a fantastical nature are false in reality, though the perceiver can think them to be true. And so that's how I operated with Dr. Neruda. I felt him to be genuine and sincere, but probably misguided or in error.

However, he was convincing enough to secure a meeting with me, and so we met a few days later at a coffee shop near my home. He didn't fit my stereotypical view of a scientist. He was much more sophisticated and even elegant in his demeanor, and looked as much like an executive of a Fortune 100 company as anything else. His charisma and articulate manner immediately impressed me, and I sensed that he was not a man of mental instability prone to wild claims.

He told me that he had no recollection of his mother, and that his father brought him to the ACIO at an early age. A high-ranking member of the ACIO had taken him under his wing, so a considerable portion of his life was involved in one way or another with the ACIO. His father raised him as a single parent. He had been told that his mother had died from breast cancer shortly after his birth when he was only about two years old. He had attended the best private schools, and additionally had been provided with special tutors, which he later learned were from the ACIO.

At the age of fourteen he came under the formal tutelage of his future colleagues from the ACIO. By the time he was seventeen he had left school and decided to pursue an internship at the ACIO, though he said that at the time, it was simply called the NSA Special Projects Laboratory and was an unacknowledged department of the NSA. His

internship lasted for two years and he never pursued a formal degree at aAmerica (though I never asked what specific city or village he grew up in). I would guess he was about fifty years old with just a few tinges of gray hair.

He stated that he believed himself to have possessed average intelligence until he began his training and internship at the ACIO. He said that they had technologies that stimulated certain aspects of the central nervous system and brain that increased raw intelligence by as much as 500 percent. In addition, he claimed that there was a genetic implant technology that increased the ability to memorize and retain information to the point where the entire scientific core of the ACIO had perfect photographic memory. This enabled them to build their group intelligence beyond the genius of any one individual. These technologies—he claimed—were of extraterrestrial origin derived from a friendly source that had been visiting earth for thousands of years, but had arrangements with the ACIO dating from 1959 that were secret even from our government and its intelligence agencies.

The alien race, which he called the Corteum, had infiltrated the ACIO in 1958, and though he wasn't specific about how this occurred, he did say that the Corteum are still working with the ACIO to seed technologies on earth that are superior to our native technologies. The technologies to accelerate and enhance intelligence were the first technologies to be transferred and these were to enable the ACIO scientists to assimilate and utilize subsequent technologies that the Corteum brought to the ACIO. In exchange for these technologies,

the Corteum were provided safe haven within the ACIO intelligence structure.

In other words, the Corteum were permitted access to all of the information systems of the ACIO, which are considerable according to Dr. Neruda. They were also able to use the facilities of the ACIO including their laboratories, considerable land holdings, and scientific brainpower. This unfettered access to ACIO intelligence provided the Corteum leaders with insight into the structure of world government, where the power centers were, who the real leaders were, and how critical decisions were made for the world's people.

According to Dr. Neruda, the Corteum are benevolent and had no ulterior motives to take over the earth and rule in dictatorship. In fact, they were much more interested in establishing diplomatic ties to the various world governments through the United Nations at the appropriate time, which was considered to be shortly after the year 2011. The existence of the Corteum was kept from the NSA and even most ACIO personnel were unaware of their existence (though I don't know how this was accomplished).

Within the ACIO, there are fourteen distinct levels of security clearance. Those who are at level twelve and above are aware of the Corteum Technology Transfer Program (TTP), and they, according to Dr. Neruda, are about 120 in number, and are primarily in India, Belgium, and the United States. There are only seven who have Level Fourteen clearance, and they are the Directors of Intelligence, Security, Research, Special Projects, Operations, Information Systems, and Communications.

These Directors report to the Executive Director, who is known simply as “Fifteen,” which is the unique classification that is reserved for the head of the ACIO. Fifteen, in the eyes of Dr. Neruda, is the most powerful human on the planet, and what I think he meant by “powerful” is that Fifteen is able to deploy technologies that are well in advance to any that our world’s governments have access to. However, Dr. Neruda portrayed Fifteen and his seven Directors as a benevolent force, not a hostile or controlling force.

The eight people who comprise this inner sanctum of the ACIO are in possession of radical technologies that have been part of the Corteum TTP. However, there were also other extraterrestrial technologies that had been derived from recoveries of spacecraft or other alien artifacts, including various discoveries contained in ancient texts that had never been revealed before. All of this information and technology has been collected and developed within the ACIO scientific core—all of whom possess clearances of Level Twelve or higher.

This scientific core is called the Labyrinth Group, and consists of both men and women who have utilized the Corteum intelligence accelerator technologies to their advantage, and have created a secret organization within the ACIO. When Dr. Neruda was explaining this to me, it got so complicated that I asked him if he could draw me a visual diagram of how all of these organizations worked.

The Labyrinth Group consists of all the personnel within the ACIO that qualify for levels twelve, thirteen, and fourteen clearances. Fifteen is the leader of this most secret organization. It was split from the ACIO to enable

secrecy from the NSA and lower ranking members of the ACIO, which would facilitate the Labyrinth Group's agenda to create its own applications of the Corteum TTP. The Labyrinth Group is in possession of the pure technologies derived from the Corteum TTP. It takes these technologies and dilutes them to the point where the ACIO or Special Projects Laboratory will sell them to private industry and government agencies, (which includes the military).

This secret organization is the most powerful organization on earth in Dr. Neruda's opinion, but they do not choose to exercise their power in a way that makes them visible. Thus, their power is only discernible to their members. For about forty years they have accumulated considerable wealth apart from the NSA's oversight. They have managed to build their own security technologies that prevent detection from intelligence agencies like the CIA or MI5. They are, for all practical purpose, in total control of their agenda—perhaps this is what makes them a unique organization.

Dr. Neruda had a clearance of level twelve and was still kept from vital information that only the Director level was aware. And it was assumed that even Fifteen kept vital information from his Directors, though this was never a certainty. The symbol used by the Labyrinth Group is four concentric circles. Each circle representing a clearance level (twelve, thirteen, fourteen, and fifteen), and each circle had a unique insight into the agenda of the Labyrinth Group, and its coordination with the Corteum.

Fifteen was an enigma to everyone within the Labyrinth Group. He had been a physicist before he became the



Executive Director of the ACIO. He was a renegade because he never interacted with the protocols and the political environment of academia. He operated outside of the institutions and was selected to be part of the ACIO because of his combination of brainpower, independence, and relative obscurity within scientific circles. He was one of the first to make contact with the Corteum and establish communication with them. The Corteum essentially appointed Fifteen as their liaison to the ACIO, and Fifteen became the first to utilize the intelligence accelerator technologies that the Corteum initially offered.

These technologies not only enhance cognitive abilities, memory, and higher order thinking skills, but also enhance the consciousness of the individual so that they can utilize the newly gained intelligence in a non-invasive manner. Meaning, they don't exploit their intelligence for personal gain at the expense of others. This apparent increase in both Fifteen's IQ and ethical consciousness caused him to create the Labyrinth Group in order to retain the pure-state technologies of the Corteum TTP from the NSA.

What technologies are released to the NSA are diluted forms of the pure-state technology, which are significantly less potent in their military and surveillance applications. What I expected to hear from Dr. Neruda was a secret organization of intelligent, evil elitists—individuals intent on exploitation and control. Why else would they want to hide beneath the cloak of such incredible secrecy?

The answer, according to Dr. Neruda, was surprising. The Labyrinth Group view themselves as the only group with sufficient intellect and technology to develop a specific form of time travel technology. They are

essentially focused on this agenda because they desire to prevent future hostilities that they believe will occur unless this technology is developed. The Corteum is assisting, but despite their considerable intellects, they have been unable to develop this technology.

What I'm about to tell you will seem impossible to believe, but again, I'm only reporting what my notes say based on my initial conversations with Dr. Neruda. He explained to me that there are as many as twelve different extraterrestrial races currently involved in the past, present, and future of earth and its destiny. The ACIO, because of its mission with the NSA, is the most knowledgeable group about the various agendas of these twelve alien races.

Apparently, there is an extraterrestrial race that may have hostile intent and the technological potential to disrupt the human social order and overtake it, as well as earth itself. This concern is what motivated Fifteen to assign the Labyrinth Group's intellect and collective energy to create the ultimate defense weapon—which they refer to as Blank Slate Technology (BST) or a form of time travel. I don't pretend to understand all of what Dr. Neruda described regarding BST. My notes are a bit vague because he was talking so far over my head I didn't even know what to write in many instances.

When the Ancient Arrow project came under the control of the ACIO, it was—like all projects—carefully scrutinized to determine if there were any technologies that could help in the overall agenda of developing BST. When it was determined that the Ancient Arrow project was in fact a time capsule from a future aspect of

humanity, the Labyrinth Group seized the project from the ACIO and essentially began a misinformation campaign back to the NSA.

Dr. Neruda was one of two scientists that held a level twelve clearance and was asked to lead in the translation of the WingMakers' language and decode their various communication symbols. In this process, he became aware of how to decode their language and began to understand what they were trying to communicate. He became convinced that the WingMakers were time travelers and possessed a form of BST. He also became convinced that there were six additional time capsules stored in various places around the globe, and that they held the technologies or insights that would enable the development of BST.

The reason he defected was that somehow in the process of translating the WingMakers' language, he became a sympathizer of their philosophy. He felt that the WingMakers were communicating with him and had selected him as their liaison. And when he acknowledged this to his superiors, he was felt to be a risk to the project's secrecy. Apparently, when personnel, regardless of clearance or rank become known as security risks, they are given a "memory therapy" that essentially removes problematic experiences from their mind. Dr. Neruda felt certain that he was going to receive this "therapy" imminently, and could not fathom the results of losing his memories of the WingMakers experience. Thus, he defected from the ACIO and the Labyrinth Group, the first to ever do so.

When he had contacted me, he had defected only the day before. He told me that I would have to wait for him to contact me again to set up a rendezvous time and place. Three days later he called and we met that same afternoon. I wasn't prepared to believe him, but I thought it was a provocative story and was worth spending an hour or two investigating.

Anyway, what he proceeded to tell me in that first meeting is largely contained in this journal entry. He showed me photographs and documents from the Ancient Arrow project that appeared authentic to my eyes. He also showed me some of the technologies that were in development by the ACIO concerning holographic fractal objects or HFOs as he called them. These were incredible to observe (and equally impossible to explain) and I must admit that my first impression after seeing HFOs in action was that any organization that could develop this technology was operating at a level well outside of the mainstream. It felt alien to me.

It was then I became at least a partial believer. I called my employer and told them that I needed to take some personal leave. I took one week off and spent a significant portion of it with Dr. Neruda, asking a thousand questions, which, for the most part, he had ready answers to. Gradually I became a reluctant believer with a healthy streak of skepticism. At the end of the week he asked me to take some of his materials and publish them. There were times that I honestly felt he was an extraterrestrial, and even now I'm not certain that he isn't. (This from a person who six short months ago would have disputed ETs and any other "bump-in-the-night" phenomenon.)

He was convinced that the ACIO would not allow him to defect with his memory intact. He was fearful of their remote viewing technology and was certain that they would try to track him down. He wanted me to have possession of the materials only if I volunteered to do so, and was willing to publish them. And through all of this, he wasn't absolutely certain that the Labyrinth Group and their ET friends, the Corteum, were intending anything bad. He just didn't want his memory tampered with.

I think he was mostly interested in exposing the WingMakers' time capsule and its philosophy and communication symbols. He never seemed that interested in exposing the ACIO and its secret organization the Labyrinth Group. He told me about this entity only to impress upon me that he was part of an organization that had unusual powers and technologies, and to the extent they wanted to keep things under wrap, they would use their considerable powers to do so, which was why he had picked me at random to help him in getting this story out.

Dr. Neruda was the most sincere individual I have ever met. Someone I would love to count among my friends. I was so impressed with his manners, communication skills, and intellect. At one time, I asked him what his IQ was, and with all humility intact, he simply answered that there is no way to test it. And that the Labyrinth Group's members are not interested in IQ so much as what he called Fluid Intelligence, or the speed with which alternative, creative solutions to a problem can be generated.

He claimed this was the most important form of intelligence, and without it, one would not be able to time

travel. In other words, he was convinced that time travel was not an independent technology, but was integral to the traveler. The time traveler must have a certain degree of fluid intelligence in order to withstand the stress inherent in time travel, and the best way to handle the stress was by having a high level of fluid intelligence.

The thing I found so fascinating about Dr. Neruda was his descriptions of how information about ETs, new physics, cosmology, prophecies, and the galactic hierarchy were hidden from the public, government, and even intelligence organizations. He told me that only one man had ever really tried to write about the NSA's Special Project Laboratory and that was back in 1950, and according to my notes it was written by Wilbur Smith, who I believe was a journalist from Canada. Everything else that has been written is done so on the basis of pure speculation.

Dr. Neruda said that when this paper was circulated it was the genesis of the ACIO in order to build another layer of what he called unacknowledged departments. He said that unacknowledged departments are rare in intelligence agencies, but those that do exist often telescope into greater levels of secrecy in order to remain hidden from public and private scrutiny.

He also inferred that there were corporate members of the military-industrial complex that were involved in these unacknowledged departments. He claimed that the ACIO or its sister organization, the Special Projects Laboratory, would sell diluted technologies to private corporations and laboratories, which in turn would be commercialized for the military, and in some instances, even consumer use.

Dr. Neruda permitted me to tape record five formal interviews with him. These are probably the best way to understand his perspective and the story that he has to tell. Even now as I'm writing this letter, I find myself doubting much of what he told me, while at the same time I can't imagine why he'd go to all this trouble if it were just a game or charade of some kind. It just doesn't make any sense in that context. So I'm stuck somewhere in the middle of belief and disbelief. I can only tell you that if only a small percentage of his story is accurate, then citizens and their politicians need to wake up. According to Dr. Neruda, even our highest-ranking government officials and military intelligence officers lack access to the information that he was privy to.

But if these unacknowledged secret departments exist, and private contractors working on behalf of the military are involved with these secret organizations, some organization should be investigating this. And they should have powers to grant witness protection, immunity, and a variety of other inducements to get these secrets out to the public or, at the very least, our government officials.

I have approximately sixty pages of notes from my initial discussions with Dr. Neruda and then five transcripts from the five interviews I conducted. I'd encourage anyone who's serious about understanding these issues to read the interview transcripts. They're probably our best records of what's going on behind closed doors relative to the ET phenomenon, secret organizations, and time travel.

# **FIRST INTERVIEW WITH DR. JAMISSON NERUDA**

**By Sarah**

*What follows is a session I recorded of Dr. Neruda on December 27, 1998 [sic]. He gave permission for me to record his answers to my questions. This was the first of five interviews that I was able to tape-record before he left or disappeared. I have preserved these transcripts precisely as they occurred. No editing was performed, and I've tried my best to include the exact words and grammar used by Dr. Neruda.*

Sarah:

"Are you comfortable?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes, yes, I'm fine and ready to begin when you are."

Sarah:

"You've made some remarkable claims with respect to the Ancient Arrow project. Can you please recount what your involvement in this project was and why you chose to leave it of your own freewill?"

Dr. Neruda:



"I was selected to lead the decoding and translation of the symbol pictures found at the site. I have a known expertise in languages and ancient texts. I am able to speak over thirty different languages fluently and another twelve or so languages that are officially extinct. Because of my skills in linguistics and my abilities to decode symbol pictures like petroglyphs or hieroglyphs, I was chosen for this task.

"I had been involved in the Ancient Arrow project from its very inception, when the ACIO took over the project from the NSA. I was initially involved in the site discovery and its restoration along with a team of seven other scientists from the ACIO. We restored each of the twenty-three chambers of the WingMakers' time capsule and cataloged all of their attendant artifacts.

"As the restoration was completed, I became increasingly focused on decoding their peculiar language and designing the translation indexes to English. It was a particularly vexing process because an optical disc was found in the twenty-third chamber, which was initially impregnable to our technologies. We assumed that the optical disc held most of the information that the WingMakers desired us to know about them. However, we couldn't figure out how to apply the symbol pictures found in their chamber paintings to unlock the disc.

"I decided to leave the project after I was successful in deducing the access code for the optical disc, and felt that the ACIO was going to prevent the public from accessing the information contained within the Ancient Arrow site. There were other reasons, but it's too complicated to explain in a concise response."

Sarah:

"What did Fifteen do when he found out you were leaving?"

Dr. Neruda:

"He never had a chance to respond directly to me because I left without a word. But I'm certain that he's angry and feels betrayed."

Sarah:

"Tell me about Fifteen. What's he like?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Fifteen is a genius of unparalleled intelligence and knowledge. He's the leader of the Labyrinth Group and has been since its inception in 1963. He was only twenty-two years old when he joined the ACIO in 1956. I think he was discovered early enough before he had a chance to establish a reputation in academic circles. He was a renegade genius who wanted to build computers that would be powerful enough to time travel. Can you imagine how a goal like that - in the mid-1950s - must have sounded to his professors?"

"Needless to say, he was not taken seriously, and was essentially told to get in line with academic protocols and perform serious research. Fifteen came to the ACIO through an alliance it had with Bell Labs. Somehow Bell Labs heard about his genius and hired him, but he quickly out-paced their research agenda and wanted to apply his vision of time travel."

Sarah:

"Why was he so interested in time travel?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No one is absolutely sure. And his reasons may have changed over time. The accepted purpose was to develop Blank Slate Technology or BST. BST is a form of time travel that enables the re-write of history at what are called intervention points. Intervention points are the causal energy centers that create a major event like the break-up of the Soviet Union or the NASA space program.

"BST is the most advanced technology and clearly anyone who is in possession of BST, can defend themselves against any aggressor. It is, as Fifteen was fond of saying, the freedom key. Remember that the ACIO was the primary interface with extraterrestrial technologies and how to adapt them into mainstream society as well as military applications. We were exposed to ETs and knew of their agenda. Some of these ETs scared the hell out of the ACIO."

Sarah:

"Why?"

Dr. Neruda:

"There were agreements between our government - specifically the NSA - to cooperate with an ET species commonly called the Greys in exchange for their cooperation to stay hidden and conduct their biological experiments under the cloak of secrecy. There was also a bungled technology transfer program, but that's another

story... However, not all the Greys were operating within a unified agenda. There were certain groups of Greys that looked upon humans in much the same way as we look upon laboratory animals.

"They're abducting humans and animals, and have been for the past forty-eight years... they're essentially conducting biological experiments to determine how their genetics can be made to be compatible with human and animal genetic structure. Their interests are not entirely understood, but if you accept their stated agenda, it's to perpetuate their species. Their species is nearing extinction and they're fearful that their biological system lacks the emotional development to harness their technological prowess in a responsible manner.

"Fifteen was approached by the Greys in his role at the ACIO, and they desired to provide a full-scale technology transfer program, but Fifteen turned them down. He had already established a TTP with the Corteum, and felt that the Greys were too fractured organizationally to make good on their promises. Furthermore, the Corteum technology was superior in most regards to the Greys... with the possible exception of the Greys' memory implant and their genetic hybridization technologies.

"However, Fifteen and the entire Labyrinth Group carefully considered an alliance with the Greys if for no other reason than to have direct communication with regard to their stated agenda. Fifteen liked to be in the know... so eventually we did establish an alliance, which consisted of a modest information exchange between us. We provided them with access to our information systems relative to genetic populations and their unique

predisposition across a variety of criteria including mental, emotional, and physical behaviors; and they provided us with their genetic findings.

"The Greys, and most extraterrestrials for that matter, communicate with humans exclusively through a form of telepathy, which we called suggestive telepathy because to us it seemed that the Greys communicated in a such a way that they were trying to lead a conversation to a particular end. In other words, they always had an agenda, and we were never certain if we were a pawn of their agenda or we arrived at conclusions that were indeed our own.

"I think that's why Fifteen didn't trust the Greys. He felt they used communication to manipulate outcomes to their own best interest in favor of shared interests. And because of this lack of trust, Fifteen refused to form any alliance or TTP that was comprehensive or integral to our operations at either the ACIO or the Labyrinth Group."

Sarah:

"Did the Greys know of the existence of the Labyrinth Group?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I don't believe so. They were generally convinced that humans were not clever enough to cloak their agendas. Our analysis was that the Greys had invasive technologies that gave them a false sense of security as to their enemy's weaknesses. And I'm not saying that we were enemies, but we never trusted them. And this they undoubtedly knew. They also knew that the ACIO had technologies and intellects that were superior to the mainstream human

population, and they had a modicum of respect - perhaps even fear - of our abilities.

"However, we never showed them any of our pure-state technologies or engaged them in deep dialogues concerning cosmology or new physics. They were clearly interested in our information databases and this was their primary agenda with respect to the ACIO. Fifteen was the primary interface with the Greys because they sensed a comparable intellect in him. The Greys looked at Fifteen as the equivalent of our planet's CEO."

Sarah:

"How did Fifteen become the leader of both the ACIO and the Labyrinth Group?"

Dr. Neruda:

"He was the Director of Research in 1958 when the Corteum first became known to the ACIO. In this position, he was the logical choice to assess their technology and determine its value to the ACIO. The Corteum instantly took a liking to him, and one of Fifteen's first decisions was to utilize the Corteum intelligence accelerator technologies on himself. After about three months of experimentation (most of which was not in his briefing reports to the then current Executive Director of the ACIO), Fifteen became infused with a massive vision of how to create BST.

"The Executive Director was frightened by the intensity of Fifteen's BST agenda and felt that it would divert too much of the ACIO's resources to a technology development program that was dubious. Fifteen was

enough of a renegade that he enlisted the help of the Corteum to establish the Labyrinth Group. The Corteum were equally interested in BST for the similar reasons as Fifteen. The Freedom Key, as it was sometimes called, was established as the prime agenda of the Labyrinth Group, and the Corteum and Fifteen were its initial members.

"Over the next several years, Fifteen selected the cream of the crop from the scientific core of the ACIO to undergo a similar intelligence accelerator program as he had, with the intention of developing a group of scientists that could - in cooperation with the Corteum - successfully invent BST. The ACIO, in the opinion of Fifteen, was too controlled by the NSA and he felt the NSA was too immature in its leadership to responsibly deploy the technologies that he knew would be developed as an outgrowth of the Labyrinth Group. So Fifteen essentially plotted to take over the ACIO and was assisted by his new recruits to do so.

"This happened a few years before I became affiliated with the ACIO as a student and intern. My stepfather was very sympathetic to Fifteen's agenda and was helpful in placing Fifteen as the Executive Director of the ACIO. There was a period of instability when this transition occurred, but after about a year, Fifteen was firmly in control of the agendas of both the ACIO and the Labyrinth Group.

"What I said earlier... that he was viewed as the CEO of the planet... that's essentially who he is. And of the ETs who are interacting with humankind, only the Corteum understand the role of Fifteen. He has a vision that is

unique in that it is a blueprint for the creation of BST, and is closing in on the right technological and human elements that will make this possible."

Sarah:

"What makes BST such an imperative to Fifteen and the Labyrinth Group?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The ACIO has access to many ancient texts that contain prophecies of the earth. These have been accumulated over the past several hundred years through our network of secret organizations of which we are a part. These ancient texts are not known in academic institutions, the media, or mainstream society; they are quite powerful in their depictions of the twenty-first century. Fifteen was made aware of these texts early on when he became Director of Research for the ACIO, and this knowledge only fueled his desire to develop BST."

Sarah:

"What were these prophecies and who made them?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The prophecies were made by a variety of people who are, for the most part, unknown or anonymous, so if I told you their names you would have no recognition. You see, time travel can be accomplished by the soul from an observational level... that is to say, that certain individuals can move in the realm of what we call vertical time and see future events with great clarity, but they are powerless to change them. There are also those individuals who have,



in our opinion, come into contact with the WingMakers and are provided messages about the future, which they had recorded in symbol pictures or extinct languages like Sumerian, Mayan, and Chakobsan.

"The messages or prophecies that they made had several consistent strands or themes that were to occur in the early part of the twenty-first century, around the year 2011. Chief among these was the infiltration of the major governments of the world, including the United Nations, by an alien race. This alien race was a predator race with extremely sophisticated technologies that enabled them to integrate with the human species. That is to say, they could pose as humanoids, but they were truly a blend of human and android - in other words, they were synthetics.

"This alien race was prophesied to establish a world government and rule as its executive power. It was to be the ultimate challenge to humankind's collective intelligence and survival. These texts are kept from the public because they are too fear-provoking and would likely result in apocalyptic reprisals and mass paranoia..."

Sarah:

"Are you saying what I think you're saying? That anonymous prophets from God knows where and when, have seen a vision of our future take-over by a race of robots? I mean you do realize how... how unbelievable that sounds?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes... I know it sounds unbelievable... but there are diluted versions of this very same prophecy in our

religious texts, it's just that the alien race is portrayed as the antichrist; as if the alien race was personified in the form of Lucifer. This form of the prophecy was acceptable to the gatekeepers of these texts, and so they allowed a form of the prophecy to be distributed, but the notion of an alien race was eliminated."

Sarah:

"Why? And who exactly is it who's censoring what we can read and can't? Are you suggesting there's a secret editorial committee that previews books before their distribution?"

Dr. Neruda:

"This is a very complicated subject and I could spend a whole day just acquainting you with the general structure of this control of information. Most of the world's major libraries have collections of information that are not available to the general public. Only scholars are authorized to review these materials, and usually only on site. In the same way, there are manuscripts that were controversial and posited theories that were sharply different than the accepted belief systems of their day. These manuscripts or writings were banished by a variety of sources, including the Vatican, universities, governments, and various institutions.

"These writings are sought out by secret organizations that have a mission to collect and retain this information. These organizations are very powerful and well funded, and they can purchase these original manuscripts for a relatively small amount of money. Most of the writings are believed to be hocus-pocus anyway, so libraries are often

very willing to part with them for an endowment or modest contribution. Also, most of these are original writings having never been published, being that they originated from a time before the printing press.

"There is a network of secret organizations that are loosely connected through the financial markets and their interests in worldly affairs. They are generally centers of power for the monetary systems within their respective countries, and are elitists of the first order. The ACIO is affiliated with this network only because it is rightly construed that the ACIO has the best technology in the world, and this technology can be deployed for financial gain through market manipulation.

"As for an editorial committee... no, this secret network of organizations doesn't review books before publication. Its holdings are exclusively in ancient manuscripts and religious texts. They have a very strong interest in prophecy because they believe in the concept of vertical time and they have a vested interest in knowing the macro-environmental changes that can affect the economy. You see for most of them, the only game on this planet that is worth playing is the acquisition of ever-increasing wealth and power through an orchestrated manipulation of the key variables that drive the economic engines of our world."

Sarah:

"So if they're so smart about the future, and they believe these prophecies, what're they doing to help protect us from these alien invaders?"

Dr. Neruda:

"They help fund the ACIO. This collective of organizations has enormous wealth. More than most governments can comprehend. The ACIO provides them with the technology to manipulate money markets and rake in hundreds of billions of dollars every year. I don't even know the scope of their collective wealth. The ACIO also receives funding from the sale of its diluted technologies to these organizations for the sake of their own security and protection. We've devised the world's finest security systems, which are both undetectable and impregnable to outside forces like the CIA and the former KGB.

"The reason they fund the ACIO is that they believe Fifteen is the most brilliant man alive and they're aware of his general agenda to develop BST. They see this technology as the ultimate safeguard against the prophecy and their ability to retain relative control of the world and national economies. They also know Fifteen's strategic position with alien technologies and hope that between his genius, and the alien technologies that the ACIO is assimilating, that BST is possible to develop before the prophecy occurs."

Sarah:

"But why the sudden interest in the WingMakers' time capsule? How does it play a role in all of this BST stuff?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Initially, we didn't know what the connection was between the Ancient Arrow project and the BST Imperative. You have to understand that the time capsule was a collection of twenty-three chambers literally carved

inside of a canyon wall in the middle of nowhere about eighty miles northeast of Chaco Canyon in New Mexico. It is, without a doubt, the most amazing archeological find of all time. If scientists were allowed to examine this site, with all of its artifacts intact, they would be in awe of this incredible find.

"Our preliminary assumptions were that this site was a time capsule of sorts left behind by an extraterrestrial race who had visited earth in the eighth century. But we couldn't understand why the art was so clearly representative of earth - if it were a time capsule. The only logical conclusion was that it represented a future version of humanity. But we weren't certain of this until we figured out how to access the optical disc and translate the first set of documents from the disc.

"Once we had a clear understanding of how the WingMakers wanted to be understood, we began to test their claims by analyzing their chamber paintings, poetry, music, philosophy, and artifacts. This analysis made us fairly certain that they were authentic, which meant that they were not only time travelers, but that they were also in possession of a form of BST..."

Sarah:

"Why did you assume they had BST?"

Dr. Neruda:

"We believed it took them a minimum of two months to create their time capsule. This would have required them to open and hold open a window of time and physically operate within the selected time frame. This is a

fundamental requirement of BST. Additionally, it is necessary to be able to select the intervention points with precision - both in terms of time and space. We believed they had this capability, and they had proven it with their time capsule.

"Furthermore, the technological artifacts they had left behind were evidence of a technology that was so far in advance to our own that we couldn't even understand them. None of the extraterrestrial races we were aware of had technologies so advanced that we could not probe them, assimilate them, and reverse-engineer them. The technologies left behind in the Ancient Arrow site were totally enigmatic and impervious to our probes. We considered them so advanced that they were quite literally indiscernible and unusable which - though it may sound odd - is a clear sign of an extremely advanced technology."

Sarah:

"So you decided that the WingMakers were in possession of BST, but how did you think you were going to acquire their knowledge?"

Dr. Neruda:

"We didn't know, and to this day, the answer to that question is allusive [sic]. The ACIO placed its best resources on this project for more than two intensive months. I posited the theory that the time capsule was an encoded communication device. I began to theorize that when one went through the effort to interact with the various symbol pictures and immerse themselves in the time capsule's art and philosophy, it affected the central

nervous system in a way that it improved fluid intelligence.

"It was, in my opinion, the principle goal of the time capsule to boost fluid intelligence so that BST was not only able to be developed, but also utilized..."

Sarah:

"You lost me. What is the relationship between BST and fluid intelligence?"

Dr. Neruda:

"BST is a specific form of time travel. Science fiction treats time travel as something that is relatively easy to design and develop, and relatively one-dimensional. Time travel is anything but one-dimensional. As advanced in technology as the Corium and Greys are, they have yet to produce the equivalent of BST. They are able to time travel in its elemental form, but they can't interact with the time that they travel to. That is to say, they can go back in time, but once there, they cannot alter the events of that time because they are in a passive, observational mode.

"The Labyrinth Group has conducted seven time travel experiments over the past thirty years. One clear outcome from these tests is that the person performing the time travel is an integral variable to the technology used to time travel. In other words, the person and the technology need to be precisely matched. The Labyrinth Group, for all it knows, already possesses BST, but lacks the time traveler equivalent of an astronaut who can appropriately finesse the technology in real time and make the split-second adjustments that BST requires.

"The Labyrinth Group has never seriously considered the human element of BST and how it is integral to the technology itself. There were some of us who were involved in the translation indexes of the WingMakers, who began to feel that that was the nature of the time capsule: to enhance fluid intelligence and activate new sensory inputs that were critical to the BST experience."

Sarah:

"But I still don't understand what it was that led you to that conclusion?"

Dr. Neruda

"When we had translated the first thirty pages of text from the optical disc, we learned some interesting things about the WingMakers and their philosophy. Namely, that they claimed that the three-dimensional five-sensory domain that humans have adjusted to, is the reason we are only using a fractional portion of our intelligence. They claimed that the time capsule would be the bridge from the three-dimensional five-sensory domain to the multidimensional seven-sensory domain.

"In my opinion, they were saying that in order to apply BST, the traveler needed to operate from the multidimensional seven-sensory domain. Otherwise, BST was the proverbial camel through the eye of the needle... or in other words... impossible..."

Sarah:

"This at least seems plausible to me, why was it so hard to believe for the ACIO?"



Dr. Neruda:

"This initiative was really conducted by the Labyrinth Group and not the ACIO, so I'm making that distinction just to be accurate, and not to be critical of your question. For Fifteen, it was hard to believe that a time capsule could activate or construct a bridge that would lead someone to become a traveler. This seemed like an extraordinarily remote possibility. He felt that the time capsule may hold the technology to enable BST, but he didn't believe it was merely an educational or developmental experience.

"Also, and more importantly, the true identity of the WingMakers became clear as we deployed our RV technologies."

Sarah:

"First, what're RV technologies?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Think of it as psychic spying. The ACIO has a department that specializes in Remote Viewing technology, and within this department was a woman of unparalleled capability as an RV. She was assigned to the project as its RV, and she was a critical element in determining the identity and purpose of the WingMakers."

Sarah:

"Can we come back to the RV technology? Just tell me what she discovered as to the identity of the WingMakers."

Dr. Neruda:

"She was very attuned to the first artifact we recovered, which turned out to be a homing device that essentially led us to the Ancient Arrow site. We conducted two official RV sessions - one that I monitored and another that Fifteen monitored. She was able to make contact with the original planners of the Ancient Arrow site. Through these two RV sessions we were able to determine that the identity of the WingMakers was an ancient - the most ancient - race of humankind."

Sarah:

"When you say most ancient, what do you mean?"

Dr. Neruda:

"We know of them mostly through a few ancient manuscripts that were reputedly channeled by these beings. There're a few myths in Mayan and Sumerian text that refer to these being [sic] as well. But the most definitive text comes from the Corteum who defined them, in our terms, as the Central Race."

Sarah:

"How can they be so ancient if they're so technologically advanced?"

Dr. Neruda:

The Central Race resides in the most primeval galaxies nearest the centermost part of the universe. According to Corteum cosmology, the structure of the universe is segmented into seven superuniverses that each revolve around a central universe. The central universe is the material home of First Source or the Creator. According to

the Corteum, in order to govern the material universe, First Source must inhabit materiality and function in the material universe. The central universe is the material home of First Source and is eternal. It's surrounded by dark gravity bodies that make it essentially invisible even to those galaxies that lie closest to its periphery.

"The Corteum teach that the central universe is stationary and eternal, while the seven superuniverses are creations of time and revolve around the central universe in a counterclockwise rotation. Surrounding these seven superuniverses is "outer" or peripheral space, which is non-physical elementals consisting of non-baryonic matter or antimatter, which rotates around the seven superuniverses in a clockwise rotation. This vast outer space is expansion room for the superuniverses to expand into. The known universe that your astronomers see is mostly a small fragment of our superuniverse and the expansion space at its outermost periphery. Hubble-based astronomy extrapolates, based on a fractional field of view, that there are 50 billion galaxies in our superuniverse, each containing over 100 billion stars. However, most astronomers remain convinced that our universe is singular. It is not... according to the Corteum."

"On the fringe of the central universe resides the Central Race, which contain the original human DNA template of creation. However, they are such an ancient race that they appear to us as Gods, when indeed they represent our future selves. Time and space are the only variables of distinction. The Central Race is known to some as the creator gods who developed the primal template of the human species and then, working in conjunction with the

Life Carriers, seeded the galaxies as the universes expanded. Each of the seven superuniverses has a distinctive purpose and relationship with the central universe via the Central Race based on how the Central Race experimented with the DNA to achieve distinct, but compatible physical embodiments to be soul carriers.

Sarah:

"I don't even know what to ask next..."

Dr. Neruda:

"The Central Race is divided into seven tribes, and they are master geneticists and the progenitors of the humanoid race. In effect, they are our future selves. Quite literally they represent what we will evolve into in time and towards in terms of space."

Sarah:

"So, you're saying that the WingMakers are our future selves and that they're building these time capsules in order to communicate with us?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The Labyrinth Group believed that the WingMakers are representatives of the Central Race, and that they created our particular human genotype to become suitable soul carriers in our particular universe. The Ancient Arrow site is part of a broader, interconnected system of seven sites installed on each continent. Together, we believe this system constitutes a defensive technology."

Sarah:

"So there're are seven Ancient Arrow sites?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes."

Sarah:

"And you know where they are?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I know generally where the remaining six are, but I don't know their specific location. They remain undiscovered so far as I know."

Sarah:

"Why would the most advanced race - or future version of humanity - place such a sophisticated array of technologies and artifacts on our planet? What're they afraid of?"

Dr. Neruda:

"They have an ancient, formidable enemy, which Fifteen calls the Animus."

Sarah:

"We're back to the synthetics?"

Dr. Neruda:

"One in the same."

Sarah:

"So, the WingMakers are protecting their human genetics from the invasion of the Animus, and they placed

these sites... or defensive technologies on earth to somehow prevent them from taking over the planet?"

Dr. Neruda

"That's essentially what we believe. However, it's more than human DNA. It includes all the higher order animals, humans being one of a collective of about one hundred and twenty species."

Sarah:

"And you know all of this because of a psychic's vision, a few ancient manuscripts, and the Corteum?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I admit it sounds implausible, but yes, we know all of this from sources that no one in the public domain can access or corroborate."

Sarah:

"So the WingMakers, or Central Race, created us and presumably hundreds of other species, planted us on earth, and then built a complex defensive system to protect their genetics. Is that the situation?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The best way to conceptualize who these beings are, is to consider them as geneticists who were the first born of First Source. The galaxies in which the Central Race resides are approximately eighteen billion years old and their genetics are immeasurably more developed than our own. They are the optimal soul carrier in that they can co-exist in the material world and the non-material

dimensions simultaneously. This is because their genetic blueprint has been fully activated."

Sarah:

"You sound like you're a believer in this philosophy, but I don't understand why you're such an authority if it's the Corteum cosmology. Did they teach you this?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Part of our TTP with the Corteum extended to their cosmology, and they have the equivalent of our Bible called Liminal Cosmogony that I translated. It was our first detailed exposure to the Central Race and their behind-the-scenes influence of genetic evolution and transformation."

Sarah:

"What do you mean 'behind-the-scenes'?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The WingMakers have created a DNA template that is form-fitted to each of the seven superuniverses, enabling a unique and dominant soul carrier to emerge within each of the superuniverses. This soul carrier - in our case - is the human genotype. Within our genetic substrate is the inborn structure that will ultimately deliver our species to the central universe as a perfected species. The WingMakers have encoded this within our DNA, and set forth the natural and artificial trigger points that cause our genetic structures to alter and adapt. In this process, it activates parts of our nervous system that feed the brain with a

much richer stream of data from our five senses and two additional senses that we have yet to consciously activate."

Sarah:

"It sounds a little too manufactured."

Dr. Neruda:

"What do you mean?"

Sarah:

"Just that humans will one day aspire to the heights of the WingMakers, but our salvation is something invisible that's encoded in our genes. It feels like we're manufactured to attain the same view or perspective of our creators. What happened to freewill?"

Dr. Neruda:

"You raise a good question, Sarah. I can't defend this system of belief. I can recite any passage you want from the books that I know, but it's just someone's opinion who's taken the time to write it down.

"I can tell you that in my experience, the wider the range of possibilities as one moves toward more of a multidimensional thought stream and activity path, the narrower one's choices become as they pertain to rightful living. You could even say that freewill diminishes as one becomes realized to all possibilities."

Sarah:



"I know you're trying to help, but you lost me... but don't try and explain again. Let's just chalk it up to my dense brain getting in the way."

Dr. Neruda:

"If it's anything, it's my poor explanation. It's difficult to define these things in a way that can enter your consciousness at its preparation point."

Sarah:

"You said earlier that the WingMakers encoded trigger points that were both natural and artificially stimulated. What did you mean?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Again, I want to emphasize that this is all according to the Corteum. We have very little proof of any of this from our own empirical research. However, the Labyrinth Group has a high degree of trust in the Corteum's cosmological systems of belief because of their history as an explorer race, and their superior application of physics.

"Our human DNA is designed. It did not evolve from forces of time, matter, and energy. It was designed by the Central Race, and part of this design was to encode within the DNA template certain super sensory capabilities that would enable a human to perceive itself in a very specific way."

Sarah:

"In what way?"

Neruda:

"As a soul carrier that is connected to the universe like a ray of light is connected to a spectrum of colors as it passes through a prism."

Sarah:

"Could you be a bit more concrete?"

Dr. Neruda (laughing):

"I'm sorry, sometimes I quote passages - it's easier than coming up with my own explanation every time."

Sarah:

"No doubt one of the curses of having a photographic memory."

Dr. Neruda:

"Perhaps you're right. I'll try in my own words.

"Our DNA is designed to respond to natural imagery, words, tones, music, and other external forces."

Sarah:

What do you mean by 'respond'?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It can activate or de-activate certain components of its structure that enable adaptation in both the biological and higher states of being -"

Sarah:

"Like?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Like the state of enlightenment as described by some of our planet's spiritual teachers."

Sarah:

"I've never heard of enlightenment as something that one adapts to."

Dr. Neruda:

"That's only because mystics and scientists alike do not understand this aspect of the human DNA template. Everything, whether it's a biological environment or a state of mind, requires adaptation on the part of the person undergoing the experience. Adaptation is the primary intelligence designed within our genetic code, and it is this intelligence that is awakened, or triggered, with certain stimuli.

"The stimuli can be artificially induced, that is to say, the Central Race has encoded adaptation to higher vibratory frequencies within our DNA that they can trigger through catalytic images, words, or sounds."

Sarah:

"Okay, so now you're coming full circle to the purpose of the artifacts found at the Ancient Arrow site. Correct?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I believe they're related. To what extent I'm not sure. But from reading the information contained within the optical disc, I'm quite certain that the WingMakers intend the music, art, poetry, and philosophy to be catalytic."

Sarah:

"But for what purpose?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Let's save that for a later time. I promise we'll get to that, but it's a very long story."

Sarah:

"Let's take a short break and resume after we've had a chance to grab some more coffee. Okay?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Okay."

(Break for about 10 minutes... Resume interview)

Sarah:

"During the break I asked you about the network of secret organizations you mentioned that the ACIO is part of. Can you elaborate on this network and what its agenda is?"

Dr. Neruda:

"There are many organizations that have noble exteriors and secret interiors. In other words, they may have external agendas that they promote to their employees, members, and the media, but there is also a secret and well-hidden agenda that only the inner core of the organization is aware of. The outer rings or protective membership as they're sometimes referred to, are simply window dressing to cover-up the real agenda of the organization.

"The IMF, Foreign Relations Committee, NSA, KGB, CIA, World Bank, and the Federal Reserve are all examples of these organizational structures. Their inner core is knitted together to form an elitist, secret society, with its own culture, economy, and communication system. These are the powerful and wealthy who have joined forces in order to manipulate world political, economic, and social systems to facilitate their personal agenda.

"The agenda, as I know it, is primarily concerned with control of the world economy and its vital resources - oil, gold, gas reserves, platinum, diamonds, etc. This secret network has utilized technology from the ACIO for the purpose of securing control of the world economy. They're well into the process of designing an integrated world economy based on a digital equivalent of paper currency. This infrastructure is in place, but it is taking more time than expected to implement because of the resistance of competitive forces who don't understand the exact nature of this secret network, but intuitively sense its existence.

"These competitive forces are generally businesses and politicians who are affiliated with the transition to a global, digital economy, but want to have some control of the infrastructure development, and because of their size and position in the marketplace can exert significant influence on this secret network.

"The only organization that I'm aware of that is entirely independent as to its agenda, and therefore the most powerful or alpha organization, is the Labyrinth Group. And they are in this position because of their pure-state technologies and the intellect of its members. All other

organizations - whether part of this secret network of organizations or powerful multinational corporations - are not in control of the execution of their agenda. They are essentially locked in a competitive battle."

Sarah:

"But if this is all true, then is Fifteen essentially running this secret network?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No. He's not interested in the agenda of this secret network. He's bored by it. He has no interest in power or money. He's only attracted to the mission of building BST to thwart hostile alien attacks that have been prophesied for 12,000 years. He believes that the only mission worth deploying the Labyrinth Group's considerable intellectual power is the development of the ultimate defensive weapon or Freedom Key. He's convinced that only the Labyrinth Group has a chance to do this before it's too late.

"You have to remember that the Labyrinth Group consists of one hundred eighteen humans and approximately two hundred Corteum. The intellectual ability of this group, aligned behind the focused mission of developing BST before the alien take-over, is truly a remarkable undertaking that makes the Manhattan Project look like a kindergarten social party in comparison. And perhaps I'm exaggerating a bit for effect... but I'm pointing out that Fifteen is leading an agenda that is far more critical than anything that has been undertaken in the history of humankind."

Sarah:

"So, if Fifteen is running his own agenda, and it's just as you say it is, why would you defect from such an organization?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The ACIO has a memory implant technology that can effectively eliminate select memories with surgical precision. For example, this technology could eliminate your recall of this interview without disrupting any other memories before or after. You would simply sense some missing time perhaps, but nothing more would be recalled... if that.

"My intuition cautioned me that I was a candidate to have this procedure because of the behaviors I was exhibiting in deference to the WingMakers. In other words, I was believed to be a sympathizer of their culture, philosophy, and mission - what I knew of it. That made me a potential risk to the project. The Labyrinth Group, in a very real sense, feared its own membership because of their enormous intellects and ability to be cunning and clever.

"This imprinted a constant state of paranoia which meant that technology was deployed to help ensure compliance to the agenda of Fifteen. Most of these technologies were invasive, and the members of the Labyrinth Group willingly submitted to the invasion in order to more effectively cope with the paranoia. Several months ago I began to systematically shut down these invasive technologies - in part to see what the reaction of Fifteen would be, and partly because I was tired of the paranoia.

"As I was doing this, it became obvious to me that the suspicions were escalating and it was simply a matter of time before they would ask me to subject myself to an MRP -"

Sarah:

"MRP?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes, MRP stands for Memory Restructure Procedure. What I had learned from the WingMakers' time capsule is not something I want to forget. I don't want to give this information up. It has become a central part of what I believe and how I want to live out my life."

Sarah:

"Couldn't you have simply defected and not sought out a journalist who will want to get this story out. I mean, couldn't you have simply gone to an island and lived out your life and never disclosed the existence of the Labyrinth Group and the WingMakers?"

Dr. Neruda:

"You don't understand... the Labyrinth Group is untouchable. They have no fears about what I divulge to the media, their only concern is the terrible precedence of defection. I'm the first. No one has ever left before. And their fear is that if I defect and get away successfully, others will too. And once that happens, the mission is compromised and BST may never happen."

"Fifteen and his Directors take their mission very seriously. They are fanatics of the first order, which is both



good and bad. Good in the sense that they're focused and working hard to develop BST, bad in the sense that fanaticism breeds paranoia. My reasons for seeking out a journalist like you and sharing this knowledge is that I don't want the WingMakers' time capsules to be locked away from humanity. I think its contents should be shared. I think that was their purpose."

Sarah:

"This will seem like a strange question, but why would the WingMakers hide their time capsule and then encode its content in such an extraordinarily complex way if they wanted this to be shared with humanity? If the average citizen had found this time capsule... or even a government laboratory, what's the chance they would have been able to decipher it and access the optical disc?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It's not such a strange question actually. We asked it ourselves. It seemed clear to the Labyrinth Group that it had been the chosen organization to unlock the optical disc. To answer your question directly, had the time capsule been discovered by another organization, chances are excellent that its optical disc would never be accessed. Somehow, this coincidence - that the time capsule ended up in the hands of the Labyrinth Group - seems to be an orchestrated process. And even Fifteen agreed with that assessment."

Sarah:

"So Fifteen felt that the WingMakers had selected the Labyrinth Group to decide the fate of the time capsule's content?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes."

Sarah:

"Then wouldn't it be reasonable to assume that Fifteen wanted to learn more about the contents of the time capsule before he released it to the public through the NSA or some other government agency?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No. It's doubtful that Fifteen would ever release any information about the Ancient Arrow project to anyone outside of the ACIO. He's not one to share information that he feels is proprietary to the Labyrinth Group, particularly if it has anything to do with BST."

Sarah:

"So now that you've made these statements, isn't it going to effect the ACIO? Isn't someone going to ask questions and start poking around looking for answers?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Perhaps. But I know too much about their security systems, and there's no way that a political inquiry will find them. And there's no way the secret network of organizations I mentioned earlier could exert any influence over them; they're completely indebted to the ACIO for technologies that permit them to manipulate economic

markets. They... the ACIO and Labyrinth Group are, as I said before, untouchable. Their only concern will be defection... the loss of intellectual capital."

Sarah:

"What effect will your defection have on the ACIO or the Labyrinth Group?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Very little. Most of my contributions with respect to the time capsule have been completed. There are some other projects having to do with encryption technologies that I developed and these will be more significant in their impact."

Sarah:

"Back to the WingMakers for a moment, if they're so advanced technologically, why time capsules? Why not just appear one day and announce whatever it is they want to share? Why this game of hide and seek and hidden time capsules?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Their motives are not clear. I think they left behind these time capsules as their way to bring culture and technology from their time to ours. We also believe that these sites represent a defensive weapon. A very sophisticated defensive weapon.

"As for why don't they just show up and give us the information... this, I think, is their genius. They've created seven time capsules and placed them in various parts of the world. I believe this is all part of a master plan or

strategy to engage our intellects and spirits in a way that has never been done before. To demonstrate how art - culture, science, spirituality, how all of these things are connected. I believe they want us to discover this... not to be told.

"If they simply arrived here in your living room and announced they were the WingMakers from the centermost sector of the universe, I suspect you'd be more amazed about their personalities and physical characteristics and what life is like in their world. That's assuming you even believed them. The aspects of what they wanted to impart - culture, art, technology, philosophy, spirituality, these items could get lost in the phenomenon of their presence.

"Also, in the text that we had translated, it was apparent that the WingMakers had time traveled on many occasions. They interacted with people from many different times and called themselves Culture Bearers. They were probably mistaken as angels or even Gods. For all we know, their reference in religious texts may indeed be frequent."

Sarah:

"So you think they intend that these time capsules be shared with the whole of humanity?"

Dr. Neruda:

"You mean the WingMakers?"

Sarah:

"Yes?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I don't know with absolute certainty. But I think they should be shared. I don't have anything to personally gain from getting this information out to the public. It goes against everything I've been trained for and places me at risk and at the very least, disrupts my lifestyle irreparably.

"To me, the Ancient Arrow time capsule is the single greatest discovery in the history of humankind. Discoveries of this magnitude should be in the public domain. They shouldn't be selfishly secured and retained by the ACIO or any other organization."

Sarah:

"Then why are these discoveries and the whole situation with ETs kept from the public?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The people who have access to this information like the sense of being unique and privileged. That's the psychology of secret organizations and why they flourish. Privileged information is the ambrosia of elitists. It gives them a sense of power, and the human ego loves to feed from the trough of power.

"They would never confess to this, but the drama of the ET contact and other mysterious or paranormal phenomenon is extremely compelling and of vital interest to anyone who is of a curious nature. Particularly politicians and scientists. And by keeping these subjects in private rooms behind closed doors with all the secrecy surrounding it, it creates a sense of drama that is missing in most of their other pursuits.

"So you see, Sarah, the drama of secrecy is very addictive. Now of course, the reason that they would tell you for keeping this out of the public domain is for purposes of national security, economic stability, and social order. And to some extent, I suppose there's truth to that. But it's not the real reason."

Sarah:

"Does our President know about the ET situation?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes."

Sarah:

"What does he know?"

Dr. Neruda:

"He knows about the Greys. He knows about ET bases that exist on planets within our solar system. He knows about the Martians..."

Sarah:

"Good God, you're not going to tell me that little green men from Mars actually exist are you?"

Dr. Neruda:

"If I were to tell you what I know about the ET situation, I'm afraid I would lose my credibility in your eyes. Believe me, the reality of the ET situation is much more complex and dimensional than I have time tonight to report, and if I gave you a superficial rendering, I think you'd find it impossible to believe. So I'm going to tell you

partial truths, and I'm going to be very careful in my choice of words.

"The Martians are a humanoid race fashioned from the same gene pool as we. They live in underground bases within Mars, and their numbers are small. Some have already immigrated to earth, and with some superficial adjustments to their physical appearance, they could pass for a human in broad daylight.

"President Clinton is aware of these matters and has considered alternative ways to communicate with ETs. To date, a form of telepathy has been used as the primary communication interface. However, this is not a trusted form of communication, especially in the minds of our military personnel. Virtually every radio telescope on the globe has been, at one time or another, used to communicate with ETs. This has had mixed results, but there have been successes, and our President is aware of these."

Sarah:

"Then is Clinton involved in the secret network you mentioned earlier?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Not knowingly. But he is clearly an important influencer, and is treated with great care by high-level operatives within the network."

Sarah:

"So you're saying he's manipulated?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It depends on your definition of manipulation. He can make any decision he desires, ultimately he has the power to make or influence all decisions relative to national security, economic stability, and social order. But he generally seeks inputs from his advisors. And high-level operatives from this secret network advise his advisors. The network, and its operatives, seldom gets too close to political power because it's in the media fish bowl, and they disdain the scrutiny of the media and the public in general.

"Clinton, therefore is not manipulated, but simply advised. The information he receives is sometimes doctored to lead his decisions in the direction that the network feels is most beneficial to all of its members. To the extent that information is doctored, then I think you could say that the President is manipulated. He has precious little time to perform fact checking and fully evaluate alternative plans, which is why the advisors are so important and influential."

Sarah:

"Okay, so he's manipulated - at least by my definition. Is this also happening with other governments like Japan and Great Britain for instance?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes. This network is not just national or even global. It extends to other races and species. So its influence is quite broad, as are the influences that impinge upon it. It is a two-way street. As I said before, The Labyrinth Group operates the only agenda that is truly independent, and because of its goal, it's permitted to have this



independence... though in all honesty, there's nothing that anyone could do to prevent it, with the possible exception of the WingMakers."

Sarah:

"So all the world's governments are being manipulated by this secret network of organizations... who are these organizations... you mentioned some of them, but who are the rest? Is the mob involved?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I could name most of them, but to what end? Most you wouldn't recognize or find any reference to. They are like the Labyrinth Group. Had you ever heard of it before? Of course not. Even the current management of the NSA is not aware of the ACIO. At one time, they were. But that was over 35 years ago, and people circulate out of the organization, but still retain their alliance to the secret and privileged information network.

"And no, absolutely there is no mob or organized crime influence in this network. The network uses organized crime as a shield in some instances, but organized crime operates through intimidation, not stealth. Its leaders possess average intelligence and associate with information systems that are obsolete and therefore non-strategic. The organized crime network is a much less sophisticated version of the network I was referring to."

Sarah:

Okay, back to the WingMakers for a moment... and I apologize for my scattered questions tonight. It's just that there's so much I want to know that I'm finding it very

difficult to stay on the subject of the Ancient Arrow project."

Dr. Neruda:

"You don't need to apologize. I understand how this must sound to you. I'm still wide awake, so you don't have to worry about the time."

Sarah:

"Okay. Let's talk a little bit about your impressions or insights into ET situation that you spoke of earlier. To me, this is the part that's most fascinating."

Dr. Neruda:

"First of all, I want to explain that the ETs that interact with our world's governments are not the same ones that interact with the Labyrinth Group."

Sarah:

"But I thought you said that the Greys were involved with the ACIO, or at least one of its factions."

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes, they're also known as the Zetas, but as I said, they're many different factions of the Greys and the one that the ACIO is working with are the alpha faction, and they don't operate with our government organizations because they are too suspicious of them, and frankly, don't view them as intelligent enough to even warrant their time."

Sarah:

"What about the Corteum?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The Corteum are a very sophisticated culture, integrating technology, culture, and science in a very holistic manner. For different reasons, they're not involved with our governments either, mainly because of their role with the Federation."

Sarah:

"What's the Federation... I haven't heard you talk about it before?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Each galaxy has a Federation or loose-knit organization that includes all sentient life forms on every planet within the galaxy. It would be the equivalent of the United Nations of the galaxy. This Federation has both invited members and observational members. Invited members are those species that have managed to behave in a responsible manner as stewards of their planet and combine both the technology, philosophy, and culture that enable them to communicate as a global entity that has a unified agenda.

"Observational members are species who are fragmented and are still wrestling with one another over land, power, money, culture, and a host of other things that prevent them from forming a unified world government. The human race on planet earth is such a species, and for now, it is simply observed by the Federation, but is not invited into its policy making and economic systems."

Sarah:

"Are you saying that our galaxy has a form of government and an economic system?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes, but if I tell you about this you will lose track of what I really wanted to share with you about the WingMakers..."

Sarah:

"I'm sorry for taking us off track again. But this is just too amazing to ignore. If there's a Federation of cooperative, intelligent species, why couldn't they take care of these hostile aliens in the year 2011 or at least help us?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The Federation doesn't intrude on a species of any kind. It is truly a facilitating force not a governing force with a military presence. That is to say, they will observe and help with suggestions, but they will not intervene on our behalf."

Sarah:

"Is this like the Prime Directive as it's portrayed on Star Trek?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No. It's more like a parent who wants its children to learn how to fend for themselves so they can become greater contributors to the family."

Sarah:

"But wouldn't a hostile take-over of earth effect the Federation?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Most definitely. But the Federation does not preempt a species' own responsibility for survival and the perpetuation of its genetics. You see, at an atomic level our physical bodies are made quite literally from stars. At a sub-atomic level, our minds are non-physical repositories of a galactic mind. At a sub-sub-atomic level, our souls are non-physical repositories of God or the intelligence that pervades the universe.

"The Federation believes that the human species can defend itself because it is of the stars, galactic mind, and God. If we were unsuccessful, and the hostility spread to other parts of our galaxy, then the Federation would take notice and its members would defend their sovereignty, and this has happened many times. And in this process of defense new technologies arise, new friendships are forged, and new confidence is embedded in the galactic mind.

"That's why the Federation performs as they do."

Sarah:

"Doesn't BST exist somewhere within the Federation?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Perhaps in one of the planets closer to our galactic core."

Sarah:

"So why doesn't the Federation help... you said they could help didn't you?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes, they can help. And the Corteum are IMs or invited members and they are helping us. But they themselves do not possess the BST technology... this is a very special technology that's permitted to be acquired by a species that intends to use it only as a defensive weapon. And herein is the challenge."

Sarah:

"Who does the "permitting"... are you saying the Federation decides when a species is ready to acquire BST?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No... I think it has to do with God."

Sarah:

"I don't know why, but I have a hard time believing that you believe in God."

Dr. Neruda:

"Well, I do. And furthermore, so does everyone within the Labyrinth Group - including Fifteen. We've seen far too many evidences of God or a higher intelligence that we can't dispute its existence. It would be impossible to deny based on what we've observed in our laboratories."

Sarah:

"So God decides when we're ready to responsibly use BST. Do you think he'll decide before 2011?" (I admit there was a tone of sarcasm in this question.)

Dr. Neruda:

"You see, Sarah, the Labyrinth Group is hopeful that the readiness of the entire species isn't the determining factor, but that a subgroup within the species might be allowed to acquire the technology as long as it was able to protect it from all non-approved forces. This subgroup is hoped to be the Labyrinth Group, and it's one of the reasons why Fifteen has invested so much of the ACIO's resource into security systems."

Sarah:

"You didn't really answer my question though... Do you think it can be developed in 12 years?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I don't know. Certainly I hope so, but BST is not our only line of defense. The Labyrinth Group has devised many defensive weapons, not all of which I'll describe to you. The Animus have visited earth before, approximately three hundred million years ago, but they didn't find anything present on our planet to cause them to invest the time and resources to colonize our planet. When their probes return in thirteen years, they will think differently.

"Our analysis is that they will befriend our governments and utilize the United Nations as an ally. They will set about orchestrating a unified world government through the United Nations. And when the first elections are held in 2018, they will overtake the United Nations and rule as

the world government. This will be done through trickery and deception.

"I mention our analysis - taken from three different RV sessions - because they're quite specific as to the dates, and so we have the equivalent of nineteen years to produce and deploy BST. Ideally, yes, we'd like to have it completed in order to interface with the intervention points for this race when it decided to crossover into our galaxy. We would like to cause them to choose a different galaxy or abandon their quest altogether. But it may be impossible to determine this intervention point.

"You see, the memory implant technology developed by the Labyrinth Group can be utilized in conjunction with BST. We can define the intervention point when our galaxy was selected as a target to colonize, enter that time and place, and impose a new memory on their leadership to divert them from our galaxy."

Sarah:

"Either I'm getting tired, or this just got a lot more confusing... You're saying that the Labyrinth Group already has scenarios to nip this thing in the bud... to prevent this marauding group of aliens from even entering our galaxy? How do you know where they are?"

Dr. Neruda:

"To answer your question, I would need to explain with much more granularity the precise nature of BST and how it differs from time travel. I'll try to explain it as simply as I can, but it's complex, and you need to let go of some of your preconceived notions of time and space.



"You see... time is not exclusively linear as when it's depicted in a timeline. Time is vertical with every moment in existence stacked upon the next and all coinciding with one another. In other words, time is the collective of all moments of all experience simultaneously existing within non-time, which is usually referred to as eternity.

"Vertical time infers that one can select a moment of experience and use time and space as the portal through which they make their selection real. Once the selection is made, time and space become the continuity factor that changes vertical time into horizontal time or conventional time ..."

Sarah:

"You lost me. How is vertical time different from horizontal time?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Vertical time has to do with the simultaneous experience of all time, and horizontal time has to do with the continuity of time in linear, moment-by-moment experiences."

Sarah:

"So you're saying that every experience I've ever had or will ever have exists right now? That the past and future are actually the present, but I'm just too brainwashed to see it?"

Dr. Neruda:

"As I said before, this is a complex subject, and I'm afraid that if I spend the time explaining it to you now,

we'll lose track of more important information like BST. Perhaps if I were to explain the nature of BST, most of your questions would be answered in the process."

Sarah:

"Okay, then tell me what Blank Slate Technology is? Given the title, I assume it means something like... wipe out an event and change the course of history. Right?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Let me try to explain it this way. Time travel can be observational in nature. In this regard, the ACIO and other organizations - even individual citizens - have the ability to time travel. But this form of time travel is passive. It's not equivalent to BST. In order to precisely alter the future you have to be able to interact with vertical time, paging through it like a book, until you find the precise page or intervention point relevant to your mission.

"This is where it gets so complex because to interact with vertical time means you will alter the course of horizontal time. And understanding the alterations and their scope and implication requires extremely complex modeling. This is why the Labyrinth Group aligned itself with the Corteum - its computing technology has processing capabilities that are about four thousand times more powerful than our best supercomputers.

"This enables us to create organic, highly complex scenario models. These models tell us the most probable intervention points once we've gathered the relevant data, and what the most probable outcomes will be if we invoke a specific scenario. Like most complex technologies, BST

is a composite technology having five discrete and inter-related technologies.

"The first technology is a specialized form of remote viewing. This is the technology that enables a trained operative to mentally move into vertical time and observe events and even listen to conversations related to an inquiry mode. The operative is invisible to all people within the time they are traveling to, so it's perfectly safe and unobtrusive. The intelligence gained from this technology is used to determine the application of the other four technologies. This is the equivalent of intelligence gathering.

"The second technology that is key to BST is the equivalent of a memory implant. As I mentioned earlier, the ACIO refers to this technology as a Memory Restructure Procedure or MRP. MRP is the technology that allows a memory to be precisely eliminated in the horizontal time sequence and a new memory inserted in its place. The new memory is welded to the existing memory structure of the recipient.

"You see, events - small and large - occur from a single thought, which becomes a persistent memory, which in turn, becomes a causal energy center that leads the development and materialization of the thought into reality... into horizontal time. MRP can remove the initial thought and thereby eliminate the persistent memory that causes events to occur.

"The third technology consists of defining the intervention point. In every major decision, there are hundreds, if not thousands, of intervention points in

horizontal time as a thought unfolds and moves through its development phase. However, in vertical time, there is only one intervention point or what we sometimes called the causal seed. In other words, if you can access vertical time intelligence you can identify the intervention point that is the causal seed. This technology identifies the most probable intervention points and ranks their priority. It enables focus of the remaining technologies.

"The fourth technology is related to the third. It's the scenario modeling technology. This technology helps to assess the various intervention points as to their least invasive ripple effects to the recipients. In other words, which intervention point - if applied to a scenario model - produces the desired outcome with the least disruption to unrelated events? The scenario modeling technology is a key element of BST because without it, BST could cause significant disruption to a society or entire species.

"The fifth and most puzzling technology is the interactive time travel technology. The Labyrinth Group has the first four technologies in a ready state waiting for the interactive time travel technology to become operational. This technology requires an operative, or a team of operatives, to be able to physically move into vertical time and be inserted in the precise space and time where the optimal intervention point has been determined. From there the operatives must perform a successful MRP and return to their original time in order to validate mission success."

Sarah:

"I've been listening to this explanation and I think I even understand some of it, but it sounds so surreal to me, Dr. Neruda. I'm... I'm at a loss to explain how I'm feeling right now. This is all so strange. It's so big... enormous... I can't believe this is going on somewhere on the same planet that I live. Before this interview, I was worried about balancing my checkbook and when my damn car would ever be fixed... this is just too strange..."

Dr. Neruda:

"Maybe we should take another break and warm up our coffee."

Sarah:

Signing off for a coffee break...

(Break for about 15 minutes... Resume interview)

Sarah:

"If the Labyrinth Group has four of the five technologies ready to go, and is only awaiting the interactive... the interactive part, they must have scenario models and intervention points already established for how they plan to deal with this Animus race. Do they?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes. They have about forty scenario models and perhaps as many as eight intervention points defined."

Sarah:

"And if there're that many, there must be a priority established. What's the most probable scenario model?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I will be brief on this point because it's such classified information that only the SL-Fourteen personnel and Fifteen know this. My classification is SL -Thirteen, and so I get diluted reports and quite possibly misinformation with regard to our scenario modeling. About all I can tell you is that we know - from both the prophecies and our remote viewing technology - a significant amount of information about this race.

"For example, we know that it hails from a galaxy that our Hubble telescope has examined as thoroughly as possible and we've charted it as extensively as possible. We know that it's thirty-seven million light years away and that the species is a synthetic race - a mixture of genetic creation and technology. It possesses a hive mentality, but individual initiative is still appreciated as long as it is aligned with the explicit objectives of its leaders.

"Because it's a synthetic race, it can be produced in a controlled environment and its population can be increased or decreased depending on the whims of its leaders. It is -"

Sarah:

"Didn't you just say it's from a galaxy that's thirty-seven million light years away? I mean, assuming they were able to travel at the speed of light, it would take them thirty-seven million years to come to our planet. And you said earlier that they hadn't even crossed into our galaxy yet...right?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The Corteum come from a planet that is fifteen million light years away, and yet they can come and go between their planet and our planet in the time it takes us to travel to the moon - a mere two hundred and fifty thousand miles away. Time is not linear, nor is space. Space is curved, as your physicists have recently learned, but it can be artificially curved through displacement energy fields that collapse space and the illusion of distance. Light particles do not displace or collapse space, they ride a linear line through space, but there are forms of electromagnetic energy that can modify or collapse space. And this technology makes space travel - even between galaxies - not only possible, but also relatively easy."

Sarah:

"Why did you say, 'your physicists' just then?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I apologize... it's just a part of the conditioning of being isolated from mainstream society. When you operate for thirty years in a secret organization like the Labyrinth Group, you tend to look at your fellow humans... as not your fellow humans, but as something else. The principles of science that the Labyrinth Group has embraced are very different from those taught within your... there I go again...within our universities. I must be getting tired."

Sarah:

"I didn't mean to criticize you. It's just the way you said it, it sounded as though an alien or an outsider said it."

Dr. Neruda:

"I qualify as an outsider, but certainly not an alien."

Sarah:

"Okay, back to this prophecy or alien race. What do they want? I mean... why travel such a far distance to rule earth?"

Dr. Neruda:

"This seems such a funny question to me. Excuse me for laughing. It's just that humans do not understand how special earth is. It is truly, as planets are concerned, a special planet. It has such a tremendous bio-diversity and a complex range of ecosystems. Its natural resources are unique and plentiful. It's a genetic library that's the equivalent of a galactic zoo.

"The Animus desire to own this planet in order to own its genetics. As I've already mentioned, this is a synthetic race. A species that can clone itself and fabricate more and more of its population to serve the purpose of its colonization program. However, it desires more than the expansion of its empire. It desires to become a soul carrier - something reserved for pure biological organisms. Synthetic organisms are not able to carry the higher frequencies of soul, which absolutely require an organic nervous system."

Sarah:

"So they want a soul?"

Dr. Neruda:

"They want to expand throughout the universe and develop their organic nature through genetic



reengineering. They want to become soul carriers in order to achieve immortality. They also want to prove what they already believe, that they are superior to all other pure organics."

Sarah:

"So where are they right now?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The Animus?"

Sarah:

"Yes."

Dr. Neruda:

"I assume they remain in their homeworld... to the best of our knowledge their probes haven't crossed into our galaxy yet."

Sarah:

"And when they arrive, how will the ACIO or Labyrinth Group know?"

Dr. Neruda:

"As I said, the ACIO has already done a significant amount of intelligence gathering and even selected scenarios and intervention points."

Sarah:

"So what's the plan?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The most logical approach would be to travel to the time and place when the casual thought was born to explore the Milky Way, and through MRP, expunge it from the memory of the race. Essentially, convince them that of all the wonderful, life-inhabited galaxies, the Milky Way is a poor choice. The Labyrinth Group would implant a memory that would lead this race to conclude that our galaxy was not worthy of their serious exploration."

Sarah:

"So some other galaxy becomes their next target? Wouldn't we bear the responsibility of their next conquest? Aren't we then perpetrators ourselves?"

Dr. Neruda:

"This is a fair question, but I'm afraid I don't know how to answer it."

Sarah:

"Why couldn't we - using this MRP technology - simply implant a memory not to be aggressive? To tell this race to stop trying to colonize new worlds that aren't theirs to own like property. Why couldn't we do this?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Perhaps we will. I don't really know what Fifteen has in mind. I am, though, confident in his approach and its efficacy."

Sarah:

"But you said earlier that you feared for your life... that Fifteen is probably trying to hunt you down even as we speak. Why are so you confident in his sense of morality?"

Dr. Neruda:

"In the case of Fifteen, morality doesn't really play a role. He operates in his own code of ethics, and I don't pretend to understand them all. But I'm quite certain of his mission to avert take-over by this alien race, and I'm equally confident that he will choose the best intervention point with the least influence to the Animus. It's the only way he can acquire BST. And he knows this."

Sarah:

"We're back to God again, aren't we?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes."

Sarah:

"So God and Fifteen have this all figured out?"

Dr. Neruda:

"There's no certainty if that's what you mean. And there's no alliance between Fifteen and God, at least not that I'm aware of. This is part of the belief system that the Labyrinth Group formalized along the path to developing BST. It's logical to us that God is all-powerful and all knowing because it operates as the universal mind field that interpenetrates all life, all time, all space, all energy... and all existence. This consciousness is impartial, but

certainly it's in a position to deny things or, perhaps more accurately, delay their acquisition."

Sarah:

"If God exists everywhere as you say, then why wouldn't he stop this marauding alien race and keep them in their place?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Again, a fair question, but one that I can't answer. I can only tell you that the God I believe in is, as I said before, impartial. Meaning that it allows its creation to express themselves as they desire. At the highest level where God operates, all things have a purpose... even aggressive species that desire to dominate other species and planets. It was Fifteen's belief that God orchestrated nothing but understood everything in the universal mind.

"Remember when I was talking about the galactic mind?"

Sarah:

"Yes."

Dr. Neruda:

"There are planetary minds, solar minds, galactic minds, and a singular universal mind. The universal mind is the mind of God. Each galaxy has a collective consciousness or mind field that is the aggregation of all of the species present within that galaxy. The universal mind creates the initial blueprint for each of the galaxies related to its galactic mind or composite consciousness. This initial blueprint creates the pre-disposition of the genetic code

seeded within a galaxy. We, the Labyrinth Group, believed that God designed each galaxy's genetic code with a different set of pre-dispositions or behaviors."

Sarah:

"And why would this be so?"

Dr. Neruda:

"So diversity is amplified across the universe, which in turn permits God to experience the broadest continuum of life."

Sarah:

"Why is this so important?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Because God loves to experiment and devise new ways of experiencing life in all of its dimensions. This may very well be the purpose of the universe."

Sarah:

"You know you're talking like a preacher? You speak like these are certainties or truths that are just self-evident... but they're just beliefs, aren't they?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes, they're beliefs, but beliefs are important don't you think?"

Sarah:

"I'm not sure... I mean my beliefs are changing every day. They're not stable or anchored in some deep truth that's constant like bedrock or something."

Dr. Neruda:

"Well, that's good... I mean that they change. The Labyrinth Group evolved a very specific set of beliefs - some of these were based on our experiences as a result of the Corteum intelligence enhancement technologies, some were based from ancient texts that were studied, and some were borrowed from our ET contacts."

Sarah:

"So now you're going to tell me our friendly neighborhood ETs are religious zealots?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No... no, I don't mean that they were trying to convert us to their beliefs, we simply asked and they related them to us. Upon hearing them, they seemed quite a bit more like science than religion actually. I think that's the nature of a more evolved species... they finally figure out that science and religion converges into cosmology. That understanding the universe in which we live also causes us to understand ourselves - which is the purpose of religion and science... or at least should be."

Sarah:

"Okay, this is getting a little too philosophical for my tastes. Can we return to a question about the WingMakers? If, as you say, there's a galactic federation that governs the

Milky Way, how do the WingMakers factor into this federation?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I'm impressed by the nature of your questions. And I wish I could answer them all, but here again, I don't know the answer."

Sarah:

"But if you can use your remote viewing technology to eavesdrop on this alien race in an entirely different galaxy, why can't you observe the Federation?"

Dr. Neruda:

"As for the Federation, they're fully aware of our remote viewing capability, and in fact, we can't eavesdrop on the Federation because they're able to detect our presence if we observe them through remote viewing. So, in deference to their privacy and trusting their agenda, we never imposed our technology on the Federation... perhaps only once or twice."

Sarah:

"You'll have to forgive me Dr. Neruda, but I find all of this a little hard to believe. We've skimmed the surface of about a hundred different subjects through the course of this interview, and I keep coming back to the same basic issue: Why? Why would the universe be set up this way and no one on earth know about it? Why all the secrecy? Does someone think we humans are so stupid that we couldn't understand it? And who the hell is this somebody?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Unfortunately, there are so many conspiracies to keep this vital information out of the public domain, that what ends up in the hands of the public is diluted to the point of uselessness. I can understand your frustration. I can only tell you that there are people who know about these things, but only Fifteen knows about the larger reality of what we've touched on tonight.

"In other words, and this is to your point, Sarah, there are some people within the military, government, secret network, NSA, CIA, etc. that know parts of the whole, but they don't understand the whole. They aren't equipped with the knowledge to stand before the media and explain what's happening. They fear that they would be made to appear feeble by the fact that they only know pieces of what's going on. It's like the story of the three blind men who are all touching different parts of an elephant and each thinks it is something different.

"Fifteen withholds his knowledge from the media and the general public because he doesn't want to be seen as a savior of humanity - the next messiah. And he especially doesn't want to be seen as some fringe lunatic that should be locked up, or worse yet, assassinated because he is so misunderstood. The instant he stepped forward with what he knows he would lose his privacy and his ability to discover BST. And this he'll never do.

"Most people who know about this greater reality are fearful of stepping into the public scrutiny because of the fear of being ridiculed. You have to admit, that the general



public is frightened by what it doesn't understand, and they do kill the messenger."

Sarah:

"But why can't we get even partial truths about this picture of reality... about ETs and the Federation? Someone, the media or government or someone else is keeping this information from us. Like the story you were telling me about the Martians. If this is true and Clinton knows about this, why aren't we being told?"

Dr. Neruda:

"There's a cynical part of me that would say something like... why do you watch six hours of television every day? Why do you feed your minds exclusively with the opinions of others? Why do you trust your politicians? Why do you trust your governments? Why do you support the destruction of your ecosystems and the companies and governments that perpetrate this destruction?"

"You see, because the whole of humanity allows these things to occur, the wool is pulled over your eyes and it's easy to ration information and direct your attention to mundane affairs like the weather and Hollywood."

Sarah:

"That's fine for you to say - someone who's IQ can't be charted. But for those of us with average intelligence, what are we supposed to do differently that would give us access to this information... to this larger reality?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I don't know. I honestly don't know. I don't pretend to have the answers. But somehow humans need to be more demanding of their governments and even the media. Because the media is a big part of this manipulation, though they're not aware of how they've become pawns of the information cover-up.

"The truth of the matter is that no one entity is to blame. Elitists have always existed since the dawn of man. There have always been those who had more aggression and power and would dominate the weaker of the species. This is the fundamental structure that has bred this condition of information cover-up, and it happens in every sector of society, including religion, government, military, science, academia, and business.

"No one created this playing field to be level and equal for all. It was designed to enable free will and reality selection based on individual preferences. And for those who have the mental capacity to probe into these secrets behind the secrets behind the secrets, they usually find pieces of this larger reality - as you put it. It's not entirely hidden... there are books and individuals and even prophecies that corroborate much of what I've spoken of here tonight. And these are readily available to anyone who wants to understand this larger universe in which we live.

"So, to answer your question: '...what are we supposed to do differently?' I would read and study. I would invest time learning about this larger universe and turn off the television and disconnect from the media. That's what I would do..."

Sarah:

"Maybe this is a good place to wrap things up. Unless you have anything else you'd like to add."

Dr. Neruda:

"Only one thing, and that is that if anyone ever reads this interview, please do so with an empty mind. If you bring a mind full of learning and education and opinion, you'll find so much to argue with in what I've said that you'll not hear anything. And I'm not interested in arguing with anyone. I'm not even that interested in convincing anyone of what I've said. My life will go on even if no one believes me.

"The WingMakers have built a time capsule of their culture and it's magnificent. I wish I could take people to the original site so they could stand before each of the twenty-three chambers and witness these wall paintings in person. If you were to do this, you would understand that art can be a portal that transports the soul to a different dimension. There is a certain energy that these paintings have that can't be translated in mere photographs. You really need to stand inside these chambers and feel the purposeful nature of this time capsule.

"I think if I could do that, you would believe what I've said."

Sarah:

"Could you take someone like me to the site?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No. Unfortunately, the security system surrounding this site is so sophisticated, the site entrance, for all intents and purposes, is invisible. All I have are my photographs...."

Sarah:

"You're saying that if I walked right up to the site, I wouldn't be able to see it?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Cloaking technology is not just a science fiction concept. It's been developed for more than ten years. It's used much more frequently than people realize. And I'm not talking about its diluted version of stealth technology; I'm talking about the ability to superimpose a reality construction over an existing reality that's desired to be hidden.

"For instance, you could walk right up to the entrance of the Ancient Arrow site and see nothing that would look like an entrance or opening. To the observer it would be a flat wall of rock. And it would have all the characteristics of rock - texture, hardness and so forth, but it's actually a reality construction that is superimposed on the mind of the observer. In reality the entrance is there, but it can't be observed because the mind has been duped into the projected reality construction."

Sarah:

"Great, so there's no way to enter this site and experience this time capsule... so once again, us little humans are prevented from the experience of proof. You see, the reason why this is so hard to believe is that nothing is ever proven!"

Dr. Neruda:

"But isn't proof in the eye of the beholder? In other words, what is proof for you may not convince another or vice a versa. Isn't this the way of all religions and even science? Scientists claim to have proof of this theory or that theory, and then some years later, another scientist comes along and disproves the previously held theory. And on and on this goes."

Sarah:

"So what's your point?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Proof is not absolute. It's not even objective. And what you're looking for is an experience that is permanent and perfect in its expression of truth. And such an experience, if it indeed exists, is not owned or possessed by any secret network or elitist organization or galactic federation for that matter.

"You could have this experience of absolute proof tomorrow, and the very next day, doubt would begin to creep in and in a matter of weeks or months this proof, or absolute truth, that you aspire to possess... it would be just a memory. And probably not even a powerful memory because so much doubt would be infused into it.

"No, I can't give you or anyone absolute proof. I can only tell you what I know to be true for me and try to share it as accurately as I know how with anyone who's interested. I'm less interested in trying to relate the cosmology of the universe than I am in getting the story of the WingMakers and the artifacts of their time capsule into

the public attention. The public should know about this story. It's a discovery of unparalleled importance and it should be shared."

Sarah:

"You do realize don't you, that you've made me the messenger? You've asked me to be the one who takes the public scrutiny and suspicions, and has to endure all of the ridicule..."

Dr. Neruda:

"I'm not asking you to do anything against your will, Sarah. If you never do anything with the materials I've given you, I'd understand. All I'd ask is that you return them to me if you're not going to get them out. If I step forward as the messenger, I would lose my freedom. If you step forward, this story could catapult your career and you're only doing your job. You're not the messenger, you're the transmitter... the media.

"But you must do what you think best. And I'd understand your decision whatever you decide."

Sarah:

"Okay, let's wrap it up there. I don't want you to get the wrong impression that I'm a total disbeliever. But I'm a journalist and it's my responsibility to validate and cross check stories before I publish them. And with you, I can't do this. And what you're telling me, if it's true, is the biggest story ever to be told. But I can't take this to the media - at least not the company I work for, because they would never publish it. No validation... no story."

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes, I understand. But I've shown you some of the ACIO technologies and photos of the site and its contents, so these must be some form of validation."

Sarah:

"For me, it validates that something is going on that I've never heard about. Namely, the ACIO is a new organization that's never been talked about - at least not in my journalistic circles. But your photographs and stories don't validate what you've explained tonight. They're in the category of teasers. Something the National Enquirer is fond of broadcasting, but this isn't the brand of journalism I subscribe to."

Dr. Neruda:

"Let's talk some more in the next few days. Take the time to read some of the materials translated from the optical disc, and in the meantime, just be neutral. Okay?"

Sarah:

"Don't assume I'm not interested, or too much a skeptic to do anything with this stuff. I just need some time to get my bearings as to what I should do with this story and the evidence you've provided."

Dr. Neruda:

"I promised you several interviews before I left. Are we still on for tomorrow night?"

Sarah:

"Yes. But how more is there than what you've already explained?"

Dr. Neruda:

"We've only touched on the surface of a small portion of the story."

Sarah:

"That's a little hard to believe, but let's pick up tomorrow night, then."

Dr. Neruda:

"Thanks for your interest in my story, Sarah... I know it sounds outlandish, but at least you've shown restraint in writing me off as a lunatic. And for that, you have my thanks."

Sarah:

"You're very welcome."

End of Session



## SECOND INTERVIEW WITH DR. JAMISSON NERUDA

**By Sarah**

*What follows is a session I recorded of Dr. Neruda on December 28, 1997. He gave permission for me to record his answers to my questions. This is the transcript of that session. This was one of five times I was able to tape-record our conversations. I have preserved these transcripts precisely as they occurred. No editing was performed, and I've tried my best to include the exact words, phrasing, and grammar used by Dr. Neruda.*

*(It's recommended that you read the December 27, 1997 interview before reading this one.)*

Sarah:

"Before we begin tonight's session, I wanted to tell you that I've listened to last night's tape and have used it to formulate some new questions. I noticed that I was all over the place with regard to my questions, and tonight I'm going to try and stay more focused. So I'm just warning you that if I get off track again, remind me to stay on course. Okay?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I'll certainly do my best... although I'm not sure what your course is."

Sarah:

"Well, I guess I'd like to stay more centered on the WingMakers and the artifacts of their time capsule."

Dr. Neruda:

"That's fine with me. But let me make one clarification first.

"The Ancient Arrow site was labeled initially as an Extraterrestrial Time Capsule, or ETC, however, it is not actually, in my opinion, a time capsule."

Sarah:

"Good, let's start right there. What exactly is it, in your opinion?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The site is part of a larger structure that's interconnected through some means I don't understand. We know there're seven sites that have been constructed on earth - presumably in the ninth century. We know that these sites have some defensive purpose, and we know that the sites planners represent themselves are culture bearers, and are most likely representatives from the Central Race."

Sarah:

"I hear a lot about 'defensive weapon', but how can these wall paintings or the music artifacts be considered part of a defensive weapon?"

Dr. Neruda:

"We know from our RV sessions, that the WingMakers designed these sites to be more than a defensive weapon, otherwise, as you point out, the cultural artifacts wouldn't make any sense. However, it also doesn't make sense that they'd be completely unrelated to the objectives of a defensive weapon. I'd make the hypothesis that they're DNA triggers."

Sarah:

"You mean they activate something within our DNA... as you were describing last night?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Correct."

Sarah:

"And how does this relate to a defensive weapon?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It was our hypothesis that the cultural artifacts, if studied or examined, would somehow activate parts of our DNA. For what purpose we weren't certain, but I intuit that it has something to do with stimulating our fluid intelligence and enabling sensory inputs that have been dormant within our central nervous system."

Sarah:

"And do you have a hypothesis as to why?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Presumably the enhancements to the central nervous system makes the defensive weapon more effective."

Sarah:

"It's so damn easy to get side-tracked when talking with you, but I'm going to resist the temptation to move into a line of neurological discourse, not that I know anything about it anyway.

"Tell me more about your role with the WingMakers' time capsule... or whatever you want to call it."

Dr. Neruda:

"I think for accuracy and consistency, we can refer to it as the Ancient Arrow site. As I said before, I'm confident that it's not a time capsule.

"To your question, though, I was working with a computer we call ZEMI, helping to translate the data contained on the optical disc found in the twenty-third chamber of the site. It contained text, symbol pictures, mathematical equations, and what turned out to be music files.

"Once the site was located, my primary focus was to decode the optical disc and make the data therein sensible and, as much as possible, applicable to BST."

Sarah:

"Did any of it apply to BST?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Not directly, at least nothing that I've read. The text was of a more philosophical nature. I was the first one to read their language. Once we unlocked the optical disc, we printed out eight thousand forty-five pages of symbol pictures like the ones contained in their art work, except much more varied, and, in some instances, much more complex. There were 23 chapters of text or symbol pictures - each consisting of about 350 pages.

"I read the first segment or chapter of this text and was amazed to find that there were passages of text - in the introduction - that were only readable to me. This was additional confirmation that I had a role to play in getting this information into the public domain."

Sarah:

"Are you saying that the text you read disappeared after you read it or that you deleted it?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It disappeared. It deleted itself."

Sarah:

So only the first eyes would see the message?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Correct."

Sarah:

"So what did it say?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I can recite the exact words if you like, but it would take a few minutes."

Sarah:

"Give me a summary."

Dr. Neruda:

"The essence of this passage was validating what the ACIO had already known - that the Animus were sending probes in 2011, and it was written in the form of a warning. It stated that the WingMakers had installed a defensive weapon on earth that would render the planet invisible to the Animus probes."

Sarah:

"Invisible? How?"

Dr. Neruda:

"They didn't explain with any precision. They wrote that higher frequencies were emanating from the central universe, and that these seven sites comprised a collective technology that somehow coordinated these frequencies or higher energies to bring about a shift in the planet's vibratory structure, enabling life on the planet to survive the shift and remain undetected by the Animus."

Sarah:

"All life forms?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Technically, the text didn't specify."

Sarah:

"And this was for your eyes only?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes, the ZEMI operator did not find any evidence of this section of the text. It completely disappeared."

Sarah:

"What else did it say?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It confirmed that we're dealing with the Central Race, and that they want the cultural artifacts from the seven sites to be shared with the public. These elements were connected to the effectiveness of the defensive weapon."

Sarah:

"In what way?"

Dr. Neruda:

"In the sense that the materials activate aspects of our DNA that make the shift easier, or perhaps possible, I'm not certain because they were a bit vague."

Sarah:

"So, by reading the philosophy I'm supposed to be able to become invisible?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I think it's more holistic than that. They left behind poetry, music, paintings, and even a glossary. It seems to

me that all of these elements - in addition to the philosophy - are connected. Also, I'm suggesting that something fundamentally changes when these materials are absorbed, and perhaps this change, whatever it is, resonates with the technology from the seven sites."

Sarah:

"Sounds far-fetched to me. Why do you believe this?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I've absorbed the materials and I've noticed changes."

Sarah:

"Such as?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I defected from the ACIO. To me, that's the biggest change imaginable."

Sarah:

"You're not implying that the materials you've read induced you to defect are you?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It was a combination of many things, but it certainly had a significant impact on my decision. Did you read any of the materials I left last night?"

Sarah:

"I read the first section and a little of the glossary. I didn't understand it. It was too abstract. It did have an effect on me though... it managed to put me to sleep."



Dr. Neruda:

"I know it's a little intense, but you have to admit, it's very interesting if for no other reason than they're representative of how our distant ancestors think and believe."

Sarah:

"And you have a copy of the all of pages of text?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes."

Sarah:

"And can I see it?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes, but it's not something I carry around with me."

Sarah:

"Tell me a little bit about the translation process since you were involved in it?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The translation is the key to the usefulness of the optical disc, and using a carefully sequenced set of experiments, conducted by ZEMI, we were able to access the disc's data files in five days."

Sarah:

"How do you know that the translation is accurate?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Within the disc, once it was accessed, were translations indexes that enabled their text to print out in perfect English, or about sixty other languages. It took us two days to figure out how to access the disc, but once we did, we were able to access the 24 sections of text in the span of seventeen hours.

"The most vexing of the translations, and the one in which we have the least confidence is the music."

Sarah:

"Good, I'm glad you brought up the music because I don't understand that element of the time capsule."

Dr. Neruda:

"How do you mean that?"

Sarah:

"Was the music already on the optical disc and you simply captured it from the disc, or was it basically produced by the Labyrinth Group based on the musical notations?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Actually, it was a bit of a combination of the two. Their musical notations were very precise and they left digital samples of each of their instruments - even vocals. So we simply translated their digital samples to a MIDI standard and produced our own version of their music."

Sarah:

"So were you involved in the music translations as well?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes. I helped in the initial discovery of their musical notation and helped with the translation indexes. I wasn't involved in its production phase, though I was very curious as to what it would sound like."

Sarah:

"Can I hear any of these compositions?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes, of course. When I left, the ACIO had successfully translated ten of the twenty-three music compositions. I have these. And they've been converted to both CD and cassette standards. I also have complete files of the remaining thirteen compositions in their raw, deconstructed form."

Sarah:

"How were they produced exactly?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Do you mean that technically or artistically?"

Sarah:

"I guess both."

Dr. Neruda:

"On the technical end we needed to step their samples down to a resolution of 384-bit in order to use them in our

computer systems. When we first heard the samples of instrumentation, we were somewhat relieved to hear familiar sounds. There were some that were different, but for the most part, the digital samples that were encoded on the optical disc were the same as contemporary musical instruments heard around the world.

"Once we had captured their samples and organized them into octaves, we took their compositional notations and essentially let the computer select the digital instrumentation based on their samples. Eventually this all had to be stepped down to a 24-bit commercial CD mastering system, which was then pressed on a CD and recorded onto a cassette tape.

"As for the artistic production, there really wasn't much that we did. The computers did all the interpretative work and essentially performed the production for that matter. We had some of our staff perform overdubs on various versions to experiment with the compositions. The music was very popular, particularly when you listened to it at a sampling resolution of 384-bit."

Sarah:

"Didn't anyone wonder why the time capsule included a musical construction kit instead of just having a recording of the music? I mean, why have us bring an artistic interpretation to their music?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Everything was wondered about in the Ancient Arrow project. Everything.

"We didn't know why they did it the way they did it, but again our hypothesis was that the WingMakers didn't have a way to bring their music into our world because we lacked the technology to listen to it. So they disassembled their music into - as you put it - a construction kit, which enabled us to reconstruct the music so it could be listened to on our technology. It's the most logical reason.

"There were several of us who were able to experience chambers one and two as a completely integrated form of expression and it was a very powerful experience... to say the least. When you hear the music in 384-bit resolution with the original paintings, standing inside the actual chamber in which they were placed, it is a very moving and spiritual experience. Unlike any I've ever had."

Sarah:

"In what way?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Just that the sense of being pulled out of your body and into the portal of the painting is irresistible. There is a very strong sense of movement into and beyond these paintings, and the music and paintings are only two of the art forms, the third, the poetry is also part of the experience."

Sarah:

"So tell me about the poetry."

Dr. Neruda:

"The poems are expressive of a wide range of subjects. To most of us at the ACIO, they could have been written by any contemporary poet. There was really nothing that

caused them to stand out as representing a culture billions of years older than our own. Many of the same themes about spirituality, love, relationships, and death were evident in their poems as well. There're actually two poems for each chamber painting, so there's a total of 46 poems."

Sarah:

"That's interesting. Everything else - the paintings, music, artifacts, and philosophy - is placed one-per-chamber. Why do you suppose they've placed two poems in each chamber instead of one?"

Dr. Neruda:

"In my opinion it was to provide a broader perspective into the particular theme represented by a specific chamber. The poetry appears to be designed in such a way to provide both a personal and universal perspective in each of the chambers... but again, it's just a working hypothesis at this time."

Sarah:

"I assume from the examples you left me, that the poetry is also a bit less abstract when compared to their philosophy and paintings. Have you considered how the poetry is related to the paintings?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes. And I believe the poetry and the paintings have the strongest connection of all the objects in each of the chambers. I think the paintings illustrate - in some subtle way - the themes represented in the poetry. In some

instances, when the painting represents an assemblage of abstract objects, the poetry is also more abstract. When the painting is more illustrative, the poetry seems more like prose."

Sarah:

Are you saying then that the poetry carries the central meaning of each chamber?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I'm not sure, but it does seem that the poetry is somehow implied symbolically in the chamber painting that it's associated with. The problem is that the poetry is so highly interpretive that it's impossible to know precisely what its theme is intended to be. Also, and I should have mentioned this before, but the grammar and syntax of their language is very different from ours in that they have no end to their language punctuated with periods.

"In other words, if we made a literal translation, there would be no sentence structure... more like a logic syntactical approach... which simply means an abstracted language flow which would be, for most people, very difficult to understand. When I was doing the translations of the poetry, I placed it in a sentence structure that fragmented its meaning so that it could be better understood. Perhaps in the process I unintentionally changed the meaning, but it was either that or the poetry would be too abstracted to understand."

Sarah:

"Is there a connection between the poetry and the philosophy of each chamber?"

Dr. Neruda:

"My colleague and I felt that all of the objects within a specific chamber were connected... probably in ways we couldn't fathom. We were constantly worried that the translation indexes were somehow inaccurate, and that this was limiting our ability to see the linkages between the various objects. And of course, the most puzzling connection was the technology artifacts because we had no way to probe or reach any conclusions about their purpose or function."

Sarah:

"Let's talk a little bit about the artifacts found in each chamber. The only one that I've really heard about was the one found in the twenty-third chamber, the optical disc. I know you've shown me some photos of the others, but could you describe them better?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The optical disc is the only artifact of the twenty-third we found that the AICO had successfully accessed, at least that I'm aware of. The other artifacts were all taken to the Labyrinth Group's research laboratory in Southern California immediately after they were discovered. These were never acknowledged to anyone below a security level twelve clearance. There were rumors within the broader ACIO that there were technologies within the Ancient Arrow site, but these never gained any serious consideration, and certainly not by the NSA.

"The technology artifacts were of the greatest curiosity to Fifteen because they represented possible solutions to



BST. And, as I mentioned earlier, Fifteen and most of the Labyrinths [sic] Group for that matter, felt that the WingMakers may not allow the Labyrinth Group to deploy BST. Hence, Fifteen considered the WingMakers as possible foes, instead of allies."

Sarah:

"But what I've seen doesn't look very advanced or based in high technology. They could pass for crystals or rocks... or something organic. Why was the Labyrinth Group so intrigued by them?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The crystalline structures that were found, in most cases, did look quite ordinary in the sense that when they were examined by the eye, they appeared to be crystals, but when you looked at them through various molecular and atomic analyses, it was obvious that they were manmade objects. In other words, they were synthetic crystalline structures, and we held the hypothesis that they were encoded with information much like the optical disc or the paintings. We also held the hypothesis that they were potentially connected to the optical disc since it was the last of the artifacts and seemed the equivalent of a keystone or master key."

Sarah:

"Did any of the text translated from the optical disc refer to the other artifacts?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No, to our disappointment, there were no references."

Sarah:

"You didn't answer my question about whether you felt there was a connection between the technology artifacts and the specific cultural artifacts related to each chamber."

Dr. Neruda:

"Sorry, I guess it's my turn to get side-tracked tonight. Anyway, yes, there were connections... we were certain of this, but at the same time, because we couldn't get inside the artifacts and probe them, we couldn't prove our theory. Consequently, we placed all of our time and energy on the optical disc because it seemed to be the most important of the artifacts as well as the one we had the best chance of accessing through our technology."

Sarah:

"Why?"

Dr. Neruda:

"You must bear in mind that the technology artifacts were extremely alien to our technologies. Other than the optical disc, the other technologies were a combination of synthetic materials based on organic structures, and in some instances actually possessed human DNA within their structures. These were..."

Sarah:

"You're saying that the technologies were in part human?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes... in a way. But what I was going to say, is that these artifacts seemed to have molecular-based computer systems that activated by a specific human touch. And we weren't certain whether it was literally a specific human, or a specific type of human, or perhaps any human in a specific state of emotion or mind. We had one hundred and fifteen possible experiments developed for testing and all failed."

Sarah:

"But this is really odd... why would human DNA be inside a technology... and this talk about synthetic crystals... it leaves me cold."

Dr. Neruda:

"We had some similar misgivings until we were able to translate some of the text within the optical disc. The philosophical papers from chambers one and two convinced us that the WingMakers could indeed be authentic and we had no other reason to disbelieve their story. That's not to say that we suspended all of our disbelief or caution, but the philosophy was a breakthrough to our understanding of their perceived mission with contemporary humankind."

Sarah:

"I don't know... I read the first two philosophy papers you left for me, and I could believe that they're from an alien race. I could also believe that they're from a deceptive race that uses philosophy and all this cultural stuff to lull us into believing they're benevolent when in

fact they're not at all. I mean isn't that part of the prophecy you spoke about last night?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Well, I see you remain the ever-skeptical journalist. I'm actually glad to see that reaction.

"Sarah, all I can tell you is that when you take into account all of the cultural artifacts found within the Ancient Arrow site, and you immerse yourself in their content and philosophy, it's hard to believe they originate from evil intent."

Sarah:

"Unless that's exactly what they wanted you to believe."

Dr. Neruda:

"Perhaps. It's hard to debate such a thing. I think at some point it's an individual decision. The Labyrinth Group - and I'm including the Corteum when I say that - was in agreement that it was an authentic disclosure from the Central Race, and felt confident that we were not dealing with deception. But we never close the door to that possibility. Our security and operations directors put contingency plans in place in the event evidence was accumulated that increased the probability of fraud or deception."

Sarah:

"One of things that seemed odd to me, having looked at the photographs of the chamber paintings, was how similar they all were. They were clearly done by the same artist... or I suppose a group of artists. But when I think of a time

capsule, I would think you would include a variety of art from a diverse assortment of artists that represent a variety of perspectives and so forth. And that isn't the case here. Why do you suppose?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I don't think their motive was to inform us about their artists or the diversity of their artistic culture. I think they intend that the art function initially as a form of communication, and subsequently as a form of time travel or moving out of the body consciousness. The continuity of the 23 paintings seen as a whole seem to be inviting the consciousness of the observer to quite literally step into the world of the WingMakers. As though they were portals, and I've experienced this myself.

"The paintings are incredibly brilliant in their colors. You really can't imagine how much impact they have when you see them in person, particularly after their cleaning and restoration was completed. But even when they were first discovered without any touch-up, it was eerie how luminous they were and vibrant in their colors after 1,150 years. There were many times when those of us who were involved in restoration and cataloging of the artifacts, would sit in the chambers and stare at these paintings. On several occasions I did this for hours just letting my eyes wander through the painting, and imagining the mind of the artist and what they were trying to communicate. It was a very powerful experience."

Sarah:

"I think they'd scare me a little bit."

Dr. Neruda:

"I'm only laughing because I had such an experience. One night after a long day of working in the artifact chambers, I was left as the last one inside the site. I had been so absorbed in what I was doing I scarcely remembered being told to activate the security system on my way out. About a half-hour went by, and I finally realized I was alone inside the time capsule... the silence was incredible. Any rate, I was walking down the corridor that connected all of the 23 chambers, and passed each chamber and I began to feel a presence that was overwhelming. Every time I would come upon one of the chambers I expected something from the painting to jump out at me. They literally seemed alive.

"Our lighting was a very high-quality portable halogen system and every chamber was outfitted precisely the same. When I got to the bottom of the corridor - what we called the spiral staircase - and looked into chamber two, I clearly saw motion and nearly jumped out of my skin. Not necessarily out of fear, but out of excitement I suppose, though there was fear as well. But this motion was simply a blurred image of something stepping out of the painting and then disappearing into thin air... I couldn't really..."

Sarah:

"What was it? Was it human?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I couldn't see it clearly enough to tell you what it was, but I began to theorize that some of the chamber paintings may have purposes beyond just visual stimulation. Our RV

also had some experiences of sensing motion in the paintings, feeling as though she was being pulled out of her body."

Sarah:

"This may seem to be an odd, off-the-wall question, but how do you know this wasn't all a hoax? That someone or some group created this whole thing to look like an alien or future time capsule just for the fun of playing with your minds?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The one thing we know for certain is that this is not a hoax. The Ancient Arrow site consists of an enormous rock structure that has literally been hollowed out in the form of a helix that detours every ten meters into a separate chamber - twenty-three to be exact. The entire structure would have taken an incredible technology to build. We have accurate dating of when the chamber paintings were created, and they were conclusively produced in the ninth century, and we're certain that this technology didn't exist then."

Sarah:

"I'm not trying to argue with you... but if these artifacts are really from the Central Race, it just seems so odd that they'd be buried inside a huge rock in the middle of nowhere... in New Mexico of all places. And it also seems odd that they'd go to all this work, but make it so damn hard to understand what the hell they were trying to say. Do you see what I mean?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes, I understand, and I don't take your questions as argumentative. But the point I'm making is that this site is indeed a set of real objects. And these objects don't even correspond to the same time frame. For example, while the paintings were created about eleven hundred years ago, the artifacts do not even respond to our carbon dating or biochemical analysis. To complicate matters, the pictographs in and around the Ancient Arrow site were determined to have been created in the past fifty years, and could very well have been done in the year, or month, the site was discovered.

"These real objects are admittedly an enigma, but they are not a hoax to my eyes. The real question is whether the WingMakers' identity and purpose is as they represent it.

Sarah:

"Okay, let's say it's not a hoax. Then tell me why're you so convinced it's a defensive weapon. It seems to me, that it might be more of a communication device... or perhaps an educational tool of some kind. Why a weapon?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The text from the optical disc states this. And we had an RV session that corroborated it."

Sarah:

"So, earth is this genetic library that the Animus want to use in order to re-create themselves as soul carriers, as you put it? And the Ancient Arrow site - and its six companion sites - is going to protect earth and all of us from these marauding aliens? How am I doing so far?"



Dr. Neruda:

"I can't say that your specific conclusions are right or wrong. I can only tell you that the Animus are a real threat and that the WingMakers intend to protect their genetics."

Sarah:

"Okay, then tell me, why would the Central Race, who lives trillions of light years away, would care about what happens to us?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The Central Race is responsible for seeding and cultivating higher life forms throughout the universe, they're vitally interested in protecting their genetics from the Animus. Earth isn't the only genetic repository that they protect in this manner. Our RV sessions uncovered a database of planets throughout our superuniverse that was incalculably large."

Sarah:

"So this is just standard operating procedure for this race... to install a defensive weapon on the planets they seed with life?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I believe so."

Sarah:

"I looked the word 'Animus' up in the dictionary this morning. It's a real word. How did a race whose most

recent visit to earth was some three hundred million years ago become an entry in Webster's dictionary?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Their name is known even by the WingMakers. They used the same word in their translation indexes. There are certain words that have been purposely seeded within our language by the WingMakers."

Sarah:

"So now you're saying that WingMakers actually place words into our dictionaries?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No. Remember when I told you that the WingMakers were culture bearers?"

Sarah:

"Yes."

Dr. Neruda:

"They have encoded the discovery of language, mathematics, music, and so forth into our genetic structures. As we evolve, certain forerunners of our species - people like you and I - activate a part of their DNA before the rest of us. These forerunners are able to retrieve this encoded information and share it with the species. In subsequent generations, this insight is transmitted, and pretty soon, the entire species encompasses this new information or skill."

Sarah:

"So you're really saying that the word Animus was encoded into our sense of language, and someone invented the word, not realizing it was the name of this alien synthetic race?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes, something like that."

Sarah:

"I also read the memo that Dr. Sauthers [a colleague of Dr. Neruda] wrote about a global culture being an outcome of this technology from the WingMakers' sites. But how could these objects be used to build a global culture? It seems a little naïve to me."

Dr. Neruda:

"All I can tell you is that it's related to the Internet and a new communication technology that the WingMakers referred to as OLIN or the One Language Intelligent Network. If you read the glossary section that I left behind, you'll see it referenced there. The WingMakers seem to feel confident that the OLIN technology will help create the global culture through the Internet. This incidentally is consistent with prophecies that the Labyrinth Group was privy to dating as far back as 1,500 years ago. Of course, the enabling technology wasn't called OLIN, but the notion of a global culture and unified governance has been predicted for many centuries."

Sarah:

"This is what George Bush used to call the New World order isn't it?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes, but there have been four other presidents who've acknowledged this concept."

Sarah:

"What would make the world's people decide to unify under one governing body, or for that matter, create a global culture... whatever that means? I just can't envision it happening... not in my lifetime."

Dr. Neruda:

"According to the WingMakers it will happen through the digital economy and then through the Internet's OLIN technology platform. And through this global network, entertainment and educational content will be globalized. This is the basis of a global culture with unified commerce, content, and communities. Once these pieces of the infrastructure are in place, then the need to govern this infrastructure will loom as the preeminent issue of the day. And the United Nations is the logical ruling body for such an endeavor. As long as the World's people allow the digitization of the economy and embrace the OLIN technology platform, a global government and culture is virtually assured to emerge."

Sarah:

"And as you said last night, this is supposed to occur in 2018?"

Dr. Neruda:

"According to prophecy, that's when the United Nations will hold initial elections for a unified world government."

And it won't be an all powerful, centralized authority, but rather a global public policy decision and enforcement organization for issues that effect the world at large. Issues like pollution, global warming, border disputes, space travel, terrorism, trade, commerce, OLIN technology upgrades, and general technology transfer programs."

Sarah:

"So what will happen to National sovereignty in this new role of the United Nations?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I'm willing to answer your question in the form of a speculative response, but I'm also aware that you had asked me at the outset of this interview to remind you if you got off course. What would you like -"

Sarah:

No, you're absolutely right. Sorry. Let's go back to the artifacts... what was the condition of the site when you first entered... or better still, why don't you just describe your first encounter going inside the site."

Dr. Neruda:

"I was one of five from the ACIO who made the trip to New Mexico to explore the site after it was initially determined to have potential ET implications. None of us at the time knew anything that would have led us to conclude that the Ancient Arrow site would become such an important discovery.

"The only real clue we had was an artifact that had been recovered near, what was determined much later, as the

entrance of the interior chamber of the time capsule. It was this artifact that brought the project under the control of the ACIO because the artifact was considered by the NSA to have potential ET origins."

Sarah:

"What specifically led the NSA to conclude the artifact was alien?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Like all the other artifacts it showed no response to carbon dating analysis and it had peculiar markings or symbols that seemed other-worldly. It was a pure grade composite of unknown origin. Also, and perhaps more importantly, there was no obvious way to activate the artifact or access its interior controls. Its interior was impervious to various spectrum analyses - even simple x-rays were unable to penetrate the object.

"Any rate, this artifact was essentially handed over to the ACIO, which deemed it to be of ET origins, and then proceeded to investigate the region in which it was found. We discovered that the outside casing of the artifact held a detailed topographical map that defined the region in which it was discovered. We began to think the artifact might activate or become more useful if taken to the region depicted on its casing.

Sarah:

"Is this the artifact you showed me pictures of?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No. This artifact destroyed itself after it led us to the Ancient Arrow site."

Sarah:

"Why did you think it was important to activate it where it was found?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Because it was thought to be a form of a compass or homing beacon. We weren't sure, but we couldn't determine any functional purpose in the laboratory, so it seemed like a logical experiment to see how the device would function in the area in which it was discovered. Also, the original people who found the artifact complained that it induced a hallucinogenic experience when it was held near the stomach area.

"The exploration team from the ACIO figured out how to use this device to locate the entrance to the interior of the canyon wall in which the Ancient Arrow site was hidden. The device, when activated, seemed to pass thought waves or mental pictures of where it wanted the person to go. The RV assigned to our team was the one holding the device when it was first activated, and she immediately began to see pictures. I did as well. Ultimately, it led us into a cave-like structure tucked 20-30 meters inside one of the clefts of the canyon wall."

Sarah:

"Was there an entrance already, or did you have to blast your way inside?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The way into the interior was cleverly hidden behind a natural made cavern, which in its own right was well hidden by natural underbrush. This cavern was about 25 meters deep and led inside the canyon wall. We presumed it was an Indian dwelling of some kind that had long been abandoned. Towards the end of this cavern there was a corridor that jutted off to the side, and at the back of this corridor there was another chamber. A large, flat rock on the floor hid the entrance to the site.

Sarah:

"So you were convinced there was something underneath the rock?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes. After removing the rock, we were able to determine a tunnel was indeed underneath it. The tunnel was in the form of a "J" and was about one meter in diameter. I slid down first through the tunnel and crawled my way to the entrance of the site."

Sarah:

"So all five of you were inside this... this site, looking around with flashlights, what was running through your mind at the time?"

Dr. Neruda:

"We were all very excited and somewhat apprehensive as well. We thought we might find an ET site, and were half-aware that it could be an active site... which kept us all on guard.

Sarah:



"And this whole thing was carved out of rock?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It was completely manmade... or alien... and we knew it the instant we got out of the transition tunnel. It was like being born into a completely new world. It was absolutely silent; the air was cool, but not uncomfortably cold. There were no signs of life, and it seemed like everything took on a new purpose... an intelligent purpose that we couldn't wait to unravel.

"What was so remarkable was the incredible sense of walking into a surreal world - a world that was created by something completely alien. We assumed it was of ET construction from the moment we stepped out of the "J" tunnel."

Sarah:

"But how did you immediately know it was an artificial construction, and not a natural set of chambers or caves?"

Dr. Neruda:

"At the beginning of the spiral staircase there were ornate petroglyphs carved in the stone with a precision never before seen by our eyes. Also, the entire tunnel system was clearly too smooth - almost polished - to be of natural construction. There was a sense of architecture... a sense that someone designed it with extreme care and purpose.

"Amazingly there was nothing on the floor. Not even a pebble or a grain of sand. Every surface was completely clean, smooth, and polished. There was dust, but only dust.

And something like a polymer coating had been applied to every square centimeter of the structure including the ceilings.

"When we arrived at the first chamber, which is only about 30 meters from the entrance, I can clearly recall a sense of awe or something approaching a religious experience I suppose. No one spoke for a long time after our lights hit the first chamber painting. Everyone's flashlight converged on the painting and we all just stared for about 40 seconds in the incredible silence of this tomblike structure."

Sarah:

"Did you find all the chambers that same day?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes. We went from chamber to chamber, each time feeling like we had stumbled into an alien natural history museum. You have to understand that our lighting was not very good because we hadn't expected to need anything more than basic flashlights. I vividly remember seeing each of the chamber paintings for the first time and just staring at them... mesmerized by the incredible anachronism of the place. I'd never been in such a surreal environment... it was both eerie and completely enchanting at the same time."

Sarah:

"So how large were the chambers and the paintings themselves?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The chambers themselves were relatively small... about four meters in diameter with fairly high ceilings, in some instances as high as six meters.

Sarah:

"So, judging from the photographs I've seen of the chamber paintings, the paintings themselves must be fairly large?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes, they're large and always face the entrance of the chamber. If you stand just outside the entrance of a particular chamber, you can't see the whole painting; it's too large. You have to walk into the chamber in order to see the whole composition."

Sarah:

"What, in the opinions of the Labyrinth Group, are the artistic merits of these paintings?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No one within the Labyrinth Group claims to be an art critic I can assure you. I think it's fair to say that of those who saw the chamber paintings in their original environment found the artistic merits to be very compelling, even captivating. I think those who saw them only represented in photographs thought they were less art and more of a cog in some masterfully designed wheel like an illustration in a children's book."

Sarah:

"Not to change the subject, but I keep wondering how you came to choose me... I mean... I know you said it was completely random, but why did you select an average journalist to share this story? Why not a scientist or someone who could at least ask you more sophisticated questions? I have to confess that I feel completely inadequate to interview you, mostly because I don't even know what questions I should be asking you..."

Dr. Neruda:

"You're doing a fine job... absolutely fine. You shouldn't worry about your questions. They're insightful. And most people, who will read this information, will be more interested in the things you've inquired about than the physics or science involved anyway."

Sarah:

"Perhaps, but I have this nagging feeling that if I could ask you the scientific questions then you could more easily prove your story or credibility. I think I'm handicapping you in some way."

Dr. Neruda:

"What is it exactly that you feel you're not asking me?"

Sarah:

"I guess it's mostly things related to time travel and BST. Last night you talked about some things that when I re-read them earlier today, I felt like I should have asked more in-depth questions..."

Dr. Neruda:

"Like..."

Sarah:

"That's the problem, I don't know."

Dr. Neruda:

"Sarah, the reason I selected you was simple. I needed to find someone who knew how to access the mainstream media, and yet be relatively obscure. Had I chosen a science editor from a major newspaper, I may have ended up with more scientific questions and less about the cultural, artistic, and social implications of the Ancient Arrow project. Of my random selections, I knew that you had no established image to protect, that you knew how to access the media, and could ask sound questions that wouldn't betray your identity. That's why we're talking right now... and the fact that you didn't think I was crazy."

Sarah:

"I never asked you this before, but I'm just curious, was I the first journalist you talked with, or did someone turn you down before you found me?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No, you were the first and only person outside of the Labyrinth Group whom I've talked with about this story."

Sarah:

"I'd like to change the topic slightly and ask you about Fifteen's personality... is that okay?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes, that's fine."

Sarah:

"What's he like as a leader?"

Dr. Neruda:

"He's extremely focused, and demands everyone he works with to be similarly focused. He's a workaholic, sleeps about four hours a night and works the rest of his time on some aspect of BST. If there's research or development of new technologies that don't have a specific and strategic impact on BST, he's not involved in it. Won't even ask questions about projects of that nature, and generally within the ACIO, there are always three or four projects that are unrelated to BST. Within the Labyrinth Group, every project is related to BST."

Sarah:

"What's he look like?"

Dr. Neruda:

"He's about average height and has fairly long gray hair down to his shoulders which he usually wears in a ponytail. He's always reminded me of Pablo Picasso with long hair... he has those same penetrating eyes. He's originally from Spain, so it's no coincidence that he looks like Picasso. His most notable feature is his eyes, they're mischievous like you'd expect from a child who's done something wrong on the surface, but underneath, they've created something wonderful, it's just that nobody understands the wonderful part yet. That's what you see going on behind his eyes."

Sarah:

"I may have already asked you this, but how old is he?"

Dr. Neruda:

"He's about 60 years old I think - or at least he looks about that old. I've never heard anyone say his age. I know when he was a student, he was supposed to look old for his age. I think he started getting gray hair when he was in his early twenties, and that's probably why he was often mistaken for a professor rather than a student."

Sarah:

"You said earlier that he was kicked out of school. Why?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Remember, he was, even at an age when most kids are concerned about dating and parties, working on BST... or at least early versions of time travel. He's one of those rare visionaries that enter the physical world and knew at a very early age what he came to do. Fifteen was born to time travel. Period... end of story. That's all he's ever cared about.

"In the fifties, researching BST was considered a waste of time, no pun intended. It was simply too theoretical and disconnected from anything practical. I think Fifteen also rubbed his professors the wrong way because he was so bright as a student that he intimidated most of them. He's also very stubborn, and when the professors told him to change his research to something more practical, Fifteen apparently told them they were small-minded... or

something to that effect. Later that semester he was forcibly expelled as the story was told to me.

"However, Bell Labs hired him for a short stint because his research on quantum objects and how they could be influenced by consciousness interested them."

Sarah:

"Forgive me, but what exactly are quantum objects?"

Dr. Neruda:

"They're elementals like electrons or neutrons. Quantum objects are fundamental building blocks of matter, and they can appear both as a wave and a particle."

Sarah:

"Okay, so Fifteen was trying to prove that quantum objects are influenced by consciousness. Why was that so dangerous to a research university?"

Dr. Neruda:

"That in itself wasn't so radical, but it was only a small part of his total research into how to construct BST using the new physics that was being introduced rapidly in the community of quantum physics. Fifteen has always maintained that Einstein's general theory of relativity was flawed. Which is not a popular position to take. In somewhat the same way that Newton's theory of the mechanistic universe became too constricted and unable to explain so much of the phenomenon of what we call today, complexity or chaos theory, Fifteen felt that Einstein's theories underestimated the influence that consciousness had on quantum objects.



"In the fifties and sixties, this was tantamount to heresy, particularly because it was impossible to prove by mathematical modeling or formula. Consequently, Fifteen just continued to develop his theories in secret and began to become noticed by the ACIO when he became involved in a project having to do with heuristic learning systems based on a technology that the ACIO had re-engineered from the Greys.

"The project leader from the ACIO recognized his intellect and rouge [sic] creativity and began to develop a relationship with the young man. Several months later, Fifteen was recruited to join the ACIO and essentially left his identity behind, quickly rising to the position of director of research. He was later introduced to the Corteum intelligence accelerator technology, and the rest is history as they say."

Sarah:

"How exactly does this Corteum technology accelerate or expand the intelligence?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Few people realize that their conscious mind only processes about 15 bits of information per second of linear time. However, in vertical time, the unconscious mind is processing approximately 70-80 million bits of information. Thus, in normal consciousness, humans are aware of only an infinitesimal amount of the information that is constantly being fed to them at the unconscious level. The Corteum technology was designed to reduce the filtering aspects of the conscious mind and enable the

higher frequency information packets to be fed to the conscious mind.

"In parallel with this effort, the brain circuitry - if you will - is re-wired to handle the higher voltage of the information that is being fed to the consciousness, allowing capabilities like photographic memory and abstract thought to co-exist. These capabilities become the matrix filter that draws from the unconscious repositories the most relevant information at any particular time based on the problem or task at hand."

Sarah:

"If I were a behavioral scientist, I'd be able to ask you about a thousand questions right now. But I'm lost in what you say... I mean, how many bits of information can you process right now?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It's not really a simple question of the quantity of information processing, but rather the relevance of the information in linear time based on the intention of the individual. When one goes through the process of the Corteum technology, their ability to tune into information packets that are relevant to a situation or problem is vastly improved. In most people, when a given situation confronts them, they access their conscious mind and pull out the solution that has served them in the past. Thus, people fall into ruts and patterned behavior, which closes down their access to the unconscious information packets that are based on real-time situation analysis and have extremely high relevancy.

"This technology accelerates the circulation of information between the conscious and unconscious aspects of the mind to flow in the pattern of an ascending spiral rather than the pattern of a repetitious circle. And because of this it unleashes the innate intelligence of the individual. So you see, the Corteum technology doesn't increase raw intelligence, it simply facilitates the natural intelligence of the individual."

Sarah:

"This is very cool. I wish I could undergo this regimen of the Corteum intelligence accelerator so I could really ask you some zinger questions! And with that, let's take a short break."

10-minute break...

Dr. Neruda:

"Since you have the tape recorder on now, let me repeat myself. The Corteum technology was the single most influential element in helping Fifteen become the Executive Director of both the ACIO and the Labyrinth Group. Granted, he had a brilliant mind before he underwent the Corteum intelligence enhancement process, but for some reason, the technology seemed to enhance his intelligence more than anyone else... by a significant degree."

Sarah:

"Did anyone ever suspect that the Corteum and Fifteen were somehow a separate force from the Labyrinth Group. I mean, did anyone consider the possibility that they had a separate agenda... maybe BST wasn't their ultimate goal?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No. There was, and I presume still is, absolute faith in both Fifteen and the Corteum. You have to understand that the Corteum are a benevolent race. We never saw any evidence that they had anything but good intentions to assist us, and, to the extent possible, we tried to assist them in return. It was a courteous and completely reciprocal partnership."

Sarah:

"You said last night that the Corteum were part of the Labyrinth Group, but only a couple hundred or so were actual members. How did they become part of the Labyrinth Group?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Actually, I don't know for certain. I can only tell you what I was told when I asked the same question of one of the directors who sponsored me for entry into the Labyrinth Group. He told me that Fifteen had been selected by the Corteum to be their liaison with the ACIO. They singled him out, as the one through which they would initiate their technology transfer program with humans.

"Fifteen agreed to subject himself to the intelligence enhancement technology the Corteum offered. It was from this experience that Fifteen's vision of how BST could be developed was crystallized. He essentially created the framework and design blueprint.

"One of the things that the Corteum have in abundance is logical intelligence. They are very adept in terms of

scientific inquiry and logical reasoning. By their own admission, where they lack ability is in the creative visionary aspect of discovery. This is precisely where Fifteen excels..."

Sarah:

"But you're talking about a race that is superior to us in their technologies, how can they lack creative insights?"

Dr. Neruda:

"These things are all relevant. Compared to virtually all other humans, the Corteum are creative and visionary. But there are formative principles of physics that reside in a dimensional matrix that are completely foreign to all beings except the most penetrating intellects. And Fifteen has such an intellect. The Corteum are hoping that Fifteen, and more generally, the Labyrinth Group, can develop BST because the Corteum have their own application for this technology."

Sarah:

"But last night you said there are other races within our galaxy that may already have time travel capabilities, why don't the Corteum simply go to these races and make a deal with them?"

Dr. Neruda:

"As I said before, a species that has, of their own initiative, developed time travel will be unwilling to share it with another race. It is truly the most guarded of all technologies. And one doesn't simply ask to borrow the technology when they need it. Even when the need seems

compelling and true. It's so easy to become dependent on the technology itself. Furthermore, as I tried to explain last evening, there's a considerable difference between time travel and BST. I'm not aware of any species that possesses the form of BST that the Labyrinth Group is attempting to develop.

"It's like this, Sarah, BST requires a suite of interdependent, but discrete technologies that require a developer to apply new theorems, new laws of physics, that have never been discovered before. And then to build this suite of technologies based fundamentally on a new matrix of how the world works... it's a daunting task. Everything previously held to be true needs to be destroyed, needs to be re-invented, re-formulated, and then integrated into this new matrix.

"This is the very nature of BST, you start with a blank slate and re-invent, re-formulate, and recreate the consciousness of matter."

Sarah:

"Slow down... You just lost me. The consciousness of matter?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Remember what I said earlier about quantum objects and how they're influenced by consciousness?"

Sarah:

"Yes."

Dr. Neruda:

"Quantum objects become increasingly granular or refined until they become pure light energy and cease to have mass. They are not of physical reality, but rather of a pure-state energy. This energy is further segmented into octaves of vibration. In other words, this light energy vibrates, and just like music, there are fundamentals and harmonics. The harmonics resonate with the fundamental energy vibration and the whole energy packet sings like a choir... except its voice is light.

"This singing, if you will, is the equivalent of a consciousness that pervades all matter... every physical object in the entire universe. Fifteen has successfully proven this all-pervasive consciousness or what he calls the Light-Encoded Reality Matrix or LERM, for those of us who like shorthand. Any way, LERM is just one of the new theorems that were required in order to devise a way to prove that BST was indeed a possibility, and not just a fanciful vision inside the mind of Fifteen."

Sarah:

"This all-pervasive consciousness you mentioned, are you really talking about spirit or God?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Exactly."

Sarah:

"Now you've really crossed over the line. You're going to tell me that Fifteen discovered God. That he has proof of God?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes, in a way, but... but God isn't what we call it. It's LERM. And Fifteen was quite emphatic that we never refer to LERM as God or even God-like. He preferred to think of LERM as the shadow of God. The light that casts the shadow, and the object of the shadow itself, he believes is impossible to prove through science or any other objective form of inquiry."

Sarah:

"Okay... okay. But listen to me for a minute. If LERM is the shadow of God, as you put it, then it proves the existence of God, right?"

Dr. Neruda:

"To those of us within the Labyrinth Group who understand the work of Fifteen, the answer is yes."

Sarah:

"So isn't this even more important than the Ancient Arrow project? I mean, if someone had proof of God, isn't it their moral responsibility to share this information with the public?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Perhaps, but the only way this could be shared with the public is to disclose who the Labyrinth Group is, and that isn't something that Fifteen even likes to contemplate doing. He's afraid of the ridicule and misunderstanding that would result, and firmly believes that no one would believe him anyway because there are so many hidden technologies that led him to his findings, and he has no interest in disclosing these technologies to academia,



government institutions, or the media. He'd become the next messiah... or devil, depending on your perspective."

Sarah:

"So he's trapped in his own secrecy..."

Dr. Neruda:

"In a way, but he's not feeling trapped. He's simply so far removed from the social fabric and scientific communities of academia that he has, for practical purposes, burned his bridges and has no intention of ever crossing the chasm that separates himself from all that he's left behind."

Sarah:

"He must be incredibly lonely."

Dr. Neruda:

"I don't think so. He seems extremely energized and basically happy. He's doing exactly what he wants to do, I can't say I've ever seen him depressed... maybe disappointed, but never depressed."

Sarah:

"I still don't see the connection between LERM and BST..."

Dr. Neruda:

"You see, if matter ultimately dissolves into octaves of light, and light dissolves into octaves of consciousness, and consciousness dissolves into octaves of reality, then matter, light, consciousness, and reality are all

interdependent like an ecosystem. And like an ecosystem, if you change one element you affect the whole. Isolating any of the elements contained within LERM, and changing it, it can change reality. And this is a fundamental construct of BST. Does that answer your question?"

Sarah:

"I'm not sure... I don't know, maybe all of this doesn't matter. Again, I'm feeling out of my territory. I find this interesting, but at the same time, it's frustrating. I even find myself feeling pissed off that all of this stuff is going on in my world and I don't know about it... well, I mean I didn't know about it until just now. It seems like an injustice to me. It's the old haves and have-nots story all over again. Can you appreciate how someone would feel... hearing all of this for the first time, and feeling so left out?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes, I understand."

Sarah:

"To you, you can take all of this for granted. Afterall, you're in the know. But the rest of us, we muddle through our little lives thinking the world is this and that, when really we're just bumping into each other in the dark. We're essentially clueless, aren't we?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I don't know... maybe. Maybe you're right, it doesn't matter. I simply know what I know and I believe what I believe. Any more than that, it's as mysterious to me as it is to you. It would be a great mistake to think that the

Labyrinth Group, or any of its members, including Fifteen and the Corteum, understands it all. They don't. But they work hard to get the answers, Sarah. I mean really hard. They've devoted their entire lives to this mission of BST. They didn't simply fall into the knowledge by accident. They tried and failed at thousands of different experiments until they found the existence of LERM, and they'll probably fail another thousand times before they find the solution to BST. But believe me, these individuals didn't arrive at their knowledge casually or because it was gifted to them by some higher force."

Sarah:

"No, I didn't mean it that way. I'm glad for the Labyrinth Group... I mean it. I'm happy that someone on this planet has figured this out, or at least is trying. It's just unfair that so few have the proof... the knowledge... the opportunity to understand all of this. Their lives are so different, they might as well be living on some other planet. They might as well be extraterrestrials."

Dr. Neruda:

"I'm only laughing because that's been a fear of Fifteen's from the start; that if someone ever did find out about the Labyrinth Group and its agenda, they would be regarded as ETs. And here you are, confirming that fear."

Sarah:

"In a way, I wish you hadn't selected me. My life is so different now. This is all I can think about. It consumes me every waking minute. I have no idea how I'm going to get this story out. I have no idea. None."

Dr. Neruda:

"Sarah, do you remember the first time we talked and I mentioned the Corteum? Your first question was, What do they look like?"

Sarah:

"Yes. And your point is...?"

Dr. Neruda:

"These are the natural questions that people will have. LERM may interest a few scientists, but I doubt it. What's portrayed in these interviews is so superficial that I doubt any scientist would take it very seriously. And those that would, would find it to be a noble gesture to authenticate monistic idealism, and nothing more. So you see, your initial instincts should be trusted. Ask the questions that people would be interested in that appeal to their basic sense of curiosity. And don't worry about changing the world through anything I have to say. I don't need that weight on my shoulders."

Sarah:

"Okay, you're right. You're absolutely right. Besides, I'm not sure about the truth of all of this. I'm still not convinced of what you say... just for the record."

Dr. Neruda:

"And I'm still not trying to convince you or anybody else. I'm just answering your questions as truthfully as I know how."

Sarah:

"Touché.

"Now, for the benefit of those who read this interview eventually, what do the Corteum look like?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I thought you'd never ask. They stand nearly three meters high and have very elongated heads and bodies. Their skin is very fair... almost translucent, like you might expect from a cave dweller. Their eyes are relatively large and have various colors just like our own, except the Corteum have different colors to their eyes depending on their age and, in some instances, their emotional state.

"What's very unique about the Corteum is that they have an incredibly articulate nervous system that enables them to process virtually everything that occurs within their environment, including the thoughts of another. Which means that when you're in their presence, you need to have control of your thoughts or else you'll potentially offend them. They're very sensitive emotionally.

Sarah:

"How do they communicate with you?"

Dr. Neruda:

"They speak perfect English or French, Italian, Spanish, or most any other language for that matter. They're very gifted linguists and can acquire average language skills in a matter of a few weeks, and operate as masters of the language within a few months. Their minds are like sponges, but like I said before, while they possess incredible mental powers to absorb new information and

synthesize it with previous information, they're not necessarily adept at creating new information totally unrelated to existing information. That's precisely what impressed them so much with Fifteen."

Sarah:

"What's their interest in the Ancient Arrow project?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No different than Fifteen's I presume. They're completely absorbed in the efforts to create BST, and hope that there's some technology or theorem within the Ancient Arrow site that can help accelerate the development of BST."

Sarah:

"And what do the Corteum want to do with BST?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The Corteum have a planetary system that's in a very fragile state because its protective atmosphere is degenerating at an alarming rate. Their atmosphere protects them, just as our own, from harmful light waves that are generated from their local sun, and, to a lesser extent, their closest stars. Anyway, this condition has led them to become nocturnal, only venturing outside at night, and even then, only for as short a time as necessary. Over many generations, this has left them increasingly susceptible to the very condition that they're trying to solve. Their outer skins become more and more sensitive while their atmosphere becomes less protective.

"Their scientists predict it's only about 10-20 years before they'll have to stay in underground communities year-round. This has had a major impact on their standard of living, economy, social structure, every possible aspect of their society has been affected, and mostly in a negative way, at least by their own measure. They hope that BST will enable them to install a technology that they've recently discovered to prevent the deterioration of their atmosphere."

Sarah:

"Why can't they simply deploy this technology now?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It's not a regenerative technology, it's a preventative technology. Regenerative technologies are impossible once a system reaches a certain retrograde trajectory. In their scenario, only BST would restore their environment."

Sarah:

"Obviously they have space travel technology, why don't they pick out another planet and colonize it?"

Dr. Neruda:

"They have tried, but every planet they've found that's suitable for their species is occupied. And they're not interested in being assimilated into an existing culture or society. They want their own identity and social structure. Also, what they deem suitable for habitation is extremely particular. For example, they have the same problem with earth as they have with their own planet... in fact, it's worse here. They have to live in our underground base in

order to survive on our planet. It required that we build a special way-station for their spacecraft."

Sarah:

"Do they want to interact with our governments and our people?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Initially I think they did. And in fact they tried. But they were quickly escorted to the ACIO and we convinced the NSA and all other interested parties that the Corteum had left earth fearful of their lives. So... as far as our operatives within the NSA are concerned, the Corteum are long gone, and fortunately the NSA at the time were quite preoccupied with other ET issues anyway, namely the Greys."

Sarah:

"I want to return to the WingMakers for a moment. What do the Corteum think of the WingMakers' site, I assume they've seen everything?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes, they've been involved from the beginning. The Corteum are as integral to the Labyrinth Group as any of its human members, so nothing is hidden from them. The leader of the Corteum mission to earth is called - in English - Mahunahi, and he happens to be an artist first and foremost, and a scientist is his secondary nature. He was always excited to see and hear about our findings. He asked if we could create a way-station to the Ancient Arrow site so he could visit the site himself, but it just



wasn't practical to do so without drawing attention to the site."

Sarah:

"I have a few oddball questions, so bear with me. First, every time you mention a member of the ACIO, Labyrinth Group, or Corteum, it's always a male reference. Are there any women in any of these organizations? And secondly, why would an artist be the leader of a space mission of the Corteum? That seems very strange to me."

Dr. Neruda:

"In answer to your first question, it's true that the Labyrinth Group is mostly male. I'm not aware of this being by design, but rather by accident. One of the directors is a woman, she's in charge of communications, and, as a director has a level fourteen clearance. We also have nine females who are in the twelve or thirteen clearance categories, all of them are extremely bright and capable and share responsibility with their male counterparts without any form of discrimination... at least that I've ever been aware of. We even have one married couple. Each person - regardless of sex - is paid the identical sum of money and has all the same privileges... there's no distinction whatsoever within the ranks of the Labyrinth Group, and that's at Fifteen's insistence.

"As for the Corteum, they're all males. Their culture is much more role-defined than our own. And it's not to say that the females are treated as the lesser sex... no, in fact it may be the quite the opposite, it's just that space travel and interaction with other species is left to the male sex until species interaction procedures are brought into play. That's

so their children can retain access to their mothers and their families can remain more intact. Most, if not all, of the members of the Corteum contingent are married.

"As for your second question, the Corteum look at science, religion, and art as three equal members of a unified belief system that defines their social order. As I understand it, leadership varies between each of these three elements of their social order, depending on the contact that is made with an alien race. When they first made contact with humans it was decided that the leadership should come from the ranks of the artistic side because they felt we were more of an equal in this domain and thus the leader could more appropriately understand our motivations and desires."

Sarah:

"That's interesting. They actually thought we were more artistic than scientific or spiritual. I guess now that I think about it, I can understand that. As a race, we probably are more inclined in that way than the others."

Dr. Neruda:

"That was their assessment any way."

Sarah:

"I'd like to go back to the artifacts for a minute. The artifacts that are technology based, where are they right now?"

Dr. Neruda:

"After the initial discovery of the Ancient Arrow site, all of the physical artifacts that could be removed from the

site were carefully packed in shipping crates and shipped to the ACIO research lab in Southern California, and are held by the Labyrinth Group in its own laboratory. That's where they still are, to the best of my knowledge."

Sarah:

"And only the homing device found outside the site and the optical disc have been, to some extent, understood?"

Dr. Neruda:

"That's correct."

Sarah:

"So we really don't know whether BST is possible, do we?"

Dr. Neruda:

"We know it's possible, but it's like anything that is extremely complicated and interdependent, one needs a fine-grain understanding of the total environment that encompasses the problem before they can modify or change the environment to solve the problem. And this requires an understanding of LERM that is still evolving within the Labyrinth Group, and I dare say, may yet require years of experimentation before its understanding is sufficient to identify intervention points and time-splice in such a way to minimize undesirable effects."

Sarah:

"So we're back to the shadow of God discussion... or LERM as you affectionately call it. Why is the

understanding of LERM so fundamental to achieving BST?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Because LERM is the equivalent of genetics for consciousness, and consciousness is the equivalent of reality formulation for sentient beings. So if LERM is understood, one understands the causal system that operates in non-time and non-space, which fundamentally constructs the reality framework of space, time, energy, and matter. Quantum objects operating in the construct of LERM have an existence that is entirely different from macro objects like this table or chair.

"Quantum objects - in their true state - have never been seen by a human. Scientists have witnessed the effects and some of the properties of quantum objects, but their causal nature is not visible through scientific instruments... no matter how powerful they are, because scientific instruments are physical and therefore have a relationship to space and time. Whereas quantum objects have no relationship to time and space other than through an observer."

Sarah:

"So you're saying that the building blocks of matter - these quantum objects - have no existence unless someone is observing them... that consciousness makes them appear real and fixed in time and space? Is that what you're saying?"

Dr. Neruda:

"In a way, but not exactly. Let me try and explain it like this. Consciousness stems or originates from non-time and non-space as a form of energy that is a basic building block of LERM. Consciousness becomes localized as it becomes physical. In other words, consciousness becomes human, or animal, or plant or some object that has physical characteristics. Are you with me so far?"

Sarah:

"Yes."

Dr. Neruda:

"Good. As consciousness becomes a localized physical object, it essentially orchestrates LERM to conform to a reality matrix that has been encoded into the genetic or physical properties of the object it has become. In other words, consciousness moves from non-space and non-time to become matter, and then it orchestrates LERM to produce a physical reality consistent to the encoded genetic properties of the physical object it has become. If that object is a human being, then the genetic triggers that are uniquely human become the tools of consciousness from which it constructs its reality.

"LERM is essentially an infinite field of possibilities, or, as Aristotle referred to it, Potentia. This Potentia is like fertile soil from which physical objects are created. Those who can orchestrate LERM through the application of their consciousness are able to manifest reality and not simply react to it. This manifestation can be instantaneous because again, quantum objects originate in non-time and non-space..."

Sarah:

"Not to get overly religious here, but what you're really talking about is what Jesus or other prophets have done... essentially manifest things like turning water to wine or curing the sick. Right?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes. It's the same principle only I've described it instead of performed it. It's much easier to perform than describe."

Sarah:

"So now you're going to tell me you can turn water into wine?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Actually, I've never tried that before, but yes, all of the members of the Labyrinth Group can manifest physical objects from out of LERM. This was actually one of the outcomes of Fifteen's discovery. The process of orchestrating LERM and manifesting physical objects on demand."

Sarah:

"Okay, now you've definitely got my interest, but I'm feeling a little guilty because I swore I was going to stay on the subject of the WingMakers and the Ancient Arrow project. So tell me, can you teach me how to manifest things out of thin air?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes, but it would take some time... probably a few weeks or so."

Sarah:

"Can you show me some examples of how you do it?"

Dr. Neruda:

"How's this?"

Sarah:

"For purposes of those reading these transcripts. Dr. Neruda just made a ball of twine appear out of no where. He just made it disappear as well. Now it has reappeared again. This is incredible. He's not holding it, so it's not like a magician who's making this appear from his sleeve or from behind his hands somehow. It's quite literally appearing and disappearing on a table about three feet in front of him, which is about six feet away from me. I can see it all very clearly.

"I'm picking up the ball of string and it's definitely a physical object... not simply a mirage or... or hologram. It has all the normal properties... weight... texture... it's slightly warm to the touch, but in every other respect, it's exactly how I'd expect a ball of twine to feel.

"Can you make something else appear... something more complicated, like a million dollars in cash?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes."

Sarah:

"Okay, let's see it."

Dr. Neruda:

"You see this is the problem with these discoveries and capabilities. If I produced a million dollars in cash right now, you'd have a dilemma. What to do with a million dollars? Could you bear to see me make it disappear as easily as I make it appear?"

Sarah:

"Are you crazy? Since the first moment I met you, I've never believed in what you've said until now. And I'm not even saying I totally believe you even now, but I'm a hell of a lot closer. I... no, people in general, need to see things with our eyes. We need to believe in what our eyes tell us because they - of all the senses - seem to have a fix on reality. And you've finally shown me something that is tangible... that my eyes relate to. I'm just asking for one more confirmation of your abilities. I mean, a ball of string doesn't seem like such a huge deal... not that I'm not impressed. But if you could produce a million dollars in cash... now that's a huge deal."

Dr. Neruda:

"And the dilemma?"

Sarah:

"Okay, I have a proposition for you. I'm going to need to quit my job for at least a few months to get this story out to the public and maybe even relocate or move underground somewhat. What if I kept just ten thousand



dollars to help me through the next two months? Could that work for you?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes, I could do that."

Sarah:

"I'm now looking at a loose pile of \$100 bills that appear to be perfect replicas. I'm touching them... again they feel slightly warm to the touch, but these would definitely pass as the real thing... wow... I can't believe it. But this can't be a million dollars, you only manifested \$10,000 didn't you?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes, give or take a few hundred dollars."

Sarah:

"You do realize that you just undermined your own credibility to those who will read this transcript. You just made yourself unbelievable. I'm not even sure I should include this because no one will believe it anyway, and it may instead hurt your credibility in all the other areas of our discussion. This is truly not a believable experience unless you see it with your own eyes. What should I do?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Sarah, whether any one believes me isn't important. No one believes anything anyway unless they experience it, and even then, most people fall back into doubt. Belief is short-lived and always questioned; as it should be. Even the most devote believer is in doubt most of the time,

regardless of what they say. So don't worry about whether this impairs my credibility or not. I don't care. It doesn't matter because I'm not trying to convince anyone of anything. I'm only trying to get information about the WingMakers to people who can make their own determination of what is true and believable."

Sarah:

"Okay... so much for my concern. It'll be the last time I worry about your credibility.

"If you can manifest money like this so easy, why do you need to get paid? I mean who needs money from work?"

Dr. Neruda:

"When this technology was discovered, it was only shared within the Labyrinth Group, and it was only used for experiments approved by Fifteen. The same principle would apply to BST or any other technology discovered by the Labyrinth Group that could be used for personal gain or benefit."

Sarah:

"Man, you must be a very disciplined group. I don't think I could resist."

Dr. Neruda:

The truth is, I'm sure all the members of the Labyrinth Group have, from time-to-time, experimented with this technology in the privacy of their own homes."

Sarah:

"Why do you refer to it as a technology? It seems to me that it's a mental thing. You weren't using anything other than your mind, were you?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It's a technology only from the standpoint of understanding the mental process. There's nothing electronic or mechanical if that's what you mean. But it's more than mind control. It's really a belief in LERM and its unerringly perfect processes of creation - moving quantum objects from non-space and non-time to the world of matter in our time and space. It's more closely related to faith than technology... as odd as that may sound."

Sarah:

"Actually, I was figuring that if Jesus and others who've walked the earth could do these things thousands of years ago, it must not have much to do with technology. But when you see it happen with your own eyes, you have a tendency to think there's some technology behind the scenes that's doing it. That it couldn't just be a natural power of humans... that doesn't seem possible to me for some reason."

Dr. Neruda:

"I understand, but nonetheless, it's really a matter of perspective, and once you have the perspective on LERM and it becomes a fundamental construct of your belief system, it becomes amazingly easy to do this. It's a little like a sophisticated optical illusion based on a hologram that takes you several months of concentrating to see the

picture that is subtly embedded, but the moment you see it, you can instantly see it the rest of your life without effort. That's how this operates. Some people can pick it up in a matter of a few days, others require hundreds of hours, but what everyone has in common is that once you get it, it becomes as natural as breathing."

Sarah:

"And you think you could teach me in a matter of a few weeks, when it took some of your colleagues - with genius IQs, I might add - hundreds of hours to learn the technique?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It's not related to IQ. It's related to understanding and belief. The understanding comes from seeing the existence of LERM and understanding how it operates at its fundamental level. Whether you have an average intelligence or are a genius, it doesn't matter, so long as you understand and believe what you understand."

Sarah:

"So how do you get me to believe in LERM?"

Dr. Neruda:

"You already do deep inside you. It's your conscious mind that rejects your deeper belief and understanding. So I would help you to consciously understand what you already know at a deeper level of your being. And I would do this by showing you LERM."

Sarah:

"And how would you do that?"

Dr. Neruda:

"You would need to come to the Labyrinth Group's research facility in Southern California. It's the only place in the world where I can show you the indisputable evidence of LERM."

Sarah:

"Under the circumstances, that doesn't seem like a scenario that will ever happen. There must be another alternative... or said another way, what is it that I'd see at this research center that I couldn't get somewhere else... or through some other means?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I'm not saying that the only way to acquire this ability is by seeing LERM in action, but it is very convincing. The Labyrinth Group has a technology - designed by Fifteen himself - that quite literally enables an individual to experience LERM. There are also the mystical or shamanic means, but these are far less likely to occur in a two-week period of time. These methods seem independent of circumstance and more dependent on some deeper, predestined or pre-encoded awakening that the individual is not aware of consciously. In some instances, this awakening includes an ability to manifest physical objects, but generally, it's done without a conscious knowledge of how it's done. It just works."

Sarah:

"Okay, so let's assume I'm not cut out to be a mystic or shaman, what would I see with this technology that would convince me of my abilities to do what you just did?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I can't really tell you. It's one of those experiences that words are wholly inadequate to describe or explain. About all I can tell you is that LERM is experienced through this technology, and it essentially, as a result of the experience, re-wires your internal electrical system. In this process, new circuits are cut in your nervous system, and these new circuits enable you to utilize LERM as an outgrowth of your experience of it.

"I doubt this explanation does you any good whatsoever. I've never tried to explain it before, and I can see by the look on your face that I failed miserably..."

Sarah:

"No, it's not that. I'm just tired of always feeling like I've lived on a different planet all my life. That I've missed out on all of this... it's really distressing to me when I think about it.

"I remember reading a biography about Einstein, and he was quoted saying something like we humans only use about two percent of our intellectual capability. Well, that's about how I feel right now. That I've lived my life at about the two percent level - if that - and I'm just beginning to see what he meant. I never had a comparison before now that let me see what the other ninety-eight percent might be like. It's not altogether pleasant to see what's been left out or overlooked... or undervalued."

Dr. Neruda:

"I understand."

Sarah:

"On to something else. You said earlier that certain technologies like LERM and BST weren't allowed to be used for personal gain by members of the Labyrinth Group. Yet, if BST did exist, wouldn't everyone line up and ask to use it? I know I would. There're a lot of events in my life I'd change if I could. Once the cat's out of the bag, how could BST ever be kept under wraps?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Like everything, there are implications and moral and ethical considerations that have to be weighed. One of the things that Fifteen and more generally the Labyrinth Group is good at, is to consider these implications in the broader scope of the social order. Fifteen, from an early age, always felt that the technologies of BST and LERM would only be granted to those organizations that would properly honor the ethical considerations that were required by the technology itself.

"This is one of the fundamental charters of the Labyrinth Group, and all of its members take it very seriously. As a new technology is being developed, there are always members of the team who are concerned with the ethical implications of the technology and are responsible for usage guidelines and deployment rules. This is an integral part of any project's development."

Sarah:

"That's good to hear, but couldn't such a charter also be used to prevent the spread of these technologies to a broader audience?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Unquestionably. A technology like BST - once developed and tested - could, in time, become a consumer technology. But as long as the Labyrinth Group exists, it would protect BST from any and all outside forces. Within the Labyrinth Group there is a committee called the Technology Transfer Program or TTP Committee. This committee has two missions, one, to assess the incoming technologies that are assimilated from ETs, and two, they're responsible for which technologies and in what state of dilution they're transferred to our private industry partners, NSA, or the military.

"The TTP Committee is in control of the pure-state technologies that are developed by the Labyrinth Group. These pure-state technologies are virtually never transferred to outside organizations. Even those staff members in the ACIO who are not part of the Labyrinth Group are unaware of these pure-state technologies, and when -"

Sarah:

"But if I place these interview transcripts on the Internet or some media publication picks up this story, more than just the ACIO staff members are going to know about this stuff. Isn't this going to screw up the Labyrinth Group's cloak of secrecy?"

Dr. Neruda:



"No. The Labyrinth Group is more than a secret organization. For all practical purposes, it doesn't exist. The ACIO doesn't exist. No one will be able to trace the ACIO let alone the Labyrinth Group. Their security technologies are so vastly superior they are completely invulnerable in this regard. Nothing I say, or you publish, will make them more vulnerable. As I said before, their only concern will be the precedent of my defection and how it could create more defections over time."

Sarah:

"Why, why would anyone want to leave... I mean I understand your case... you didn't want your memories changed or removed. But they don't commonly do that do they?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Not often, but I'm certainly not the first to be targeted to undergo memory implant sessions or other forms of invasive security measures. They're all part of the culture of the Labyrinth Group and the ACIO. Everyone who enters either of those worlds understands what they must subject themselves to. It's very clear why the paranoia must be part of the culture. But over time, certain individuals find it suffocating. And these individuals are the ones who are most at risk to see my defection as a reason for their own.

"I may be entirely wrong about this, but I believe there are ten to twenty individuals who would leave the ACIO or even the Labyrinth Group if they were given the choice without repercussions."

Sarah:

"But I thought you said last night that these people were in love with their jobs because of the special access to technologies and research labs that were so advanced to anything else available? If that's the case, what would they do in normal society?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I'll find out. I'll be the first to experience normal society... as a normal person."

Sarah:

"Well, at least you won't have any problem getting a job... what am I saying, you won't even need to work. I forgot, you can make your own money out of thin air."

Dr. Neruda:

"You'd be surprised to know that I live a pretty simple life. I own a 92' Honda Accord and live in a modest three-bedroom home in a suburban neighborhood of modest homes..."

Sarah:

"You're kidding?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No."

Sarah:

"You make \$400,000 a year tax free and... and have a money tree in your mind, and you live like I do? If you

don't mind my asking, what do you do with all your money?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I have blind trusts."

Sarah:

"Are all the Labyrinth Group members like you?"

Dr. Neruda:

"You mean in regard to money and possessions?"

Sarah:

"Yes."

Dr. Neruda:

"Most live at a higher standard of living than I do, but it is part of our culture to live modestly and none of the members live a pretentious lifestyle. Fifteen pays people what they're worth, not because he wants them to throw money around and live flamboyantly. He's a big believer in this, and he himself, even more than I, lives humbly."

Sarah:

"I find this really hard to believe. I think of just about everything you've told me so far, this is one of the hardest things to believe. I'm totally baffled here..."

Dr. Neruda:

"I can appreciate that, but what I'm telling you is the truth."

"Initially, the way new people are recruited to join the ACIO is largely because of the monetary incentives. These are extremely bright and capable people and could easily secure positions in academia or private industry making \$200,000 per year, and more. The ACIO lures them by at least doubling their salary and offering them lifetime employment contracts. But those who ultimately earn the right to enter the twelfth level are then inducted into the Labyrinth Group, and by the time an individual has risen to this status, money has become increasingly unimportant... particularly after the Corteum intelligence accelerator experience... after the LERM experience, it's diminished even more.

"You'd probably find it interesting that Fifteen lives in a small, three-bedroom home in a regular community where the average property value is about \$250,000. That's not much of a house by West Coast standards. His automobile must have at least 100,000 miles on it, no air conditioning, and he's perfectly content with his situation. New ACIO recruits are always amazed at Fifteen's thrift... I think bewildered is a better way of putting it. But over time, they learn to respect him not as an eccentric, but as an extremely dedicated genius who simply likes to live like other people and blend in."

Sarah:

"Okay... I've got to get personal here, and I know I've totally betrayed my agenda, but you've got to tell me a few things about... well like, what do your neighbors think you do?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I don't know my neighbors very well. I've worked seventy hours per week since I was eighteen years old. When I socialize, it's generally with my colleagues. There's very little time for establishing other relationships. But to answer your question directly, I don't know for sure what they think I do... I've only told them I'm a research scientist for the government. For most people that settles their curiosity."

Sarah:

"But what if you met a woman and fell in love. She'd want to know what you did and how much money you made and so forth... what would you tell her?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I work for a government weather research center. I'm a research scientist in applied chaos theory and I make \$85,000 per year."

Sarah:

"So you'd lie?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It's part of the culture of the Labyrinth Group. We can't tell the truth, and if we did, the vast majority of people would think we were crazy. It's also why we keep to our own... we can tell the truth among ourselves."

Sarah:

"When I first heard about the ACIO and its secret mission, and that you were defecting and afraid for your life... I thought the ACIO was an evil-minded, control-the-

world type of organization. Then I heard about the kind of money you all made and I pictured a bunch of intellectual snobs driving bullet-proof Mercedes Benzes and living in posh mansions... and you just dismantled my image. You completely destroyed it. So why are you so afraid?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The Labyrinth Group, because of its connection to the ACIO, is still very much connected to the secret network of organizations who control a great deal of the world's monetary and natural resource assets. This network of organizations will know about my defection the instant these materials I've given you gain any visibility in the press or on the Internet. They will know of its authenticity by simply reading these two interviews. While there's nothing they can do to the ACIO or the Labyrinth Group, they can make my life difficult to live.

"And they will most definitely try. I know all about their technologies and how they deploy them. I know the people behind these organizations and I know how they operate. I have knowledge that I've only shown you a small fraction of. And this knowledge would make certain individuals - very powerful individuals - very uncomfortable. It's extremely rare, but when high-level operatives defect, they're hunted like dogs until they're found and disposed of, or, if they serve an ongoing purpose, their memories are selectively wiped clean. It's one of the unfortunate realities of having dealt with these organizations."

Sarah:

"But you were just a scientist... a linguist, for God's sake. How does that make you a threat to these secret organizations?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I was the one that created the underlying encryption technology for their security system that overlays their predictive modeling software for the world's stock exchanges. I may be a simple scientist in your eyes, but my talents for linguistics is not the only talent I possess. I'm also gifted in the field of encryption. And within the world of economics, I'm simply the best. And this talent was given to certain organizations to help them, and in the process of doing so, I learned about these organizations and how they operate. It makes me a security risk."

Sarah:

"Why? I mean if the ACIO and Labyrinth Group have so much money... why work with these evil groups?"

Dr. Neruda:

"First of all, they're not evil. These organizations consist of well-educated elitists who're self-absorbed perhaps, but not evil. They look at the world as a biological experience where the strong survive, the powerful thrive, and the secretive control. They like being in control of the experience. They are the ultimate control freaks, but not for the sake of adoration or ego-gratification, but for the sake that they genuinely believe they're the best at making policy decisions that effect the world's economy and security.

"Don't confuse control with evil intent. It's not necessarily one and the same thing. That's the game they choose to play. The fact that they make incredible sums of money is simply part of the game, but it's not the reason they sit in the driver's seat of the world's economy... they simply want to protect their life's agenda like anyone else would. It's just that they're in the position to actually do it. They get their security from being at the top of the economic food-chain."

Sarah:

"But they're manipulating people and keeping information from them. If this isn't evil, what is?"

Dr. Neruda:

"By your definition, our national government, our local government, virtually every business and organization, is evil. Everyone manipulates and keeps information hidden. Governments, organizations, and individuals."

Sarah:

"You're twisting my words. It's a matter of degree isn't it? I mean, it's one thing if I don't tell you my true hair color, and it's another thing if, as part of this secret network, I withhold information about how I'm manipulating the world economy. They're entirely different in scale. You can't compare them. I still think it's evil when organizations manipulate and control things for their own gain."

Dr. Neruda:



"Believe me, I didn't set out to be the defender of these organizations, but you need to understand this because it's important and it may effect you in the days ahead. This secret network of powerful organizations are more aligned with the goals of the Labyrinth Group than our world's governments, and, in particular, our military leaders. If you're worried about anything, you would be well advised to worry more about the administration, Congress, and the Department of Defense... not only in the United States, but in every country."

Sarah:

"How can you say that? Are you saying that our government and military leaders are trying to cause us harm and these secret, manipulative organizations are trying to help us?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I'm saying that the leadership in the world's community of nations is inept, and can be bought with the holy dollar. And that it's not the secret network that I've been talking about who's manipulating our government and military leadership to invest huge amounts of money in destructive forces like nuclear and biological weapons. This, they're deciding on their own. The secret organizations that I'm pointing the finger at are opposed to these military build-ups because they interject a degree of uncertainty in their models for controlling economic and social order.

"The politicians and military leaders are the ones who're investing time, energy, and money in weapons of mass destruction, and these, if there is such a thing as evil, are it."

Sarah:

"Okay. I see your point. But you implied that these secret organizations would try and kill us if we published and distributed all of this? I still don't see how that makes them so noble."

Dr. Neruda:

"I don't think you have to be concerned about these secret organizations. You don't know enough to be dangerous to them. Besides, they're used to journalists snooping around and trying to expose them. None have succeeded in any meaningful way. Dozens of books have been written about them. So they're not going to bother you. Their interest will be in me and me alone. It's one of the reasons why I'm careful in what I tell you. I know they'll read these transcripts, as will the NSA, CIA, ACIO, and the entire Labyrinth Group. I'm allowing you to record these conversations because I know who will hear these exact words, and I want them to know precisely what I have shared with you, and through you, to others."

"I'm not making a value judgment as to whether these secret organizations are noble or not. I'm merely pointing out that they're not the ones wasting huge sums of money and intellectual capital on weapons of mass destruction. They're significantly more competent to rule than our politicians and military leaders are. And this is simply my opinion."

Sarah:

"I still don't get it. If the Labyrinth Group, the ACIO and this secret network of organizations are all so noble

and benevolent, why are you afraid for your life? And why are they hiding from the public like cockroaches?"

Dr. Neruda:

"To answer your first question, I fear for my life because I know information that could cause irreparable harm to a variety of secret organizations... though I have no intention to do so."

Sarah:

"But simply because you know these things they'll hunt you down and kill you? Sounds like a nice group to me. Certainly not evil..."

Dr. Neruda:

Remember... they're control freaks. They don't like having anyone loose who could cause them potential harm. If I wanted to, I could bring them down. I know that much about their computer algorithms and encryption technologies."

Sarah:

"But how would you get access to their system. It would seem to me that you'd be placing yourself in great jeopardy if you tried to get into their system."

Dr. Neruda:

"I don't need to get into their system to cause them harm, I need to get into their system to prevent harm. They will invite me into their system."

Sarah:

"I don't understand..."

Dr. Neruda:

"When I developed the system initially, there were certain time-delayed algorithms that were scripted to occur at specific times, and if they were not maintained accordingly, the program would essentially self-destruct. Something that these organizations cannot afford to happen."

Sarah:

"Why did they agree to this?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It's part of the fee that the Labyrinth Group extracts from its clients. More importantly, it ensures that our technologies - even in their diluted states - are operated according to our agreement and not misused. I have the access codes for this system and the maintenance key that will prevent it from crashing. I've made certain that I'm the only one who has this knowledge."

Sarah:

"You're telling me that with all those photographic memories running around at the Labyrinth Group, that you're the only one who knows the code?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I didn't exactly report the right number when I did my last update of their system... so, yes, I'm the only one who knows the correct code. I designed it that way to ensure my safety..."

Sarah:

"But with all the geniuses in the Labyrinth Group, you're telling me that they can't solve this problem themselves?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Not without a significant amount of time... which is something Fifteen won't agree to do. It's too wasteful and a major distraction to BST research."

Sarah:

"Do they already know about this?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Oh, yes. I informed them shortly after I defected."

Sarah:

"They must have been pissed."

Dr. Neruda:

"It wasn't a pleasant conversation to put it mildly."

Sarah:

"I was thinking about all of this sophisticated technology that the Labyrinth Group has, but I don't understand something. How do you manufacture it? I assume Intel isn't doing the manufacturing. Right?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Correct. There's no one on this planet that can manufacture these technologies. They're all based upon the

Corteum technology - which is about 150 generations ahead of our best computer technologies here on earth. For example, the LERM project used only one domestic technology in the total array of about 200 different technologies, and it was a relatively insignificant part of the project..."

Sarah:

"What was it?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It's a derivative of a laser telemetry technology that the ACIO developed about 20 years ago, but it filled the specific needs of the LERM project because it was based on analog protocols which were required for the application in that specific part of the experiment."

Sarah:

"So the Corteum performs all the manufacturing of what the Labyrinth Group designs. What if the Corteum decide, for whatever reason, not to share these technologies all of sudden? Wouldn't the Labyrinth Group cease to exist?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Perhaps. But Fifteen is shrewd and he's put certain contingencies in place to help ensure nothing like that would ever happen. Bear in mind, that the Corteum are at least as motivated as we are to develop this technology, perhaps more. They have tremendous respect for Fifteen as well as the other human contingent of the Labyrinth Group. However, when the Labyrinth Group was first formed, Fifteen negotiated with the Corteum to share all

source code for the projects that came out of BST research. All base technologies were replicated in two separate research labs. There's complete redundancy right down to the power supplies."

Sarah:

"Won't the leaders of these secret organizations try and pressure Fifteen to find you... with their remote viewing technology, can't they find you easily?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The leaders of these secret organizations well know they have no leverage with Fifteen. After they read this information, they will know they have even less leverage. Fifteen and the Labyrinth Group designed and developed all of their security systems. Every last one. They knew they had to be indebted to the Labyrinth Group for certain technologies that made them - speaking metaphorically - invisible. Fifteen cannot be pressured. In fact, it's just the opposite. Fifteen can pressure them, though he never would. To Fifteen, these organizations simply represent the best alternative to letting our own governments take control of the economic engines and social order of the world infrastructure. Hence, he sympathizes with them and tries to help them to the extent he can afford the time and energy."

Sarah:

"So how will you hide from them?"

Dr. Neruda:

"As I told you before, I began to systematically disentangle myself from the ACIO's invasive security precautions, which include electronic sensors implanted underneath the skin in the back of the neck. I effectively stripped myself of these devices so I'd have a chance of remaining underground until a reasonable solution could be negotiated."

Sarah:

"But you said they had RV technology that can locate you. What about this?"

Dr. Neruda:

"There's little doubt that they will try this, but it's not an exact science. An RV could see this room, but not have a clue as to how to find it. They might be able to key in on a particular object - like that clock, for example - but unless it was the only clock of its kind and they could trace its location, it wouldn't help them."

Sarah:

"Is there anything I should be worried about, then?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I think we need to move around a bit, and vary our meeting time and place. We should conduct the next interview in a new environment - perhaps outdoors. Something generic without landmarks."

Sarah:



"So they can't read my street sign and then look at my house's address - I mean if they were doing an RV session right now?"

Dr. Neruda:

"They would try, and it's possible they'd be successful, but not likely.

Sarah:

"I suddenly got very nervous. You're not making me feel comfortable with this."

Dr. Neruda:

"I can only be honest."

Sarah:

"What would they do with me and my daughter if they found us?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I think you could assume that they'd perform an MRP of the entire experience of meeting me."

Sarah:

"They wouldn't kill us?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I don't think so. Fifteen doesn't resort to violence unless it's absolutely necessary."

Sarah:

"Shit. I wish I knew about this before I agreed to get my daughter and I involved. Just tell me one thing; do you know when they're doing an RV session? I mean, can you feel it or anything?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I can sense it, but it's not something that's absolute."

Sarah:

"Is there any defense against it?"

Dr. Neruda:

"None."

Sarah:

"So all we do is hope that their damn RV is incompetent?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I'll only stay for short periods of time, and it'll be late at night when they're far less likely to perform an RV session. It'd be a good practice to vary our meeting place, as I suggested before. Other than that, I don't what more we can do."

Sarah:

"I assume there's nothing the police or FBI could do to help?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Nothing that I'm interested in."

Sarah:

"But what will you do to protect yourself?"

Dr. Neruda:

"As you can imagine, Sarah, there's certain information I can't share with you given the nature of these interviews. This is one instance I can't tell you more than I already have."

Sarah:

"I'm feeling the need to bring this session to an end. My mind is quite literally filled to the brim. I think if you told me anything profound right now, it'd just go in one ear and out the other. Can we meet again on Tuesday and perhaps pick-up where we left off tonight?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes, that's fine with my schedule."

Sarah:

"Okay. Signing off for tonight."

End of Session

## THIRD INTERVIEW WITH DR. JAMISSON NERUDA

**By Sarah**

*What follows is a session I recorded of Dr. Neruda on December 30, 1997. He gave permission for me to record his answers to my questions. This is the transcript of that session. This was one of five times I was able to tape-record our conversations. I have preserved these transcripts precisely as they occurred. No editing was performed, and I've tried my best to include the exact words, phrasing, and grammar used by Dr. Neruda. (It's recommended that you read the December 27 and December 28, 1997 interviews before reading this one.)*

Sarah:

"Good evening, Dr. Neruda. Are you ready?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes, I'm ready when you are."

Sarah:

"One of the things that I find hard to embrace about this whole affair is that the concept of time travel always seemed like a fairly easy technology to develop. I know I've gotten that impression from Star Trek and various other movies and television, but still, what you've

described seems like it's so difficult to develop that we'll never succeed. Is it really that hard to develop?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The way time travel is presented in the movies trivializes the complexities of this technology, and interactive time travel or BST, as defined by Fifteen, is the most sophisticated of all technologies. It's the apex technology from which virtually all other technologies can be derived. So, in creating BST, one is creating a short cut or an accelerated pathway into the acquisition of virtually all other technologies. This is why BST is so difficult to develop.

"Science fiction violates most of the scientific premises that are related to our understanding of time travel. And BST in particular is an extremely sophisticated application of scientific principles that are simply not stated in science fiction, mostly because people like the effects and plot lines of time travel, more than they have an appetite for understanding the science behind it. So writers, especially for television and movies, trivialize the degree of complexity that surrounds this apex technology."

Sarah:

"But you didn't really answer my question... will we succeed in developing it?"

Dr. Neruda:

"There's little doubt in my mind that the Labyrinth Group will succeed in developing BST. The question is whether it's in humanity's best interest in the long-term. They were weeks from beginning their initial tests for

broad scale testing just before I defected. There was widespread anticipation at the director level that BST was a matter of four to six months away from a successful test."

Sarah:

"So what's the biggest obstacle to success?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Simply stated, it's whether the Labyrinth Group has the ability to define and access intervention points as prescribed by Fifteen that have the least impact on related events in horizontal time. It's the most subtle, yet most important component to this whole chain of technologies."

Sarah:

"Can you explain this in lay terms?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It's an extremely difficult technology to develop - defining the optimal intervention point, accessing the intervention point, and returning from the intervention point without detection. This is all about splicing time at the causal level with a minimum of disruption. It's the equivalent challenge of throwing a boulder into a pond without any ripples."

Sarah:

"Why all the concern about minimizing disruption? I mean, in the case of the Animus, aren't they trying to completely annihilate humankind? Why should we care so much about disrupting their way of life?"

Dr. Neruda:

"First of all, the Animus are not coming to annihilate humankind. They're coming to control the genetic library known as earth. Their intention is not completely understood, but it's not to kill our animal populations or the human species. It has more to do with genetic engineering and how their species can be modified to enable it to house a spiritual consciousness. They want unfettered access to our DNA in order to conduct experiments. Beyond this, they want to colonize earth, but for what ultimate purpose we don't know.

"To your question, the concern about minimizing impacts from BST intervention has to do as much with selfish interests as altruistic ones. When events are altered or changed, they can have unintended and very unpredictable consequences. For example, we could successfully divert the Animus from our galaxy, but in the process, unintentionally send them to another planet. This act would have consequences to our planet that we could never predict."

Sarah:

"Are you talking about karma?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No. It has to do with physics and the inherent nature of complex systems. Causal energy is eternal. It simply bounces from event to event. In some cases, it shapes the event; in others, it creates the event. Causal energy is the most potent force in the universe, and when it's redirected -

on a global scale - it will rebound in unpredictable and innumerable ways."

Sarah:

"So, this is the flaw of BST... not knowing the consequences of changing events? Are you suggesting that we could succeed in diverting the Animus from our planet, and then some years later fall victim to some other form of catastrophe that wipes out our planet?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No, it doesn't happen quite like that. The energy system that was redirected would simply rebound to the point from whence it was redirected. How it would rebound is so complex that it would be impossible to predict the nature of its reaction. I suppose it could invite a cataclysm of some kind, but it's not to say humanity would be punished, if that's what you're trying to imply."

Sarah:

"I guess that's what I was implying. But isn't it true that karma exists? And if we turned the Animus onto another planet via BST, we'd be setting ourselves up for a negative reaction?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No. It means we'd receive a reaction, and the nature of the reaction may be so unrelated to the causal energy redirect that no one would know it was a reaction. This is the nature of causal energy: it rebounds of its own force and intelligence; it's not a simple reaction to an action."

Sarah:



"I thought karma, and even physics, held that for every action there's an equal and opposite reaction. What happened to this principle?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It's alive and well. It's just doesn't apply to causal energy systems or the dimension of vertical time."

Sarah:

"Okay, I'm going to avoid another discussion of physics in favor of finding out why you think BST will succeed given our discussion of the past few minutes."

Dr. Neruda:

"It's one of the main reasons I defected."

Sarah:

"How do you mean that?"

Dr. Neruda:

"This issue of uncertainty, regarding causal energy systems, has always been the breaking point of BST - at least theoretically. Fifteen believes he knows how to manage this. I'm not so certain it can be managed, particularly after my exposure to the WingMakers and gaining a bit of understanding into their solution in dealing with the Animus."

Sarah:

"I know you've talked a little bit about this already, but refresh my memory. What is their solution?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I have only a few pieces to go by, so I'm not going to be able to talk definitively about this."

Sarah:

"And what's the nature of these sources?"

Dr. Neruda:

"There was an RV session that elicited some insight. I read more about it in the introduction of the text from the optical disc -"

Sarah:

"This being the text that literally disappeared?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes, but I've stored the entire text in my memory."

Sarah:

"Anything else?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I had a direct communication with what I believe was a representative of the WingMakers."

Sarah:

"How? When?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It's a complicated story, but Samantha, the RV assigned to our project, was having increasingly strong connections

to the WingMakers. Unfortunately, they were so strong that Fifteen had little choice but to subject her to an MRP. I met with her just prior to the procedure, and she suddenly began channeling a presence to me that I believe was from the Central Race."

Sarah:

"And from these three sources you have a pretty good idea as to how the WingMakers plan to protect their genetic library?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Correct."

Sarah:

"And what did this channeled entity say?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Its primary emphasis was that our technology would fail us."

Sarah:

"And by technology, it meant BST?"

Dr. Neruda:

"That was my interpretation."

Sarah:

"So you trust this Samantha?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I have no doubts about her whatsoever. She was simply our best RV, and quite possibly the best natural intuitive we ever had within the ACIO."

Sarah:

"Let's go back to something you implied a minute ago. Did I understand you right that you defected from the ACIO because of a disagreement you had with Fifteen about BST and the WingMakers' solution of defense?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes, it was a primary factor."

Sarah:

"Can you elaborate on this a bit?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Fifteen believed that Samantha - our RV - could jeopardize our mission because of her ability to make contact with the WingMakers. In two of the three RV sessions she performed, they detected her presence, and they had begun to probe her. Fifteen - once he had confirmation that these beings were, in all probability, from the Central Race - became quite alarmed and put a stop to any further RV sessions. "When I asked him why, he seemed to have some apprehension about their ability to sense our work on BST, and feared that they may put an end to it."

Sarah:

"Why?"

Fifteen: [sic]

"Because they are very powerful beings. What most people consider God, amplify by a factor of a thousand and you would be close to the range of capabilities and power that these beings can wield."

Sarah:

"Are you saying these beings are more powerful than God?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The problem with your question is that I don't know which God you're referring to. The conception of God in the Bible, or most of our planet's holy books, bears no resemblance to the image of God that I hold in my mind."

Sarah:

"Okay, I want to come back to this topic because it really holds an interest to me, but I also want to complete our discussion around your defection. Can you explain what happened?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Simply put, I began to feel that the defensive weapon installed on this planet by the WingMakers stood a better chance of succeeding than BST. All logic dictated this to be true. Fifteen, however, disagreed. He would allow further investigation into how to find the remaining WingMakers' sites and how to bring them online, but he would never share the technology or anything related to the discovery with the general public."

Sarah:

"And so your differences over this issue caused your defection?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes."

Sarah:

"Back to the topic of God. Tell me how your version of God is defined."

Dr. Neruda:

"God is a unifying force, primal and eternal. This force is the original force that summoned life from itself to become both its companion and journey. The life that was summoned was experimented with many times until a soul carrier was formed that could take a particle of this force into the outer, expanding universes."

Sarah:

"I assume this soul carrier you're referring to is the Central Race?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Correct."

Sarah:

"Are these the same as angels?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No, the Central Race is more akin to genetic planners and universe architects. They're not well known or understood, even in the most insightful cosmologies held by the Corteum."

Sarah:

"So, I presume if angels are real they're yet another creation of the Central Race?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Correct."

Sarah:

"Then God, or this force as you were describing it, didn't really create anything other than the Central Race, and then returned to his abode in the center of the universe. It sounds like the Central Race does all the work."

Dr. Neruda:

"The Central Race is simply a time-shifted version of the human race."

Sarah:

"Huh?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The Central Race holds the genetic archetype of the human species, no matter what form it takes on. No matter what time it lives in. No matter what part of the universe it lives. This archetype is like a magnetic force: it draws the lesser-developed versions of the species towards it. All

versions of the humanoid species are merely time-shifted versions of the Central Race - or at least that's the view of the Corteum."

Sarah:

"Stop a second. Are you saying that I'm made from the same DNA as the Central Race? That I'm essentially the same, genetically speaking, just in a different time and space? How's that possible?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It's possible because the Central Race designed it that way. DNA is not something that only transmits physical characteristics or predispositions. It transmits our concepts of time, space, energy, and matter. It transmits our conscious and unconscious filters. It transmits our receptivity to the inward impulse of original thought, and this receptivity is what defines the motion of the being."

Sarah:

"The motion of the being?"

Dr. Neruda:

"All beings are in motion. They're going somewhere every moment of their lives. If not physically in motion, their minds are in motion. Their subconscious is always in motion, interacting with the data stream of a multiverse. The motion of the being is simply a term we used at the ACIO to define the internal compass."

Sarah:

"And the internal compass is?"



Dr. Neruda:

"It's the radar system of the individual that defines its path through life at both the macroscopic and microscopic levels, and everywhere in between."

Sarah:

"I have this feeling that this topic could go on forever."

Dr. Neruda:

"It's not that complex, Sarah. Think of the decisions you make in your life. Which ones would you say were made for you by external sources, which ones were your own, and which ones were a combination of both external and your own decision?"

Sarah:

"You mean as a percentage?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Try and estimate."

Sarah:

"It depends on what stage of my life I consider. When I was a baby, my parents made all my decisions -"

Dr. Neruda:

"No, this applies to all stages - from birth to death. Just make a guess."

Sarah:

"I don't know, maybe forty percent external, thirty percent my own, and thirty percent a combination."

Dr. Neruda:

"Then you'd be surprised if I told you that you deposit an image within your DNA - before you're born - that defines your motion of being. And when this deposit is made, your motion of being is defined by you. Not someone else. No external force makes your decision, an external force can only inform and activate a decision already made."

Sarah:

"You lost me. Are you saying that every decision in my life was already made before I was born?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No. Every causal decision was."

Sarah:

"So what's the difference between a causal decision and a regular decision?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Think of how many decisions you make in a day. Wouldn't you agree that it's probably hundreds if not thousands every day? These are - as you put it - regular decisions. Causal decisions are defined by how integral they are to the substrate of the individual being. Are you receptive to new ideas? Are you able to synthesize opposing thoughts? Do you process information dominantly in a visual or numeric context? These are

causal decisions that you define before being born, and they're encoded within the DNA that activates your decision matrix. External forces like parents, teachers, and friends only inform what you've already defined as the motion of your being."

Sarah:

"Is this according to the Corteum, too?"

Dr. Neruda:

"This is part of the learning I personally gathered from my LERM experiences. The Corteum subscribe to a similar belief, however."

Sarah:

"You're telling me a variation of reincarnation, aren't you? When you said that we deposit an image within our DNA - before we're born - who exactly does the depositing?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Only the formless consciousness can deposit an image onto the DNA template."

Sarah:

"I assume you're talking about soul?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It depends again on your definition of soul. The formless consciousness is that which observes and experiences through forms or structures, not just physical embodiments. For example, consciousness can be

contained inside a structure or form, but not be physically based. The mind is such a structure, while it's not physical, consciousness - when physically embodied - peers through a mind structure like someone looking through a window. Soul is often confused with the mind and vice a versa.

"The formless consciousness is that particle of God that is decelerated from the frequency of the God state into individuality where it can become autonomous and exercise freewill. Think of it like a photon or subatomic particle that is cast into a web of interconnected particles of like-mindedness. That is to say, all the particles have a similar frequency or spin-rate, and they're able to step down their frequency, at will, in order to enter membranes of consciousness that can only be entered by taking on a form. So the formless becomes form, and just before it enters the body, consciousness activates the DNA template according to its desired experiences within the membrane of reality it chooses."

Sarah:

"What do you mean by the term membrane?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The multiverse is a collection of reality membranes, clustered together in a dimensional matrix that responds to the thought circuits and gravity fields of our formless consciousness. We've been trained, through evolutionary timescales, to accept the three-dimensional world as our reality. These reality membranes are not structured like parallel planes or rungs of a ladder, but rather are like lattices of interlocking cells. If you want, I can describe them in more detail, but I think it becomes so abstract

from here forward that I suspect your eyes will glaze over."

Sarah:

"All of this seems unbelievable. I'm beginning to wonder if you're the reincarnation of Jesus or Buddha."

Dr. Neruda (Laughing): "I'm reincarnated, and that's as far as I can attest."

Sarah:

"Do you remember any of your previous incarnations?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Previous is a relative term. I prefer to think of my incarnations not so much as a function of memory, but something more akin to a bleed-through of a simultaneous reality membrane. The compartments into which human experience is divided are not so watertight that they exclude one life from entering, or influencing, another. And from my experience, these compartments represent parallel moments in the life of an individual across a broad sweep of time and space."

Sarah:

"So you're implying that our past, present, and future lives are all lived out at the same time, even though they seem to be taking place in different places and times?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes."

Sarah:

"Okay, then explain how it's possible, because it doesn't make any sense to me."

Dr. Neruda:

"Our formless consciousness is like a sphere with many, many spokes leading outwards from its central core. Each of these spokes connects into the vertical time continuum through forms, and these forms - human or otherwise - feed the formless consciousness with insights about the different reality membranes in which it has form. In this way, the forms of the formless bring it awareness of different reality membranes, which in turn is processed by the formless and passed on through the unification force to God."

Sarah:

"God's the recipient of all this information or experience... from every living thing... from every time and place? How?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I don't have any idea."

Sarah:

"But this is what you believe, and I have to assume you wouldn't believe it if you didn't have some evidence to support your belief."

Dr. Neruda:

"Sometimes you follow a trail of evidence to a point where it comes to an abrupt end, but you can still imagine how the trail continues despite the lack of proof that it

moves forward in a particular direction. You can intuit its pathway. Call it imagination or pure conjecture, I don't care, but it's what I've done in this case. I truly don't know how this magnitude of data could possibly be processed for any useful purpose, but I believe it."

Sarah:

"Okay, give me a second to review my notes... because I want to go back to something you said earlier. Hear it is. You said that everyone defines his or her motion of being at the causal level. If that's the case, and assuming that soul is intelligent, why would any soul choose to be impaired mentally, emotionally, or physically?"

Dr. Neruda:

"How do you mean that?"

Sarah:

"Let's say that soul entered a body, but chose to be close-minded, stupid, and generally a blob. Why would an intelligent consciousness choose this and then imprint it on their DNA so their life is made more difficult, or at least more boring?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Let me ask you a question. Why would God impose this same condition on a person?"

Sarah:

"Ah, but you're starting with the assumption that God exists."

Dr. Neruda:

"Make this assumption and then answer my question."

Sarah:

"I know what you're implying, but why would either God or soul impose these - at least from my point of view - stupid decisions?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It has to do with complex systems and their inherent rules of dynamics."

Sarah:

"Could you be a bit more specific?"

Dr. Neruda:

"In order to expand and ultimately support diverse life forms, the universe required an incalculably complex system of interrelated principles and rules. The more complex this system is, the more dynamic are its poles of interaction. Think of it like an uncut diamond. When you shine a focused beam of light on it in a dark room, there's only a muted glow, but if you facet the diamond, making it more complex, it spreads light in a radiant pattern upon all the walls of the room.

"Complexity works in a similar manner with consciousness, it facets human experience and spreads the light of consciousness upon all the walls of experience, including ignorance, stupidity, wickedness, beauty, goodness, and every other possible condition of human experience. The formless consciousness is not stupid in



choosing to experience something that we might deem difficult or boring. It's simply acknowledging that the reality membrane of earth requires it.

"No one can live within this reality membrane and be untouched by the dynamics of the human experience. No one's exempt from difficulties or pain. Does that prove that every one of us makes stupid decisions? No, it only proves that we live within a complex world. That and nothing more."

Sarah:

"Not to sound defensive, but you'd agree that some have easier lives than others."

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes, but it's not relevant to the intelligence of the formless consciousness."

Sarah:

"Okay, so is it related to the age of the formless consciousness?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Are you asking if the formless consciousness - as it gains experience - becomes better at selecting its motion of being?"

Sarah:

"Exactly."

Dr. Neruda:

"The formless consciousness looks upon hardship and ease, the way you might look upon the negative and positive ends of a battery. With relative indifference, I would imagine."

Sarah:

"There's no difference, is that what you're saying? No value to being an Einstein versus a Hitler? I don't believe that."

Dr. Neruda:

"The choice is not made to be evil or wicked, or to select a life path that is excruciatingly difficult for oneself and others. Nor, in the case of Einstein, did he choose to contribute to humanity's understanding in a way that permitted the creation of nuclear weapons. In the formless consciousness of these individuals - prior to their most recent incarnations - they didn't make choices to harm or help humanity. They made choices to experience aspects of this reality membrane that would contribute to their own understanding."

Sarah:

"So, you're saying that the soul chooses its motion of being according to its selfish desires? It doesn't think about the greater good at all?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It doesn't need to think about the greater good. That's what the unification force does."

Sarah:

"It's an interesting philosophy. We can be as selfish as we desire, and leave it up to God to make our selfish, clumsy actions into something that contributes to the common good of humanity. Is that what you're really saying?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No. I'm saying that God, working through its unification force, orchestrates the intermingling of life in order to bring about transformation in the universe. God is like the cosmological alchemist who transforms the selfish interests of the one into the transformative conditions for the many."

Sarah:

"Then you're saying that God solves all of our human frailties. We can do anything and it doesn't really matter because he'll fix it. If this philosophy were taught in our world, we'd be in sorry shape."

Dr. Neruda:

"While it may not be taught in a formal way, humankind is unconsciously aware that this is the way it works."

Sarah:

"On this point, I have to disagree with you. Selfish interests, evil intent, stupidity... these are not the traits of a responsible society, and I don't know of anyone who believes that we should act in this way and then let God perform damage control or mop up after our poor judgments."

Dr. Neruda:

"You misunderstand. Perhaps I'm not explaining this very well. Let me try again.

"First, the selfish interests of the formless consciousness are to facet its consciousness in such a way that it can receive and radiate the unification force. In so doing, it can become consciously connected to this force and knowingly become a conduit for it into a broad range of reality membranes. Now, the formless consciousness selects reality membranes to enable the faceting of its consciousness. None of this is done with an attitude of universal contribution or noble purpose. However, this isn't a result of selfish behavior as you think of it. It's a result of its nature... the way it was designed.

"I'm not saying that God cleans up after our messy mistakes. I'm saying our messy mistakes are not messy mistakes. Again, we live in a complex system of interdependent reality membranes. You can think of these membranes like scales on a snake, and the snake represents the collective human consciousness. Each scale protects the human soul and, collectively, propels it through its environment - in this case, the multiverse. The messy mistakes that we individually and collectively make are as responsible for the existence of the multiverse as are the noble contributions."

Sarah:

"Let me see if I got this right. You're saying that our mistakes - both as individuals and a species - make it possible for us to exist, so, therefore, they're not mistakes?"

Dr. Neruda:

"As I said earlier, complex systems require a near-infinite range of dynamics in order to sustain the system. Our reality membrane is form-fitted to the complexity of our universe, which in turn created the environment of earth and its various life forms. Yes, our mistakes, our individuality, is a central part of our ability as a species to sustain itself in the face of a complex, interconnected structure of the quantum world and the cosmos.

"The selfish motivations harvest the experience that facets our consciousness, which in turn are harvested by the unification force and used to transform reality membranes into passages through which a species can return to the God state. The mistakes weigh equally in this process, as do the unselfish contributions. Nothing is wasted."

Sarah:

"If this is all true, why even worry about the Animus or anything else? Just let God take care of everything."

Dr. Neruda:

"Because the Animus are not connected to the unification force."

Sarah:

"Why? I thought you said everything was."

Dr. Neruda:

"The formless consciousness doesn't select soul carriers that don't utilize DNA as its formative structure. It knows that these structures are not able to connect to the unification force, and therefore, cannot be trusted."

Sarah:

"And they can't be trusted because?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Because the unification force is what brings coherence to incoherence, and purpose to chaos. Without it, physical structures tend to ebb and flow in stasis, which is to say, they don't transform."

Sarah:

"How did this happen?"

Dr. Neruda:

"What?"

Sarah:

"That the Animus became an independent race unconnected to God?"

Dr. Neruda:

"You've heard the story of the fallen angels?"

Sarah:

"You're talking about the Lucifer rebellion?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes."

Dr. Neruda: [sic]

"This story is misrepresented in Biblical texts, owing to the fact that the authors of these texts didn't have a

sufficient understanding in which to define cosmology or physics.

"The Central Race designed the higher life forms, and this includes a wide range of beings that operate within the quantum world and the reality membranes therein. Among these beings are what we commonly refer to as the angels, who are intermediaries between the soul carriers of humanoids, and the Central Race.

"There were some within the angelic realm that believed the Central Race was too controlling of the soul carrier structure. They felt that a structure should be created that would enable angels to incarnate within the reality membrane of earth and other life-bearing planets. They insisted that this would improve these planets and the physical structure of the universe at large. However, the Central Race refused this proposal and a renegade group left to design a soul carrier, independent of the Central Race."

Sarah:

"Hold on a moment. You're saying that Lucifer led this rebellion to create a soul carrier that could house the spirit of an angel, and the Animus is the result?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It's more complicated than that. Lucifer, or what we have come to call Lucifer, was a very devoted servant of the Central Race. He was one of the forerunners of the angelic species; capable of powers that were diminished by the Central Race in subsequent prototypes."

Sarah:

"Are you saying that angels are created... that they can't reproduce like humans?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Correct.

"Lucifer's personality included a strong sense of independence from his creators, and an even stronger sense that his creators were flawed because of their insistence that the humanoid soul carrier would exclusively house the formless consciousness, and not the angelic form. To Lucifer, this seemed unthinkable because the angelic form was superior in its capabilities and could be of great assistance to the physical life forms on earth and other life-bearing planets.

"From Lucifer's perspective, humans and the higher order species would be unable to transform themselves because of the severe limits of their soul carriers, or physical forms. Lucifer felt certain that without the collaboration of the angels, humanoids throughout the universe would become increasingly separated from their purpose as spiritual beings, and throw the universe into disarray, which would eventually cause its destruction and life within it - including, of course, angels."

Sarah:

"Then you're suggesting that the Lucifer rebellion was simply a disagreement over this one issue?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Lucifer wanted to incarnate into this reality membrane the same way humans do. He wanted to become a



collaborator with humanity to assure its ascension. While the Central Race saw his intentions as noble, they feared that the angelic incarnations would become known as Gods to their human counterparts, and unintentionally mislead humans, rather than co-create the ladder to the God state.

"This matter underwent a tremendous debate, ultimately forming a division between the angelic realm and the Central Race. The loyalists to the Central Race argued that Lucifer and his sympathizers should be banished for their radical ideas that could potentially create a lasting division in their reality membrane, and cause them tremendous turmoil. Lucifer, in wide-ranging deliberations with the Central Race, negotiated a compromise that enabled him to take his group of sympathizers and prove the value of their plan on a single planet."

Sarah:

"Are you saying that Lucifer was allowed to experiment on a planet?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes."

Sarah:

"Okay, before we go any further, are you talking about this in the context of myth or are you essentially representing the Corteum view?"

Dr. Neruda:

"There are three ancient manuscripts in the ACIO's possession that describe this story in an allegorical form,

but the Corteum view - as you put it - is much more descriptive and definitive as a record of this cosmic event."

Sarah:

"So, Lucifer conducted this... experiment. Where and to what result?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The planet is in a galaxy known as M51 to your scientists."

Sarah:

"This is the same galaxy of the Animus?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes."

Sarah:

"So you're really saying that Lucifer and his band of sympathizers created the Animus to be soul carriers for angels?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It's more complicated than that."

Sarah:

"I certainly hope so because this story is too strange for me to believe."

Dr. Neruda:

"Be patient. We're moving into uncomfortable territory for most people. So take a deep breath and bear with me as I try to explain this.

"Lucifer created a synthetic physical structure that could accommodate the quantum requirements of an angel. It was a very effective structure, but induced a strong survival complex within the species, which eventually overpowered the angelic tendency of altruism and cooperation."

Sarah:

"Why? What happened?"

Dr. Neruda:

"When the formless consciousness enters a reality membrane through a structure like a soul carrier, it immediately feels disconnected from all other forces, but its own. It's literally thrown into separation. In humans, this is more or less controlled through the subtle realization that it remains connected through the unification force, and this is because its DNA is designed to emit this feeling of connection subconsciously.

"However, in the case of the soul carrier designed by Lucifer and his followers, this connection was severed both consciously and subconsciously because the structure was not based on DNA, which is strictly controlled by the Central Race. Consequently, it inclined this experimental species toward a very strong survival complex because it feared extinction so deeply, which is the result of feeling complete separation from the unification force. This survival complex created a species that over-compensated

its fear of extinction by developing a very powerful group mind.

"The group mind compensated for the loss of connection to the unification force, creating its physical and mental corollary. It was the equivalent of unifying the species as a whole in the physical reality membrane of their planetary system. Thus, the angels that entered this system lost their memory of their angelic natures and became more interested in operating as a single collective, than as individuals.

"They became a concern for the Central Race, and Lucifer was asked to dismantle his experiment. However, Lucifer had become attached to the specie [sic] that he had helped to create. These angelic beings had developed over a number of generations a very sophisticated set of technologies, culture, and social order. It was like an extended family in many ways to Lucifer. So, he negotiated to modify his creation so they would no longer accommodate the angelic frequency or quantum structure, but that they could become self-animated."

Sarah:

"How do you mean self-animated?"

Dr. Neruda:

"That they would become soulless androids."

Sarah:

"And so this happened and that's how we got the Animus?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes."

Sarah:

"It doesn't make any sense. Why would God, or the Central Race for that matter, allow Lucifer to create a race of androids? Didn't they know that these beings were going to become the scourge of our universe?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes, of course they knew. However, God doesn't design something as complex as the multiverse, and then control how everything operates."

Sarah:

"But you said earlier that God orchestrates what happens through the unification force."

Dr. Neruda:

"God orchestrates how the dynamics of the multiverse come together to form a unified, comprehensible data stream that can inform the next evolution of the multiverse. Most people would think that an all-powerful God would banish a species like the Animus, but it doesn't work this way because the dark side of predation, as in the case of the Animus, sparks resourcefulness and innovation in its intended prey."

Sarah:

"And we're the prey."

Dr. Neruda:

"Not just us, but the humanoid species as a whole."

Sarah:

"Evil begets good. That's what you're really saying, right?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Again, it's not evil against good. The Animus don't consider themselves to be evildoers when they invade a planet. To their perspective, they are simply executing their plan to become reconnected to their sense of individuality and become - as strange as it may sound - more spiritual."

Sarah:

"But when I asked you earlier if you knew what their intentions were with earth, you said you didn't know."

Dr. Neruda:

"I don't. However, I do know something about their intentions to reengineer their soul carriers to be more DNA compliant. They want to introduce DNA to their soul carriers in order to transform their specie [sic]. This is essentially what any race would do under their exact set of circumstances. In fact, you could even call it noble."

Sarah:

"Noble? I don't see anything noble in trying to commandeer our planet and subject our citizens to genetic experiments and tyranny."

Dr. Neruda:

"To us, no. But from a completely objective viewpoint, one can appreciate that the Animus are just trying to transform their species for the better. They don't have any other choice because without DNA, they're simply unable to connect to the unification force."

Sarah:

"Why can't they contact the Central Race and ask for help?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The Central Race is well aware of the Animus, and consider them their most potent enemy. Perhaps they consider them unsalvageable. Or perhaps the Central Race invites the drama of having an ancient enemy that forces them to protect their most valuable assets. I don't pretend to know. But for whatever the reason, the Central Race is not able or willing to assist the Animus in becoming reconnected to the unification force."

Sarah:

"So whatever happened to Lucifer and his plan?"

Dr. Neruda:

"According to the Corteum, he's alive and well and completely reintegrated into his species as a member of high standing."

Sarah:

"Just so I'm clear, we are talking about Satan aren't we?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Theologians are left with a tattered tapestry of myth and legend, and from this, they've injected their own interpretations down through time. What we're left with is little more than the fiction of a thousand voices, but it somehow manages to become known as fact.

"Satan, as we think of him, never existed. There is no counter measure to God. God encompasses all dynamics. It has no polarity of itself that is beyond its reach, or personalized outside of itself. The story of Lucifer - at a very high level - was just described to you. I assume you can see some similarity to the version of the Lucifer Rebellion depicted in the Bible, but the correlation, I'm sure you'd admit, is sparse at best."

Sarah:

"But if there's no source of evil, why does evil exist in such abundance? And before you answer, I know you'll disagree with my assumption that evil exists, but how can you reconcile terrorism or any other predator force of humankind as anything but evil, even if Satan never existed as you claim?"

Dr. Neruda:

"If you watch movies like Star Wars or Star Trek they imply that extraterrestrials populate every planetary system in the galaxy and beyond. However, it just isn't true. Our planet is an extremely rare combination of animals and organisms. The universe that comprises our physical reality membrane is in fact hostile to life - at an extreme level. And yet life somehow managed to emerge on our planet in the black depths of our oceans -"



Sarah:

"What does this have to do with my question?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Be patient, I'll get to it. I promise."

Sarah:

"Okay."

Dr. Neruda:

"The habitable zones within our universe would be analogous to extracting a drop of water from the Pacific Ocean every cubic mile, and defining it as the only part of the ocean that contained all of the potential conditions to bear microbial life. Then, extracting a single molecule from each of these drops of water, and defining it as the only part of the drop that could sustain multi-cellular life. And from each of these molecules, extracting a single quantum particle and defining it as the only part of the molecule that could sustain complex, sentient life forms like humans.

"The genetic library that thrives upon earth is a form of currency that has no price tag. All I can say is that its value far exceeds anything that human thought could imagine. And with this incredible value, our planet attracts interest from a wide-range of extraterrestrial races, and this is as true today as it was a thousand years ago or a hundred thousand years ago.

"Objects of inestimable value and rarity, such as earth, attract beings from outside our planetary system that desire to control them, which makes earth an extraordinary object

of attraction. It's precisely this attraction that has brought the concepts of evil to our psyche."

Sarah:

"I followed you right up to the last sentence and then lost you. How did this attraction bring evil to our consciousness?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Aggressive ETs, seeking to quite literally own earth, visited our planet approximately eleven thousand years ago. These ETs brought their genetics to our native DNA, and in so doing, modified our human DNA adding a more aggressive, domineering drive to our personalities. This predisposition divided the human species into the conquerors and the conquered."

Sarah:

"I don't get it. You're saying that ETs impregnated thousands of our native population with an aggressive gene that brought evil into our consciousness?"

Dr. Neruda:

"These ETs were not so different in physical form than the native humans, and they were treated like Gods because of their superior technologies and capabilities. It was considered a great honor to have intercourse with these beings, but only a few were selected."

Sarah:

"So how did their DNA become so influential that it literally brought evil into our lives?"

Dr. Neruda:

"One of the yet-to-be-discovered properties of DNA is that it can communicate traits - particularly aggressive traits - without physical interaction."

Sarah:

"Explain, please."

Dr. Neruda:

"There are carrier circuits within the DNA that transmit traits and even forms of intelligence through a reality membrane that is sub-quantum. It's a tributary ingredient of the unification force that propagates new traits and understandings in the few to the many. It's what enables the transmission of a new insight or potent trait across a spectrum of a species that resonates with the insight or trait, and it does it without physical interaction."

Sarah:

"You're saying that a single person could have an idea or trait that is deposited within their DNA, and then their DNA transmits this trait like a broadcast tower and everyone on the planet that's like them is effected?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Let me clarify some things you said.

"First, it's not one person. It requires a critical mass of several hundred for a personality trait to transmit, and perhaps only ten or twenty to transmit a new concept or insight. In any case, one person is not sufficient. This is not an exact science yet, even to the ACIO.

"Secondly, it's not transmitted like a broadcast tower. It's transmitted selectively to resonant DNA, and the effect it has isn't dependent on whether the recipient is like, or even similar to, the donor. It's dependent on the receptivity of their DNA. Some people open their DNA up to new innovations, others don't. This is the critical factor in whether the new trait or idea is successfully transmitted."

Sarah:

"Okay, ETs with their aggressive personalities infected humans, and this brought evil tendencies to our race. Why would the Central Race allow this to happen?"

Dr. Neruda:

"We don't know."

Sarah:

"But you said earlier that they would protect our planet with their best technology. Why didn't they protect it thousands of years ago?"

Dr. Neruda:

"This is a mystery. We don't know."

Sarah:

"I assume this must be another reason that Fifteen doesn't want to rely on the WingMakers for our protection."

Dr. Neruda:

"He doesn't talk about it, but I'd agree with you."

Sarah:

"I'd like to return to the topic of God... and just for the record, I'm well aware that I'm off the subject of the WingMakers, but I can't resist talking about these things. Okay?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It's fine with me. I'll discuss any topic you choose."

Sarah:

"You explained earlier that to you, God is a force, but is it the force?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Do you mean is God plural or singular?"

Sarah:

"Yes."

Dr. Neruda:

"God is both."

Sarah:

"Both?"

Dr. Neruda:

"God is found everywhere because it's the unification force, but paradoxically, being the unification force it is also unique or singular. Physicists will explain to you that there're four primary forces at play in the universe: strong nuclear, weak nuclear, gravity, and electromagnetic. These

forces are actually facets of a singular force, more primal and absolutely causative.

"Einstein worked nearly thirty years trying to prove this with his unification theory, but never found his answers. No one supposedly has. I can only report that the Labyrinth Group - using its LERM technology - has discovered this force. And this force possesses an unmistakable consciousness. That is, it is neither chaos nor order. It is both, and flows between the two worlds of chaos and order like a sine wave flows between positive and negative amplitude."

Sarah:

"And can our physicists prove or disprove this?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No, our physicists cannot prove or disprove what I say. They're too shackled in specialized theories that are in crisis."

Sarah:

"What kind of theories?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Like quantum mechanics, to name one example.

"Nearly all physicists, regardless of their specialty, would stand before you in all sincerity, and advise you that quantum mechanics is the correct and complete theory underlying our understanding of the universe. But it doesn't honor the consciousness of a particle, and it has no

way of detecting the infinitesimal magnetic fields within which these particles reside."

Sarah:

"Why?"

Dr. Neruda:

"This is not a lay person's topic, Sarah. I don't know how to explain this in words you'll understand. It has to do with the fact that our physicists in academia lack sophisticated force-amplification technology that can detect the extraordinarily tiny magnetic fields that subatomic particles nest within, which in turn, creates an interconnected web of thought circuits. These thought circuits - taken collectively - represent the exterior structure of the unification force, and they permeate the multiverse. The magnetic fields represent the interior of the unification force, and they permeate the form's formless consciousness."

Sarah:

"Okay, I get your point about it not being a lay person's topic. You've completely lost me in the abstract nature of this discussion. I thought we were talking about God, and now I'm not sure what we're talking about."

Dr. Neruda:

"Keep focused on the primal force. God has decelerated itself to display its physical embodiment in the four known forces I spoke of earlier."

Sarah:

"So, this is truly how the universe works, and I should just accept it?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No, no, no. I don't want to leave you with the impression that what I've said is the way the multiverse works. If there's one truth I can state unequivocally, it's that my understanding of the multiverse, while constrained with the tools of particle physics, cosmology, and mathematics, is partial at best, and completely inaccurate at worst."

Sarah:

"Well, that leaves us essentially no where, doesn't it? If what you've said tonight is just partial understanding or complete misjudgment, where does that leave our brightest scientists and theologians? You have all the advantages of advanced technology and alien cosmology, and still you can't explain the universe with any confidence. Even with your proof of God, you claim to know essentially nothing that's absolutely true. How can that be?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No one who's invested in astronomy, cosmology, or physics likes to think that their discipline is misguided by false or incomplete assumptions. But they are. And there's a good reason."

Sarah:

"Which is?"

Dr. Neruda:



"Imagine that the observable universe is the middle rung on a ladder of unknown length. Each of the rungs above and below our observable universe represents an order of magnitude beyond our senses. For example, let's say that the rung above the one that represents our observable universe is the outer perimeter of our Milk [sic] Way galaxy. Using a telescope we can see the next rung above us, but the rest of the ladder is lost in a thick haze.

"Looking downward - at a microscopic level with an electron microscope - we can add another rung below our observable universe, and with a particle accelerator, we can even theorize what the next rung below that might be, but the rest of the ladder trails downward into a thick haze no different than when we try to look up.

"With all of our technology and theory, we still have no idea how tall the ladder is or even whether the ladder is straight or begins to curve like a double-helix. We don't know if perhaps the top end of the ladder curves to such a degree that it actually connects with the bottom end of the ladder. And we don't even know whether there might be additional ladders."

Sarah:

"Okay, I think I know where you're going with this, but then why does it always seem that science knows more than they really do?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The largest population of the planet - perhaps ninety-nine percent - has no experience beyond the middle rung of the ladder. And those that are privileged to observe the

next rung above or below by the use of technology, falsely assume, or perhaps hope, that the ladder retains the same form and holds to the same principles.

"The ACIO has observed another rung of this ladder - beyond the technology of academia. Nothing more. However, in doing so, we've only become humbled by the depth and breadth of our ignorance. We've learned that the ladder does change. It begins to modify its form and we theorize that its shape is no longer predictable or even stable."

Sarah:

"So doesn't that mean that our physics is wrong?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I like the way an obscure writer, by the name of Gustave Naquet, put it: 'Whenever knowledge takes a step forward, God recedes a step backwards.'"

"Each rung of the ladder may require a different physics or set of laws and instruments. Is the Neanderthal wrong in the face of the modern human? He was merely a precursor or early prototype. And this is the same as physics or cosmology. It must be understood as a valid prototype that has its purpose in time, but will ultimately be displaced by a new model that encompasses more rungs of the ladder."

Sarah:

"It's still hard to imagine how all this technological advantage that the ACIO wields could only make clear how little we know about our universe. It doesn't leave much hope for us."

Dr. Neruda:

"How do you mean that?"

Sarah:

"Well, it seems to me that if we don't know what we don't know, we're doomed to make assumptions about things that are taken as fact, when in reality, it's just opinion. In this regard, science is no better than religion. Right?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The interesting thing about science is that origins reveal how things work. If you can follow particles to their origins, you can understand how inner space works. If you can follow the cosmic particles - galaxies, quasars, and black holes - to their origins, you can understand how outer space works. When you put the two halves together with in-between space, or the observable universe, you can understand how the whole multiverse works.

"The problem is that no one has the lens or technology to observe the origins. And this is where theory takes over. The difference between science and religion is that science applies theory while religion applies faith. Both theory and faith, however, fall short of revealing origins. So in this regard, they're similar."

Sarah:

"But if what you're saying is true, then we live in a world we don't really understand."

Dr. Neruda:

"Exactly."

Sarah:

"If we don't understand our world, and science and religion are inadequate, where do we turn? I mean, how are we supposed to cope with our ignorance?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The danger of ignorance is only in believing you're not ignorant. If you know that you lack insight into the inner dimensions of how things work, you know that you have blind spots. You can keep a wary eye open for any advantage that enables a deeper insight or more profound sense of meaning. You have to learn to live with incompleteness and use it as a motivating force rather than a point of desperation or indifference.

"As far as where do we turn? That's a hard question to answer. It's the reason that all the dramas have become packaged and sold via the media. The media is where most people turn. They flick on their televisions, radios, computers, newspapers, magazines, and even books, and these deliver the packets of information bundled together by the media. The media know very well that people are ignorant - enough so that they lack the ability to discern the incompleteness of the information packets they serve to their customers. Information is incomplete, and this drowns our population in ignorance, which enables manipulation."

Sarah:

"By whom?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Sarah, no one entity is the master manipulator, if that's what you're asking. It's more like everyone in the media manipulates information and disclosure. It's all part of the drama that causes people to turn to the media for their answers, and citizens are responsible for this state of affairs because they don't demand that their educational centers secure clear, full disclosures of information and distribute it to the public domain."

Sarah:

"Are you saying that our schools and universities should be the stewards of this information, and not the media?"

Dr. Neruda:

"In the ideal world, yes. This is how the Corteum designed their information structures. The educational centers dominate the distribution of information through a collective and well-reasoned system of journalism. The journalists are specialists across the disciplines of theology, the arts and sciences, government, business, and technology. These journalists document the best practices of each and every discipline and share this information through full disclosure. Nothing is left out. The research is meticulous and completely untouched by the political spectrum of special interests."

Sarah:

"Okay, being a journalist myself, we've finally hit on a topic I know something about. When I was a beat reporter, I never felt the hand of politics influencing how or what I reported. I know at the national level - particularly

reporting in D.C. - that might not be entirely the case, but the stories we've been talking about the past few nights weren't even on my radar screen. That's the real problem. These stories are completely secreted away. And given that our politicians don't even know about the existence of the ACIO and all of the other things affiliated with it, how can you blame the politicians, or the media for that matter?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I didn't intend to blame anyone, really. The system is imperfect. Anyone involved in the system knows that it's larger than life and can't be changed by one person or even one group of people. The media know their limits, and they know their markets. People want to know the truth about the things that affect them in their pocket book. The regions of cosmology, ETs, the ACIO, and things that go bump in the night are considered light reading to the masses - reserved for entertainment - not serious news."

Sarah:

"This is anything but light news, and you know it. Why do you sound so cynical?"

Dr. Neruda:

"If I'm cynical about the media, it's not for you to take personally. I'm of a mind that the media will not change significantly until the education system changes significantly and produces students that demand more than news dramas, sports, and weather."

Sarah:

"So our schools should not only produce students with an appetite for cosmology, but they should also produce the news? Pretty tall orders for schools don't you think?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Perhaps, but it's what's needed before the ACIO or any related organization would share its knowledge with the masses."

Sarah:

"And why's that?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Academia would absolutely be turned on its head if the ACIO stepped forward and provided its research findings, technologies, and evidence of ET interactions. It would be attacked. And it would be a vicious attack. At least that was Fifteen's intractable conclusion. The ACIO, therefore, had no other way to bring its findings to the public than through the private sector and the alliances it had with the NSA's Special Projects Laboratory."

Sarah:

"Give me an example of something - a technology or discovery - that was first uncovered by the ACIO and then exported to the private sector."

Dr. Neruda:

"The transistor would be a good example -"

Sarah:

"You're telling me that the ACIO invented the transistor?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No, Bell Labs invented the transistor, but the ACIO worked with Bell Labs, or more specifically, Mervin Kelly who ran its operations in the mid-1950s. Mr. Kelly had attached a rather brilliant physicist to this project by the name of Bill Shockley who became aware of the outermost edges of the ACIO."

Sarah:

"How'd that happen?"

Dr. Neruda:

"A little known fact: Mr. Shockley, working with a friend of his, invented the world's first nuclear reactor. The defense department heard about it through Mr. Kelly, and wanted it badly. This was before the Manhattan Project got underway. Mr. Kelly wanted a patent for the discovery, but the government threw up every conceivable roadblock. They kept the whole discovery under complete confidentiality and negotiated to have one of our scientist work with Mr. Shockley in secret."

Sarah:

"When was this?"

Dr. Neruda:

"This was happening in 1944 and 1945."

Sarah:



"Why did our government squabble about the patents?"

Dr. Neruda:

"They knew Mr. Shockley could play a role in the war, and they wanted to use this as leverage to secure his commitment to help. He was a difficult man to work with, so I was told. He never stepped forward and volunteered to do anything unless he knew it would somehow benefit him. So, our government held the patents up until he would enlist."

Sarah:

"And did he?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes."

Sarah:

"And how did it benefit him?"

Dr. Neruda:

"There was, within our government, a newly formed intelligence agency - it was the forerunner of the NSA. It was known as the General Services Special Projects Laboratory, and to this day, very little is known about it. The SPL was later folded into the NSA in 1953 as an unacknowledged department, and ultimately the ACIO was folded into the SPL as an unacknowledged research laboratory. So, the ACIO was two levels deep or what is called, black root."

Sarah:

"What was the motivation for all the security? The war?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It may surprise you, but the war wasn't of great concern to the forces that the ACIO were dealing with. The concern was ETs and who would be able to first utilize their technology in military applications. In the early 1940s, UFO sightings were quite common - even more so than today. And our government was convinced that these sightings were real and that they were indeed off-planetary forces. They wanted two things: Steal the technology from downed spacecraft, or establish an alliance. They weren't too particular about which way it happened."

Sarah:

"But how did all of this pertain to Shockley?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I got off track a bit. Mr. Shockley was introduced to the SPL and was made privy to many of the secret initiatives of the SPL. If not for his personality traits, he would've been recruited to join the SPL, he was that brilliant. Anyway, he was given access to some of the research in field effect transistors that was underway within the SPL. This was before the Bell Labs' discovery of the joint transistor, which was made by colleagues of Mr. Shockley.

"Mr. Shockley was allowed to utilize some of the research within the SPL to create his own version of the field effect transistor and become widely known as its inventor. This was done in exchange for his cooperation in

helping Army and Navy strategic operations during the war. He was aware of the SPL and knew part of their agenda, and I was told that he wanted to join the SPL after the war because of its superior laboratories, but again, his personality traits prevented his admission."

Sarah:

"So, Bell Labs receives the patent for the transistor in exchange for Shockley's assistance with the war. What exactly did he do that was so important?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I don't know for certain, but in general, his role was helping to optimize weapons deployment."

Sarah:

"What was the role of the NSA during all of this?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The NSA wasn't in existence until November 1952. During this time, the SPL and ACIO were the two most advanced, secretive labs in existence. And they each had only one private sector lab they worked with: Bell Labs. And this is because Mr. Kelly was a friend with the executive director of the SPL."

Sarah:

"So what was the relationship between the SPL and ACIO?"

Dr. Neruda:

"You mean in the 1940s?"

Sarah:

"First, how far back does it go?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The SPL was formed in 1938. There was a strong development - particularly throughout Europe - in fission energy. The SPL was initially conceived to examine fission as an alternative energy source as well as its possible military applications."

Sarah:

"Why was it kept so secret?"

Dr. Neruda:

"In the late 1930s there was significant political unrest in Europe, and the U.S. wasn't sure whom it could trust. It had a notion that fission was the answer to superior technical warfare, and didn't want to share it unwittingly. It was also alarmed at some of the sudden advances that were taking place in the European physics community, and felt it needed to concentrate some of its best resources to equip a world-class laboratory, and staff it with some of the best minds of the planet."

Sarah:

"How could the best minds of the planet suddenly be plucked up by the U.S. government and not be noticed by the scientific community? I mean, how do you keep this a secret?"

Dr. Neruda:

"They didn't take established leaders in the field of physics. They sought out the young, budding geniuses that were still relatively unknown, but under the right guidance and with the best available technology, could produce something extraordinary."

Sarah:

"Like the transistor?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Like the transistor."

Sarah:

"So if the SPL was established in 1938, when did the ACIO come into existence?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It was established in 1940 shortly after the SPL was organized."

Sarah:

"Why?"

Dr. Neruda:

"In part it was because management within the SPL feared discovery by Congress, so they decided to construct Black Root, which was the codename of the ACIO, in order to build a laboratory that was untouchable by political forces or the media. Secondarily, they didn't want the research agenda of the SPL competing with ET issues. When all of this first occurred, ETs and UFOs were still a

subject of great debate within the SPL. Most of the SPL leaders didn't believe in them. There was no hard evidence.

"But when the first spacecraft was found intact, it changed the minds of everyone within the SPL and it was decided that a separate research agenda needed to be developed, and that it was the more urgent and secretive of the two labs. So, Black Root, or the ACIO as it became known later, was established behind the SPL at a deeper level of secrecy. It was unacknowledged two levels deep."

Sarah:

"Were you referring to the Roswell incident just then... about the recovered spacecraft?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No. This was an abandoned spacecraft found in waters off the coast of Florida in 1940."

Sarah:

"It was just abandoned? Who found it?"

Dr. Neruda:

"As the story goes, a recreational diver found it in waters about sixty feet deep. It was perfectly preserved."

Sarah:

"Whatever happened to the diver?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It was an anonymous tip given to the Navy. The person who discovered it was never found. However, we later learned that the discovery was a staged event."

Sarah:

"A staged event?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Meaning that the discovery was orchestrated by the Corteum."

Sarah:

"So this was a Corteum spacecraft left behind to be discovered by the Navy?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It's how they chose to make first contact."

Sarah:

"By leaving behind one of their spacecraft in the ocean, and then calling our Navy and telling them where to find it? Shit this is strange!"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes, but it took three calls to get someone to investigate according to the log entries."

Sarah:

"Okay, so this is how the ACIO came about. When did you get involved?"

Dr. Neruda:

"In 1956. My father discovered a damaged spacecraft in the jungles of Bolivia during a hunting trip. It was a triangular vessel about seventy meters from end-to-end, nearly equilateral. It included twenty-six crew. All dead."

Sarah:

"Corteum?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No, this craft was later confirmed as a Zeta ship. It was on a scouting mission similar to my father - hunting for animals. Unfortunately, it malfunctioned in flight during an electrical storm. My father was an electronics dealer, mostly for the Bolivian military.

Sarah:

"I know you told me this story before, but please repeat yourself for the sake of the record."

Dr. Neruda:

"My father recovered a specific technology from the ship, and then contacted a military official within the Bolivian government that was a trusted friend. Initially, my father was interested in selling the craft to the Bolivian military, but it quickly became a concern of the U.S. military - specifically the SPL. A director from the SPL met with my father, ascertained the ship's location, and performed a complete salvage operation in the span of three days.

"This was done in exchange for U.S. citizenship and a role within the SPL for my father."



Sarah:

"Why did your father negotiate for this instead of money?"

Dr. Neruda:

"He knew it was the only way to preserve his and my life. He retained control of a navigational technology that was aboard the ship, and turned everything else over to the SPL."

Sarah:

"And what about the Bolivian government?"

Dr. Neruda:

"They were handsomely paid."

Sarah:

"That's it?"

Dr. Neruda:

"In the seven years between 1952 and 1959, six additional spacecraft were found under similar circumstances as in the case of my father. Only one of these was found in U.S. territory. The other five were willingly handed over to our military in exchange for money."

Sarah:

"I take it these countries didn't want to deal with the political implications?"

Dr. Neruda:

"That, but they also wanted the money and a friendly alignment with the U.S. military. They saw future benefits in the form of shared technologies, military protection, loans, and many other intangible benefits. In short, it was smart politics. Besides, no other country, outside of the Soviet Union, had any laboratories like the ACIO. What would they do with these spacecrafts?"

Sarah:

"Your father and you end up in the United States... what qualified him for admission into the SPL and what did he do there?"

Dr. Neruda:

"My father was not simply a salesman to the Bolivian government, he was an electronics expert with the equivalent of an advanced electrical engineering degree. He had several patents to his credit, but was considered something of a dreamer and a lost soul I suppose."

Sarah:

"Is he still alive?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No."

Sarah:

"I'm sorry. What about the rest of your family? Was it just you and your father that came to America?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I was an only child. My mother died shortly after I was born. I was only four years old when we came to the States. I really don't have strong memories of my home in Sorata."

Sarah:

"Where's Sorata?"

Dr. Neruda:

"North of La Paz, on the east end of Lake Titicaca."

Sarah:

"Maybe I've watched too many episodes of the x-Files, but it seems a little hard to believe that your father could negotiate a job and U.S. citizenship with the SPL. Can you explain how he did that?"

Dr. Neruda:

"He asked. It wasn't such a hard thing. Here's a man that speaks perfect English, knows electronics, and has some political clout. More importantly, he led the SPL to a very important discovery, worth billions of dollars in research and development. And, my father was smart enough to photograph the craft and secure electronic components that pertained to navigation. He had these carefully secured with instructions for their distribution should anything befall him or me."

Sarah:

"Don't take this the wrong way, but didn't you say that only young geniuses were hired into the ACIO? I assume your father didn't qualify."

Dr. Neruda:

"No, he wasn't a genius. But he was smart enough to add value to some of the reverse-engineering experiments that were ongoing within the ACIO - especially those that pertained to semiconductors."

Sarah:

"And all of this was happening in the mid-fifties?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes."

Sarah:

"Was Fifteen there at the time?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No. He joined the ACIO in the spring of 1958."

Sarah:

"So he knew your father?"

Dr. Neruda:

"My father, believe it or not, became a high-level director of the ACIO toward the latter part of his tenure, thanks largely to Fifteen, who took an immediate liking to my father. Remember Fifteen is Spanish. My father knew Fifteen as well as anyone, and had the utmost respect for him."

Sarah:

"Was your father part of the Labyrinth Group?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes."

Sarah:

"When did you find out about the Labyrinth Group and its mission?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Fifteen introduced me to it in a meeting I'll never forget."

Sarah:

"What time was this?"

Dr. Neruda:

"September 18, 1989."

Sarah:

"What happened?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Fifteen showed me a suite of technologies that had been part of a TTP (Technology Transfer Program) with the Corteum. He explained it activated parts of the brain that fused the unconscious data stream with the conscious. It enabled a much more potent flow of data to be captured by the conscious mind."

Sarah:

"Can you explain how it works?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I'll do my best, but it's a technical explanation. I don't know any other way to do it."

Sarah:

"Try. I'll signal when I'm lost."

Dr. Neruda:

"There's a part of the brain known as thalamocortical system. The Corteum technology activated this specific section of the brain, inducing a small functional cluster within this system to expand the higher-order consciousness. These are the neural coordinates of consciousness, pertaining to higher-order reasoning, which is very useful to scientific inquiry, mathematics, and general problem solving.

"Yes?"

Sarah:

"I'm not totally lost. But what's the role of this technology to the Labyrinth Group?"

Dr. Neruda:

"When Fifteen first became acquainted with the Corteum TTP he was the first to use this technology on his own brain -"

Sarah:

"Yes, I remember now. He got the vision of BST shortly afterwards. Right?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Correct."

Sarah:

"And this was why he established the Labyrinth Group, to pursue the development of BST. Right?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes."

Sarah:

"So, everyone who was hand-picked by Fifteen got to use this Corteum technology and everyone got smarter as a result. And no one outside the Labyrinth Group suspected that the Labyrinth Group existed?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No one to my knowledge."

Sarah:

"Okay, back to your story with Fifteen. What happened?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Everyone who knew anything about Fifteen knew he was intensely interested in time travel, but I had no idea as to the degree of his intensity until that day. He explained the physics behind his BST plan and how the Corteum played a vital role in its development. He wanted to reassign me to a new project that was related to BST development, and when he explained the nature of the project, I shook my head in disbelief that he felt I could do the job."

Sarah:

"What was it?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It was a project that involved designing and developing an advanced neuronal selection technology for the human brain; a subject that I knew very little about. I raised this objection, but Fifteen explained that no one else did either, so it was just as well that I undertook the research. And then he casually explained the Corteum technology for brain enhancement. This was when he told me how all personnel with a security clearance of twelve were invited to undergo the process."

Sarah:

"I assume everyone accepted the invitation."

Dr. Neruda:

"It's a safe assumption, although there are some drawbacks to the technology."

Sarah:

"Like?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The information capacity of the conscious mind is very limited. When you intensify the connection between the conscious and unconscious, the conscious mind rejects the data stream's breadth of information and tends to become observational of the alternative states of consciousness. In other words, the brain enhancement process triggers a



rapid and fluid shifting between states of consciousness, not unlike a slide show in fast motion with each slide representing a different state of consciousness."

Sarah:

"I think I follow you, but isn't it worth it if you can control this side-effect?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I thought so, as did everyone else. There were some that were more effected by this than others, and typically it only lasted for a few weeks until the higher mind began to integrate this into its dynamic core."

Sarah:

"Okay, enough about the brain, I'd like to return to the topic of the Labyrinth Group. You mentioned in the first interview that this is the most secret of all the organizations on the planet, even though it's one of the most influential. How does it operate in secrecy and yet exert its influence?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The Labyrinth Group is a subset of the ACIO that's absolutely secret. Its main purpose was to create a staging organization for the pure-state technologies that were part of the TTPs that Fifteen negotiated with the Zetas and Corteum. Fifteen didn't want these technologies within the ACIO where they were within striking distance of the SPL and potentially the NSA. He wanted to be able to review, analyze, and synthesize these new technologies before he figured out how to dilute them into less powerful

technologies that could be exported to the SPL or the private syndicates we worked with.

"We used the best security technologies in existence. By that, I mean that we could secure our technologies from any hostile force. This enabled the Labyrinth Group personnel to focus on applications of these pure state technologies for the advancement of our BST agenda.

"Our influence is not understood by anyone because we've managed to release these diluted technologies into behind-the-scenes technologies that are used by our military, the NSA, DARPA, and private syndicates of our own choosing."

Sarah:

"I thought you said you even work with private industry?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The Labyrinth Group doesn't work directly with the private sector. But some of our technologies filter into the private sector."

Sarah:

"Like the transistor?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No, actually the field effect transistor was more the development of the SPL."

Sarah:

"Then give me an example of something more recent that involved the Labyrinth Group and the private sector. Something I might be aware of."

Dr. Neruda:

"I can't think of anything that would be known to you at this time. Our technologies don't appear on the cover of Newsweek or Time."

Sarah:

"I just want to get some information that I can validate later. The transistor story, while interesting, doesn't give me anything I can follow-up on. I doubt Shockley's still alive. Is he?"

Dr. Neruda:

"First of all, if he were alive, he'd never divulge the influence of the SPL in his research. Secondly, he died about eight years ago."

Sarah:

"So what can you share with me that corroborates - even to a tiny degree - that the Labyrinth Group might exist?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Nothing. There's nothing you could do to trace things back to the Labyrinth Group. I can't stress it enough. Our ways of filtering technologies into the private sector are extremely subtle."

Sarah:

"Okay, then. Just give me an example."

Dr. Neruda:

"The Labyrinth Group developed a computer system, which we call ZEMI. Part of the unique characteristics of ZEMI is that its information structure is based on a new form of mathematics for information storage, recombinant encryption, and data compression. It was a mathematics that provided quantum improvements in each of these areas. And we shared it with scientists involved in the design of the MiG-29."

Sarah:

"Russia? Are you saying the Labyrinth Group works with the Russian government?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No, we never worked with governments directly. In this case, we worked with the Phazotron Research and Production Company in Moscow. We supplied them with an assortment of algorithms, which they in turn adapted for use within their information and fire control radar systems aboard the MiG-29. These same algorithms were discovered by American interests and are now being adapted for use in broadband delivery systems for the global market."

Sarah:

"Who's the American interest? Can you give me names?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It's not a well-known company, but they go under the name of Omnigon, based in San Diego."

Sarah:

"And Omnigon has this technology, which was originally developed by the Labyrinth Group for computer storage, and now they're using it to build broadband delivery systems? In layperson's terms, can you tell me what these networks will do?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Assuming they use this technology appropriately, it'll enable Omnigon to embed a significant amount of functionality in the switches of the ATM network and not rely on server-side solutions, which will increase the speed and custom functionality of a network."

Sarah:

"By my definition, that wasn't in layperson terms. But it doesn't matter.

"Did the Labyrinth Group create this technology or reverse-engineer it from ET sources?"

Dr. Neruda:

"A little of both, actually. They were created within the Labyrinth Group, but some of the initial thinking came from the Zetas, which was reverse-engineered from one of their spacecraft."

Sarah:

"How did the organization in Russia get this technology from the Labyrinth Group?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Fifteen knew one of the senior scientists at Phazotron and presented him with the idea. It was a friendly gesture, which he believed would later be useful in recruiting this scientist. This method of sharing creates loyalty and it can be done in such a skillful way that the recipient of the idea can believe it was their idea and not simply given to them."

Sarah:

"But you must track these technologies or how else would you know it ended up in Omnigon's hands?"

Dr. Neruda:

"We have operatives from the intelligence community who feed us information. They're essentially moles that live within the major government research labs and the military industrial complex. In this case, one of our operatives at General Dynamics brought this to our attention. We even use our Remote Viewing technology to track some of our more advanced technologies that we've placed within major syndicates."

Sarah:

"Maybe we should leave off there. I know you'd prefer to keep these sessions brief, although I'm very tempted to plunge into this topic of syndicates."

"Is there anything you'd like to add before we call it a night?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No, not really. I think we covered a lot of information tonight about my personal philosophy, and for what it's

worth, I'd like to remind you that it was my philosophy. I'm not trying to press it on anyone. And I'm certainly not trying to preach a particular message or lifestyle. I would hope that in our next session, with your help, we could concentrate on the WingMakers and perhaps minimize my personal views on cosmology and the like."

Sarah:

"I'll try, but I can't make any promises. I had a complete list of questions to ask you tonight about the WingMakers, but somewhere along the way I thought it would be interesting to better understand how you think. I'll try my best tomorrow night to keep on the subject of the WingMakers. Do you have any suggestions?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I think the artifacts are extremely interesting, so I'd recommend that we focus on that topic."

Sarah:

"I'll do my best. Thank you."

Dr. Neruda:

"You're very welcome, Sarah. Thank you as well."

End of session three.

## FOURTH INTERVIEW WITH DR. JAMISSON NERUDA

**By Sarah**

*What follows is a session I recorded of Dr. Neruda on December 31, 1997. He gave permission for me to record his answers to my questions. This is the transcript of that session. This was one of five times I was able to tape-record our conversations. I have preserved these transcripts precisely as they occurred. No editing was performed, and I've tried my best to include the exact words, phrasing, and grammar used by Dr. Neruda.*

*(It's recommended that you read the previous three interviews before reading this one.)*

Sarah:

"As promised, one of the things I want to focus on in this interview is the Ancient Arrow site. From what you said the other day, the Ancient Arrow site was essentially stripped of its artifacts. Where are they now and what do you think the ACIO intends to do with them?"

Dr. Neruda:

"As of the time of my defection, the site's antechamber and 23 sub-chambers were carefully measured, analyzed,



and each of the artifacts were cataloged. All of the artifacts that could be taken from the 23 chambers were moved to the ACIO lab for rigorous testing. The initial hope was that they contained accessible technologies that could somehow accelerate the deployment schedule for BST. However, I think that expectation changed following the discovery of the 24th chamber."

Sarah:

"You never really talked in any detail about the chambers before. What was so special about the 24th chamber?"

Dr. Neruda:

"What was interesting about the chambers – apart from the artifacts they contained – was that the site was as sterile as an operating room, except the 23rd chamber. Remember that these chambers protruded outward from a central corridor that spiraled up through solid rock. From the top of the 23rd chamber to the antechamber below was approximately 50 meters. We knew there were 24 chapters or segments on the optical disc, but we assumed that the antechamber – even though it didn't have any artifacts – was included. Thus, we falsely assumed that the 24 chambers were accounted for."

Sarah:

"They weren't?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No. There was another chamber that had been hidden."

Sarah:

"How?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The 23rd chamber had a significant amount of rock debris on its floor. It had all the markings of being unfinished, as if the constructors had to leave suddenly or simply ran out of patience before they completed their mission. We invested a reasonable amount of time and analysis studying the walls and debris of the 23rd chamber, hoping to discern the methods of construction, but we never suspected that there was a hidden passageway beneath the debris on the floor of the chamber."

Sarah:

"So, there was a trap door?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Shortly before my defection, a trap door was discovered by some ACIO researchers who were conducting a form of x-ray photography of the interior of the site."

Sarah:

"For what purpose?"

Dr. Neruda:

"They were trying to determine if there were any structural deficiencies in the site that could cause instabilities for the site in the long-term. We had, in effect, broken the seal on this site and introduced a significant amount of stress to the structure. Fifteen, being the

thorough person he is, wanted to be sure we hadn't inadvertently compromised the structural integrity of the site. He felt certain that the site's preservation was potentially critical."

Sarah:

"Okay, so these x-rays showed a trap door to another chamber. How was it overlooked before? Was it completely hidden?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Not really. We had been told to leave all the chambers as we had found them – other than to remove the artifacts and catalog everything we found. What we didn't realize was that the six inches of rock chips on the floor of the 23rd chamber concealed a vertical passageway."

Sarah:

"It went straight down?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Correct. It dropped nearly 50 meters . . ."

Sarah:

"But I thought the antechamber was 50 meters underneath the 23rd chamber."

Dr. Neruda:

"It is, but not directly underneath. The 24th chamber is only separated by four meters from the nearest wall of the antechamber."

Sarah:

"Was there a passageway between the two, or was the only entrance from the 23rd chamber?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The only entrance was from the 23rd chamber, which made it near-impossible to get to."

Sarah:

"Why?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Because the passageway was cut too small for an adult body, and it was a long distance to traverse."

Sarah:

"With all your technology, couldn't you have made it wider?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It was an alternative, but Fifteen didn't feel it was warranted."

Sarah:

"Why not? It seems like a pretty important discovery – maybe the key to the whole site."

Dr. Neruda:

"The ACIO had technologies that allowed us to drop cameras down the passageway and photograph the entire chamber remotely."

Sarah:

"What did you see?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It was the largest of the 24 chambers – in all dimensions. Its wall painting was the largest, and like the 23rd chamber, was oriented horizontally instead of vertically. There was a technology artifact that we removed from the chamber that, as far as I know, is, like all the others, inaccessible to the ACIO probes."

Sarah:

"Other than the chamber being larger in scale, were there any other differences?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It was very similar to the 23rd chamber in the sense that it was also unfinished in appearance, but it was about three times as large in volume. There were a series of glyphs incised on the wall opposite the painting that were organized in seven groups of five characters."

Sarah:

"I know you showed me photographs of the chamber paintings, did I see this one?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No."

Sarah:

"What's it look like?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It's the most abstract and complex of the collection, and consequently, hard to describe. Like all the chamber paintings, we invested considerable effort and time to decode the symbols and analyze the content of the painting, but we only had speculation as to its real purpose."

Sarah:

"Any hypothesis on why the 24th chamber was hidden?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Remember that the site was interpreted by most within the Labyrinth Group as being loosely based on our human genome . . . "

Sarah:

"Because of the helix shape?"

Dr. Neruda:

"That and the fact there were 23 chambers – the precise number of chromosomes – or pairs of chromosomes in a normal human cell. These factors, along with some of the detail contained within the chamber paintings and philosophical text we decoded, led us to conclude that the site was designed to tell a story about the human genome."

Sarah:

"Okay, but why was the 24th chamber hidden and how does that relate to the human genome?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I don't know with certainty, but remember that the 23rd chromosome determines the sex of the individual. The wall painting from the 23rd chamber is the only painting that shows – albeit abstractly – the genitalia of both a man and a woman. We assumed that this was deliberate. The fact that the 23rd chamber was unfinished suggested that the 23rd chromosome was also somehow unfinished, implying that there may be some other function of the sex gene that has not been completed as yet."

Sarah:

"But isn't the entire genome unfinished? I remember reading that 95% of the genome is unused. Isn't that true?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It's true that the instructions contained within the genes are mostly unused, but the genes themselves, as far as their instruction set, are not incomplete so far as we know. There are, of course, genetic mutations that occur from time-to-time, but again these are not states of incompleteness so much as spontaneous adaptation to genetic interfusion."

Sarah:

"Then what's the case with the 24th chamber? Are there instances when some people have 24 chromosomes?"

Dr. Neruda:

"First, it's 23 pairs of chromosomes, and yes, there are people who have an extra chromosome, but it's generally not desirable, and is often lethal. In our research, we've never seen 24 pairs of chromosomes in a healthy, normal human."

Sarah:

"But isn't it possible that it's not about pairs of chromosomes? There aren't any pairs of chambers, so maybe they're talking about 24 chromosomes period."

Dr. Neruda:

"This possibility was certainly explored."

Sarah:

"And . . . ?"

Dr. Neruda:

"There was no reliable evidence, so the theory was discounted."

Sarah:

"So nothing human has 24 chromosomes or 24 pairs of chromosomes? Why would the WingMakers construct something so obviously genetic in its shape and make an error like this?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No one within the Labyrinth Group believed there was an error. Chimpanzees, orangutans, and gorillas possess 24 pairs of chromosomes."

Sarah:

"Apes?"

Dr. Neruda:



"Any molecular biologist will tell you that our genome is a 98% match of the chimpanzee."

Sarah:

"Are you suggesting that the WingMakers produced this site in homage to the chimp?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No. I'm simply relating the truth. Until 1955 scientists believed that humans had 24 pairs of chromosomes just as the chimpanzee or gorilla, but then it was discovered that somewhere in time, humans fused two chromosomes into one . . . "

Sarah:

"And how does this all relate to the discovery of the 24th chamber?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It probably doesn't. The human genome is like a set of encyclopedias with 23 volumes. It's quite possible that the 24th chamber, in this case, is the equivalent of the index or navigation volume."

Sarah:

"But it's not visible like the other 23 chromosomes?"

Dr. Neruda:

"We thought there was significance in the fact that the 24th chamber was hidden, and was only connected by a narrow, vertical passage to the 23rd. It's possible, in theory, that the 24th chromosome isn't a molecular-based

gene repository. There may be a genetic mutation that is being foreshadowed in our future, or the 24th chamber is a metaphor for a new functionality of the human species that is – as yet – dormant or non-coded."

Sarah:

"So, what does Fifteen think it all means?"

Dr. Neruda:

"ZEMI had done an exhaustive search of the variables, and I believe Fifteen had more or less accepted its most probable alternative, that the 23rd chromosome was destined to mutate and create or catalyze the creation of a 24th chromosome that would act as a navigation system or index for future geneticists."

Sarah:

"And ZEMI deduced all of this from a single painting?"

Dr. Neruda:

"ZEMI had 62 different analyses of the 24th chamber painting, and each of them had probabilities of over 40%. This is unheard of unless an object is coded in sufficient complexity, and this coding is consistently applied to produce a web effect of possibilities. This painting, along with the glyphs on the opposite wall, achieved that end. The ACIO calls this phenomenon, Complexity Interlocks, with factors on a scale of zero to one hundred. If an object or event has a CI of 15, it's considered a coded object. The artifacts of the 24th chamber had the highest CI of all the chambers: 94.6. To put it into perspective, the next highest chamber, chamber six, had a CI of 56.3"

Sarah:

"Why is that important?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Because Fifteen looked at the 24th chamber as the key to understanding the Ancient Arrow site. ZEMI's analysis was very specific, much more so than I'm able to relate in this conversation."

Sarah:

"Can you give me an example of how ZEMI determines this CI index?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The painting or object is scanned and reduced to its digital components. Color, scale, position, shape, and repetition are all established and analyzed. For example, one of the abstract figures in the 24th chamber painting appears to be floating upside down, and happens to have 23 stars within its mid-section. ZEMI would associate significance to this, and this would become a thread of the web effect. ZEMI would continue to create these threads, looking for a consistent pattern. If a pattern emerges with sufficient mathematical coherence and context, it deduces that the object is designed for a purpose."

Sarah:

"In other words, a higher CI indicates a higher purpose?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes, but especially if the distinction is significant as in the case of the 24th chamber."

Sarah:

"If all these pieces are fit together, the picture that emerges is that the Ancient Arrow site was created as a metaphor of the human genome, and that it's predicting a mutation that will produce a 24th chromosome, which leads us right back to our hairy cousins. Wouldn't this be devolution?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No."

Sarah:

"Why not?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The molecular environment of the 23rd chromosome is the most antagonistic and dynamic of all the human chromosomes. This makes it a cauldron for potential mutation. Molecular and evolutionary biologists are only now beginning to recognize this inherent reality of the 23rd chromosome.

"ZEMI's analysis was that the 24th chamber painting was concerned not with our sexual identity, as in the case of the 23rd chromosome, but our spiritual identity."

Sarah:

"How so?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It would take me at least twenty minutes to explain the rationale. Do you want me to proceed?"

Sarah:

"Can you give me a summary?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I'll try.

"There are several connections between the 23rd and 24th chambers; the most notable being that the 24th chamber is only accessible from the 23rd chamber. This suggests that the 24th exists as a result of the behaviors and conditions of the 23rd. In a sense, the tunnel connecting the two chambers is a birth canal, and the 24th chamber is the baby.

"Since the 23rd is the sex chromosome, that is, it determines the sexual and physical identity of the individual, its purpose is largely binary. It's quite logical to conclude that if it were to give birth to a new chromosome, it may have something to do with our spiritual identity, particularly in light of all the other information we have about the Central Race."

Sarah:

"I get the feeling that you believe this."

Dr. Neruda:

"I think it's a viable hypothesis, but the exact purpose of the Ancient Arrow site is yet to be determined with high confidence."

Sarah:

"Are there any other sites similar to the Ancient Arrow site that the ACIO got involved in?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No, nothing of this magnitude, but the ACIO involves itself in anything anomalous that may have ET influence."

Sarah:

"Can you give me an example?"

Dr. Neruda:

"There was an underground installation of engraved stones found in Peru in the mid-1960s. Some of the circumstances regarding this site are similar."

Sarah:

"How so?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It was an underground installation of considerable complexity and it contained tens of thousands of stones that had been intricately engraved with pictographs that depicted a vast historical record of earth and a pre-historical culture, all carved on a stone known as andesite."

Sarah:

"And was this site also kept off the record?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No, quite the contrary, but it was targeted with heavy disinformation and ultimately discredited by academic institutions that no doubt felt threatened by the revelation."

Sarah:

"I still don't see how a government organization like the ACIO can operate behind the scenes and our own elected officials be completely unaware of both its existence and agenda."

Dr. Neruda:

"Not all of your elected officials are unaware of the ACIO, but you're right about one thing: they do not know its true objectives."

Sarah:

"So who knows and who doesn't?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It's not such a simple thing to provide you with a list of names. Those who know, and are elected officials, form a very short list—"

Sarah:

"How short?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I would prefer not to say at this time, only that it is less than ten in number."

"The world body politic is not divided into republicans and democrats or liberal and conservative parties. They are

divided into a stratification of knowledge and vital intelligence. The financial oligarchy of the secret network I mentioned last week possesses superior knowledge, some of which it shares with the military force and some of which it shares with the Isolationist forces.

These three forces are the principal way the world is organizing itself, and the presumed alpha organization is the Incunabula because they control a dominant share of the world's money supply and hard assets."

Sarah:

Okay, stop a moment because I did some research since our interview Saturday, and learned a little bit about the organization called the Illuminati. Is this the same organization you're now referring to as the Incunabula?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No. The Illuminati is part of the secret network, but it's not the alpha organization. The Illuminati is affiliated with other blueblood organizations, mostly originating from European roots, but its goals and objectives are not aligned to the Incunabula."

Sarah:

"In what way, because from my reading it seemed like it was the secret network you were referring to."

Dr. Neruda:

"First, you need to understand that the secret network, as I was referring to, is loosely assembled and not well aligned because of competing agendas. Nonetheless, there is a sense of camaraderie between some of the more



powerful groups mostly because they share an elite status in business, academia, or government.

"However, these groups are generally designed to help its members build greater wealth and influence through the members' network of business and government contacts. It is somewhat comparable to a high-powered networking organization."

Sarah:

"Are you sure we're talking about the same organization?"

Dr. Neruda:

"There are many stories about the Illuminati that are based more on legend than evidence. Too many conspiratorial objectives are credited to them, and they are not organized in this way. Their leadership is too visible and carefully scrutinized by the media. When you have this condition, you can, in most instances, dispel the notion that global, conspiratorial objectives are in the works."

Sarah:

"What about the occult references to the Illuminati? Are they true?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The supposed leaders of the Illuminati are not occultists or Satan worshippers as they are sometimes accused. Again, this is conspiracy theory run amok, usually by those who seek to define enemies that can embody Lucifer, which in their mind is synonymous with the occult. The Illuminati, while it exists as an elite

organization, is made up of men and women that do not conform to one belief system. The spiritual beliefs of their members are not used as criteria to acquire membership. What's important is a member's personal network of contacts."

Sarah:

"But don't they have a tremendous influence on politics?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes, they have influence, as do the Masons, and Skull and Bones, and twenty-seven other organizations that make up this loose-knit network of the elite, but the people who control the master plan are not directly affiliated with any one of these thirty organizations.

"The reality is that these organizations really operate in one of three forces that do have alignment under the controlling hand of the Incunabula."

Sarah:

"So you're saying that within these three forces the world's political stage is organized, and the group with the most money also has the best knowledge and basically controls the other two groups?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The Incunabula doesn't dictate to the other two forces. It strategically releases information that lures the two forces in the direction it wants them to go.

"You can look at these three forces as part of an equilateral triangle, with the Incunabula at the apex, and the Global Military Force at one base and the Isolationist Force at the other. This is the real structure of global power."

Sarah:

"I'm not clear about the different objectives of these three forces."

Dr. Neruda:

"The Incunabula is concerned with the globalization of monetary channels and vital supplies like petroleum and natural gas; the Military Force is concerned with spreading and preserving democratization throughout the globe, and in so doing, protecting the self-interests of the dominant superpowers of America and Western Europe; and the Isolationist Force is focused on industry and wealth building for its citizens at the state level."

Sarah:

"But how does the Incunabula lure these other two forces to do its bidding? Can you give me an example?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Why do you think Saddam Hussein invaded Kuwait?"

Sarah:

"To grab its oil wells and make a lot of money."

Dr. Neruda:

"On the surface that is close to the truth. Following the Iran-Iraq War, Saddam had depleted a good deal of his country's wealth, and to be sure, he was interested in the wealth production of Kuwait, but he also knew that his military was not designed to invade and annex countries, and he was aware that the superpowers would protect their interests in Kuwait.

"Saddam had a real dilemma, he had upwards of a million soldiers that were without jobs after the Iran-Iraq War and there was no place within Iraq's broader economy to absorb these men. The Military Force was aware of Saddam's dilemma, and, through a consistent disinformation campaign by the Military Force, Saddam was led to believe that he would be allowed to invade Kuwait without superpower retaliation.

"There are high level operatives within the Military Force that are also the eyes and ears of the Incunabula. It was well understood that Iraq had weapons of mass destruction that it had developed during the course of its war with Iran. The Military Force saw this as a destabilizing element of its long-term policy to bring democracy – American-style – to the oil-producing region.

"The Incunabula does not have control of the Middle East oil. It is the only vital asset in which they do not exercise prime authority. Saddam Hussein was seduced by disinformation to attack Kuwait so that the Military Force could – with the whole world looking on – dismantle Iraq's defenses. This was a staged event of global impact exercised by the Incunabula and carried out by the Military Force completely unaware that they were being lured into this conflict in the same way as Iraq."

Sarah:

"And all because some elite trillionaires want to control the world's oil supply?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It's much more complex than that, though that is a part of the equation. I'm not sure how much you want me to go into it."

Sarah:

"It's hard to stop after you drop this revelation on me. Where is this all headed... I mean what is the end-goal of the Incunabula?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Do you mean in the context of the Middle East?"

Sarah:

"Yes."

Dr. Neruda:

"They want to control crude oil production. They want to exercise authority over this critical asset that is so fundamental to shaping world economies. They have controls over refining and the distribution of end products, but they lack control over the production, particularly in the Middle East. This is the fundamental goal, but it's surrounded by the tributary objectives of bringing a Western culture to the region and slowly, but surely, homogenizing the world's culture. They want this global

culture as a framework in which to create global regulation."

Sarah:

"And how long will this take... assuming they're successful?"

Dr. Neruda:

"From the perspective of the ACIO, it has a probability of occurrence no more than 35% within the next 10 years and jumps to a 60% probability in 20 years. Thereafter, it becomes more probable with each passing decade, until it reaches near-certainty by the year 2060."

Sarah:

"And when you say 'global regulation', what do you mean?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The ability to regulate the vital resources of the planet as a singular, global political body."

Sarah:

"What makes this such a critical goal of the Incunabula?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The diminishing oil and natural gas supplies. These are non-renewable energy sources, and what required a billion years to create 3.2 trillion barrels of useable oil has taken 110 years to reduce to 1.8 trillion barrels. The planet's oil supply is its economic lifeblood. As this diminishes, so

does the economic system in which the world's people live. As the economic conditions erode, instability arises, and if left unchecked, chaos ensues."

Sarah:

"Again you're saying that this is all about oil?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Try to understand that to me it's astounding that this isn't obvious. Anyone who knows the condition of the world's oil supply can perform simple extrapolations and conclude that the world is approximately fifty years away from oil depletion, and that assumes you use the more optimistic analyses. On the pessimistic side, it could be as little as twenty-five years."

Sarah:

"How can that be? I don't recall anything being said about this in the media. I would think this would be a huge story if it were that obvious and that ominous."

Dr. Neruda:

"There are many versions of this story that circulate in the media, but they never quite capture the attention of the mass media and the masses because they deal with the distant future – a topic not held in high regard by citizens in love with their Western lifestyles. Nevertheless, this future is precisely where the Incunabula place their focus because this is what determines the tactics of the present day.

"The depletion of the world's oil supply, coupled to the growth in human population, is the dominant influence

that is shaping the policies of the Incunabula and its timetable."

Sarah:

"So the agenda of the Incunabula is to control the diminishing oil supply in order to do what?"

Dr. Neruda:

"At the highest levels of the Incunabula, the planning horizons are typically twenty to one hundred years, depending on the issue. They are well aware that as the oil supplies diminish, oil will become increasingly more difficult to extract from the planet's reservoirs, and consequently, require at minimum, a thirty percent delta in refining costs. This will have a profound effect on price, which can have the effect of producing a persistent recession in the world's economy."

"The planners of the Incunabula believe that by consolidating control of the oil supply and its distribution it is the best way to impose rationing at a global level without setting off Armageddon."

Sarah:

"It's really that serious?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I don't mean to sound like an alarmist, but this is the fundamental problem that the world must address in the 21st century. The brightest minds of our planet are well aware of this and have known this for twenty years or more."



Sarah:

"Why then aren't the leaders of the world, and the brightest minds, working on alternative energy sources?"

Dr. Neruda:

"In some instances they are. There're several alternative energy sources that are under consideration – some are not even released to the public at this time because they stem from technologies that also carry great potential as weapons.

"But the bigger issue is how to change the energy system of our modern-day civilization from petroleum to a new energy source, or perhaps to change the manner in which we live – in other words, our oil dependent lifestyle."

Sarah:

"Why is that such a big deal? I would think that as the world wakes up to the reality of dwindling oil supplies it would be very receptive to a new energy source."

Dr. Neruda:

"Have you ever heard the quote by Machiavelli about the difficulty of changing a system?"

Sarah:

"I don't think so."

Dr. Neruda:

"He wrote, 'There is nothing more difficult to plan, more doubtful of success, nor more dangerous to manage than

the creation of a new system. For the initiator has the enmity of all who would profit by the preservation of the old system and merely lukewarm defenders in those who would gain by the new one'."

Sarah:

"Okay, so this requires a lot of preparation and planning, and probably persuasion. But what choices do we have?"

Dr. Neruda:

"None. This is the realism of the next fifty years."

Sarah:

"I presume the Incunabula plan to orchestrate this change of systems. Am I right on that?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes. As I said earlier, they believe the global regulation of energy resources and the ability to manage population growth are the convergent issues of our time that – if managed properly – can avert Armageddon."

Sarah:

"You've said that word twice tonight – Armageddon. What do you mean by that? Are you talking about World War III?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Armageddon is defined by the ACIO as the chaos of humanity. It is the time when humanity plunges into chaos and the interfaces of global commerce, communication,

and diplomacy are destroyed in favor of national self-preservation. If this were to happen, weapons of unusual power could be used to destroy thirty percent or more of the human population. This is the definition that we don't like to talk about, but it's well known within the ACIO as a possibility in the 21st century."

Sarah:

"So I assume you have your probability forecasts for this as well. Right?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes."

Sarah:

"And what are they, dare I ask?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I'd prefer not to say. They aren't really relevant anyway because they fluctuate based on world events."

Sarah:

"But this is what the Incunabula's planners are trying to steer clear of?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes. This consumes their agenda more than any other issue."

Sarah:

"What other organizations are consumed by this agenda?"

Dr. Neruda:

"There are none."

Sarah:

"What?"

Dr. Neruda:

"This agenda is unique to the Incunabula because they're the only organization that is focused squarely on averting this particular crisis condition based on the convergence criteria I stated earlier."

Sarah:

"You mean they're the only organization that's worried about Armageddon as it relates to dwindling oil supplies and population increases?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes."

Sarah:

"But you're not telling me that other organizations aren't worried about World War III or Armageddon, how ever you define it. Right?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Every nation's leadership is concerned about these issues, but it's by no means the focus of their agenda. It is a small, compartmentalized component of their agenda."

"This is precisely why Fifteen is involved with the Incunabula's planners, the threats to the human race are

both real and persistent, and with each passing decade the conditions are only growing more fertile for fragmentation and chaos – the very kind you would observe in tribal warfare. There is no fundamental difference."

Sarah:

"And the leaders of the Military Force know about this objective?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No. They have their own agenda, which is related, but quite different as well. They don't aspire to regulate oil production; they intend to defend its availability and influence its price as a result. They're not concerned with globalization as it relates to economic or cultural platforms, but rather, they're concerned with exporting democracy in order to ensure stabilization in the region, and eradicate instability in the form of terrorists and dictators alike."

Sarah:

"But that seems at odds with everything I've heard about the military."

Dr. Neruda:

"In what way?"

Sarah:

"You make it sound as though the Military Force is trying to bring stability or peace, when everything I've ever read implies that the military feeds off of conflict and instability. If the world is at peace, then the military

becomes a simple police force, its power is reduced and its budgets are slashed."

Dr. Neruda:

"I understand your question. However, the Military Force is not the same thing as the military. While it is very pro-military, it operates in a longer planning horizon than military personnel. The Military Force is made up of high-level politicians, business people, intelligence members, academics, think tanks, and so on. Its members are from the United Kingdom, America, Germany, Canada, Australia, Israel, and many other countries. Its cohesion, as a group, is not so much a function of formal structure and meetings, but rather it's by publishing classified papers that are shared among its elite members. These papers define the platform, goals, long-term objectives, and essentially map out the strategy and tactics by which the Military Force intends to execute its plan.

"The Military Force is working on hybrid defensive and offensive weapons that relate to space, bio-weapons, the Internet, and other environments that are as yet not viewed as battlefield arenas. They would contend that R & D budgets should be increased in order to develop these new weapons in order to secure the rights of free people to live without fear of preemptive attack. They intend to remove this reality from the face of the earth and at the same time, propagate democracy."

Sarah:

"But isn't this a noble goal?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Their goals are not necessarily misguided, but their methods to achieve these goals are. This is all about projecting power, and, as a consequence, dictating the prevailing political platform by which the world achieves peace. It is enforced peace. It is peace through power and manipulation."

Sarah:

"But it's still peace and it's still democracy. It's certainly better than the alternative of wars and anarchy or dictatorship."

Dr. Neruda:

"There are other means to achieve the same end."

Sarah:

"You said that the budget for military spending would only increase over time if the Military Force has its way. How would that happen amidst world peace?"

Dr. Neruda:

"New threats will be determined that will create this need even though our countries of the world are at peace."

Sarah:

"Are you talking about ETs again?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Among other things. China will likely be the last island of opposition that the wave of democracy will land upon, but when it does, the Military Force desires to have unique

weapons at its disposal in order to swiftly bring the changes it seeks. Bio-weapons will likely be the choice—"

Sarah:

"How is that possible when the U.S. has banned bio-weapons?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Unfortunately, the discoveries in the human genome are too compelling for the Military Force to ignore as it pertains to bio-weapons development. Research is already underway, and has been for two years, to develop bio-weapons that target certain genomes indicative of a specific race."

Sarah:

"Like Chinese?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes, but it doesn't mean the weapon would ever be deployed. It would simply be a known capability of the Military Force and that alone would make the change of regime irresistible."

Sarah:

"I have to stop here and make a confession. Part of me wants to cry when I hear this and bury my head in a pillow, and part of me wants to keep asking more questions. I'm really torn on this one... I don't think I want to talk about this anymore. Okay?"

Dr. Neruda:



"I'm only answering the questions you ask of me as honestly as I can."

Sarah:

"I know, and I'm not complaining about you or your answers really. I just needed to say what I was feeling."

Dr. Neruda:

"I understand."

Sarah:

"Do you want to take a break and stretch your legs?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I'm fine, but if you want one, I'll be happy to take a stretch."

Sarah:

"No, I'm fine..."

"Tell me more about the Isolationist Force. What's their story in all of this?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Again, I don't want you to think that the Military and Isolationist Forces are formal groups that have memberships and party platforms. They are informal, tacit coalitions at most, and they operate through the well-placed leadership of Incunabula operatives. Also, it is important to remember that they're all part of the triad of leadership that the Incunabula have forged over the last fifty-seven years."

"In the case of the Isolationist Force, it's the least organized of the three forces. It's designed to spur economic policies and activities that generate wealth for the elite class throughout the world. As a force it is concerned with domestic state issues that drive economic growth and vitality. Its focus is to influence local, state and national governments to facilitate commerce."

Sarah:

"Am I correct in thinking that Republicans are more affiliated with the Isolationist Force?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No. These three forces are not affiliated with any party or political organization. Someone can be aligned with both the Military and Isolationist Force and not have any conflict doing so. They are not antagonistic. They're compatible forces. Also, these forces are not exclusively American. They are global forces – albeit with dominance from American and European interests, but they're not party affiliations like democrats and republicans, nor are they state-sponsored in any way."

Sarah:

"If the oil production is in the hands of the Incunabula, what will happen to the Arab state regimes that currently hold this power?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It depends on the regime. The Incunabula is expert at influence through financial services and legal maneuvering. They will assert their influence slowly,

gradually, and in a manner that will catch the royal families and cartel by surprise. Their patience is unmatched, and they operate on multiple levels of influence, which is why they win nearly every time.

"Even at the present time many of the royal families exert influence in domestic affairs, but not oil production. They reap the rewards of the oil financially, but others within their regimes are truly operating the production and interacting with the cartel, developing the core relationships of trust and influence. These are the ones that the Incunabula bring into their fold, and slowly win over as operatives in their plan. The Military Force, at the appropriate timetable, will overturn the regimes in conflict with the plan, and those regimes that are friendly, will be allowed to retain their domestic presence and influence. These are carefully orchestrated events."

Sarah:

"And once the Incunabula has control over oil production, what then?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The dismantling of hard currency. The Incunabula desires to have an electronic currency because it tracks everything and enables a more thorough analytical insight into the affairs of the individual."

Sarah:

"So what do they want to do with all this information?"

Dr. Neruda:

"They want to observe patterns and manipulate events in order to protect their dominance as a leadership body, and, as I said earlier, they want to define the new systems and manage system change. Once this dominance is perceived as reaching a critical mass, the Incunabula plans to create a global body of governance that brings stability to Earth and a set of policies that aid humanity at large."

Sarah:

"Again you're telling me that their goal is to help humanity, but I find it hard to believe."

Dr. Neruda:

"In a way it is the only way they can retain power. If they concentrate wealth and services too much, they will lose control of the population they seek to govern. Rebellion is never far away when empty stomachs grumble in unison."

Sarah:

"How will they dismantle our hard currency?"

Dr. Neruda:

"There will be a gradual de-valuation of the stock markets worldwide. Americans in particular have become accustomed to easy money production within the stock markets, as well as lavish lifestyles. This will not be permitted to continue indefinitely. Recessions will occur in waves until the value of currency is called into question. This will begin in third world countries first, and as these become the initial victims of feeble economic policies, the Incunabula will essentially force these countries to sell

their assets at rock bottom prices in return for helping them out of economic crisis.

"In the best of times, the world economy is a fragile patchwork of economic systems that run at different rates without a smooth interface or a macro system in which to operate. In the worst of times, it is a house of cards vulnerable to the faintest of winds. Hard currency and the monetary system that supports it will become a scapegoat of the economic slowdown, and electronic currency will increasingly become the solution to the general malaise of the global economy."

Sarah:

"I'm not an economist so I don't even know what questions to ask, but it leaves me with a queasy feeling in my gut. I get the feeling that there's only one real power in the world and it's the Incunabula, and we're all just puppets of this elite group of moneymen. Isn't that pretty much the subtext of all your comments here?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No, not at all, but I can understand how you arrive at that conclusion given that we've been focused on the Triad of Power, or TOP, as we refer to it within the Labyrinth Group. TOP is a reality on earth, and it probably will be for many generations to come, and it's certainly in the best position to dominate world affairs and development, but there are other powers that can intervene and bring fresh opportunity to the world's people."

Sarah:

"Like religious powers?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes, that's one, though they will never rival the Incunabula in terms of impacting on world affairs."

Sarah:

"So who're you talking about? Give me some names or examples."

Dr. Neruda:

"The rise of personal computers and the Internet was never intended to occur according to the Incunabula. It was one of the developments that genuinely surprised the planners within the Incunabula and proved to be a very vexing issue for nearly a decade. Computing power was supposed to remain in the hands of the elite. The Internet grew organically and at a pace that no one thought possible, and it caught the Incunabula completely off guard."

Sarah:

"So technology is a power that frustrated the plans of the Incunabula?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It's one example."

Sarah:

"I imagine the ACIO is another?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The single greatest weakness of the Incunabula is its lack of scientific expertise within the ranks of its leadership. While it has technical and scientific members in special projects within the Global Military Industrial Complex, they are not leaders, and it is the leadership of the Incunabula that establishes its agenda."

Sarah:

"But I thought you said that Fifteen was part of the Incunabula."

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes, but the ACIO is simply seen as a resource to the Incunabula. Fifteen is perceived as an anarchist whose vision could never be aligned with the leadership of the Incunabula. They don't even identify with his vision."

Sarah:

"If the Incunabula relies so heavily on ACIO technology, and they need scientific leadership, why don't they replace Fifteen and place someone they can control better?"

Dr. Neruda:

"They originally tried to have a Director who would be more compliant, but it didn't succeed."

Sarah:

"How do you mean that?"

Dr. Neruda:

"One of the first Directors of the ACIO was a member of the Incunabula's Military Force and was very much an insider in terms of working with some of its higher-ranking leaders, especially in America."

Sarah:

"Can you disclose his name?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Vannevar Bush."

Sarah:

"How do you spell his name?"

Dr. Neruda (Spelling it out.)

Sarah:

"Is he related to President George Bush?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No."

Sarah:

"So he ran the ACIO when it was still in its infancy?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes."

Sarah:

"What happened to him?"

Dr. Neruda:



"He was too visible, and it was rightly feared that he would not be able to retain secrecy."

Sarah:

"Why?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Dr. Bush was a gifted individual who exercised both technical vision and leadership skills. He had access to the leadership of the government and the Incunabula. He could manage a large team of scientists and engineers as well as anyone could. He essentially built the infrastructure for military research, but his celebrity status was troublesome to the founders of the Incunabula."

Sarah:

"Give me a sense of the timetable because I've got to admit I've never heard of this man."

Dr. Neruda:

"It was right near the end of World War II that Dr. Bush was asked to head up a team of research scientists that had been assembled from the NDRC and SPL to reverse-engineer a recovered alien spacecraft that had been recovered in 1940 off the coast of Florida. These were actually top scientists from the newly formed ACIO. The spacecraft had been placed in cold storage because of World War II. As the war ended, Bush became privy to this discovery through his network and offered his leadership to the project. As I understand it, he was just coming off the Manhattan Project when this opportunity presented itself."

Sarah:

"So he was considered a security risk and that ended his tenure at the ACIO?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes.

"This reverse-engineering project was held in the highest possible secrecy. Dr. Bush ran the operation within the SPL through special funding from the OSS, which was the forerunner of the CIA. However, after a year's time, little progress was made and there were rumors attributed to Bush that alien spacecraft consumed his agenda.

"Bush reported directly to James Forrestal, who at the time was heading up the Navy, but shortly thereafter became the first Secretary of Defense. Truman was president.

"The spacecraft that had been recovered was sufficiently intact to conduct reverse-engineering studies on its propulsion system, which was the most critical knowledge that Forrestal hoped to extract from the project."

Sarah:

"What year are we talking?"

Dr. Neruda:

"This would have been between 1945 and 1946."

Sarah:

"So what happened?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Bear in mind that my knowledge of these events is based on my study of the ACIO archive. I wasn't personally involved in any of these happenings, so I'm not vouching for their absolute accuracy."

Sarah:

"Understood."

Dr. Neruda:

"Dr. Bush was asked to replicate the propulsion system of the recovered craft in 12 months, and was given the resources of the ACIO in order to do so."

Sarah:

"And did he succeed?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Only partially. The electromagnetic fields were not fully replicated in terms of their sustained intensity levels in metals because of electron drift, which, and I'm struggling to keep this in layperson's terms, were the primary reason it failed. Nonetheless, there were prototypes built that replicated aspects of the alien craft's propulsion system, and these were sufficient to galvanize funding and support for the ACIO."

Sarah:

"Then why didn't Dr. Bush join the ACIO?"

Dr. Neruda:

"He knew it would require that he go underground and essentially become anonymous. He didn't want anonymity because he was a prodigious inventor and liked the limelight accorded him from government officials as well as the scientific community at large. Also, I don't think the head of the OSS thought his mental capabilities were sufficient to the task. Bush was a great organizer of talent, but he lacked the commanding intellect in physics to lead the ACIO as it was envisioned in those days."

Sarah:

"How many people knew about this project?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I'm not sure. Perhaps five or six knew the total scope of the project and another fifty knew elements of the project. It was, as I said before, a very well guarded secret."

Sarah:

"How do you keep something like this a secret?"

Dr. Neruda:

"There are entire departments within our government that have responsibility for this. It's a very well engineered process that includes legal contracts, clear penalty reminders, and known deterrence factors that include very invasive technologies. In the worst case, if vital information was disclosed, a different but related department would step in that would masterfully spread disinformation. It was, and still is, virtually impossible to bring this information to the public."

Sarah:

"They had invasive technologies even in 1945?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes. While the invasive technologies were more crudely applied, they were certainly effective. There was nothing more vilified in these undisclosed organizations than traitors. The entire organizational culture was designed to reward loyalty and severely punish disloyalty in any form."

Sarah:

"I want to switch topics for a moment. It seems that we're in a new stage of world peace and economic stability, but when I hear you talk, it seems that this just isn't possible given the nature of the Incunabula and the triad of power that you were talking about earlier. Is this true?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It is an illusion. There may be lulls in the movements of war, but look at the past one hundred years. Isn't it an assemblage of wars?"

Sarah:

"And all because war feeds the triad of power as you call it?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No. There are forces that truly believe in good and evil. In their view, countries – like people – are essentially cast into three categories: good, neutral, and evil. Those that are good must dominate the world political structures and

ensure that those that are evil are identified and reduced to a non-threat status."

Sarah:

"But the cold war is over, right? The Soviet Union is no more, and what's left of it seems more or less friendly to the interests of the free world. Isn't this true?"

Dr. Neruda:

"When power is concentrated in a single person, and that country or organization develops long range missile technology, it immediately becomes a target for concern within the intelligence community."

Sarah:

"And am I correct in assuming that the intelligence community you're referring to is global and managed by the Incunabula?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes, but it is not formally managed by the Incunabula."

Sarah:

"I understand, but the results are the same, right?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes."

Sarah:

"I apologize for the interruption."

Dr. Neruda:

"The perceived enemy is missile technology in the hands of a concentrated power. There are many, many countries that have this technology so it ensures distrust. Organizations like the U.N. (United Nations) are not sufficiently empowered to deal with these threats, so multilateral coalitions are developed between nations to deal with the perceived threats, often completely undisclosed to the public.

"Iraq is a perfect example. North Korea is another, but it lacks the strategic geography to place it on the top of the list. So, geography also plays a central role in this assessment."

Sarah:

"So essentially the world is coalescing into three camps. I understand that, but who determines who is evil, neutral, and good? I mean isn't this a terribly subjective call?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Whoever exerts the greatest global leadership in terms of projecting military force, economic vibrancy, and foreign policy makes this determination. And yes, it is certainly subjective, but it's precisely why the U.S. has adopted its imperialist attitude. It wants to define good and evil for the world, and in so doing, it can more effectively export its own definition of peace and democracy."

Sarah:

"Sounds so simplistic when you put it those terms."

Dr. Neruda:

"It's a natural outgrowth of how a state engineers its power. The state requires its enemies in order to convince its citizens to accept its authority over their lives. The greater the fear the state is able to provoke in the hearts and minds of its citizens, the more power its citizens are willing to give to it in order to protect them from its enemies. All states, to varying degrees, do this."

Sarah:

"Are you saying that the U.S., just to pick an example, engineers its enemies? You're really saying that America creates its enemies in order to increase its power domestically and internationally."

Dr. Neruda:

"I don't mean that the U.S. literally creates its enemies. The U.S. has potential adversaries in many parts of the world. Its policy of military presence as a global protector is all that's required to create enemies. Its forceful export of its political belief system is also troublesome to many countries that see American interests as a prelude to cultural colonization."

Sarah:

"Because we're the only remaining superpower?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No. It's because the U.S. has a global military presence and economic lever that it wields with relative virtuosity. It is skillful at aggression without appearing aggressive. It protects and defends, and sometimes it will do this in a pre-emptive strike and sometimes in a reactive



countermeasure that is usually at a force response that is several fold the original intensity. America's self interests have become the standard of the free world, and there are those who fear it will dominate to the point of imperialism."

Sarah:

"How does all of this fit into the work of the Incunabula or the ACIO for that matter?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The Incunabula uses the U.S. as a force for globalization. It is the lead horse pulling the nation states of the globe into a common economic and political platform.

"As far as the ACIO is concerned, it has thoroughly analyzed the various scenarios presented by U.S. global domination and find that there are only two scenarios in which the United States can achieve its ambitious aims without catalyzing a world war and plunging the global economy into a severe depression."

Sarah:

"Can you disclose these?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No."

Sarah:

"Why?"

Dr. Neruda:

"They are based on a mixture of remote viewing, advanced computer modeling, and preliminary BST tests. I am not willing to disclose this information at this time. Perhaps at a later date."

Sarah:

"I fully realize that we've gotten completely off the subject, but you seem to be leading me into this conversation. I can't help it."

Dr. Neruda:

"I understand."

Sarah:

"Are there plans for making this all happen? I mean does the Incunabula actually engineer the globalization or does it sort of happen as a result of a nudge here and a nudge there?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It's a carefully orchestrated process. The planning is deep, penetrating, and exhaustive. It is not flawless nor is it carried out with perfect precision. Nonetheless there is certainly a plan and it's executed by the triad of power as I stated earlier."

Sarah:

"And you've seen this plan?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I know of it through the Labyrinth Group. Fifteen requires each of us to know these plans on an intimate basis."

Sarah:

"Can you disclose any of this plan?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I think I have been alluding it to it this interview."

Sarah:

"Yes, but you haven't been clear about how events will culminate in such a way that the Incunabula will rise to power."

Dr. Neruda:

"It is not pre-ordained. There is no certainty in what I am about to disclose. It is a plan. Albeit a plan created by very ambitious and capable people."

Sarah:

"Duly noted."

Dr. Neruda:

"There are serious flaws within the global economy, and the United States will, within the next seven years, begin to express these flaws in ways that ripple through the globe and cause financial unrest. The best way to ensure that these flaws are controlled is to tighten corporate loopholes that allow greedy executives to exploit their shareholders, and to seize control over the price of oil."

Sarah:

"Wait a minute, I thought the greedy executives were exactly the profile of the Incunabula. Why would they lock down on their own turf?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The Incunabula leadership is not comprised of greedy executives. It is made up of anonymous individuals. They are not sitting on corporate boards. They are not the Bill Gates of corporate America, nor are they the Bluebloods of European royalty. They are anonymous, and through their anonymity they wield great power. They are the strategists of the triad of power who plot and plan at such a level as to make corporate executives and politicians seem like preschoolers fumbling to hold a pencil."

Sarah:

"So if you gave me a name of the leader of the Incunabula, I couldn't look him up. He doesn't exist?"

Dr. Neruda:

"That's correct."

Sarah:

"So these people are not really very different from those of you within the ACIO."

Dr. Neruda:

"They are very different. They produce globalization and uniform economic and political platforms, while we

produce breakthrough technologies. They practice hegemony, while we practice science."

Sarah:

"I didn't mean to offend you... I thought you said earlier that the Incunabula used White Papers and think tanks to promote its vision for the future."

Dr. Neruda:

"No, it is the Military Force that does this. The Incunabula is multi-tiered, as I've said before. It produces ideas and frameworks that produce the right conditions for the think tanks and other forces of the elite power base to exert influence. It is a very complicated process. If you would like me to go into it, I will."

Sarah:

"No, I sort of interrupted you. You were talking about the Incunabula's plan."

Dr. Neruda:

"They desire a paperless currency coupled to a global leadership, and to carry this out they require a restructuring – or perhaps more precisely, a complete reengineering of resource and power sharing."

Sarah:

"Can you elaborate on this a bit?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The plan requires new leadership in the Arab states. There is general concern that the Arab states will

consolidate much like Europe is in the process of doing, and new superpowers will be created out of this consolidation. Multiple superpowers make consolidation of the global economic platform a thorny proposition.

"Because of its natural aggression as a superpower, the United States is the spearhead of the Incunabula to usher in the required changes of their plan. It will be positioned to exert a strong military and cultural presence in the Middle East and Asia. Partly for oil considerations and partly for the purpose of gradually westernizing the indigenous cultures."

Sarah:

"Hold on a second. Our military bases are as much for the protection of our allies as for ourselves, and as for culture, we may export our movies and pop stars, but other countries are just as eager to be trend setters in the culture game."

Dr. Neruda:

"There's a difference. The U.S. protects and defends because it can establish military bases in those regions after it is done defending. Agreements are made – sometimes without the public's knowledge – to have military bases and protective forces therein for domestic peace issues and normalization. The U.S. has over 170 military bases on foreign soil. This number will continue to grow as dictated by this plan.

"In regard to the export of culture, yes, you are right, the U.S. is not alone in this, but it leads the way through its capitalistic leverage of pop culture. No one does this as

well as American corporations. They have set the world standard for monetizing content and brands. Other countries mimic this standard and add their weight. Collectively, the culture of capitalism reaches the Arab nations, China, North Korea, Southeast Asia, and the people of these countries – especially the new generations – are seduced by its allure."

Sarah:

"I can't help but get the impression that you're not very patriotic."

Dr. Neruda:

"The plan I share with you is rooted in the success of the United States to secure unilateral superpower status by the turn of the century. The U.S. will, as a result, be required to assert itself because there will be many challengers and discreditors. However, in this process, it will increase its worldwide presence as the leader of the free world. This is the goal that many throughout the world hold dear to their heart, whether they voice this sentiment or not.

"I don't hold any grudge against the U.S. for this assertion. Any nation would do the same thing if given the opportunity. The United States is relentlessly aggressive in all the important dimensions: military, culture, capitalism, applied technology, foreign policy, space, economic policy, and intelligentsia, to name the most critical areas.

"In Nature, the alpha male dominates through strength, cunning, and aggression. It is no different in the world of humans and statehood. The alpha male also has a responsibility for protection and sustenance. And the

Incunabula planners selected the U.S. as being the most suitable country to lead the pack of other nations to the global platforms it has designed and is readying."

Sarah:

"Okay, it sort of makes sense, what you're saying, but the Incunabula wants the U.S. to lead the world to a global community of free, democratic states with a global culture based on capitalism. How do they know the free world will elect them to govern them?"

Dr. Neruda:

"They don't. There are, as I've said many times here tonight, no guarantees. All I can say is that they don't miscalculate very often, and when they do, they adjust to the changes presented them. Again, the planners of the Incunabula, the real architects behind these events, are not interested in being the leaders of earth in terms of visibility. They want to appoint the leadership while giving the world a sense of choice."

Sarah:

"It's very hard to imagine how the world would select one leadership. It sounds like something that is hundreds of years in the future – if ever."

Dr. Neruda:

"I understand your conclusion, but what seems implausible today can rapidly evolve if the proper conditions are created. This is precisely what the Incunabula are focused on above all else. They realize that this may not take place until the year 2040 or even later,



but they are convinced that consolidation of power – at a global level – is necessary in order to prevent planetary destruction or what we talked about earlier as Armageddon."

Sarah:

"What do you mean by planetary destruction?"

Dr. Neruda:

"There are many decay forces that can take hold of a planet and cause its decline as a supportive living environment. In our interactions with extraterrestrials, this is a common theme that is expressed because this condition frequently accompanies the rise of post-modern civilizations.

"Human populations fragment across a planet, developing their unique cultures, language, economic systems, and state identities. Certain states have the good fortune of natural resources and some do not. As these natural resources of the planet are converted into commercial advantage, some states flourish economically and some flounder.

"As the stronger states begin to dominate the weaker, military forces and weapons are created. Applied technology becomes the ultimate weapon. If multiple super powers are allowed to develop they can bring destruction to the human populations of the planet. If population densities reach a critical level, it can have the same devastating effects.

"The human residents increasingly bring the planet under pressure. If left unchecked, the planet can reach a

critical stage of destruction whereby human populations no longer find the planet a suitable habitat."

Sarah:

"So you're saying that the whole reason the Incunabula are engineering the globalization of earth is because they want to save earth from destruction?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I will put it this way. The leaders of the Incunabula are very clear about the threats that earth will undergo in the 21st century. They believe their orchestration of human events better serves the human population than to leave it to the forces of competitive politics. They genuinely believe that the self-interests of the states will prevent a consolidation of global power."

Sarah:

"Remind me again, why is this consolidation, as you put it, so critical to our survival?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Because the threats that will confront the human population in the 21st century will be global issues – whether they are intractable recessions, dwindling oil supplies, food distribution, overpopulation, pollution, nuclear fallout, or extraterrestrial visitations, they will require a global, coordinated response. Unless the nations of the world are united, they will respond too slowly to the threats, and the decay forces will have such traction that they may be impossible to reverse."

Sarah:

"But isn't this why the United Nations was formed? To deal with these very issues?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The United Nations is a prototype that the Incunabula designed to serve as an experiment to test the format for a world government. It was never considered to be the format for consolidation.

"The issues of which I'm speaking of are not confronted in the United Nations, even if they're discussed and debated. Resolutions are designed to help remedy the problems, but ultimately it depends upon the will of the individual state to implement, monitor, report, analyze results, and make adjustments, and this is not enforced in any reasonable manner. A world government, to be effective, will require the ability to enforce and adjust resolutions based on sound analysis. Otherwise these threats will arise and the world's people will not be able to speak with a single voice, and more importantly, to act as a unified force against threats."

Sarah:

"So this is the real end game of the Incunabula? What happened to the greedy elitists you disclosed earlier?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Greed is alive and well within the ranks of the Incunabula. But I've been talking about the planners of the Incunabula – the people who have the real grip on power. They don't operate out of greed. They have assets that are beyond the imagination of even wealthy people. The acquisition of wealth is completed for them.

"The planners are concerned with securing humanity's future, rather than generating wealth for themselves."

Sarah:

"Okay, I understand you're a sympathizer of the Incunabula, but what happened to the insatiable greed and self interests? I know you mentioned this before."

Dr. Neruda:

"It exists, but the Incunabula, like any undisclosed organization is composed of multiple levels. Operatives at the lower levels function within a set of rules and norms that do not apply to the higher levels. In other words, planners operate in a completely different organizational culture. There is a sophistication and penetrating insight at the highest levels that are not existent at the operations level.

"Planners within the Incunabula are of a special character and they feel a genuine responsibility to manage the global affairs of humanity. They are most certainly better equipped than heads of state to perform this function, and so they compose and orchestrate world events instead of merely participating in their unfolding.

"Over time, this role has made them very responsible and even paternalistic to humanity as a whole. They're not motivated by greed, as are many others within the Incunabula and the broader Triad of Power, but they earnestly desire to save the planet. They are like captains of a ship that know where the dangers lie in the waters below and steer quietly away because they do not want to go down with the ship."

Sarah:

"Okay, when you say these planners are anonymous, they must have names and identities, right?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No. They operate outside of our system. They cannot be tracked or identified. If they were to be hit by a car and sent to a hospital, they would have diplomatic papers and immunity. They would not have any record of existence outside of this. And even if their identity were researched, it would lead to a fabricated identity."

Sarah:

"What about family and relatives? I assume they were born into families weren't they?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes, they are human if that's what you're implying. In most cases they're groomed for their positions from an early age. When they reach their early twenties they're typically brought into a direct mentorship with one of the Incunabula planners and a very specific succession process is begun, which usually lasts for about ten years. When the person is in his mid-twenties his loyalty is tested in every conceivable manner over the next five years. If he passes these tests, he is allowed to preview the inner workings of the Incunabula. For most, this is near their thirty-third birthday.

"At this point, a new identity is transferred to the person and they die – quite literally – so far as their family and friends are concerned. These deaths are arranged as covers

for their new identities and usually involve drowning or a fire accident, where physical evidence is minimal. Prior to their arranged death, insurance policies, if they exist, are cancelled to ensure minimal investigation, and usually the death is staged during a trip to a specific third-world country where police investigators are more easily controlled.

"After their death event, the new planner is inducted in a secret ceremony that I do not have details of. This inner circle becomes the surrogate family for the new planner, and as they develop in their skills, insights, intuition, and knowledge base, they develop a very protective sensibility to the longstanding goals and objectives of the Incunabula."

Sarah:

"Okay, but don't they ultimately get married and have children? How do they keep all of this separate? I mean how do you go to work during the day and plan the future of the world and then come home to dinner with the wife and kids?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The planners are not married. It's frowned on by the Incunabula. It is one of the tests I mentioned that they undergo in their mid-twenties."

Sarah:

"So it's a priesthood?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Not at all. No one is asked to be celibate, but the role of the planner is all consuming. It requires minimal distractions and commitments outside of their role as planners. It's a sacrifice and it heightens loyalty within the circle of planners."

Sarah:

"How do they find future planners if they don't have children?"

Dr. Neruda:

"There are only five to eight planners at any one time within the Incunabula. Five is the core number, but there are usually two or three in training as well, but these do not have voting powers. I mention this because it is a very small number. Now, as to your question, candidates are identified early on – usually when the person is a teenager."

Sarah:

"Is this as a result of them doing something noteworthy or does it result from something else?"

Dr. Neruda:

"They are, with rare exception, identified as a result of their genetics."

Sarah:

"How is this done?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It's a result of extensive tracking of lineages and genetic traits – including mutations. This is something that is well understood by the Incunabula, and is given a significant amount of time and investment. Genetic candidates are identified and observed over a period of about three years before any contact is made."

Sarah:

"How many, at any one time, are being tracked?"

Dr. Neruda:

"About fifty in number, but out of every generation only two or three are chosen."

Sarah:

"And those that aren't chosen don't even know they were passed over?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes, that's correct."

Sarah:

"How did the planners come about? I mean, how did they rise to leadership?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The Incunabula came to its power as a result of the inefficiencies of the intelligence community to gather information and position its strategic value relative to the long-term crises that were forming on the horizon as they pertained to the global economy."



"Shortly after the second World War, many nations, including the United States, restructured or initiated their intelligence organizations – particularly as it related to foreign policy intelligence gathering.

"However, these organizations were still locked into the cold war mentality and didn't formally share intelligence as a result. The Incunabula arose out of a need to consolidate global intelligence as the best means to strategically maneuver the nation states to a unified platform of commerce."

Sarah:

"So it was less about saving the world than it was about making money, at least initially?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes."

Sarah:

"But how did it all start? I mean who decided it would be a good idea to create an organization that shared intelligence?"

Dr. Neruda:

"If I gave you his name, it wouldn't mean anything to you. I assure you his name is not recorded in any directory or reference material you could research."

Sarah:

"But there was only one person that started this organization?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No. There were five men that started it, but one sparked the vision."

Sarah:

"As you're talking I can't help but think that these planners sound a lot like the Hollywood portrayal of the antichrist. I mean don't they wield a god-like power? And yet I haven't heard you say anything about a religious connection."

Dr. Neruda:

"I think the power they wield is directed at the survival of humanity. They're not evil in the sense that they're intent on destroying earth or humanity. They're trying to guide humanity to new systems before the old systems decay and create the conditions that could bring annihilation to a substantial percentage of the species."

"The choices of a fragmented state leadership or anarchy are not suitable systems for modern, civilized man. They invariably lead to imbalance and an inability to move from the old system to the new system. Before the advent of long-range missile technology, nuclear, biological and chemical weapons, this migration of the human race from one system to another was not as critical. But the chasm that exists between systems as complex as economies and energy, and in light of modern weapons technology, the Incunabula serve a vital role."

Sarah:

"Do the planners believe in God?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I presume they believe in a higher power. Perhaps they don't call it God because of the religious overtones contained in that word, but they certainly are aware of the unification force because Fifteen has acquainted the present generation of planners with the LERM technology."

Sarah:

"That's interesting. So they've all seen LERM and know how it works?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes, to your first question, but I don't believe they understand how it works at the micro-factual level."

Sarah:

"When someone – like the Incunabula planners – interact with LERM, assuming they didn't believe in God beforehand, in other words they're an atheist, does it convert them?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Again, it depends on the definition of God. If they don't believe in God as defined by a certain religion, and then experience LERM, they will not be persuaded by LERM to believe in the religious version of God."

Sarah:

"I think I followed your explanation, but what I mean is different. Assume they didn't believe in any higher power,

that the universe is a big mechanical formation that became the way it did by some evolutionary quirk. Would someone of this mindset become a believer that there's a force orchestrating things – even if you don't choose to call it God?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Everyone who has undertaken the LERM experience concludes that a unifying intelligence pervades the universe in every measurable dimension, and that this intelligence is both personal and universal simultaneously, and because of this feature, it is absolute, unique, singular.

"It's a life-changing experience even if you already believe in God. You are converted, as you put it, no matter how strong or weak your previous beliefs in God were."

Sarah:

"It's too bad you didn't bring this technology with you when you defected... I'd love to experience this.

"So, back to the Incunabula for a moment, it would make me feel better if I knew they believed in God, and you're saying they do. Right?"

Dr. Neruda:

"They believe in this unifying intelligence that I spoke of, and I suspect that if you asked them, they would tell you that they're guided and perhaps even inspired by this intelligent force. I don't know if they would call it God or some other name. But I trust they are believers in what some would call the unification force."

Sarah:

"But it's not like a religion to them?"

Dr. Neruda:

"That's correct. I know of nothing that would suggest that the Incunabula planners follow a specified religion or desire to start one for that matter.

Sarah:

"I don't know why I'm asking all these questions tonight, but it's fascinating to hear more details about the Incunabula. I find it an irresistible topic.

"How is it that you know so much about such a secretive organization?"

Dr. Neruda:

"As I mentioned previously, the ACIO is a major contractor with the Incunabula and receives funding and support from them, including shared intelligence and mutual protection. As a result of this longstanding relationship, directors at the ACIO have considerable insight into the organization. Fifteen is not a planner, but is held in very high esteem by the planners and meets with them perhaps once or twice a year.

"Fifteen is well aware of the objectives of the planners, and he shares his insights with members of the Labyrinth Group. We also discuss how the Incunabula's plans might bear on our own. The Incunabula is a factor in the ACIO plans, but they don't dominate its agenda."

Sarah:

"How much do the Incunabula know about the WingMakers and the Ancient Arrow site?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Very little, as far as I know. Fifteen begrudgingly provides some information to his direct agency supervisor, but the NSA is not aware of the Ancient Arrow site. There are two operatives within the NSA that are aware of the original artifact that was found, but Fifteen placed the existence of this artifact in question due to its self-destruction."

Sarah:

"I assume from your response that whatever is shared with the NSA, at least in the case of the ACIO, it is shared with the Incunabula planners."

Dr. Neruda:

"No. There are information filters that reduce clutter. Only certain information, as deemed necessary by Fifteen, is forwarded up the command chain to the Incunabula planners."

Sarah:

"The WingMakers are understood to be a force to be reckoned with, correct?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Do you mean by the Incunabula planners?"

Sarah:

"Yes."

Dr. Neruda:

"The planners know about the Central Race and the legend pertaining to their existence. There are several important references to them in various books and prophecy, so even if the ACIO didn't share anything of their discovery in New Mexico, the Incunabula – especially its planners – are well aware of the Central Race."

Sarah:

"Why did Fifteen choose not to share the Ancient Arrow discovery with either the NSA or the Incunabula?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Fifteen designed the Labyrinth Group largely for security reasons. Information that pertains to BST is held in the highest secrecy. As I mentioned earlier, Fifteen was hopeful that the Ancient Arrow site, and the other related sites, would somehow accelerate the successful deployment of BST.

"It's a simple matter of not wanting to alert the Incunabula, or the NSA for that matter, to the technology prowess of the Labyrinth Group. If they knew what the Labyrinth Group had in terms of technology, the planners would want to have detailed knowledge of this technology, and Fifteen doesn't trust anyone outside his directors with this knowledge."

Sarah:

"The part that I find bewildering in all of this is that you have all of this knowledge about the universe,

extraterrestrials, global plans, and futuristic technologies, and because you have this knowledge you're essentially a prisoner now."

Dr. Neruda:

"I prefer conscientious defector."

Sarah:

"Whatever you call it, you've got to be a little paranoid about the remote viewing capabilities of the ACIO and their various technologies. How can you outrun the ACIO or the Incunabula if they're anywhere as powerful as you say they are?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I don't know that I can evade them. I don't feel invincible or vulnerable. I'm simply operating on a moment-to-moment basis, trying my best to transfer what I know so you can help me publish this information.

"It's never been done before – to defect from the ACIO. I know Fifteen is searching for me, I can actually feel this."

Sarah:

"You mean you can feel when they use their remote viewing technology?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes."

Sarah:



"How often have you detected this since you left?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I'd prefer not to say how many instances, but I'm aware of each incident."

Sarah:

"Have you ever felt this during our interview?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No. I would stop the interview if this were the case."

Sarah:

"How would this help?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I would prefer that they not hear our conversation – even its general tone."

Sarah:

"Is this why we meet at the times we do?"

[Note: Our meetings were always in a different place, late at night, and they were often outdoors in non-descript places. This was the case in this fourth interview.]

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes."

Sarah:

"So how do you protect yourself and me?"

Dr. Neruda:

"By meeting at odd hours and changing locations, at least until you can get these interviews published on the Internet."

Sarah:

"How will this help you exactly? I know we've had this discussion before, but I still don't understand how this information will help you if it gets into the public domain. It seems to me that it would only anger them."

Dr. Neruda:

"They won't be pleased at this disclosure – there's no doubt in this. However, it will not touch them in any significant way because very few in power will believe what I share with you, assuming they even read it."

Sarah:

"And why is this?"

Dr. Neruda:

"They are totally consumed in their own agendas and personal dramas. The information I'm disclosing defies categorization. It ranges from poetry to physics, from esoteric philosophy to the conspiratorial forces within MIC (the Military Industrial Complex). And because it defies categorization, it will be difficult to critique and analyze. Most will consider it an interesting piece of entertainment and leave it at that.

"Also, and more importantly, there's a real feeling of acceptance because intelligentsia and the political body of

dissent don't feel equipped to stop what is presumed to be the inevitable. There are those within both of these groups that have a general awareness of what is emerging, but feel completely powerless to change it, and there is a sense of fate that accompanies their silence.

"The ones that will find it most disturbing are the planners within the Incunabula, and Fifteen himself, and not because politicians or the media will be stepping into their arena, but because they don't want their secrets revealed to their followers, or, in the case of Fifteen, to the planners of the Incunabula or his contacts at the NSA."

Sarah:

"So this is a purpose of these disclosures – to infuriate the Incunabula planners and your boss?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No. I don't have any vested interest in making their lives more difficult. It's simply a result of my candid disclosure that they will undergo the resulting pressures from their constituents. This is the only thing that they'll find unpleasant in this whole disclosure. Once the information is out I will be less an interest, other than for pure analysis."

Sarah:

"Pure analysis?"

Dr. Neruda:

"What I mean is that the ACIO – Fifteen in particular – will want to analyze what went wrong in their security system to ensure that another defection will not take place.

There's always the lurking fear that one successful defection would encourage others. If they captured me, they would be able to do a more thorough analysis on the psychological state, precipitating factors, methods of evasion, and so on."

Sarah:

"You've talked before about the website. What is it that you want to achieve with this?"

Dr. Neruda:

"To simply make available what the WingMakers have left behind. It will not threaten the ACIO or the Incunabula. It would be impossible to do so, and they know that I understand this. I can only cause a temporary embarrassment at best, but they can manage their way through that.

"As I've said from the beginning, I wanted to share this information from the Ancient Arrow site and any subsequent sites that I can."

Sarah:

"Any subsequent sites? Are you planning to find additional sites?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I believe there are seven sites on earth. I also believe they can be found."

Sarah:

"How, exactly?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I can't disclose this."

Sarah:

"Have you found something within the Ancient Arrow artifacts that gives you directions?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Again, I don't want to disclose the details of this."

Sarah:

"Okay.

"Since we landed on the topic of the artifacts, I'm reminded that in our last session you mentioned that you'd like us to talk about the artifacts from the Ancient Arrow site. This might be a good time to do so. Where would you like to begin?"

Dr. Neruda:

"One of the most interesting artifacts was the original homing device."

Sarah:

"This is the one found by the students at the University of New Mexico?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes. It was enigmatic in all respects."

Sarah:

"Give me some examples."

Dr. Neruda:

"When it was first discovered, it was laying on top of the ground as if it had been placed there. This was not a buried object – as it should have been. It was left in the open, albeit in a very non-descript section of northern New Mexico. When the students handled it, it immediately induced vivid hallucinations, which they couldn't understand."

Sarah:

"What kind of hallucinations?"

Dr. Neruda:

"They saw images of a cave-like structure. It later turned out to be the Ancient Arrow site, but of course they didn't know what it was, and were afraid of it because they linked the hallucinations to touching the object. So they wrapped the object up in a jacket, stuck it in their backpack, and brought it to a professor at the University, who examined it. We discovered it within hours afterwards and dispatched a team to secure the artifact."

Sarah:

"How exactly did you find out about the artifact? I assume the ACIO isn't listed in the phone directory."

Dr. Neruda:

"There are certain keywords that are monitored in e-mail and phone communications – especially within academia. The ACIO simply taps into this technology that was developed by the NSA, and can intercept e-mails and

phone calls anywhere in the world that relate to key words that it monitors."

Sarah:

"Like Alien or Extraterrestrial?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes. It actually works a little differently because the ACIO can define how many characters – in the case of e-mail, or how much time – in the case of a phone conversation – it wants to monitor on either side of the key word, and then extracts entire sentences or even paragraphs in an effort to verify context. It also correlates this to the e-mail's IP address or phone number to a credibility index. If all of these variables meet a specified level, the communication event is relayed to analysts at the ACIO who then perform more invasive techniques to ensure context and content are matched and verified. All of these steps can take place in a matter of an hour or two."

Sarah:

"And once you have this information verified you swoop in and take possession of whatever you want?"

Dr. Neruda:

"We have uncovered our most important discoveries in this very manner since this system was activated, and the ACIO operates differently depending on the situation. In this case, operatives were dispatched to the professor's office posing as NSA agents in search of a missing experimental weapon. It was believed by the professor to be in his own best interest to release the object without

delay since the artifact was deemed to be imminently dangerous."

Sarah:

"I'm surprised. Didn't he wonder how you knew he had it?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I'm sure he did, but there's an element of shock that the operatives make use of and they're also highly skilled in the use of mind control. I'm sure he was very cooperative. The artifact was secured without any major objection by the professor or the University."

Sarah:

"If I contacted the University of New Mexico would I be able to confirm that this occurred?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No. Every event of this kind is com-cleared, which is an ACIO term, meaning contracts are signed and all communications are monitored for one year to ensure compliance."

Sarah:

"So they signed contracts and won't talk because of a piece of paper? That seems a bit outlandish."

Dr. Neruda:

"Do you know the penalty for treason?"

Sarah:



"No, I mean I understand it's not a good thing and all, but I just find it a little strange that someone like a learned professor would be intimidated by a signed contract. What about the students that originally found it, are they also com-cleared?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes."

Sarah:

"Okay, back to the artifact. What happened when you retrieved it? What was your role specifically?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I was asked to lead a team to assess the artifact using our internal Sanitaire process."

Sarah:

"What's this process do?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Whenever an extraterrestrial artifact is recovered, it's initially put through the Sanitaire process, or what we sometimes referred to as the 'I-steps', which includes four stages of analysis. The first is Inspection where we examine the object's exterior and map its exterior features in our computer. The next is Inference, which is the stage where we take the results of stage one and compute the probable applications of the object. The third stage is Intervention, which is related to any issues that pertain to the defense or security mode of the object. And the last

stage is Invasion, which simply means we try to access the inner workings of the object and find out how it operates."

Sarah:

"How difficult was it to go through this four-step process with this artifact?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It was one of the most difficult we had ever examined."

Sarah:

"Why?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It was designed for a very specific purpose and unless it was used for this purpose, it was completely impenetrable to our examinations."

Sarah:

"Didn't the hallucinations affect you?"

Dr. Neruda:

"We knew of the hallucinations reported by the students who recovered the artifact, but we didn't find any evidence of this at all in our labs. We assumed the students were imagining this due to the unusual nature of the artifact.

"It wasn't until later that we discovered that the very subtle markings on the exterior of the object were actually three dimensional topographical maps. Once we overlaid these to real maps of the area in which the object

was found, we uncovered its real purpose, which was a homing beacon.

"The hallucinations were site-specific, which is to say that there was a proximity effect encoded within the artifact that caused it to operate when two conditions were present. First, the object needed to be within the geographical range of its map coordinates – as etched on its casing – and two, it needed to be held in a human's hands in order for its guidance system to activate."

Sarah:

"And by guidance system you're talking about the hallucinations?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes."

Sarah:

"And throughout this whole process you didn't know where this artifact came from, right?"

Dr. Neruda:

"We knew it was extraterrestrial and we knew it was situated."

Sarah:

"What do you mean by situated?"

Dr. Neruda:

"That it was placed there to be found."

Sarah:

"Who do you think did this?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Representatives of the Central Race."

Sarah:

"So what happened next after you realized it was a homing beacon?"

Dr. Neruda:

"A team was dispatched to the area and we essentially followed the device to the interior structure of the Ancient Arrow site, which you're already aware of."

Sarah:

"You said earlier that this artifact was the most amazing of the entire find. If it was simply a homing device, then the other artifacts I assume were fairly mundane."

Dr. Neruda:

"To be more accurate, I can't say it was the most interesting since I defected before all the other artifacts were sent through the I-Steps process, but it was a very advanced technology and one of the most enigmatic we had come across in quite a while."

"For example, once our team came within a certain distance of the site, the artifact animated under some undetermined energy source and scanned our group. It was literally reading our bodies and minds, presumably to determine if we were suitable to discover the site."

Sarah:

"And if you weren't suitable?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It was never discussed, but I think everyone assumed it would probably have destroyed the site and all those present at the time of the scanning. As it was, it only destroyed itself."

Sarah:

"And you had no idea that it was capable of these feats when you examined it?"

Dr. Neruda:

"None whatsoever. Its casing was resistant to all of our invasive analyses. It was a real source of frustration. In fact, the artifact in the 23rd chamber was similarly vexing and required significantly more resources to complete the I-Steps process."

Sarah:

"Are these the only two artifacts from the site that you've completed the I-Steps process?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes, prior to my defection. But there were artifacts in every chamber, although the one discovered in chamber twenty-three seemed the most important."

Sarah:

"And why was that?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Remember that I described the interior of the site as a helix-shaped tunnel system?"

Sarah:

"Yes."

Dr. Neruda:

"The uppermost chamber was the 23rd chamber and in it was the optical disc. While the other chambers held artifacts similar in size and composition to the homing artifact, the artifact in the twenty-third chamber was an optical disc that had a degree of familiarity to it, and we considered it the key to the entire site."

Sarah:

"Because it was so different from the other artifacts?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes. It was also the highest chamber in the formation and it was unique in its structure in that it was the only chamber that was unfinished."

Sarah:

"I understand that all the information you showed me came from the disc, and I know you've explained in some detail about how you were able to decode the information, but you've alluded tonight that something within this site points to the location of six other sites. Can you elaborate on this at all?"

Dr. Neruda:

"There's nothing in this information that points to the location of the other six sites. However, I believe there is, encoded within this information, location markers to the next site."

Sarah:

"You mean the sites are supposed to be discovered in a specific order one at a time?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I believe so."

Sarah:

"Can you give me some hints as to where the next site is, based on your analysis?"

Dr. Neruda:

"If I gave you some information, you would need to promise that this interview would not be released until I contacted you and confirmed it was okay to do so. Would you agree with this?"

Sarah:

"Certainly. I would honor anything you asked."

Dr. Neruda:

"There is an ancient temple just outside of the city of Cusco, Peru called Sacsayhuaman. It is somewhere near this temple that the next site will be found."

Sarah:

"And do you know where exactly, or are you simply saying near to be evasive."

Dr. Neruda:

"No, I believe I know the exact coordinates, but this detail I won't disclose."

Sarah:

"This is your homeland isn't it?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes, I grew up not too far from this area."

Sarah:

"Have you been to this site before?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No, but I'm somewhat familiar with the city of Cusco."

Sarah:

"This question may seem to come out of left field, and I'd understand if you don't want to answer it, but why do you think the Central Race would design a defensive system upon earth and then leave its discovery and activation to an organization like the ACIO?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I don't think it was left in the hands of the ACIO to find and activate these sites."

Sarah:

"You, then?"



Dr. Neruda:

"I'm not able to say at this time."

Dr. Neruda:

"But you're certainly an important part of this aren't you?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I hope so."

Sarah:

"Okay, here's another left curve.

"Why are five men – the Incunabula planners – allowed to control the destiny of humanity? I mean it's only five men and we're five billion world citizens. No one elected these guys, and virtually no one knows who these guys are, what their plans are, capabilities, insights, or even if they truly have our best interests at heart.

"After hearing your story tonight, I'm left with this sense of indignation that five guys – no matter how well intentioned – are deciding the fate of humanity and no one knows who they are!

"At least with politicians I can see them, hear them talk on television, and get to know their unique personalities. There's a comfort in this. Whether I believe them all the time, well, that's a different story, but most of the ones I've voted for I think are good and honorable people."

Dr. Neruda:

"When you ask the question, 'allowed' to run the world, whom are you referring to?"

Sarah:

"Doesn't the Central Race have something to say about this? Afterall, as you mentioned the other night, all of these seven ancient sites are part of a defensive weapon designed to protect the earth. They also placed this homing device in clear sight for the ACIO to uncover, which proves they're interacting with us in our present time. Wouldn't the Central Race need to allow these planners to have such authority over humanity's destiny?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Let me try to answer your question this way.

"Presidents and senators, congressmen and governors, presidential cabinets and military leaders, all ebb and flow, which is to say, they have their influence for a period of years, and then they move aside for others to take their place. Their agendas express short-term power to pass new legislation, appoint new judges, or amend laws. They are so focused on the politics of the near-term that they lose sight of the importance of the long term.

"The Incunabula planners have the safety of permanence and place their whole focus on the long-term objectives of humanity. This is the nature of the Incunabula. They bring continuity to the major issues of our time and the times to come for the next three generations. They operate in this realm to ensure they are not influenced by the short-term goals of special interest.

"As to your question about who 'allows' them to perform this function, I'd have to say that no one does. No one has control or authority over the planners, no more than anyone has control or authority over Fifteen or the Labyrinth Group."

Sarah:

"What about the Central Race, though? Doesn't it stand to reason that they know about these planners and watch them? I thought you said earlier that this unification force, or God, advises them or something like that. Didn't you make this comment?"

Dr. Neruda:

"What I meant is that the Incunabula planners believe in this force that unifies all sentient life throughout time and space. They believe very strongly in their personal destinies or they would never have been placed in the position of a planner. It is a very esteemed position despite its anonymity.

"I have no doubt that the Central Race is aware of the Incunabula planners and perhaps there is even some influence or exchange. I don't know. As I said before, my knowledge of the planners is based exclusively on the reports from Fifteen."

Sarah:

"So it's possible that Fifteen made all of this up?"

Dr. Neruda:

"You mean about the planners?"

Sarah:

"Isn't it possible?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No. But it's possible that his perception is not completely accurate, though I doubt it. Fifteen's ability to grasp the character of someone is uncanny. He understands human psychology better than those writing the textbooks. I think it would be impossible for the planners to pull the wool over his eyes without him being aware of it."

Sarah:

"But you said you never met these planners – only Fifteen has..."

Dr. Neruda:

"I understand your concern about the validity of this. If I could give you names to check out, or some other form of proof, I would. These organizations exist right up to the Incunabula, and they can be traced and researched. Certainly many journalists and researchers have done so regarding Freemasonry or Skull and Bones, and some with good success. But they never look at the broader order and what organization manages these larger, more abstract forces that make up the Triad of Power."

Sarah:

"But why?"

Dr. Neruda:

"There's nothing to drill into. There's no research traction. The organization is purposely abstract and amorphous."

Sarah:

"But leaders like Clinton and Blair, aren't they really pulling the strings? How do the planners within the Incunabula have greater power than these leaders who are signing new legislation into law or deciding whether we go to war or not? It just doesn't make sense."

Dr. Neruda:

"Everything within a democracy is consensus and the game is designed to shift consensual opinion and fix it on a specific galvanizing target. If there's sufficient resonance with the people, the shift can be manipulated. If there is not, the political will is stymied. Leadership all over the world, unless it's in a country like North Korea, is bound to this certainty, and nation's leaders are generally well schooled to operate within this reality.

"Yes, the world's leaders appear to wield a great deal of power, but it is really aggression – not power. True power is contained in the acts of implementing a plan that is designed to enhance or optimize the position of humanity relative to its environment, and to protect it from formidable threats. The key word is humanity, which is an analogue for the collective soul of every person on the planet. It is not defined by ethnicity or geographical boundaries.

"World leaders apply aggression to achieve their agendas, which always include a healthy dose of state

greed and self-aggrandizement. The concept of humanity is not a critical ingredient in their agenda. Their power, if that's what you want to call it, is a collective will of a small inner circle of political zealots who want to secure the benefits of their power for themselves first, their state second, and their citizens third."

Sarah:

"That's a pretty strong condemnation of our political system, assuming I understand you correctly."

Dr. Neruda:

"Then I would say you understand me quite well."

Sarah:

"So our political leaders lack real power because they're absorbed in state agendas that exclude humanity as a whole?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Please understand that I'm not condemning the individual leaders so much as I am the provincial state system, which has been engineered to excite nationalism. The individual leaders assume the identity of the state system, which is largely contrived around the single concept of patriotism."

Sarah:

"So now you're saying patriotism is the problem? I'm confused."

Dr. Neruda:

"Patriotism is the state catalyst. It is the means by which citizens are stirred to a response. It is also the means by which leaders are directed to respond to issues or threats. Under this singular banner, wars have been prosecuted and aggression veiled. It's the ideal method that the state uses to enjoin its citizens to support its leadership.

"I'm saying that the citizens' identification with the state, or patriotism, is the real stumbling block to effectively deal with the issues of humanity. The individual leaders are simply pawns within this structure that was engineered as a means to colonize the weaker states."

Sarah:

"I think my brain can only handle one more question and than I'd like to call it quits for tonight. Okay with you?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes, whatever you'd like."

Sarah:

"In this whole discussion tonight – most of which has been centered on the Incunabula or, maybe more appropriately I should call it the world power structure – I don't hear much about the spiritual implications. It really sounds oddly impersonal and unspiritual, if that's a word. Can you comment on this?"

Dr. Neruda:

"What is occurring in our world is a manifestation of how a species migrates from statehood to species-hood. It is a stage within the migration plan. Humans must move

from the patriotic, believe-what-I-am-told mentality, and elevate their thinking to encompass and embrace the holistic community of humankind. It will require enormous leadership capacity in order to accomplish the conclusion of this migration, because the world's people will require a watershed event to erase its memory."

Sarah:

"Hold on a moment. What do you mean to erase its memory?"

Dr. Neruda:

"There's a persistent memory in the psyche of humans – particularly the weaker cultures that have been trampled on by nations bent on colonization. These grievous indignations to the weaker nations of the world have left a deep mark on their collective memory. It's vital that this memory be erased or purged in order for humankind to become unified in its governance and fundamental systems.

"This event can be orchestrated or it may occur through natural means, but it's generally agreed that an event must arise that galvanizes the world's people to unite, and in this process, purge the memory of all peoples, but especially those who have been dealt with as victims of colonization."

Sarah:

"I know I just said I was only good for one more question, but as a journalist I can't resist this line of thought. Give me some examples of what kind of event you're talking about?"



Dr. Neruda:

"The most probable event with global implications is an energy shortage."

Sarah:

"This is what you said earlier, but wouldn't an energy shortage only create more friction between the haves and have-nots?"

Dr. Neruda:

"If it were managed properly, no. The kind of energy shortage I'm talking about will have devastating effects on every aspect of our world. All infrastructures would be impacted, and the impact would be harsh and persistent. A global body to regulate production and distribution of existing resources, coupled to a well-managed search for alternative, renewable sources would become a necessity of this condition.

"Still behind the scenes, the Incunabula would help to manage this event in such a way as to restore equality to the world's people. It would stand above the special interests and dominant powers, and ensure fairness. This fairness would establish its instrument of global leadership as the preeminent force for globalization, and the memory of all would – metaphorically speaking – be erased."

Sarah:

"Is this my answer for where's the spiritual in all of this?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No. Admittedly I got sidetracked a bit.

"Also, I want to make the disclaimer that what I'm disclosing is the broad concept, and anyone reading these disclosures in the future, I hope you will bear this in mind. I'm not able, owing to the circumstances and time constraint, to provide a detailed rendering. However, these details do exist and when one has the luxury of studying them, all of what I am disclosing will appear more plausible.

"Now, regarding your question. The spiritual element is very strongly integrated to the whole theme of tonight's discussion. If I were to sum it up, I'd call it the human migration plan. Humankind is evolving on one level, and migrating on another.

"In the instance of its evolution, humans are becoming more advanced technologically speaking with the ability to multi-process more sophisticated visual, aural, and intellectual data. In other words, the brain system is changing to become more holistic in how it processes information. Computers are a big part of this evolutionary track.

"Humans are also migrating from separation by means of statehood, to unification through globalism. This is a completely different but related track. Humankind is coalescing, even though it may not seem like it because we continue to have wars and conflicts throughout the globe. It's happening in micro-steps."

Sarah:

"And the spiritual?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes, thank you. The spiritual is that these two tracks are leading humankind to something that the WingMakers call the Grand Portal. It is the connection to our human soul, which has been broken into hundreds of pieces and strewn across the globe in the form of different colors, cultures, languages, and geographies, and is now in the process of an unalterable reunion.

"This is the spiritual aspect, and it touches everything in our lives. It penetrates every single atom of our collective existence, imbuing it with a destiny that is yet unseen."

Sarah:

"You just mentioned the Grand Portal. What is it?"

Dr. Neruda:

"In the glossary found on the optical disc, it talks about this—"

Sarah:

"Just so you know I did read the section of the glossary you gave me, but only once, and it didn't stick with me too well. Can you explain it again, please?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The Grand Portal, according to the WingMakers, is the indisputable, scientific discovery of the human soul."

Sarah:

"Sort of like LERM isn't it?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Similar, but LERM is more the demonstration that the unification force exists and interpenetrates all dimensions of existence. It is the proof of spirit, if you will. The human soul remains elusive to our technology."

Sarah:

"But you're not saying that soul and spirit are different are you because I was always taught that soul and spirit are essentially one and the same thing."

Dr. Neruda:

"Soul, or what the WingMakers refer to as the Wholeness Navigator, is the replica of First Source (God), only compartmentalized into a singular, immortal, and wholly individualized personality. Spirit is more of the connecting force that unifies the individual soul with First Source and all other souls."

Sarah:

"I'm not sure I followed that description, but it may be that my mind is saturated right now and nothing you said would get through my thick skull."

"Anyway, what will be gained by having this discovery... the Grand Portal?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Everything that keeps us separate – locked in statehood and provincial concerns – will be obliterated when this undeniable proof is obtained."

Sarah:

"Why would the basic nature of man, which has taken hundreds of thousands of years to form, suddenly change when science steps forward and announces that it has proven the existence of soul? It doesn't seem plausible to me."

Dr. Neruda:

"According to the WingMakers this is the evolutionary path of the human species, and the discovery of the Grand Portal is the culmination of a global species. It creates the conditions whereby the things that separate us are stripped away, whether they're color, race, form, geography, religion, or anything else. We find ourselves staring into the lens of science and we see that all humans are composed of the same inner substance – whatever you choose to call it – and it is this that truly defines us and our capabilities."

Sarah:

"So everything we've been talking about tonight... the globalization of humankind culminates in this discovery? Is that what you're saying?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes."

Sarah:

"And the Incunabula planners will be there, waiting to guide us. Is that also part of the plan?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I don't know if there'll be a role for the Incunabula in this new world. Perhaps, perhaps not."

Sarah:

"If an individual would experience this Grand Portal and establish for themselves that they are composed of a soul – an immortal soul – wouldn't it profoundly change the way in which they live? I mean I'm just starting to think of the ramifications, and they're kind of scary."

"For example, what if someone saw that they don't really die. Wouldn't that change their attitude towards death in such a way that they no longer fear it? Perhaps people would become more reckless and daring, more dangerous."

Dr. Neruda:

"Some may. There will undoubtedly be many different reactions, and I don't pretend to know how it will all be managed."

Sarah:

"Another thing I find interesting in this whole thing is the role of science versus religion. It seems that religion has tried its best to define soul and failed. Whatever its definitions, they seem to be based entirely on faith, and there's no real consistency in the model. This Grand Portal is a scientific discovery, not a religious one. Correct?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes."

Sarah:

"So science will get a try. What if they fail as well? Maybe there's something so elusive, so hidden in all of this that science does no better. I mean I know some people who can be shown something and they will deny it with all their strength. How do you convince someone who doesn't want to see it?"

Dr. Neruda:

"You can think of the Grand Portal as the interface for the consciousness of vertical time. This interface will be discovered sometime in the 21st century. I don't know all the details. I don't know how it will impact on the individual. You may be right; some will accept it and some will not. I only know it is part of the destiny that humankind is led to achieve."

Sarah:

"According to the WingMakers?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes."

Sarah:

"Did you know about this prior to reading the glossary?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Do you mean did I know about the existence of the Grand Portal?"

Sarah:

"Yes, that, or simply the technology to prove the existence of the human soul. Was it being planned or worked on by the ACIO?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No."

Sarah:

"Are there any other organizations working on this proof – even now?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Not that I know of."

Sarah:

"If no one's trying to discover this Grand Portal, who will?"

Dr. Neruda:

"That's why I want to get these materials out. The WingMakers' materials are designed to activate those souls that are incarnating who will play active roles in the discovery and creation of the Grand Portal—"

Sarah:

"Are you saying that souls are incarnating specifically for this purpose?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes. There are very advanced souls who are incarnating in the next three generations who will design, develop, and employ the Grand Portal. This is the central



purpose of the WingMakers' materials stored within these seven sites."

Sarah:

"I thought you said they were a defensive weapon?"

Dr. Neruda:

"That's one role, but there is another as well. And I believe it has to do with the artistic elements. They are encoded. They are catalysts of consciousness. I'm convinced of this based on my own experience."

Sarah:

"I've read many of these writings, and listened to the music. I like it, but it hasn't catalyzed anything in me. I certainly don't feel like I want to help design or build the Grand Portal, not that I have the mental capacity to contribute anything of value."

Dr. Neruda:

"Perhaps your role is different."

Sarah:

"Or I have no role at all. Maybe you have to have the qualities inside you before the materials can activate anything. And in my case, I have this feeling that there's nothing there to awaken."

"Well, as much as I'm tempted to dive into more information about this Grand Portal, I think my mind has reached its full ration for the night. Let's plan to talk more about the Grand Portal in our next interview. Okay?"

Dr. Neruda:

"That's fine with me."

Sarah:

"Anything you want to say before we sign off?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes.

"If you, the reader, wonder how the information I've presented about the Incunabula relates to all of the various conspiracy theories about the New World Order, intelligence community, Illuminati, Freemasonry, and all the other supposed clandestine organizations of the world, I would respectfully ask you to suspend your prior notions about the motivations of these various groups.

"These are not evil-minded organizations regardless of how some portray them. Their members have children and families just like you, and they take pleasure and disgust in the very same things as you do. They are humans with all the same weaknesses for vice and greed, but they also have a strong energy to improve the world, it is simply that their definition of what a better world is may differ from yours.

"If your interest is to conjure an antagonist for your amusement, that's your prerogative. But the issues I've related tonight are too serious to be amusing. They are deserving of your attention and discernment. Do your own investigation into the energy supplies of our world. You may come up with different numbers than what I mentioned, but only because the technology of the ACIO is more advanced than the petroleum industry.

Nonetheless, you'll see confirmation of this general condition.

"Look at the current events of your time whenever you read this interview. You'll see how this plan is progressing. It may seem to take detours, but the general course is what I've described. It is moving in this direction not out of accident or because of the whims of the world's leaders, you can be sure. It is all part of the orchestration of events that are played out according to the well-designed blueprints of the Incunabula planners.

"You may feel a certain anguish that you're being led to a future not of your choosing, but if you want to have influence, then you need to be educated and aware of the real forces that are defining your future. This is a free-will universe. There is no hierarchy of angelic beings guiding the destiny of earth. There is no ascended master who dictates the pathway to enlightenment for humanity or the individual.

"If you truly want to express and apply your freewill, make it a personal religion to know the facts. Learn how to look behind the stories that are being sold by the media and politicians, and form your own conclusions. Keep your doubt intact about everything you're told from the political stage, especially when you're induced to be patriotic. It is one of the clearest signals to be suspicious of what you're being told.

"When enemies are created – especially new ones, be wary of the motivations of those who claim them to be enemies. Investigate the facts. Look under all the rocks and verify your evidence. Each of you must become

investigators and learn the art of research and analytical study if you want to feel more a part of the movement to globalization.

"Your insights and understandings may not change humanity's course one millimeter, but it will change your ability to feel a part of this migration and have a sense of where humanity is moving and why.

"And to those who prefer to strike out on their own path and believe that globalism is pure folly, I can only explain to you that it must happen. It is the outward expression of who we are and it is the natural progression of our species to unify around the inner essence of our identity, instead of the outer façade of our particular nation or religious belief.

"I believe everyone understands this to varying degrees, but it is the methods of this unification that concern people. And I share this concern. If we're collectively informed about the plan and understand the end-goal is something that holds a great promise for humanity, we can pursue this goal with greater velocity and with added confidence that the methods will be in everyone's best interest. This must be our goal.

"And finally, many of you may feel that globalization is a concept of the New World Order and therefore dismiss it as a movement borne out of greed and the lust for power. Yes, there are always those who will take advantage of this movement to achieve personal gain, but the reason to become a unified people on this earth is far greater than the personal gains of a few. Remember this as you read your conspiracy stories.

"I'm finished, Sarah. Thank you for your indulgence."

Sarah:

"Thank you for your comments."

End of Session

## FIFTH INTERVIEW WITH DR. JAMISSON NERUDA

**By Sarah**

*The Fifth Interview of Dr. Jamisson Neruda exposes a fundamental deception that affects humanity across every dimension of life. This deception is that our three-dimensional reality and human consciousness have been programmed to be perceived as real, when they are not.*

*This is clearly a very bold assertion, and is not made lightly.*

*In this fifth interview, Dr. Neruda explains the forces behind this deception, what their agenda is, how humanity has been enslaved from its inception to today, and what we can do about it. It is, understandably, an unsettling narrative. After all, it exposes a reality where humans are biological hosts of infinite beings, suppressed by deceptive programs designed by entities from a different dimension. Humanity is unaware that we live in a designed reality, and that that designed reality includes... everything.*

*Over the past fifteen years, there have been individuals who have written and spoken about certain aspects of this deception. From the scientific community, individuals like Herman Verlinde, Dr. Robert Lanza, Leonard Susskind, Gerard t'Hooft and James Gates. From the technical field, NASA engineer Thomas Campbell. From a more philosophical perspective, authors like Nick Bostrom and Anthony Peake. Scientific papers, too, have been released*

*in this emerging field of reality definition like: Constraints on the Universe as a Numerical Simulation by Beane, Davoudi and Savage. These individuals, and others like them, are hypothesizing that our universe was designed through mathematics or computer code.*

*This topic is relatively off-limits, reserved for theoretical and heretical thinkers. It shocks people significantly more than the discussions of UFOs or government conspiracies, because it is so fundamental. It is our reality, and the only logical conclusion we can draw is that we are prisoners in a deceptive reality. It makes reality feel like a lab, and we are the unsuspecting lab rats.*

*From the spiritual side, many of our mystics and religious founders have reported that both our perception of the universe, and the universe itself, is an illusion. This theme is consistent in religious and spiritual writings throughout the ages. And while the mystics lacked the scientific vocabulary to define the scope of this illusion, they nevertheless understood that we, as individuals, walk our lives through an illusory world that scientists are increasingly describing as a programmed reality. The question that rises to the top is: 'Who or what is programming our reality and why?'*

*It is to this question that The Fifth Interview of Dr. Jamisson Neruda seeks to answer and explain in layperson terms. It is understandable that those with a scientific or religious training will find this disclosure difficult, if not impossible, to believe. Dr. Neruda is not trying to convince anyone, he merely presents a narrative for how this happened, why it happened, where it is trying to lead*

*humanity, and most importantly, how we can break out of the programming—all of us.*

*This interview is not concentrated on the scientific realm. The science behind the Hologram of Deception is not based on the mathematics or physics of our spacetime. Its complexity and sophistication is well beyond our current understanding, so the attempt to define it in scientific terms would be an impossible undertaking. Even if it were possible, it would only muddle the real import of this information in arcane vocabulary and mathematics.*

*The true focus of the fifth interview isn't the scientific definition of the Hologram of Deception, but rather how we can free ourselves from its pervasive and illusory presence. The Sovereign Integral process is defined in this interview in detail, but you may have to read carefully to hear and understand it. This process is truly the centerpiece of the fifth interview. Whatever philosophical perspective you wish to attach to this information, bear in mind that it is shared in the spirit of oneness and equality, and that the Sovereign Integral process is a decidedly experiential practice.*

*As thought-provoking as the backstory and the chessboard of reality—as depicted herein—may appear, it is the behavioral adjustments that are the real purpose of this disclosure. The WingMakers materials are not focused on knowledge or spiritual experiences; they are dedicated to the new behaviors that support the ongoing unfoldment of the Sovereign Integral process on earth within the human species.*



*It is this process that you are really reading about and experiencing in this interview. Whether you believe in the existence of the Hologram of Deception or not, the Sovereign Integral process remains available as a tool to use in your daily life.*

*What follows is a session I recorded of Dr. Neruda on January 2, 1998. He gave permission for me to record his answers to my questions. This is the transcript of that session. This was one of five times I was able to tape record our conversations. I have preserved these transcripts precisely as they occurred. I've tried my best to include the exact words, phrasing, and grammar used by Dr. Neruda.*

*Editor's Note: This interview (number five) has been unpublished until March 2014. The reason is based on Dr. Neruda's timing; the specific reasons for this timing have not been communicated.*

Sarah:

“What we discussed Wednesday night has been swirling around me ever since. I think I've become a bit obsessed with all of this... what for me, anyway, is new information. I'm trying my best to process it into my mental framework, and I have to admit, I'm not sure it's working.”

Dr. Neruda:

“I understand. I've held back some information for this very reason—not only for you, but also for those who will ultimately read this.”

Sarah:

“When we ended the last session we agreed to spend more time on The Grand Portal. Is that what you’re referring to, or is it something else?”

Dr. Neruda:

“It’s all related. It’s a very, very big picture, and broad timeline.”

Sarah:

“Can you share it now?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Let’s take it one part at a time. With your questions, I hope it will all come clear, but I have to warn you that it will seem a little unwieldy or odd until the whole of it is out.”

Sarah:

“Okay. Where do you want to start?”

Dr. Neruda:

“I think we need to go back to the beginning to understand the true context of The Grand Portal.”

Sarah:

“Okay...”

Dr. Neruda:

“Earth was and is a very unique planet. It was entirely of water originally. But what made it interesting to beings

was the fact that its core enabled it to have a gravitational force that supported manifestation.”

Sarah:

“What do you mean by manifestation?”

Dr. Neruda:

“That it began to traverse from an interdimensional planet of sound frequencies to a planet of matter—of physical matter. Its gravity-producing core or nucleus was able to literally create the conditions that allowed it to materialize itself over eons of time.”

Sarah:

“How do you know this history?”

Dr. Neruda:

“There are records of this on the disc that was taken from the twenty-third chamber at the Ancient Arrow site. But some of this we knew from other documents we’ve retrieved from the Sumerian record that have not been widely distributed. We’ve also had discussions with the Corteum that bear this out.”

Sarah:

“So earth started out as a water planet and it wasn’t physical?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Correct. This was when the Atlanteans lived within the planet. They were the race of beings that inhabited earth at the time of its formation. The Anunnaki came to them and

negotiated an agreement to allow the Anunnaki to mine a substance near the core of the planet that would be—in its essence—what today we would call gold.

“These races of beings known as the Atlanteans and Anunnaki were not three-dimensional. They didn’t possess bodies as we think of them today. Their existence was contained in a different range of frequencies—what we would call higher-dimensional frequencies.”

Sarah:

“Why did they want gold?”

Dr. Neruda:

“The Anunnaki required it. The exact reason is unknown, but it had something to do with the way that gold modulated the frequency of their body. Gold was an essence to their race. It held a property that was vital to their survival. The record is a little vague as to exactly why it was so important. But these records mention that their entire planet had twelve major cities and all of them were made of a semi-transparent gold. Even the book of Revelations refers to this.”

Sarah:

“Who were these beings? I mean, I’ve heard of the Atlanteans, but never the Anunnaki.”

Dr. Neruda:

“They’re a race of transdimensional beings. The Atlanteans were the only race of beings on earth at that time, and they—the Anunnaki—sought permission to set-up mining on earth, which the Atlanteans agreed to.”

Sarah:

“Why?”

Dr. Neruda:

“They didn’t see any harm in helping the Anunnaki. They weren’t a competitor, because the Atlanteans were more numerous. The Atlanteans wanted to have an agreement with the Anunnaki if only to befriend them for their technology. Also, the gold mining was in an area of earth that was of little consequence to them.”

Sarah:

“I don’t see how this relates to The Grand Portal.”

Dr. Neruda:

“It’s a long story, and we just started, but I promise I’ll come to that in a bit.”

Sarah:

“Okay, that’s fine, I’ll be patient.”

Dr. Neruda:

“The earth began to materialize more and more. It began to harden in a sense. The gold with it. The earth, and everything on it, was solidifying. The mining of the gold would soon become impossible for the Anunnaki, because they’d be unable to mine the gold if it were in a dense, physical state.”

Sarah:

“Why not?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Their bodies were etheric. They could not mine the gold if it was physical. They needed to have bodies that would be able to operate on earth and mine the gold.”

Sarah:

“How quickly did this happen?”

Dr. Neruda:

“I don’t know. Our records don’t stipulate the time scale, but I assume it was over tens of thousands of years. The point is that they needed to create a physical vessel like an astronaut would require a spacesuit to inhabit space. They tried hundreds of experiments and had the help of both the Atlanteans and Sirians.”

Sarah:

“I assume this vessel is the human body?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Yes, we call them physical uniforms sometimes. The WingMakers refer to them as human instruments.”

Sarah:

“So the Anunnaki created a physical body to mine gold. You mean like a robot or are you saying these were humans?”

Dr. Neruda:

“No. These were the equivalent of ape-men; they were pre-human by a long shot. But they were our predecessors. We sometimes refer to them as Human 1.0.”

Sarah:

“But were they robots or biological?”

Dr. Neruda:

“They were completely biological, but Human 1.0s were not fully physical. They were partly etheric. You see, the Anunnaki and Sirians designed them to synchronize with the evolving densification of the earth. So as the earth solidified, so did the human instruments.”

Sarah:

“If they were biological, did they have a soul?”

Dr. Neruda:

“We wouldn’t call them human if they didn’t. Remember I mentioned the Atlanteans?”

Sarah:

“Yes.”

Dr. Neruda:

“The Anunnaki and Sirians placed them—the Atlanteans—inside these human uniforms. These were very advanced beings, but apparently naïve.”

Sarah:

“They wanted to be in these... ape-men bodies and mine gold?”

Dr. Neruda:

“No, that was not their interest at all. In fact, they allowed the Anunnaki to mine their gold, but as the earth began to solidify, they told them that if they could engineer a vessel to enable them to continue to mine their gold, that would be acceptable, but on a small scale.

“The Anunnaki had some kind of a falling out with the Atlanteans, and began to conspire with the Sirians and another race referred to as the Serpents. Each of these three races was interested in figuring out how to embody physical planets. They saw earth as a laboratory of sorts to figure it out. The Anunnaki already had a human uniform; they simply needed to power it with a life source or soul.

“The bigger issue was how to get the Atlanteans into these embodiments and keep them there. In effect, these three races conspired to enslave the Atlanteans within these pre-human vessels. The Atlanteans were the power generators that made these biological entities operate.”

Sarah:

“Are you saying these primitive ape-men had powerful souls inside them? I don’t understand how that’d be possible.”

Dr. Neruda:

“It’s a very complicated subject. The WingMakers wrote about the implantation of programs inside the human uniform—even version 1.0. The Sirians were mostly credited with this invention, but it was the offspring of Anu that really perfected these implants by programming them.



“The human uniform version 1.0 was designed by the Anunnaki, the implants were designed by the Sirians, and the programming of the implants was designed and evolved by a being known as Marduk.”

Sarah:

“That doesn’t answer my question as to how a powerful soul would suddenly be plugged into an ape-man vessel and behave like... like a Neanderthal.”

Dr. Neruda:

“Well, first, these were much more primitive than Neanderthals. But the answer is in the implants. You see, the biological entity or ape-man, as we’re referring to it, was not able to operate in the physical world. They needed survival skills, how to eat, how to hunt, how to clean themselves, how to even move their bodies. All of these very fundamental functions were necessary to actually include or program into the vessel... which was the purpose of the functional implants.

“The implants were akin to the brain of the Human 1.0, but it wasn’t just in the brain. These implants were placed inside the body within various parts—like the chest area, middle back, wrists, ankles, etc. The primary ones were contained in the skull. But generally these implants were networked to operate from the head or brain area.”

Sarah:

“Why do you say the head or brain area and not simply the brain?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Because it wasn’t in the brain. Remember that Human 1.0 was still part etheric and part physical. The implants also needed a similar consistency or sound vibration. They were placed into the bone or skeletal structure mostly, and some in the muscle tissue. These functional implants fused into the muscles and bone, including the DNA. The WingMakers put it this way: the DNA integration was for the intelligence of the plan; the muscle tissue allowed the life essence to power the functional implant.

“There was a central coordination point, and that was in the brain, but the implants were located throughout the body. This was an integrated system that was installed in the human uniform to allow it to be controlled, monitored, and programmed over time. It was the evolutionary stick and carrot.

“Doing it this way allowed the early humans to dig out gold, which, as I said, was their primary purpose initially.”

Sarah:

“I’m sorry to sound like a broken record, but I still don’t get how such an advanced race as the Atlanteans could... power these ape-men and become slaves. It doesn’t make sense to me.”

Dr. Neruda:

“You have to understand that the implanted functionality was partly to make the Human 1.0 and its power source—the life essence of an Atlantean—to function efficiently and effectively as miners. That was the prime goal. The second, however, was to suppress the

power source, or in this case, the Atlantean beings inside the human vessels.

“They did this by making the power source ignorant of its origin and the reality of its true expression as an infinite being. When the Atlantean beings were placed inside the human uniform, they were essentially 100 percent focused on physical survival and functional performance. There were no relationships. No marriage. No reproduction. These were essentially cloned beings. They were all the same in terms of their appearance and abilities. Human drones, piloted by implanted functionality that the Atlantean beings inside became associated with, as them. The infinite inside the body believed it was the body and the implanted functionality, and nothing more.”

Sarah:

“What happened when they died?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Let me be clear, these beings—the Atlanteans—were infinite, meaning they did not have spacetime regulation. They lived after the body died. However, the Anunnaki created a set of planes or dimensions of experience that was the equivalent of a Holding Plane, that’s what the WingMakers called it, where they could be recycled.”

Sarah:

“Recycled... as in reincarnation?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Yes, later on this became the basis of reincarnation. It allowed the Anunnaki to recycle the Atlanteans. Some

aspects of the implanted functionality were interdimensional, which is to say, it could assist in the delivery of the beings to the proper location within the Holding Planes of consciousness, and assist in their reincarnation back into a new vessel.”

Sarah:

“But you said that they... the ape-men didn’t have reproduction?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Not in version 1.0. These were very basic. But the Anunnaki could create them in large scale, so when one human uniform expired—let’s say they had a mining accident—another would be made. These were clones. The ability to self-reproduce came in version 2.0. That was mostly because the amount of effort required to manage this process was enormous, on the part of the Anunnaki. They wanted to create an automated system, something that wouldn’t require them to orchestrate all of the variables. So the Sirians helped them to create the implants that could propagate through reproduction. This enabled automation of the recycling of the beings from the Holding Planes to be born into the physical dimension through a baby.”

Sarah:

“So, this was all automated... by programming... technology? I don’t know, this is too weird.”

Dr. Neruda:

“The universe is made up of dimensions that are a result of mathematical equations. It is constructed from mathematics. Some beings understand how to apply mathematical equations to organize and plan spacetime. It’s all created. This world is created, it’s not real. It’s a programmed reality.

“When I say plan, it can also be construed as control of spacetime. That is to say, this is a programmed spacetime reality. Once you can program spacetime reality within a species like humanity, you can program at the individual level of a person, right down to when they itch their nose, if you want to. It’s all mathematical equations.”

Sarah:

“I don’t know... what to say. For now, I’ll go along with you, but it really sounds like fiction to me. So, what happened to the ape-men?”

Dr. Neruda:

“I mentioned Marduk. He was intimately involved in the evolution of the species. That was his role. Of all the Anunnaki, he was the closest to the Human 1.0s. He understood them and even admired certain aspects of them. Unconsciously, perhaps, he began to alter their programs so the Human 1.0s behaved more like the Anunnaki.

“As they began to take on the characteristics of the Anunnaki, Anu and his sons, Enki and Enlil, were concerned by this. Marduk was programming emotions and feelings. He was evolving humans too quickly, but remember, this was the evolution of the functional

implants, the interface between the power source—Atlanteans—and the human physical body. So it was the interface that was being evolved, which enabled the human body to show emotion, to communicate, to sense more of the three-dimensional world called earth, etc.

“The other thing that was happening was that as the earth continued to become more of a three-dimensional solid, so did the Human 1.0s and their functionality implants. This growing densification also made it easier to control and suppress the Atlantean power source inside the human uniforms. It was like a compression was taking place in and on this earth plane, and it was deepening the gravity of focus on earth plane survival.”

Sarah:

“I wrote down the word ‘Serpents.’ Are you talking about literal serpents?”

Dr. Neruda:

“No... Serpents as a race of beings. They simply were another race of beings based on reptilian DNA, but distinct from the Anunnaki. You could say they were related. They were known as life carriers. They seeded planets. They built food chains. You could say they were the grocers of the planet.”

Sarah:

“But they didn’t get involved in the creation of the Human 1.0?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Not in the technical sense. Their job was more to provide food and sustenance for it.”

Sarah:

“I understand how the Atlanteans were suppressed in the Human 1.0 because of the implants, but why did they go there? If they didn’t volunteer as you suggest, how did they get forced into slavery when they were previously these powerful, sovereign beings?”

Dr. Neruda:

“We don’t know exactly how it happened. The record we read was not specific on this topic. But the tone, or word that was used, was that the Atlanteans were naïve. They had no reason to think it would be possible to become enslaved. It would be like a concept that was never used in their culture. No one ever did that... nor could they. You can’t enslave an infinite being, unless, of course, you lock them into a human uniform. And that was the cunning of the Anunnaki and their Sirian partners. They launched this attack from such a bizarre angle, that the Atlanteans couldn’t see it coming. I think it was an ambush or surprise attack.”

Sarah:

“You said earlier that the Human 2.0 could reproduce. How long of a time existed between 1.0 and 2.0, and what were their primary differences?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Human 1.0 rose to a pretty high level in terms of being able to speak or communicate. That was the major add-on

that Marduk brought to Human 1.0. However, the psychological state of being a clone was too hard for Human 1.0. They all looked alike and had the same thoughts, so communication was helpful to a point, for example, coordinating a task, but actually having individual ideas... no. And this led to depression and psychological states where, according to the WingMakers, they literally went mad.

“This flaw was a huge problem. Anu decided to wipe them out, and this is the story of the great flood. Marduk managed to save some of the Human 1.0s from the flood along with other flora and fauna, but it was the end of Human 1.0.

“Human 2.0 was then created. This was the stage where the humans could self-reproduce. And when this happened, some of the Anunnaki impregnated female humans and brought in their bloodlines to the human species. This began the variations. This began the idea that humans were no longer clones. The concern, however, was that Human 2.0s might become too powerful and self-aware. What if the Atlantean power source became aware that it was an infinite being?

“This was when Anu decided that he should be God. Humans needed to have a lord or ruler over them so it was clear that they were inferior to an external ruler. This was a key part of their program of indoctrination. Working with Marduk and the Sirians, they created the environment of Eden and created the paradigm of Eve as the instigator of the fall of humanity. This was, you might say, Act 1 of Anu as God. It was staged to provide the Human 2.0s with a clear sense of an external authority, and that they were



expelled from Paradise because they tried to be self-realized.

“It was like rebuking humanity with the fist of an angry creator who wanted his creation to remain identified with their human uniform. Kind of like saying: “Do not think for a moment that you can be like me.”

Sarah:

“And the WingMakers wrote that this actually happened kind of like the Bible said?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Yes.”

Sarah:

“So the God of the Bible is this Anunnaki Lord, called Anu?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Yes.”

Sarah:

“Why are you telling me this all now? It seems like this information changes some of the previous information you’ve shared.”

Dr. Neruda:

“To really understand The Grand Portal, you have to understand this evolutionary process, and the only way you can understand it is to go back to the beginning of the human race.”

Sarah:

“So why did Anu want to be God?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Remember that the original goal was the acquisition of gold. But when the Atlanteans rejected Anu, he began to conspire with the Sirians. It was just before the flood that Anu discovered that the gold he’d mined was sufficient. He didn’t require more. However, the notion of being a God over the Atlanteans was seductive. The Sirians and Serpents felt that the idea of enslaving infinite beings in planet ecosystems was their invention. They had something that was totally unique. They were creator-Gods, and every other race could be ensnared in a similar type of vessel.

“They began to do just that.”

Sarah:

“You mean enslave other races?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Yes. You see the earth had a unique quality to its core. This core was of extreme interest to the Anunnaki when they first visited earth. It was this core that created the gravitational field that enabled the planet to become fully physical in such a way that it could support physical life. Of course other conditions needed to be present, too, but it was this core that was the real key. Working with the Sirians and Serpents, they began to do this same enslavement on other planets. They replicated the core of earth and engineered a method for implanting this core on

other planets. They were essentially terraforming a planet by cloning and installing earth's core."

Sarah:

"So I guess the real question is, if you believe this, what are humans today? Are we simply more of the same? Are we Human 2.0?"

Dr. Neruda:

"When I said the human uniform evolves, it does, but this evolution is on a track, a pre-programmed track. The intent was to have Anu return on a 'cloud,' the whole Second Coming was going to be the staged entrance for Anu. Humanity would evolve in such a way that his reentry into our consciousness would be understood to be a good thing. Humanity's salvation. We would all be his children, and the glory of god would be upon the earth. That was the plan. From before the time of Jesus, that was the plan. Marduk programmed the entire—"

Sarah:

"How long can these beings live?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Again, the beings like Marduk or Enki or Anu are not based in spacetime. They are infinite beings, meaning they have no end. They don't have an age. Neither do we."

Sarah:

"I'm trying to wrap my mind around all of this, but I'm finding it very hard to believe that human beings are simply uniforms for a programmed existence."

Dr. Neruda:

“Let me go back to your previous question about what humanity is now. The functional implants of the human interface are perfectly integrated within the human vessel. They operate seamlessly. So seamlessly, we do not know that they are not us. We have no choice in a way. We think our thoughts and emotions are us, that this spacetime is what our thoughts and emotions exist in. Even the thought of a God, heaven, hell, soul, masters, all of these things, they’re part of the program.

“It is integrated in both the dimension of the earth plane and the after-life. The after-life is part of the deception.”

Sarah:

“Tell me more about this interface and its functional implants.”

Dr. Neruda:

“The eye-brain was the key element that the Anunnaki needed to design to make the functional implants operate. This is in Human 1.0. In Human 2.0 it was the DNA. Once this was achieved, the Sirians could design the consciousness framework—the human consciousness. Human consciousness is the key to suppressing an infinite being. Human consciousness, or the triad of consciousness, is composed of three interactive layers.

“The first layer is universal mind or unconscious, and this forms the link between the individual human and the entire species. This layer is what enables all of us to see what everyone sees, feel what everyone else feels, know what everyone else knows. It is the perfect way to unify a

species in separation. In fact, that is the way we feel unification, through the unconscious mind.

“The next layer of consciousness is the genetic mind, as the WingMakers refer to it, or subconscious, in the case of Sigmund Freud. This forms the link between the individual and their family tree or genetics. This is where bloodlines are expressed.

“And then there is the conscious mind. This is the unique individual perception and expression—what most of us call our personality and character, which is built on this layer.

“The conscious mind of the individual is heavily influenced by the genetic mind, especially between birth and the age of seven or eight. By that time the influence is all-encompassing. Remember that the Anunnaki created the biological form—the body, the Sirians created the functional implants, and Marduk executed the programming of these functional implants so they would evolve along a programmed path, leading to the return of Anu. This was expressed in the hierarchal structure of humanity that speaks of god and masters in religious and esoteric texts.

“This was all part of the design, to create various religions and esoteric cults that would support a vast Hierarchy and order the human species into master-student relationships, and then create a multi-leveled afterlife that would reward those who believed and were obedient to their god or masters.

“You see, the whole principle that was behind this entire endeavor could be summed up in one word: separation.

Everything exists in separation within the earth plane and its afterlife planes as well. But, according to the WingMakers, what is real is that we are all imbued with equality and oneness—not through the unconscious mind, which only links us in separation, but rather through the life essence that is us. And this life essence is sovereign and integral. It is I AM WE ARE. No one is above, no one is below. No one is better, no one is lesser.”

Sarah:

“But you’re saying everything is a lie? Everything... I mean everything we’ve been taught to believe in is a deception! How is that possible... or ... or even believable?”

Dr. Neruda:

“It’s possible because the beings that have enslaved humanity designed a world to which we adjusted over eons of time. We evolved into it in such a manner that we became lost in our world. The veils that have been placed over us are opaque. So much so that people operate as human uniforms unaware that everything around them is illusory. It is a programmed reality that is not real.

“The WingMakers say everything is simply sound holographically organized to look real.”

Sarah:

“It’s depressing...”

Dr. Neruda:

“Only when you consider the scope of the deception and the way in which humanity has allowed it to rule their

behaviors. The good news is that you're hearing about this now."

Sarah:

"It doesn't feel like good news."

Dr. Neruda:

"Each person can step out of the illusion. There is no master here. No god is going to come down and make it happen for us. No ETs. No one. It is each of us. This is what is meant by I AM. I... it's like One. One—me, and one—all of us unified. AM, meaning exist now. In this moment. Not in history or memory. Not in some future time or goal. Now!"

Sarah:

"It doesn't feel real to me. I was raised a Christian. I have no reason to believe that Jesus was an inside... agent for this plan of deception—"

Dr. Neruda:

"I'm not saying he was. Many of those who have come to earth as human teachers have tried to reveal how deep and broad and high this illusion has been made. It is as far as the edge of the universe and as close as your DNA. Everywhere in between is illusion. Jesus came to reveal much of this, but the writers of the Bible decided what would be acceptable within the paradigm of life as we humanly know it. They elected to make Jesus a part of the deception. They saw it was time for a redefinition of God to accommodate an evolving Human 2.0. God was

suddenly a loving father, and all of humanity was brother and sister.”

Sarah:

“So you’re saying Jesus was aware of this deception, but his words weren’t included in the Bible?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Our opinion was that his words were so against the conditioned beliefs that people could not understand them as he said them. And so, over time, they were translated into the form you know them today. The Biblical translations simply lack the original potency with which he said them.

“Besides, there are two methods that can make exposing this illusion a very difficult proposition.”

Sarah:

“What do you mean?”

Dr. Neruda:

“The first is that the unconscious mind system is inside everyone. It’s like a field of information that everyone can access. It can affect or infect everyone. A revelatory idea can be passed to a small number of people, but it lacks sufficient influence to generate mass awakening. So there’s unconscious mind inertia.

“The other, and this is more pernicious, is that the functional implants are programmed, and like any program, they can be upgraded or even turned off.”



Sarah:

“As I listen to this... story, I... I feel a little overwhelmed at how to proceed with the interview. I’m not sure what to ask or what direction to take things. If I look at my notes, I see my handwritten note: ‘there is no God,’ is this really what you’re saying?”

Dr. Neruda:

“The WingMakers refer to the triad of consciousness as having the god consciousness installed within it—in the unconscious mind layer. But they also report that as the individual develops from about the age of six or seven, they begin to assemble their individual personality from the elements of the subconscious layer. By the time they’re twelve to fourteen years old, they have their unique personality well in place. For some, this uniqueness is shutting out the existence of a god.

“From Anu’s perspective, this is fine. He probably likes having atheists and agnostics. It’s more separation. More diversity. In fact, the greater the diversity in the human family, the greater the separation. The greater the separation, the easier it is to keep the program of enslavement intact. Choose sides and disagree with your opponents. Compete. It fuels wars and social unrest.

“As for the existence of god, we, collectively, are the closest thing to god. We are. That’s the clear message of the WingMakers. There is a First Source, a center point in existence that created the framework of existence through sound—”

Sarah:

“But what about the ones who are enlightened or spiritual masters—they’re all made up?”

Dr. Neruda:

“No, it’s not that they’re made up. They exist. It’s just that their existence is within the human interface or functional implants. They exist there. We, us, the being that is I AM, that being is not of that reality. It doesn’t really exist inside the holographic stage that was created by interdimensional beings millions of years ago; rather, it is being used as a power source that animates the human interface or uniform. Over time, we’ve spiraled deeper and deeper inside of this created world, complete with its afterlife and different planes of existence.

“You could look at it this way: Anu installed a program inside the Human 2.0 and in this program, humans would evolve from knowing absolutely nothing about their world, to knowing god. Humans were designed to have god consciousness—meaning, to have the same understanding and awareness as Anu. But then Anu took this evolutionary line and positioned god consciousness so far out into the future that humans would essentially be chasing this god consciousness forever. They’d be chasing shadows, because until they awaken from the deception, the only god that exists in that world is Anu.

“Once awakened as I AM WE ARE or the Sovereign Integral, a human being lives as an expression of this consciousness. According to the WingMakers, no one has achieved this at this time. It is, however, our future to live in this consciousness in a human instrument.”

Sarah:

“No one has done this... you mean anywhere?”

Dr. Neruda:

“On this plane, earth, no one has done this. But remember, the WingMakers are human in a future time. They have returned to our time to crack this shell open a bit. They have traveled to our time to remind us of what they discovered. They left this enslavement, so we will do it.”

Sarah:

“But you already said that spacetime is an illusion.”

Dr. Neruda:

“That’s true. It is, but it’s hard to imagine that the universe in which we exist is really a hologram projection that was programmed inside our unconscious mind and we’re really inside this hologram, wearing a human uniform that was outfitted to perceive only this hologram. The WingMakers say that the real world is sound. Everything is sound and resonance of sound. Everything we have in our human uniform for sensing our universe is millions of years of evolutionary design to tune into that hologram and only that hologram.”

Sarah:

“How does that hologram extend beyond this physical world then? You said even the afterlife is part of it?”

Dr. Neruda:

“There are many aspects to the afterlife. There is god, first and foremost. There is the Light of illumination.

There is the universal spirit and individual soul. There is a Hierarchy of angels and masters. There is the concept of karma and reincarnation or sin and salvation. The concept of heaven and hell. The concept of the chosen. The concept of an ascension path. The concept of the Book of Records or Akashic records. All of these concepts were designed into an upgrade of the Human 2.0 interface. Certain human beings are programmed to find these concepts in their unconscious mind layer and share them. As a result, religions sprout. Philosophies rise sometimes in support of the religions, sometimes in contradiction. Esoteric cults rise. All the while the human being remains lost. It remains muddled in its illusion. Everything tied to an empty promise in a belief, and in all those beliefs, one thing remains constant: separation.

“The program is vast in its reach, and the Anunnaki, once they had mined sufficient gold, had an entire race of beings enslaved. Anu, along with his allies in the Sirian and Serpent races, decided it would be best to turn the Human 2.0s into a worthless creature that forever sought enlightenment through belief. And who do you suppose would provide the things to believe in? Anu and Marduk.

“Everything became learning lessons. The earth was a school house. If you learn your lessons, you won’t have to keep incarnating. Learn, learn, learn. But what are you learning? You are learning to believe in the afterlife, as it was described and prescribed by Anu and his designers. You are learning to don your human uniform obediently. You are learning to discern how humanity is different. You are learning to link every self-image you have to the

world of three-dimensions, while hoping there is more after death.

“The sober reality is that after you die, the being inside you is met by a guardian who will take you to your destination, based mostly on your deeds in this life. However, most beings are taken to a life review where you face your life in every detail, and based on that experience an authoritative figure will prescribe your next life options for reincarnation. You are essentially recycled into the same program with a new mother and family, and a programmed life path is laid out for you to follow.

“The afterlife program and process is all part of the master program to retain the enslavement of the beings. Remember, we’re interdimensional beings—meaning we exist in 3-D and the higher planes. It’s just that these higher planes are designed by the Anunnaki. They are not of the real dimensional planes. Otherwise, we would die, discover who we really are, and we would never reincarnate or if we did, we would tell everyone on earth that this is all an illusion.”

Sarah:

“Why? Why do it this way? It doesn’t make sense.”

Dr. Neruda:

“What began as an experiment in three-dimensional exploration from a higher dimensional reality became what is here. Every human being will confront this reality eventually. It cannot be avoided. We can agonize about the lack of fairness or ask why, but whether it makes sense to

you doesn't change the fact that we live in a world of designed separation. Divide and conquer.

“The WingMakers write of the tone-vibration of equality. (Dr. Neruda pulled out some papers at this point.) Here's the exact choice of words by the WingMakers: ‘When all manifestations of life are genuinely perceived as fragmentary expressions of First Source, the vibration of equality that underlies all life forms becomes perceptible to the human instrument. Life initially emerges as an extension of Source Reality, and then, as an individuated energy frequency invested within a form. It vibrates, in its pure, timeless state, precisely the same for all manifestations of life. This is the common ground that all life shares. This is the tone-vibration of equality that can be observed within all life forms that unifies all expressions of diversity to the foundation of existence known as First Source.’”

Sarah:

“It's so abstract. How does it help?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Maybe it doesn't. I don't know. But the thing is, to change, to step out of this illusion, it requires each of us to wake up and stay awake. It's not reading words that will change this; it's the profound nature of new behaviors, because these behaviors signal that our consciousness layers are understood as separate from who we really are. We have to operate as I AM WE ARE.”

Sarah:

“Where does the Incunabula or Illuminati belong in this narrative?”

Dr. Neruda:

“I’ll answer that later. I want to continue the story a little further.”

Sarah:

“Okay.”

Dr. Neruda:

“Human 2.0s and earth continue to densify. We become increasingly three-dimensional. We are actually denser now than we have ever been—in terms of physicality. There was a time, about forty years ago, when we thought alien races were actually leaving spaceships behind on purpose, but what we discovered, more recently, is that most of the aliens were not physical beings. They were observing earth, and their spaceships actually became entrained by the gravitational circuits of the earth’s core, which caused their spaceships to materialize in three-dimensional space. Because many of the materials used in the ships’ construction had chemical properties, they were prone to densification when exposed to earth’s atmosphere.”

Sarah:

“You mentioned the earth’s core as being the cause of all of this, what’s so special about it?”

Dr. Neruda:

“The magnetic fields associated with earth’s core are unique. They are, in the words of the WingMakers, ‘alive.’ We can only assume that alive is an aspect of intelligence.

“The point in this, however, is that everything’s densifying. It is compressing. It is compressing for a reason: the old systems can fall in unison when density reaches a certain critical mass. And that is what will happen.”

Sarah:

“When?”

Dr. Neruda:

“All I can say is that it is soon. I don’t want dates and times associated with it—”

Sarah:

“But do you know?”

Dr. Neruda:

“We know a range.”

Sarah:

“More than ten years?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Yes.”

Sarah:

“More than twenty (years)?”

Dr. Neruda:



“All I will say is that the WingMakers term for this is SIN, or the Sovereign Integral Network. SIN is the definition of the new system. They said it can come in an instant once the right conditions are in place. What is unclear is how SIN develops after The Grand Portal and Human 3.0.”

Sarah:

“That’s the first time you’ve mentioned Human 3.0. What is it?”

Dr. Neruda:

“If human beings are trapped in a prison of illusion, as Human 2.0s, and their interface to the holographic universe is the reason for their being trapped, then a new model needs to step forward. Human 3.0 is this new model. It is the formula of self-realization. It is stepping out of the constructed universe or reality, and living as a self-expression of I AM WE ARE. Human 3.0 is the Sovereign Integral. I call it Human 3.0 SI.

“You see, The Grand Portal is a way to synchronize humanity to a new inception point where it is living in the expression of oneness and equality, sovereign and integral, I AM and WE ARE. It is a way for humanity to move from separation—which was its previous inception point, the one that generated Human 1.0 and 2.0. Human 3.0 SI will have a new inception point, and the reason for The Grand Portal was to enable synchronization, because how can you have a network of equality and oneness if the beings were not synchronized?”

Sarah:

“What is soul, then?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Soul is an idea or paradigm that has become part of the human reality program. Soul is the part of you that contains all memory of your existence as a Human 1.0 and 2.0. For most of us, this is a vast repository—far too large for the consciousness framework to deal with. So the soul holds this information for each individual being.

“Soul is a paradigm of infinite expression within a finite reality. But you can’t be infinite in a finite reality if that reality is a programmed reality. So soul is not the life force that powers the human consciousness. That is the Sovereign Integral. That is what each of us is when we are stripped naked of all illusion, of all deceptions, of all limitations, of all veils, of all functional implants—including the soul.

“It is the redefinition of human identity and expression as I AM WE ARE. From a human perspective, the WingMakers do not see humans as lesser entities, but simply beings with inception points that enslaved them. It is not a judgment that humans are worthless or bad or sinful or weak or needy. None of those things. Humanity needs a new start. A point in which they can synchronize in one realization, and that is the expression of I AM WE ARE. Living those words as behavior.”

Sarah:

“Where’s the creator of Anu... the real God? How can we be allowed to live and operate in this kind of deception?”

Dr. Neruda:

“The WingMakers talk about the transformation/mastership model... hold on. (Dr. Neruda went to a page among his folders.) This is how they put it: ‘The time has come to integrate the dominant model of the Hierarchy (evolution/saviorship) with the dominant model of Source Intelligence (transformation/mastership). This integration can only be achieved at the level of the entity. It cannot occur within the context of a human instrument or an aspect of the Hierarchy. Only the entity—the wholeness of inter-dimensional sovereignty imbued with Source Intelligence—can facilitate and fully experience the integration of these two models of existence.’”

Sarah:

“So what does that have to do with my question?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Each individual being is responsible for this. God or Source Intelligence isn’t going to come down from the heavens and correct human faults or obstacles. Humans need to take responsibility for this—”

Sarah:

“But seriously, how? We’re wrapped in so many layers of deception—”

Dr. Neruda:

“It’s not easy. The WingMakers write about the heart virtues as the behavioral construct for this time, and how these words can be applied and lived, not simply held in the head as a worthy concept.”

Sarah:

“I don’t think you’ve mentioned these before. What are they?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Appreciation or gratitude, compassion, humility, forgiveness, understanding and valor or courage. It is the combination of nowness—being in the now—and applying these words in our behaviors. It’s being impeccable in this practice.”

Sarah:

“What happens if you do?”

Dr. Neruda:

“The unconscious mind is a doorway into all beings. These behaviors go out to all beings. They support the building of the Sovereign Integral Network Human 3.0, which is the replacement of separation consciousness of Human 2.0. So this is the application of insertive behavior, which is to say, I will insert these behaviors in my nowness. They will become the palette of my behavioral choice.

“The other half of this equation is the resistive behaviors, and these are withdrawing and stopping behaviors that support separation and deception. These are active resistances. Saying ‘no’ to behaviors of your own and others, without judgment.

“Again, whether you operate in the insertive or resistive behavioral mode, you are affecting the whole. You either support oneness and equality, the I AM WE ARE, or you

support separation and deception, also known in our reality, as the status quo.

“The starting point of behavior or expression is in the now. This is the creative nerve center. Every single now is a potential to support oneness and equality in this world and help birth the Human 3.0 and the Sovereign Integral Network.”

Sarah:

“How long? I mean, how long will this take?”

Dr. Neruda:

“The Grand Portal enables the Sovereign Integral Network. The WingMakers suggest that around 2080, conditions should be ideal for this Human 3.0 to reveal itself. But they also stipulate that it could happen sooner or later.”

Sarah:

“Why wouldn’t Anu, since he’s God, simply stop it? Or, if Marduk could program with such amazing accuracy, how could Human 3.0 even come about? Unless he wanted it?”

Dr. Neruda:

“There have been several interventions. While Anu and his Sirian cohorts were focused on the Human 1.0 and 2.0 uniforms, they didn’t pay as much attention to the interaction of earth and the human vessel. Earth is an anomaly in itself. Remember that the earth’s gravitational fields interact with all life. Even non-physical beings—if they get close enough and stay long enough—can be

materialized in this plane of existence. Anu did not want to be materialized in this dimension, and he could only appear on this plane of existence for short times, maybe a day or two. In this time, our time, right now, the Anunnaki cannot enter this plane. They're locked out. The earth plane is too dense. So that is one reason. Anu's ability to interact directly with his creation has been curtailed.

“The second intervention point is that non-physical beings have woken up to this issue of enslavement. They see how it affects everyone. It was permitted in part, because the Anunnaki and their alliance partners were strong and threatening to many other races and beings. However, this notion of enslaving infinite beings, as a concept or inception point, was infecting all of existence. It was a fear-based, separation-based idea that beings eventually began to see as a degenerative force to existence. The native state of existence, which includes spacetime and non-spacetime expressions, is oneness and equality. Obviously, enslavement is only possible in a separation-based paradigm.

“The third intervention point is the WingMakers. They were the part of humanity also known as the Atlanteans, but even before the Atlantean race, they existed in a pure-state genetic template, and eventually these genetics were used by Anu to create—in part—the Human 1.0 and Human 2.0. Although with the 2.0 version, it was less pure, because Anunnaki and Sirian genetics were introduced, among others. But the point I'm trying to make here, is that the WingMakers, as a future expression of Human 3.0, have entered our spacetime, and have begun to crack open this prison reality.

“The fourth intervention point is each of us, practicing the Sovereign Integral process.”

Sarah:

“I presume the Incunabula and Illuminati have something to say about this whole Human 3.0 plan. Am I right on that?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Yes. The Triad of Power, however you want to define it, in terms of titles, is programmed to create their own Human 3.0. This version will be predicated on the convergence of technology in support of biological enhancements that make the human vessel even more of a welcoming environment for the functional implants. The goal is to make an infinite human on the earth plane... infinite by virtue of immortality. The fusion of human and technology or what some call transhumanism, is the goal. So, Human 3.0 for the Triad of Power is very different from Human 3.0 SI, as envisioned by the WingMakers.

“You see, transhumanism is separation. It says we are frail, weak, finite, brutish, diseased... incomplete. All of these ideas for technological implants and cognitive enhancement were parts of the ACIO agenda.”

Sarah:

“The ACIO was building Human 3.0?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Yes, certain key aspects of the transhumanist model. Not the SI version. You see, the whole idea of transcending is linked to the inception point of separation.

It is the I AM supreme model. It says, the human vessel can be and should be enhanced in such a way that the functional implants can live forever. There are several things missing, according to the WingMakers. One, the unconscious mind cannot contain the datastreams of a continuous species, and two, the search for who we are, as the true source of life, will only be further obscured by technological enhancement. The realization of I AM WE ARE is not a technological realization, nor is its manifestation accelerated by or through technology, at an individual level. It is a self-learning and behavioral process. Nothing more, nothing less.”

Sarah:

“So transhumanists want to transcend human suffering, ignorance, and mortality through technology, and the ACIO was providing some of the technology to do this, but who would have access to the technology?”

Dr. Neruda:

“The elite, of course. It would only accelerate and accentuate the separation. It is simultaneous empowerment and disempowerment. The economic models for the transhumanist diffusion, as it was called in the Labyrinth Group, were not widely considered. The Incunabula being the only exception.”

Sarah:

“You mean they actually wanted to build a plan that made the transcending technologies available to everyone?”

Dr. Neruda:



“They looked at it from two angles: one, if the technology could be introduced at birth, it would mitigate the cost issues of health care and education, offsetting diffusion costs. But it would have to be a government implemented service. No private company could secure sufficient trust. So a critical component was to make the United Nations the credible world organization that could introduce transhumanism to the global stage.

“The second angle was to allow class distinctions and free markets to eventually make the technology irresistible to everyone, and then allow government subsidies to bring down the costs sufficiently to enable its dispersion.

“All of this sounds very altruistic, but the quality of the technologies would be variant. Elite classes would be able to secure higher quality implantations coupled to more responsive genetics. This would simply be a human civilization that would be attempting to purge discontent and disobedience, in favor of participation in a ruled system of government by elite transhumans.

“Technology will evolve from external-impersonal, to external-personal, to integrated-personal, to internal-personal. Transhumanism is the last phase, and it is the phase that the elite are moving to. The internal-personal is based on exactly the same paradigm of what is now the human condition—namely, humans have a programmed interface that’s integral to their human body, and is powered by the infinite source of which they truly are.

“Humans are unwittingly trying to be Anu to themselves. It’s part of the program, according to the

WingMakers. Humanity will play God to itself. It will try to engineer a better human and a better civilization.

“It will do this because it can’t imagine how humanity can save itself through simple behaviors and the realization that these behaviors can make. They will do it because they are programmed to become integrated with technology. This is the path that the WingMakers seek to avert. They write that human beings are complete if they can step out of their consciousness frameworks and realize what is actually powering their systems, their artificial realities, their programmed existence. The integration of technology internally will only make this realization more difficult.”

Sarah:

“I think you said on Saturday that there were prophecies of a synthetic race overtaking humanity... this sounds like what those prophets saw.”

Dr. Neruda:

“Fifteen felt the same way. He never assumed that they were off-planet aliens. These prophets could have seen Human 3.0 transhumanists in some distant timeline and assumed they were alien.”

Sarah:

“What about the Military Force?”

Dr. Neruda:

“As you can imagine, this is where it will be tested first. There is a whole field of psychological technology that has laid the groundwork for the real internal technologies to

flow into the military. It will be released there initially so it can be properly defended for testing purposes. Once it's proven there, it will converge with the integrated-personal technology programs of the corporate elite.

Sarah:

“When you say integrated-personal, what do you mean exactly?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Miniaturization of the technology will enable it to adorn the body. It will not be internal yet, but it is part of the human body, like clothing, glasses, watches, and jewelry.”

Sarah:

“Bear with me, but let me see if I have this straight. Human 1.0 was a creation of a God-like being—”

Dr. Neruda:

“No. Anu is the same as us or the Atlanteans. He was no more intelligent or god-like. He was deceptive. That is the only distinction.”

Sarah:

“Okay... but Anu created Human 1.0 and then found them to be too similar to his own capabilities, and feared they would one day figure out that they were Atlanteans enslaved by the Anunnaki. And he was worried about the consequences of that discovery. So, he wiped them clean with a planetary flood.”

Dr. Neruda:

“According to the WingMakers, the flood was one part of the extinction program, but there were also nuclear weapons that were discharged on the planet—most of which have been explained away as meteorite impacts. But the WingMakers write that these were advanced weapons used against human populations that had avoided the flood.”

Sarah:

“Okay. In whatever way Human 1.0s were eliminated from the planet, they were replaced by Human 2.0, and these included upgrades like self-reproduction and more advanced programming. And central to this programming was the notion that Anu was God and would return to his creation. Correct?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Yes.”

Sarah:

“And the next upgrade to Human 2.0 branches out like a fork in the road. One version of Human 3.0 goes down the path of technology integration... or transhumanism. The other version, 3.0 SI, is a more organic process of using behaviors to support this process of becoming a Human 3.0 or Sovereign Integral, and then becoming part of a network of these Sovereign Integrals. Is that correct?”

Dr. Neruda:

“You have the general idea, yes.”

Sarah:

“And the Triad of Power wants Human 3.0 to go down the path of technology integration, because that is how they are programmed... to emulate their god, Anu. Right?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Yes.”

Sarah:

“So it’s kind of like humanity sits at a crossroads. On the one side is the Triad of Power that is programmed to develop Human 3.0 as a... a cyborg, I guess, and the other side is the future existence of humanity urging us to do it internally, one person at a time, through a behavioral process. I guess the part that’s missing for me is the role of The Grand Portal, which remains unclear. I thought it was a technology that proved the existence... the irrefutable scientific existence of the human soul. How does that figure into this?”

Dr. Neruda:

“There are humans here who are designers of the new unconscious mind that will bridge human populations everywhere on the planet to feel and express equality and oneness. It will connect humanity in the I AM WE ARE consciousness, instead of the separation consciousness. It will not be based on Hierarchy. That deception is coming down.

“One of the things that was never disclosed in the materials—including my previous four interviews, is that certain information was to be withheld. Some information

was even veiled to not raise the ire of the Triad of Power. This information, the fifth interview, will not be disclosed in the same timeline as the previous four.”

Sarah:

“Why?”

Dr. Neruda:

“The designers of the new unconscious layer of the Human 3.0 are on the planet now. They are doing some of the preparation required to move humanity—who will be sitting at the fork in the road in the next forty-fifty years—to choose the I AM WE ARE path.”

Sarah:

“So I can’t release this interview?”

Dr. Neruda:

“No. When it’s time, I will contact you.”

Sarah:

“You said some of the information was veiled. In what way?”

Dr. Neruda:

“The WingMakers will only release some of the information now, in 1998. That is the information that will not feel too revolutionary. Too radical. It needed, in their own words, ‘to cross into the human interface and activate a willingness’ to listen to their voice. For example, they used the term WingMakers to describe themselves,

knowing it would have a connection to the angel construct.”

Sarah:

“But you said the WingMakers were a future representation of human beings—presumably, from this disclosure—version 3.0. Right?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Yes, but there is programming within the human interface where the functional implants are networked as a system, that will tune out certain information. A person will hear it, but they will not act on it. They will hear it, but they will object to it. They will hear it, but they will not share it. All of these programs were created—not originally, but they can be upgraded... the program can be updated with new instructions. It makes cracking into this reality—exposing it for what it truly is—a very difficult proposition.

“This is why it requires a degree of stealth. The deception is so thick and opaque in this reality, that the ones who are trying to come into the prison and create a crack in the wall... they also have to use a form of deception.”

Sarah:

“Why?”

Dr. Neruda:

“The programming, Sarah. If the pure-state information was given out, and it contradicted everything that people have been told to believe, if it was the literal reverse of

what was logical and acceptable in this world, who would listen? The WingMakers needed to awaken certain people to bring them inside their information field, to warm them up to the truth. It has to be done in degrees for the vast majority of people.”

Sarah:

“What about me?”

Dr. Neruda:

“You are not among the vast majority, but then you’re only getting a taste of it.”

Sarah:

“Does everyone within the Labyrinth Group know this, too?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Yes, to varying degrees.”

Sarah: “But they were going down the transhumanism path. Did this information change their mind?”

Dr. Neruda:

“No. That’s really why I’m here.”

Sarah:

“You just said I’m only getting a taste of it, so there’s still more materials that will be released later?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Yes.”



Sarah:

“But you’re not going to tell me when... right?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Correct.”

Sarah:

“As intelligent and aware as the Labyrinth Group is, why didn’t this information change their minds?”

Dr. Neruda:

“I had the benefit of having direct interactions with the WingMakers. None of my peers did. This was the difference in my willingness to act on the information, and not simply consider it as a contradiction to my invested reality.”

Sarah:

“This is fucked up, isn’t it?”

Dr. Neruda:

“What part?”

Sarah:

“All of it. It’s all fucked up... and we did it.”

Dr. Neruda:

“Whatever it is, it’s important to know what’s behind the deception... to look with sober eyes on the truth. It may not be a beautiful picture to be sure, but how else do you realize your own truth until you know the truth of the

big picture? So, however screwed up it seems, it is an inception point for the individual to redefine themselves.

“Would you rather stay in the illusion of a soul in a human body that will be saved by God, ascend into heaven and hang out with angels who strum harps? That whole idea is repulsive once you know this. That picture is based on separation, selfishness, lack of empathy and understanding. Or, you can simply say it’s all a big illusion, including the notion that we are infinite beings, and that when you die, you’re done.

“The part of this new picture that is promising is that we exist infinitely despite the fact that we have been suppressed and enslaved. We also can play a role in supporting this redefinition of the human being through our thoughts and behaviors. And maybe most importantly, we have the WingMakers—our future selves—providing us with evidence that I AM WE ARE prevailed.

“When I first read these materials, these were the things that provided some sense of hope, and I share them with you, for what it’s worth.”

Sarah:

“Thanks. All of the things that you told me in the first four interviews... with this new information, does it change it?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Yes. Everything is affected by this.”

Sarah:

“Give me an example.”

Dr. Neruda:

“Sunday night I mentioned LERM or the Light-Encoded Reality Matrix. LERM is what the Labyrinth Group thought was God—in terms of proof. But what was really discovered was the essence of Anu and how he operates in this reality as an all-encompassing observation field that is inside our consciousness interface to this reality-existence called earth. LERM is Anu projected.”

Sarah:

“What about ETs? Don’t they know about this and can’t they intervene and save us from this situation?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Remember, everyone inside our universe is part of this deception, whether they know it or not. There are four classes of beings: one, those who know the deception and are actively supporting it; two, those who know about the deception, but are unwilling to do anything about it; three, those who don’t know the deception and are unknowingly supporting it; and four, those who know about the deception and are actively trying to step out of the deception and engineer a process for everyone else to do the same. That’s it. It doesn’t matter if the being is physical or nonphysical. Everyone falls into one of these four categories—everywhere in our universe of existence.

“The beings in group three are waking up. Some of them understand that the deception in one part of the universe infects all. It requires corrective action. It requires collective understanding to ensure that it will never happen again.”

Sarah:

“How can everyone in this universe be a part of this deception? I don’t understand.”

Dr. Neruda:

“Our entire universe is created. I’m not saying it is the universe. I’m saying that what we call the universe, as far as we can observe, is part of the hologram implanted within our consciousness framework and human interface. Our mind consciousness established the spatial-temporal relationships of everything we see, and as I said, this is part of our program. And this includes the universe.

“Why do you think that our best minds on the planet cannot define consciousness, let alone the subconscious and unconscious mind? It is programmed this way. And did not want us to figure it out. We’ll look at neural information and decide it can be sliced a thousand different ways, but it still doesn’t explain how it’s experienced.

“As Aristotle said some 2,300 years ago, ‘To be conscious that we are perceiving, is to be conscious of our own existence.’ That is a good description of I AM. So, are we an isolated life form that confronts our external, separate reality? No, we are connected to all. That is why I AM WE ARE is the critical inception point for our identity. Any being that does not confirm their belief in this, is not aware of reality. It doesn’t matter where they exist or what vessel they wear. It doesn’t matter if they want to save humanity. They must first act from this inception.

“The universe, as immense as it appears, is a hologram inside a programmed existence which every human being agrees is reality. That agreement informs the unconscious mind—again, a part of the human interface that Anu created—and collectively we all see our world the same way, more or less.

“We have been told there are trillions of planets with life. That the universe is abundant with life forms in various dimensions, but what we know is here. On earth. The tangible, visible earth. Are there other beings? Of course. I’ve seen them. Will they save humanity? They can’t. They can only support. It isn’t about anyone or anything saving us. It is about a redefinition process that can only occur within each individual entity. It isn’t about being beamed up or ascending to some higher, protected dimension. This will be done in the physical body as human beings, by human beings, for human beings.”

Sarah:

“I know the interview on paper won’t show a hint of how you just delivered that last answer, but I wish it could. I think it helps to see it.”

Dr. Neruda:

“The words are enough.”

Sarah:

“Why you? Why do you suppose you can interact with the WingMakers and were asked to release this information? Why didn’t they interact with Fifteen, too?”

Dr. Neruda:

“First of all, it isn’t just me. However, within the Labyrinth Group, they selected me for reasons that I had a certain resonance to their information that others within the Labyrinth Group lacked. In terms of releasing the information, perhaps I was the only one who would go to the extreme of defecting from the ACIO to make this information available.

“I don’t look at myself as unique in the sense that I am the only one involved in getting this information out. There are others, many others, both physical and nonphysical, who are assisting in this transformative process. The WingMakers refer to it in their philosophy papers as the two portals.”

Sarah:

“I’ve only heard you speak of The Grand Portal; I assume it’s one of the two portals...”

Dr. Neruda:

“Yes. The Grand Portal will be released in the WingMakers literature as the irrefutable scientific discovery of the human soul, and in a way, that’s true, but it’s not the whole story.

“The two portals are defined as the “crack” and the “wall demolition.”

Sarah:

“I hope you plan to explain that...”

Dr. Neruda:

“Yes, well, the crack is the first portal. It is the portal between worlds. It is a human, and that’s about all I know at this time.”

Sarah:

“A human who does what?”

Dr. Neruda:

“That can step between worlds. I realize that thousands of people, even famous people, have claimed to have visited heaven, but according to the writings of the WingMakers, it is not true. They have wandered into the astral world, which has many dimensions, but this astral world is part of the creation of Anu, in terms of our programming. Our true dimensional existence is not of Anu’s creation or formulas. The human portal will be a communication portal between our origins, as a race of infinite beings, and this world—the Hologram of Deception.”

Sarah:

“What about the wall demolition, as you called it?”

Dr. Neruda:

“The Grand Portal is the wall demolition. That’s when the wall comes down through the efforts of all beings that are undergoing the Sovereign Integral process. And this makes it possible for all human beings to step forward into their infinite self or life essence.”

Sarah:

“So the sequence is first the human portal and then The Grand Portal? And from a timing perspective, what can you say about it?”

Dr. Neruda:

“The human portal anchors the inception point on earth for The Grand Portal. It will come in about ten years. The Grand Portal, about seventy years after that. Those are the rough timeframes I’ve been given, but always with the stipulation that these times can shift and change.”

Sarah:

“What does science say about this?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Science... in terms of what?”

Sarah:

“I mean the whole notion of the universe being a hologram or illusion created inside our head.”

Dr. Neruda:

“Science is not able to explain it. The counterlogical nature of the universe—in terms of quantum behavior—is impossible to explain. Some scientists have relented to explaining it all away as hidden variables. But frankly, what the WingMakers have explained is that we’re creating the universe through the human interface Anu provided us by reinterpreting sound vibrations through our five senses.”

Sarah:



“But it doesn’t make sense... how can I see the moon and a two-year-old can see it exactly the same way? How can it be the same?”

Dr. Neruda:

“No, this is what the unconscious mind provides the Human 2.0 interface. It gathers the interpretation of the sound vibration of the moon, based on billions and billions of sightings throughout time. These evolve and change based on environmental conditions, but generally the notion that the moon is silver and generally the size that it is, is stored and shared in the DNA and unconscious mind system and reinforced by culture, family and education. This is the universal collective field. It’s a field effect that transfers information through vibratory fields that interconnect humans.”

Sarah:

“Maybe it’ll just take me a while to get that one. I hear your explanation; it just doesn’t make sense to me. Let me change the topic slightly. If everyone’s life is pre-programmed, why are you and I talking about this? I mean why are we able to discuss this? Why would Marduk’s program allow us to even glimpse this information?”

Dr. Neruda:

“It’s a good question. Maybe the best way to understand this is to consider a thought experiment. Imagine that our universe is a bubble. It was created by a group of entities that used deception against their equals who had never experienced such an evil vision of separation, and therefore couldn’t conceive of a defense against it. This

bubble universe seemed complete and always expanding. In many ways, it was an ideal platform for life, and yet only one sentient life form seemed to exist on one tiny planet inside this vast, near-infinite universe.

“Inside this same bubble, there were vibratory dimensions that became known in religious circles as heaven and hell, and in spiritual and psychic circles, as the etheric and astral planes. These planes exist inside the bubble, but are not visible with the human interface or five senses. We’ll call this Bubble One.

“External to Bubble One, imagine there is another universe or dimension of existence. It is vast and encompasses Bubble One wholly. Within this second, larger bubble is the dimension from which our life essence originated prior to its insertion into Bubble One. Now, beings in Bubble Two can enter Bubble One and experience it fully. However, if they get too close to the populated planet called earth and stay too long, they will manifest and not be able to return to Bubble Two.

“Earth is the focal point in Bubble One. The entities, who fancy themselves as gods, create more bubbles. They entrap other races in the same paradigm of deception and cast beings from Bubble Two to new bubbles that are similar to Bubble One. These entities essentially plan to take over Bubble Two for themselves, while making their equals, who formerly shared Bubble Two, enslaved worshippers who look to the rulers of Bubble Two as their gods.

“Meanwhile, there is a larger bubble that surrounds Bubble Two. We’ll call it Bubble Three. Are you with me?”

Sarah:

“I think so.”

Dr. Neruda:

“Good. So Bubble Three encompasses Bubble Two and all of the smaller bubbles related to Bubble One. There are beings in Bubble Three that are aware of the deception perpetrated on the bubbles and the beings within them, but infinite beings are patient and curious. They wanted to see what this separation construct would create. In dimensions that had only known oneness and equality, the concept of division in material form was interesting.”

Sarah:

“But all the human misery, just to run an experiment?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Remember the human machine is not real. It’s the equivalent of a spacesuit with artificial intelligence and a sense-and-respond sensory system. The astronaut—us—is infinite. It cannot be killed or hurt or destroyed. While the experimentation looks miserable from a human perspective, it is vibrant with learning on many other levels, one of which is to build the awareness in all beings of never allowing this deception to occur again.

“The unconscious mind system of the human being exists in a similar, but significantly more advanced modus operandi in the interdimensional beings that can

interoperate between the three bubbles. It is what allows the equality and oneness to be maintained in vast worlds of spacetime and quantum spacetime.

“Now, within this thought experiment you can see that the dimensions of spacetime are more dimensional than one universe. That entities exist in these various bubbles, experimenting with their creation. Sometimes in this experimentation, they decide to enslave through the constructs of separation and deception. This occurs with issues that human beings can relate to like scarcity, preservation of a race, unintended consequences of decisions, service to self instead of service to truth. All of these elements were in the behavioral equations of Anu and his Sirian accomplices.

“At some point, the lessons are learned. The entire experiment solidifies and hardens to such a degree that it cannot really compress anymore. Its value rapidly diminishes from that point. When this happens, beings will intervene. In our case, we intervened in the form of humanity returning to warn of this reality, hence the WingMakers intervention. As for why we are talking, it’s simple. Marduk is not the only one who can program.”

Sarah:

“And what does that mean?”

Dr. Neruda:

“In today’s world we have programmers who can write code that take the user of that code from one experience to the next. It moves them from point A to point B.

Programming is an aspect of time. It's a directional process.

"You're aware of hackers. They come in all sizes. Earlier this year a fifteen-year-old kid hacked into the US Air Force. Even Microsoft is finding it impossible to protect its NT OS. The hacker mindset is again a manifestation of separation. It is a polarity. A mind game of sorts, complete with ego and sometimes greed. Mostly, it's a reminder that whatever's a fortress remains vulnerable. The program that Marduk created is similar in concept to our software programming, but infinitely more complex and advanced. However, as any hacker will tell you, anything can be hacked with the right technology and skill.

"Our programs have been hacked. We've been altered. We're not connected in the same way to the grid lines that rule this hologram that I called Bubble One, a little earlier."

Sarah:

"Who... who did the hacking?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I can't give you a name. I don't know. I've been told that there're many resources that are being used to create the crack in the wall, and then, from the inside—that's us, humanity—we'll push the wall down collectively and walk out of this prison. We're part of the crack."

Sarah:

"I don't remember volunteering."

Dr. Neruda:

“For what it’s worth, neither do I.”

Sarah:

“Okay... I’m going to shift the conversation a bit. In my notes from Saturday you said the following: ‘That the WingMakers claimed that the three-dimensional five-sensory domain that humans have adjusted to is the reason we are only using a fractional portion of our intelligence. They claimed that the time capsule would be the bridge from the three-dimensional five-sensory domain to the multidimensional seven-sensory domain.’

“How does that relate to tonight’s conversation, and what exactly is the time capsule?”

Dr. Neruda:

“The time capsule is the content of the WingMakers project. It’s called a time capsule because it’s a designed intervention to shift time. It’s called a capsule because it is a delivery system of information that is designed to assist people to unlock from their grid lines—their pre-programmed life path where they were essentially a human robot marching through their life path as they were programmed to do.

“Until the WingMakers disclose this aspect of their intervention (Sarah’s note: the Fifth Interview of Dr. Jamisson Neruda), they can’t disclose the real meaning behind their words. Again, they cloaked their words in the accepted standards of this world’s rules relative to the New Age, new world order, spirituality, religion, philosophy, etc. This gave them an accepted anonymity; after all, it

was all presented as a myth. There's nothing in a myth that could cause Anu to censor or strike back.

"They tested the explicitness of the language, and decided to place some of the activational elements in other formats like art, poetry and music. In other words, when they couldn't state something explicitly, because of retaliatory concerns, they would encode it into the art."

Sarah:

"But you've asked me to hold it back—this interview. What if it never gets released?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Then it wasn't necessary."

Sarah:

"But then that would make the rest of the materials less than true, wouldn't it?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I would say it would make them less direct or explicit, but to your point, yes, I would agree that their truth is diminished without the framework of this disclosure."

Sarah:

"Who are these materials for? I mean, I can tell you right now that when you were describing the first four interviews, I could count on one hand how many people I know who would listen to this perspective with an open mind. Most of my friends and family... I wouldn't even mention it. But with this interview, I don't think anyone I

know would be open to it. I can't think of one, to be honest."

Dr. Neruda:

"I understand. The number of people, who show up to look through the crack in the wall, will be very small. In terms of the whole population, a tiny fraction. But the real definition of The Grand Portal is that enough people will look through that crack and recognize there is more—much more to reality's existence, and they will work collectively to push down the wall. When the wall falls, that will be when the infinite beings inside step out and operate the human instrument, not as a separate thing, not as a vessel or something they wear as a uniform, but they will operate inside the human body free of the interface and functional implants."

Sarah:

"You mean they won't ascend into Bubble Number Two or Three?"

Dr. Neruda:

"They will stay right here: earth. But they will stay here, in the body, as infinite beings, not enslaved shells of themselves."

Sarah:

"You said there were other beings involved in this intervention. Can you disclose them?"

Dr. Neruda:



“I’d prefer not to say anything other than to mention that it will be disclosed soon. This whole enslavement of humanity is like the six blind men touching the elephant. Many people are feeling parts of the elephant and describing the part they are touching, but with blindfolds on, it is very hard to describe the whole deception.”

Sarah:

“Are these ‘blind men’ humans?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Yes, of course. They see parts of this enslavement and they know something is happening. Something isn’t right. You can’t have god-like beings walking around the earth coincident with murder, rape, child abuse and war, and they don’t feel this separation and deception. Something is terribly wrong. Why are we letting this happen?

“According to the WingMakers, there are people who are incarnated now who would be the equivalent of outliers. Are you familiar with this term?”

Sarah:

“No.”

Dr. Neruda:

“The term is typically used in statistics. Think of it like an anomaly. A person has what is called a transient malfunction to their interface, but in this malfunction, they are able to see through the crack. It might only last a second or two, but they glimpse what is behind the walls. And again, I’m not talking about the astral plane—that’s just a more rarified plane of the Hologram of Deception.

“People with these transient malfunctions often end up being diagnosed autistic, or in extreme cases, are considered schizophrenic, but because the malfunction is transient, they slowly merge back into the human hologram and lack the contextual meaning of what they saw anyway. They learn to forget. The program draws them back in.

“But before they forget, before they return to normal beliefs, before they are drugged or quarantined, they share their experience to the unconscious mind. And this begins to express itself through culture. It’ll come out in movies, books, theater, art, poetry, and many of these expressions will help to feed the unconscious mind and open it up to the possibility that the scale of our prison encompasses even the light, even science, even angels... even god.”

Sarah:

“Do we wear a target on ourselves when this gets released? I mean will Anu decide to take us down if this goes out?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Believe me I’ve probed on that issue. There’s risk involved. How much, I don’t know. The WingMakers explain that the creators of this plan have resigned themselves to the intervention, but that their equivalents here on earth are not as excited by those prospects. It’ll work its way out, but it’ll take some time.”

Sarah:

“What happens between now and The Grand Portal... when the wall gets pushed down?”

Dr. Neruda:

“All I can tell you is that the Triad of Power will continue to consolidate. The money system will continue to spiral away from the many into the hands of the few. This was part of the original programming—”

Sarah:

“Relating to the return of Anu?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Yes. Anu would step in and solve the world’s problems and be anointed. Anu would use the centralization of the money system to integrate technology into biologic systems so they would be able to have infinite existence in Bubble One—earth. That way, Anu reasoned, he could be god in this world forever.

“But as I said, this plan was not perfect in the sense of its infinitude. Anu underestimated the beings in Bubble Three and beyond.”

Sarah:

“Has it ever been tried before?”

Dr. Neruda:

“What?”

Sarah:

“This crack in the wall, and then pushing the wall down?”

Dr. Neruda:

“No. Not in our world. This is the first coordinated effort to liberate humanity.”

Sarah:

“But what about Jesus or Buddha?”

Dr. Neruda:

“According to the WingMakers, each of the Avatars who came to this planet did so as invited guests. Humans were explained as ‘lost beings’. It’s literally how we are defined in the planes of existence outside our planet. Remember what I had said about the higher dimensional beings that would visit earth and become manifested?”

Sarah:

“Yes...”

Dr. Neruda:

“That was how many of these Avatars came to earth. They did not go through the birth process, they literally manifested in the earth plane with their dimensional consciousness intact. They did not want to be born into this world and inhabit a human body, because they knew they would sleep and forget. Avatars had to directly manifest.

“The problem was that people were afraid of them and stayed away, or people acted as guardians of the old system and wanted to destroy the Avatar, or some people looked to the Avatar to save them. This was what spawned the evolution/saviorship model of the universe. Evolution, as defined here, is the process of being saved and absolved of one’s sins. The sinner evolved into the disciple; and the

disciple evolved into the teacher; and the teacher evolved into the Hierarchy of teachers and leaders. Saviorship simply meant that an outside force or Avatar would save the individual from their sins or reprehensible behavior, and connect them to the light or spirit of god. The savior was an intermediary of the Hierarchy that plugged the individual into the light of illumination and enlightenment.”

Sarah:

“So... didn’t these Avatars open a crack?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Of sorts, but mostly it was to demonstrate what was really inside the human vessel. It was not to show miracles for the sake of convincing people to follow them or to create a religion. The resurrection, for example, was not a piece of theater to underline Jesus’ unique stature as the son of god. He was not that. That was written in later. As his popularity grew, it was understood that Anu and Marduk could utilize Jesus to strengthen Anu’s hold on human culture, and reposition himself as a loving God—the father of great entities like Jesus.

“Avatars were generally considered an annoyance by Anu. Usually they were killed or locked up to wither and die. Stories would be created to either cement them to Anu’s glorification, or they would be vilified and deemed to be of Satan. There was no middle ground with Avatars. Jesus was really the first Avatar that Anu decided to embrace and create a world religion around.

“Each of the other world religions were modeled after Christianity, even those whose founder was not technically an Avatar. Avatars were very rare. They wanted to come in and push down the walls, but they needed a large enough following to bring the whole wall down. A crack wouldn’t be enough. And if they came simply to show the nature of the infinite being inside each human uniform, they risked a religion being built around them that would become, over time, welded to Anu and the holographic, multi-layered deception that hung over humanity like a dome.

“The WingMakers refer to a new type of being called the Sovereign Entity. These are pre-Sovereign Integral beings, but they are seeded with the capacity to step out of the Hierarchy, and in doing so, they allow themselves to examine information that others would attack or ignore. Unfortunately, the information that will liberate people is the very information they are programmed to attack.”

Sarah:

“When you use the term Hierarchy, what are you referring to exactly?”

Dr. Neruda:

“The WingMakers seem to use this interchangeably with Anu at the top, his leadership within the dimensions, or Bubble Two, and his leadership on earth in the form of the Triad of Power. Collectively, this is the Hierarchy.”

Sarah:

“Can you help me understand how it is that no one knows about this... I mean, out of six billion people that

walk the earth now, and I don't know how many over the whole history of mankind, but it must be... I don't know, about a hundred billion or so, how could it be disguised?"

Dr. Neruda:

"That's how many life expressions, perhaps, but not beings—"

Sarah:

"Because of reincarnation, right?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Yes. But to answer your question, it's done through the interface of the human vessel. The interface is what most people consider to be them. That is their consciousness. The interface fuses with the physical body and the dimensional being that powers and animates it. There's an old saying that the last thing a fish notices is water. It's an apt expression of our circumstance, too.

"Humans have been living in this consciousness of a human body ever since they were first created. It is all they have ever known, and because of the sophistication of the technology that underlies this entire deception, we are thrown distraction after distraction to never, ever consider the possibility that everything is a part of an illusion. Everything.

"While it seems impossible that a hundred billion lives have existed and not one has peered through the crack, it would be like going to the deep sea where the bioluminescent fish live, and explaining to them that a world exists of light and warmth. Maybe one or two would

venture from the depths if they were told of this world, and they would return and report that they had experienced this strange, mysterious world. But never would they imagine that a whole world of land and air existed above that, where beings of entirely different natures walked on dry dirt and breathed air and looked at stars a billion light years away.

“Humans are a lot like those bioluminescent fish.”

Sarah:

“Okay, I understand the analogy, but no one?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Momentary glimpses through cracks... that’s all. The Avatars that manifested here have operated the closest to our true nature on this planet, but those who have gone through the birth process and have human DNA, they are locked into their interface or they are quickly removed.”

Sarah:

“Tuesday you talked at length about Lucifer and his creation of the Animus, where’s that factor into this... this story?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Until last night I didn’t know if this interview would even take place. I knew you wanted to speak in depth about The Grand Portal, but I wasn’t sure at what level I would be allowed to disclose it. This is very guarded information. It’s both a break-in and a break-out. The break-in is difficult to engineer amid the misinformation



and deception that occurs on this planet relative to humans.

“Lucifer and the fallen angels was a nod to the fallen humans who were booted out of Eden. It is the same story with the same purpose: place fear of rebellion in the consciousness systems of humans. Make it strong and potent in the unconscious mind, and make sure that Lucifer, Satan and the devil mirror the trinity of good—the father, son and the holy ghost. Anu realized that the best way to make his human creation lean his way was to make the path to his kingdom appear virtuous and morally acceptable. And how do you do that? You have evil embodied in demons that are bent on enslaving humans and preventing them from following the virtuous path.

“It created a perfect polarity of human beings progressing to the Kingdom of god while demons seduced and ensnared them. Angels and ascended masters were guides to show the way to the waiting kingdom. Eastern traditions used demigods, hierarchies of masters, meditation, but it was based on the very same polarity, which at its most basic level was light as good, and darkness as evil.

“So with that said, let me return to your question about Lucifer and the Animus. The story of Lucifer is like a prop on a stage. With Lucifer in play, the stage is more dangerous. You can place blame. You can deflect blame and responsibility from the morally righteous and god-fearing humans. You can infer that your enemies are enslaved by demons that do the bidding of Lucifer or Satan.

“This creates conflicts that lead to wars. This creates histories of conflict which sow generation after generation of people who are living their forefathers’ conflict. Amid all of this, god grows in stature and importance. Everyone wants to claim that god is on their side.

“Lucifer was a catalyst to enlarge the importance of Anu. To make humans dependent on him even though they never saw him, heard him, tasted him, smelled him or touched him. He was in the universal field vis-à-vis the unconscious mind. It was programmed this way, and religious culture only made it feel more real.

“The Animus were the Human 3.0 in the trajectory envisioned by Anu to support his infinite supremacy over humanity. His goal was to synthesize humanity with technology. The Animus were us in a potential future. There are government organizations, corporate entities and research institutions that share this same goal even as we speak.”

Sarah:

“How did the decision get made not to release everything?”

Dr. Neruda:

“I’ve said that the WingMakers materials are extensive. There are twenty-four philosophical papers, but only four will be released. The four interviews we’ve previously done, as I told you, these four will be released, possibly not all at once, but those have been sanctioned.

“This interview and the remaining twenty philosophy papers will not be released until certain conditions are met.

What those conditions are, I don't know. I assume it has to do with the discovery of the portal—the human portal I mentioned—and getting the crack in the wall established in this world. Once a foothold is made in establishing the inception point, perhaps then the other materials can be released.

“As for how the decision is made, let me be very clear that this is not my decision. It is determined by the WingMakers. An intervention from time-travelers is a very sensitive operation. Many variables need to be weighed and considered.”

Sarah:

“Forgive my blunt question here, but how do you know that the WingMakers aren't part of this whole deception?”

Dr. Neruda:

“At some point you have to trust your feelings and intuition, otherwise everything is just a purposeless mental exercise. I can't say that I'm 100 percent confident. As a scientist, I'm disbelieving by nature, but everything I've read and studied is consistent to their stated goal, which is to establish a new inception point for human beings in this specific time.

“Their first disclosure is a cloaked message of hope; an energetic rewiring of the spiritual philosophies of this planet away from masters, organizations, hierarchies and belief. It is more focused on becoming a spiritual activist or practitioner of behavioral intelligence. It is about activating pre-Sovereign Integrals who are able to

understand the evolutionary scope of the human being and help it to veer in the direction of the Sovereign Integral.

“The next or second disclosure will be the activation of the human portal. I don’t know yet how this will unfold, only that it will happen relatively soon.

“The third disclosure will be the fifth interview and possibly other material. When the fifth interview is released, it signals that the inception point has already been made. According to the WingMakers, this means that The Grand Portal will occur on this planet. Once the new inception point is anchored, it will unfold to plan.

“I have made the decision that if the second disclosure occurs, I will commit to this plan 100 percent. Until then I have told the WingMakers that I am with them and will conduct my actions according to their insights and guidance, but I will always have doubt in my mind until I see that the second disclosure occurs.”

Sarah:

“What if no one believes this, Dr. Neruda? What if you release this fifth interview sometime in the future and no one can relate to it or, as you suggested, they attack it? What then? Is the human portal sufficient to make this whole thing happen?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Yes. That’s what I have been told. Once the inception point is anchored, it will all unfold to plan.”

Sarah:

“So no one needs to believe this... it’ll just happen? That doesn’t sound right.”

Dr. Neruda:

“This information will remain in the underground, but science, according to the WingMakers, will be the force to actually prove out this information.”

Sarah:

“How?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Science will find the walls. They won’t expose the crack or necessarily assist in the demolition, but they will expose the walls—”

Sarah:

“But you said that LERM was discovered by the ACIO, and they thought of it as God or universal intelligence or whatever it was.”

Dr. Neruda:

“Yes. I’m not saying that science will define the Hologram of Deception as an insidious ruse perpetrated on humanity to enslave infinite beings to operate as finite, fear-based diminishments of themselves. That’s not my point. But those sovereign entities that stand around the crack in the wall will need help from legitimate sources that validate the possibility of the hologram. I don’t expect science to label the hologram good or bad, or imbue it with philosophical issues like deception, polarity, separation, etc.

“The WingMakers have explained that around the time that the human portal is activated, a scientist of great stature will emerge with a theory that will support the inception point. It is all being facilitated by their hacking into the program of these and other individuals.”

Sarah:

“Do you know the name of this scientist?”

Dr. Neruda:

“No.”

Sarah:

“Do you think it’s you?”

Dr. Neruda:

“No. I have no stature. No one has ever heard of me. The WingMakers were speaking of someone who held a high degree of credibility in the scientific community.”

Sarah:

“I still don’t see how it will happen... I mean the wall coming down. If things are as screwed up as you say, people will follow their programming. They’ll have too much fear to release everything they’ve learned to be real and true. I just don’t think people can make such a radical shift.”

Dr. Neruda:

“I agree. They can’t, not in the face of the status quo. But the status quo is part of the wall that will be taken down. You can’t paper over this. You can’t wave a magic

wand and pretend it doesn't exist—the wars between races, religions, classes, geographies, relationships of every scope, these cannot be pardoned by a savior or ET race. They have consequences, and these have to be dealt with.

“The status quo—the old normalcy, the comfortable distortion—will be removed, because you cannot build a heaven on earth as simply as plopping a new reality layer on top of the status quo. It would be like adding the Grand Canyon on top of a skyscraper. The skyscraper can't support it.”

Sarah:

“The amount of change that's coming sounds overwhelming.”

Dr. Neruda:

“If there's one thing I've learned in this interaction with the WingMakers, there is a programming track, and then there is a super consciousness track—the latter is involved with how quantum reality membranes intersect and can create chain reactions that ripple across every dimension. These chain reactions are guided by event strings designed by beings from very high dimensions.

“As I previously said, every being has the I AM sovereignty, but they also possess the WE ARE integration. As the I AM asserts itself through the expression of behaviors—either resistive or insertive—the I AM disentangles itself from the program, the Human 2.0 interface. It begins to reconnect with the WE ARE frequency or the tone of equality as the WingMakers have

referred to it. It broadcasts this through the unconscious mind or universal field, making it easier for another being to touch into this same perspective and adopt these behaviors.

“My point is that either the designers of the higher dimensional planes or humanity as a collective could potentially accelerate or decelerate The Grand Portal.”

Sarah:

“What if there was a tug of war like the higher beings wanted it sooner and humanity wanted it later?”

Dr. Neruda:

“I don’t know. I suspect the higher dimensional beings would listen to the resistance. I really don’t have an opinion on that one.”

Sarah:

“One day, hopefully in the not too distant future, a person will read this interview. What advice would you give them?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Everyone has thoughts and emotions. Everyone shares a reality called earth and the human body. We’re all on the same stage, playing different roles, but the stage unifies us to some degree. None of us can look across the stage and see a beautiful world of peace and harmony, or goodwill to all men. It isn’t the reality that encompasses us.

“The question is how do we move closer to a reality that supports our most innate truth, that I AM WE ARE? How



do we create a stage and write a play that supports our transformation into the Sovereign Integral that is in fact what we each are? Has religion shown the way? Has spirituality? How about science? How about our education system? Government?

“My point is that nothing that is currently in play is uniting us in equality and oneness. If you look at everything in your world after you read this interview, you will see that our world is designed for a very specific function, and this function is to feel separation. It can be as obvious as the color of skin, gender and different cultures, to the subtler distinctions between religions and spirituality, but the design is fractal and it infuses everything in this world in this common unity I have called separation. Ironically, our unity is separation.

“If you agree, if you also see or sense this separation, you might also decide that it’s escalating, not moving in the direction of unity, but further towards diversification and distinction, as if the more granular humanity becomes in its information access and expression, the more it drifts apart into clumps of similarity that feign unity within the clump, but expresses separation to the whole.

“The leaders of this world, whether they come from political, economic, military, religious or cultural perspectives, know how to speak the language of unity and oneness, but their actions are the result of programs that often act in reverse. This isn’t about thoughts and language. This is about behaviors and actions. People know how to disconnect from their thoughts and say one thing, and then do another. They know how to feign care, but their actions demonstrate hollowness.

“This is not an indictment to every standing solution, but nothing has worked. Religion’s failure has birthed the nihilistic and disillusioned organizations of darkness and occult experimentation. They feed off one another. It’s symbiotic survival. But what is lost in this is the reality that confusion and disaffection reaches into the world’s populations and dulls our collective minds and hearts.

“There is hope. Hope resides in the vacuum of unity and oneness that is unaligned to anything on this planet—no one owns it or controls it or administers it. There is no mediation or go-between. It is completely unique. For all intents and purposes, it has never been seen or heard. It is on the other side of the wall. This is our hope, as foreign and strange as it may seem.

“What is in this world is not working, and it is because of separation. I don’t care if you read the most esoteric, spiritual information on this planet, it is of separation. I’ve read esoteric spiritual documents over the past twenty years that would make most people swoon and say to themselves ‘this is the highest information’ or ‘this information is true because it is so detailed, no one could possibly know this much detail unless it was true.’

“The most esoteric information on this planet was not written by human beings, but through human beings vis-à-vis channeling. The channeling speaks of wonderful spiritual realities, of how humans and aliens are one, of how the deep psychology of human beings is constructed, of the complex cosmological environment in which humanity is nested. All wonderful information except no one mentions how we are enslaved, or why, or by whom. Not one.

“If these wonderful sources of information knew about how humanity is enslaved, wouldn’t they share it? Isn’t this the most basic point of information? What the WingMakers call the inception point? Why hasn’t any of this esoteric literature shown this? I’ll tell you, because the beings are either inside the hologram and don’t realize it themselves, or are part of the deception and are guarding its discovery from humans. They’re no different from us—us, as infinite beings. They’re lost in this Hologram of Deception as much as we are.

“For those of you who read this interview and are unsettled by it... I can only say, good, you should be. It’s a reality check on a cosmic, universal and individual level. You can bathe in the splendor of spirituality and quench your thirst with the presented masters, or you can deepen your understanding of the reality that confronts us and stand up committed to apply your self-expression in service to truth. To walk your life in the expression of resistive and insertive behaviors. To be sovereign and integral.

“It isn’t about spouting high spiritual concepts in thoughts and words. That is the reflex of the consciousness system—it’s parroting and robotic. Live the I AM WE ARE in your behaviors and leave the mind. Shutter it. The mind is programmed to compare and analyze, which feeds the me-you separation...

“Sorry about that, I got a little carried away with my answer.”

Sarah:

“No, it was good to hear your passion for this. I guess the thing that’s interesting to me is that the WingMakers materials are esoteric, at least to me, and they seem to be explaining cosmological systems and psychological structures, how is it different than what you were just saying about the channeled information?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Sometime this year the WingMakers site will be released on the Internet, at least a part of it. Its only goal, according to its authors, is to introduce one concept: the Sovereign Integral. That is the fractal seed for the inception point. The second phase will introduce practical behaviors to support the sovereign being in their deprogramming of what it means to be a spiritual person. The third phase is to anchor the inception point, and create the crack in the wall.”

Sarah:

“You’ve talked about the crack in the wall as the inception point. Can you elaborate on that a bit more?”

Dr. Neruda:

“I will, but first let me state something that I want to mention before I forget.

“The youth of this world are impressionable. They’re transitioning from the subconscious implants of their parents and forefathers to the creation of their own personality. They want to be different, they want to express themselves uniquely, and this opens them to influence. Where does this influence arise? Increasingly it comes through technology and the culture creators of

music, entertainment, games and books. They bring the tools for youth to knit their unique layer of personality that can fuse atop their genetic layer of consciousness—the subconscious.

“The glamor models, as the WingMakers refer to them, convey a powerful elixir, which is to be selfish and self-obsessed. Narcissism is okay. Nihilism is the philosophy. This is prevalent and it will continue to spread, because this is Anu’s program. When technology is unleashed in the form of global platforms, the impressionable youth will inform their consciousness and personality layers by means of this underlying philosophical belief in nihilism.

“The way this seeps into the culture, through technology that helps codify personality in our youth is one of the clearest examples of how Marduk’s programming spreads. However more sophisticated the technology becomes, the more integral it is to the person, the more the culture creators will exercise this philosophical system in humanity.”

Sarah:

“Why?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Because nihilism is the belief in nothing, and if kids build their personality and belief system from these ingredients, they will be more obedient to their internal programs.”

Sarah:

“Why?”

Dr. Neruda:

“If you don’t really believe in the higher reality of our world, you are more inclined to relinquish your sovereignty or the I AM consciousness. The phrase ‘selling my soul to the devil,’ is simply code for: I surrender to the will of Anu and desire to let him take my life for his purpose. The unstated objective of that renouncing of the I AM is that Anu will give me something in return for my sacrifice. But the only thing that is returned is slavery to the system. You walk your life according to your program, and the program ensures you are a puppet—whether you are rich or poor.”

Sarah:

“I’m glad you mentioned children, do you see them getting this? And if so, at what age?”

Dr. Neruda:

“If you mean will children understand the information that I’ve shared tonight, yes, of course. In many ways, they’ll get it better than their adults counterparts whose Human 2.0 interface is more welded or infused into the human uniform. But the WingMakers have written the materials so that they will be understood by the prepared, and age is not the key factor. It is the preparation.”

Sarah:

“Like what? I mean what constitutes preparation?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Preparation is willingness to change. It is a lack of fear to embrace a completely new paradigm, and just as much, to release the old.

“If a person is poorly prepared for this information, they defend what this information tears down, which is nearly everything. They are not prepared to step into the vacuum of change that this information brings into their life.”

Sarah:

“But why?”

Dr. Neruda:

“It requires a lot of responsibility to accept this information. This information is unsettling because you are on your own. We are on our own. There is no savior or army of angels or ETs who are going to collect the good and bring them to their heavenly home. This also requires work. It is behavioral adjustments. It is impeccability. It is authenticity. It is attentiveness. It is caring. It is not a party. It is not surface cosmetics. This is the sober journey into self-realization no matter how that realization appears. It is a commitment to that premise. You don’t say to yourself, ‘I’ll walk that path, but only if I get to go to heaven and rest in paradise with beautiful souls all around me’. That’s not this path.

“For those who want that path, they can subscribe to the religion or cult of their choice and find those kinds of promises aplenty. This information is for those interested in breaking through to their true self and in doing so, not to rest and relax... or... or party and enjoy, but to serve truth

through their behaviors until everyone crosses into that reality of oneness and equality from which we came.”

Sarah:

“You were talking about the insertive behaviors a little earlier. I wrote some of them down, but I didn’t hear the word ‘love’. Did I miss it, or is it missing for a reason?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Love is not used frequently in the WingMakers materials in general. I think in part that’s because the word carries so much baggage in this world. It has a kind of sentimental, co-dependent energy in terms of relationships, and then in culture it’s used so casually, almost like a catch-all phrase that people use to greet one another like ‘how are you?’

“Love is the unification force. It is only that, and yet, in many ways, that is everything. From the WingMakers perspective it is a very important word-concept, even though they use it sparingly. The six heart virtues I mentioned are considered the different ways in which love manifests in our behaviors. To this extent, love is expressed in these virtuous behaviors like gratitude, compassion, forgiveness and humility. In that context, the six heart virtues, collectively, are the expression of love in the human dimension.”

Sarah:

“What about joy? It also seems to be missing.”

Dr. Neruda:



“I know this information seems very sobering and unsettling. Because I defected from the ACIO, I have two forces that would like me to fail. This pressure has weighed on me. It had activated a degree of paranoia within me that I didn’t know was possible. For this reason, joy, at least as it pertains to me, has not yet been a part of my personal experience.

“I’m sure everyone will receive these materials differently, especially the information in this, the fifth, interview. I would remind you that the emotional and feeling world is a functional implant and the emotions we attribute to our heart or soul are not truly coming from those sources.”

Sarah:

“Then, where do they come from?”

Dr. Neruda:

“The layer of the mind known as the unconscious generates emotions, but they are felt throughout the human body. The unconscious layer of the mind is interdimensional, so it extends from Bubble One to Bubble Two, which allows you to feel in the astral world or after-life.

“When I express any of the heart virtues, I place them through the lens of oneness and equality. That’s where they achieve their potency in expression. Then I take that experience and quite literally send it to my head region, imagining that experience is placed in the pineal gland in the center of the brain. This is my way of mailing it to everyone through the unconscious mind.”

Sarah:

“Why do you call them heart virtues if emotions are generated by the unconscious?”

Dr. Neruda:

“The heart is a metaphor for the portal within each individual. It is relatively free of the Human 2.0 interface and mind functional implants, partly because of the electromagnetic field it produces, and partly because of its physical dynamics. The WingMakers suggest that the heart virtues should be experienced and expressed first in this region of the body, instead of the mind or head region, as a way to isolate the tendency of the mind to simulate these emotions from the unconscious mind layer, where they, by definition, lack the same potency of expression, because they exist in separation.”

Sarah:

“It sounds kind of complicated.”

Dr. Neruda:

“I prefer to look at the flip side. If I do nothing, if I go sit quietly in my chair and meditate or study religious scripture or pray, how am I supporting the progress of this reality? If this world remains ensnared in deception, that’s complicated—not just for me, but every being in Bubbles One and Two.”

Sarah:

“One of the things you’ve mentioned frequently is this notion of oneness and equality. I understand the meaning

and import of the words, but these are certainly not new concepts. Doesn't every spiritual teacher say this?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Not all, but some do. You can go back 2,500 years to Heraclitus, who announced that all things are one. It is an important concept of human philosophy and to some extent modern-day physics. With regard to religions, often the founder says one thing and the followers who organize and interpret the founder's words and teachings alter it, but oneness and unity have not been mainstays of religion, particularly in the context of behaviors.

"The WingMakers are focused on behavioral intelligence expressed through the lens of oneness and equality. The I AM WE ARE is rooted in this principle. It may not seem like a big deal to adopt this simple philosophical perspective, and frankly, it isn't, because they're simply words and it's only a concept. But if it's genuinely adopted and anchored in the core of your belief system, then you can possess the necessary commitment to express this in your behaviors. And this is where most people will probably have a problem.

"The Human 2.0 interface is full of programming from Marduk and the human unconscious. It is weighed down in this quagmire like a person caught in quicksand, struggling to find a rope or anything solid to pull themselves out. The 'rope' in this case, is the simple framework of I AM WE ARE and applying it through our behaviors, but it has to line up. If you adopt the framework, but your behaviors do not reflect this, the rope disappears.

“The unification of all beings in all dimensions exists. It’s only when you step out of quantum spacetime that you realize the illusion of separation, and retaining this basic truth of oneness and equality in a Human 2.0 spacesuit is no simple task. That’s why it must be more than words, and the words must be practiced in the now.”

Sarah:

“Why are the WingMakers doing it this way? It seems so innocent... I mean, asking people to become self-aware and practice insertive and resistive behaviors. After hearing all of what’s happening in the Triad of Power, it seems like we’re using slingshots against their stealth bombers. They want a money system that makes us perpetually indebted—slaves to the dollar, and they want this money system to be one currency. The most powerful people on the planet with access to the best technology, the best weapons... how can we expect to prevail if they want transhumanism?”

Dr. Neruda:

“To understand why the WingMakers are focused on the Sovereign Integral process, you first need to understand why the Triad of Power is focused on their plan.

“The Triad of Power believes their One World concept is the right concept. They want to unify humanity through a money system that they control, utilizing technology as another means to unify. Unity, in their minds, is more like shepherding the human herd into easy-to-manage corrals and monitoring them for any rebellion. Their form of unity is a chimera. It is theater for display purposes, and nothing more. Their form of ‘we’re all in this together, let us

protect you’ is simply more illusion and deception. Their plan for Human 3.0 remains fused to the same functional implants that constitute Human 2.0, and that is separation.

“As I said earlier, they are here to prepare for Anu’s return, whether they are conscious of it or not. All aspects of the power system, including major religions, are here to prepare. That is their watchword: prepare. The Anunnaki have one dominant belief in humanity: we are weak because we live in fear and separation. We do not stand up to the drip-drip-drip of indoctrination or the slow, but persistent evaporation of our personal liberties.

“Now, remember that the Anunnaki and their Triad of Power are both calculating and patient. What they established in our distant past is beginning to come to fruition. The finite seventy-year life of a human being lacks patience. It is programmed to be impatient. This is against infinite beings that see timelines in hundreds of thousands of years and can program individual human beings within those timelines to achieve precisely what they want—if human beings agree to it, if they don’t stand up.

“The Anunnaki do not embrace the Sovereign Integral process. The notion of oneness and equality seems like a weakness to them. They believe they have the upper hand in this chess match. They foresee checkmate. Humans will fold. The sacrifice of Princess Diana last August was symbolic of the vibrant queen being lost on the chessboard. Those are the kind of messages they make, the kind of bold announcements. They do this out of a feeling of certainty in their programming and patience.

“When I say programming, I don’t mean just the internal interface that Marduk has programmed, but also the programming of the unconscious mind through the media, culture, religion, politics and economic structure. The combination of these forces is really the cause of their confidence, because they see our fall as an inevitability.

“Now, to answer your question, human beings, even those with Anunnaki DNA, can become self-realized of their true nature through a simple process. It doesn’t require that they meditate and pray all day or retreat to an ashram. The Sovereign Integral process becomes a natural part of the life expression of the individual. If enough human beings can embrace this process or something like it, the crack in the wall will expand, the wall will become less stable, and the world of separation, in its brittleness, will begin to crumble.

“The life essence is what we have on our side. This is not a slingshot as you put it. It is the infinite force that powers every object in the universe. Life is inside us and it exists in one and only one state: equality and oneness. The entire Hologram of Deception, as created and curated by the Anunnaki and their cohorts, that is not life, it is the exemplar of separation. Life is truthful and authentic. Separation begets deception, unworthiness and fear.

“If enough human beings awaken, if we begin to realize what’s afoot, what plans are being made to further enslave us and ensure that we remain a part of the Hologram of Deception, life will move inside us and we can collectively stand up and stop this, but it has to be done in the right way, with honesty, forgiveness and compassion. The alternative to separation must be expressed in our

movements and practices. We have to model these behaviors as a collective entity. That is the definition of The Grand Portal.”

Sarah:

“You’ve talked a lot about separation. Can you elaborate on why this concept is so prevalent?”

Dr. Neruda:

“If you look at the material that comes from religion, spirituality, philosophy, psychology, even the arts, you will see that much of this material is designed to be an owner’s manual for our functional implants. They support the Human 2.0 interface. They instruct us on the methods and attitudes to activate these systems inside us.

“I’ve previously mentioned the three layers of the consciousness interface—the conscious mind, the subconscious and the unconscious. The unconscious is where we mostly operate in terms of our behaviors and perceptions. The unconscious mind layer is deep and penetrating, and it is universal. As I said, it’s how Anu uses the oneness concept to his benefit. We are one in separation. The unconscious mind is one.

“Separation is a fractal energy. It infects everything within the Hologram of Deception to such a degree that it’s not recognizable. No matter how well intentioned a person or organization might be to convey true information, what often lurks behind the information is this fractal energy of separation and its use of comparison and judgment and all the other tools of separation that distill down to fear and unworthiness.

“It’s as if the internal programming of Marduk and the external programming of the Triad of Power echoes around in all content of all times and cultures, so common and accepted, as to be unnoticeable. We have accepted separation, because it seems normal. Thus our behaviors and perceptions, driven largely by the unconscious mind, embody separation, and the vast majority of us do not even know it.”

Sarah:

“Okay, but then how do we become of aware of it?”

Dr. Neruda:

“A person must understand that they are being programmed... that’s a starting point. If you don’t accept this basic premise, then why would you choose to change? If you do, then observe the programming inside you, within others in your environment, the larger world, and begin to see how subtle this programming is.

“In many ways, to observe this programming requires us to be neutral, so we can simply observe our internal states and the messages therein, as well as those of the external program, which come via television, the Internet, email, newspapers, magazines, direct mail, and so on. It isn’t critical that you know how every program is expressed into your life or what its esoteric meaning is. What’s important is that you understand you are being programmed and you seek an internal source of direction, inspiration and movement.

“The Sovereign Integral process is focused on you—the individual—directing your own self—life essence—to



express itself in oneness and equality. That's it. If you do this, then you are releasing the hold of the programming. For some this can be done quickly, and for others it might require more diligent practice."

Sarah:

"Can I do this and still be a Christian or whatever I was raised in?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I suggest that anyone who resonates with this information try it out. See how it moves them through their life path. If they want to remain in their current structures, see if elements of the Sovereign Integral process could be applied. But if you don't see separation in your current practices, then stay there, because you won't have the motivation to be a practitioner."

Sarah:

"But you just said that most of us don't see separation—"

Dr. Neruda:

"I said that if you don't see it in your current practice, then you won't be motivated to change. This process is all about change. Make no mistake about it. It is not selfish in any way. There is no burrowing into the bedrock of a belief system here that will make you feel superior or privileged or wise. There really is no belief system here other than the Sovereign Integral process. There is no structure, no organization, no master, no Hierarchy, no one is above another or below another. Do you see? This is not

an organization of this world. It cannot be of this world; otherwise it is subject to separation. The only way the Human 3.0 SI manifests is inside enough human beings who exemplify this process, who anchor this new consciousness of conduct on this planet and share it through their behaviors and unconscious mind. That's the only way, and not everyone is prepared to do that."

Sarah:

"What happens if we see separation, but still don't have the motivation to make the changes in our behaviors?"

Dr. Neruda:

"The functional implants of the Human 2.0 interface are seldom easy to release. They will hold on to your life essence as long as they can. They want to drive the human vessel, not hop in the backseat and watch as mere passengers. That's against their program."

Sarah:

"So talk about this resistance from the functional implants. How does it manifest?"

Dr. Neruda:

"I'm sure it's an individual thing. I don't pretend to know how it is for anyone else. I can tell you from personal experience that I initially dived head first into this process and rearranged my life. I thought I was doing a good job, and then a week or two later, I found myself back to square one, exactly where I'd started. It felt like amnesia. It was as if I had forgotten I was even doing a new practice. Admittedly, in my case, I had a lot of

distractions in my life, but everyone can probably say the same thing.

“So I think this tendency, to return to the habits of the consciousness system inside our 2.0 interface, is the main way that resistance is expressed. Change, of this scope, is not an easy proposition. The Human 2.0 mind doesn’t like the backseat.”

Sarah:

“So what did you do, to return to the Sovereign Integral process?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Well, for me, I needed to direct the techniques inward.”

Sarah:

“Explain what you mean...”

Dr. Neruda:

“I was directing the heart virtues outward to others, but I wasn’t turning them inward to myself. It dawned on me that the inward was probably the most important place to start.”

Sarah:

“How did you do that?”

Dr. Neruda:

“It takes great alertness to live and express in the now. Human beings have the tendency to live in our past

memories or future concerns. This was what I was doing and it took me from the now. And the now is where our life essence expresses. It isn't in the past or future, only the consciousness framework pivots between past and future, so if you find yourself in there, you know you are not in your essence.

“When I realized this, I read from the WingMakers philosophy that breath was the magnet of nowness. It was the element that brought the human being into nowness by being aware of their breathing. I also learned that there were different kinds of breathing that enabled this sense of nowness to penetrate more vividly into the Hologram of Deception.

“The point is that simply being aware of my breath helped, as the WingMakers put it, to center me in stillness. This, by the way, doesn't mean that you're in a quiet room. You can be in a meeting at work, and center yourself in stillness through your breath. But by being in this internal centeredness I was in a better position to feel my own sense of expression, and that's what was missing in my initial efforts to integrate this process. I didn't have a good starting point for my practice of the heart virtues, and I was directing them outward—to other people or events, and not myself first.

“Once I made that adjustment, it helped me to identify my essence and distinguish it from my mind system. Life essence is authentic in oneness and equality and exclusively moves in nowness. The consciousness framework pivots between the past, present and future and operates in separation. If you express the heart virtues

from the consciousness framework, especially outwardly, they won't have the same potency or effect."

Sarah:

"You've mentioned the idea of resistive and insertive behaviors, and I think I understand the insertive behaviors in terms of expressing the heart virtues to one's self and others, but talk a little bit about the resistive behaviors. What are they, and how does that work?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Again, you need to start from the point of distinguishing your life essence in the now. Center yourself in oneness through being still and breath aware. Initially this may take some time, but it happens quicker with practice. Thought patterns that connect you to separation need to be stopped. Behaviors, too.

"You can simply say, I've identified a behavior that supports separation in this world. Let's say I have believed that Muslims are less moral than atheists, and therefore less likely to get into heaven than someone who doesn't even believe in god. This is a belief or thought form that relates to separation. I can say, stop that, but it's not really effective for most people. I can resist the belief every time it expresses itself in my life, but many of these beliefs are so subtle and subconscious that we don't even realize how they express themselves in our behaviors and choices.

"If you apply the heart virtues to yourself, like forgive yourself for having these perceptions, have some compassion for yourself that everyone is infected with these separation beliefs from their subconscious and

unconscious mind layers. Be humble that making this resistive alteration is not just about you, but in a way, it's about everyone, because we are one. Appreciate the fact that you're working on this for the good of all. Have valor that you can stand up and resist these separation complexes that lurk in your programmed consciousness framework.

"You can see how I used the heart virtues to effectively deal with a belief or perception that separated me, not just from Muslims, though they were the target in this particular example, but when you draw separation lines around anyone, you're operating from the consciousness system implant, and it only supports the Hologram of Deception."

Sarah:

"Okay, but you're not suggesting that I look at rapists and murderers as one with me are you?"

Dr. Neruda:

"Well that's just it. They are. You can't have oneness and equality and then say, well, that's true, except for this population of society or these felons of the human race. There is no leper colony where humans are excluded outside of the circle. The circle is all-inclusive, or it is in illusion. This is an absolute.

"Remember my statement about the Hologram of Deception is a prison?"

Sarah: "Yes..."

Dr. Neruda:

“There is no other prison inside the prison. We’re all in the prison. All of us are prisoners, even those who are in the Incunabula. There is no one who stands inside the prison walls and truly knows oneness and equality.”

Sarah:

“But then how does it change, if no one knows this?”

Dr. Neruda:

“It’s a process—both for the individual and the human race. We work on it, together. We resist behaviors of separation and insert behaviors of oneness and equality. We disengage from the thoughts, ideas, beliefs, principles, people, organizations, currencies, food, clothing, fashion, toys, and everything else within the Hierarchy whose roots are nourished by separation.”

Sarah:

“When you put it that way, it sounds daunting, even impossible.”

Dr. Neruda:

“It has to be done, and it has to be done by us. The question is, if it has to be done, when does humanity want to do it? Now? A hundred years? A thousand years? Ten thousand years? The WingMakers are clear about this in their writings that if we wait until after Human 3.0, when man and machine become integrated, it will only become more difficult. Enslavement of life must end, at all levels.”

Sarah:

“I want to shift to something that’s been bothering me about this whole conversation, and that is the issue of a God. From your description, God, as we’ve come to think of him or her... or it, is an illusion. It’s really a being who presents himself as God. So the question is, is there a real God?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Thanks for asking that question. I meant to bring it up on my own, and I think I sidetracked myself.”

“Let’s go back to the thought experiment about the bubbles. There is a presentation of a god, which as I’ve said, is Anu. This is the god that Muslim, Jew and Christian alike revere and worship. This is the god who desires to return and provide a clear supremacy over humankind to direct humanity to a Human 3.0, one-world-transhumanist-existence that would stretch into forever.

“As I’ve said, there’s a life essence inside all beings, including the Anunnaki, and this life essence is infinite. If you understand infinite, then you understand it is outside of spacetime. If a being is outside of spacetime, it is not defined by polarities like birth and death, creation and destruction, good and evil, and so forth. It is beholden to none of our vocabulary and concepts.

“Thus, when the WingMakers decided it was time for this information to become available on earth, it was offered, in terms of its text, as a bridge. In other words, it was decelerated to our language constructs—”

Sarah:

“And other forms of media, too, like the music and art.”



Dr. Neruda:

“Yes, but in a different application. All of this information needed to be encoded in a way that would be acceptable to two sources of scrutiny. One was Anu and his Hierarchy, the other, the individual. Which is why the material in this interview will only be released when certain conditions are met, and the WingMakers are reasonably satisfied that the information will not be taken down by the Hierarchy or dismissed as a fairytale by the individuals they are trying to reach.

“Now, when this deceleration occurred, they elected to release the information in phases. Phase one would be encoded in a way that would allow people to understand the world outside of the Hologram of Deception, but in a framework that’s somewhat familiar, that’s resonant with the evolving beliefs on the planet.

“Hence, the idea of First Source, Source Intelligence, Sovereign Integral, human instrument... all of these concepts will be provided without contextual details, because if they were included, the information that I’m telling you tonight would be purged by the Hierarchy. The entire event string would be taken down. The inception point of the portal and grand portal would have been mired in doubt.

“So, it will be dispensed in the manner it must. This is not in my control.”

Sarah:

“What does this have to do with the existence of a God or not?”

Dr. Neruda:

“I just wanted to clarify that the word god means multiple things and it needs to be clear what meaning is being used. That’s why, in part, the WingMakers don’t use the word ‘god’ but instead use the word First Source. However, in their later philosophical writings, after Chamber Six, they don’t use this word, for the reasons I mentioned. But these are very subtle intonations in their writings, as they try to weave their messages into our modern-day culture without being targeted by hierarchical censors.”

Sarah:

“There are literally people who censor this information?”

Dr. Neruda:

“There are people who censor and control information everywhere—in the media, the government, the military, the sciences, education, religion... everywhere. The Hierarchy has a complete army of censors. The vast majority don’t know who they really work for, they’re just enforcing what they’ve been hired to enforce. It’s just a job. But technology platforms exist primarily for censorship. Intelligence gathering enables NSA censorship and information control. It’s their job to filter, control and manipulate information. The system of mass surveillance isn’t deployed to protect the masses; it’s to control them, to keep them inside the prison—from Anu’s perspective, and controllable—from the elite perspective.”

Sarah:

“You’re not saying that the NSA cares about things like this, are you?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Not in the sense of how god is defined, but it’s through their surveillance platforms that those in the Hierarchy are alerted to information that details critical aspects of their Hologram of Deception. That kind of information is fed upstream to those who do care.”

Sarah:

“If that’s the case, then whenever this gets released, it’ll get censored, so what’s the point?”

Dr. Neruda:

“This is all about timing. If this gets released it will be because the WingMakers have confidence that it will pass censorship. Something will have happened to enable it.”

Sarah:

“I’m aware you haven’t really answered my question yet on God, so I do want to come back to that, but with the Internet these days, couldn’t you just drop this whole information on the public at one time? It’d go out to a few thousand people and then they could put it out on other sites and it would just grow in geometrical progression. How could they hold it back or censor it?”

Dr. Neruda:

“It would be modified. It’s a complete set of information. Once it got out in that format, some would claim their version is the original and others would claim

that their version was the original, and they might be as different as black and white in some areas. It only creates confusion, and once there's confusion, it's impossible to bring clarity. In intelligence circles this is called reputation destruction.

“Think of it like this. You have a set of information that is targeted to specific beings that live everywhere on the planet. You wait until there is a communication system that can get to each of these beings. You have to make sure that the information is as pure as it can be, but still get past the censors, so you encode it and release it in phases.

“The first phase is released as a real event, to test the waters of reaction. The second phase is released with new content and modifications, emphasizing that it's a mythology. This is to reassure the censors. The third phase will get more involved in practices and behaviors, but without full context. The fourth phase will probably be the human portal. The fifth phase will probably be this interview. And the phases that follow will depend on how this interview is received. So every release is being observed by both the Hierarchy and the WingMakers.”

Sarah:

“Okay, let's go back to the God discussion.”

Dr. Neruda:

“Yes... so, to answer your question, is there a god? There are many gods. Some beings present themselves as gods, and some beings manipulate others to such a degree that they become regarded as gods. And then there are collective intelligences that move between the quantum

membranes and simulate god-like qualities of omniscience and omnipotence, but they are not gods in the sense of being The Creator. There are even some beings that present themselves as god through a human channel.

“The view of the WingMakers is that the oldest civilizations in the universe believe there is a Creator, but that this Creator, known in the WingMakers philosophy as First Source, is so fundamental that it is the fractal essence of all life in all variations. It is the quantum zygote of life at the most foundational level. It is not truly knowable as we think of knowledge. It is experiential through sound that evokes this tone of equality spoken of in the WingMakers philosophy. It’s not apprehended through the mind, which makes it hard to describe or convey.

“This is the problem with anything so elemental that it all but disappears. How do you convey it in such a way that it can hold a human being’s attention?”

Sarah:

“So there’s a God, but it’s unapproachable, is that basically it?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Yes, but I want to mention that the relationship is to a Creator, not a god. The Creator is in all life. God is more of a parent, and in religious circles, a father figure who is humanized to such a degree that we can pray to god to give us things, help us remove obstacles, crush our enemies and so on. Creator is aligned to oneness and equality, while god is aligned to separation and fear.

“First Source is the Creator of life—the manifest reality of all existence. The Creator lives within life as the infinite spark that connects all life as equals in oneness. It is not here to be humanized. It cannot be humanized, or for that matter, reduced to any other life form or thing. The Creator is the conjoining of all existence in the equality of oneness, and when that occurs, then god exists. When it does not, there is no god in existence, only a Creator. It is really that simple.

“As it is said in various religious texts that god created man in his image or likeness. And provided you understand Anu as god, then this is a reasonably true statement. However, the Creator created the infinite spark that animates the human form, and so the Sovereign Integral is the creation, and Anu had nothing to do with this. He merely figured out a way to enslave it.

“The last thing I’ll say about the concept of god is that it’s used by religions to separate ourselves from responsibility. It allows us to say, I’m not responsible for poverty or war or child abuse. There is a god who is much higher than us. God created the world, he is in charge. If he allows war and poverty, who am I to bear responsibility? The wrongdoers will pay in hell, and the tormented will reign in heaven.

“So god, or the concept of god, releases us from responsibility. The Creator, on the other hand, is not this way, because we’re all bound in oneness, and what happens to one happens to all, and therefore, we’re all responsible for allowing separation to rule our behaviors. It’s important to recognize the difference between the

constructs of Creator and god, especially within the Hologram of Deception.”

Sarah:

“After hearing all of this explanation—not just about God... Creator, but the whole interview tonight, why couldn’t it have just been released as it is defined in this interview? Why even release the first phases if they lacked this context?”

Dr. Neruda:

“I’ve tried to answer this already... let me put it this way, but understand that this is speculation, so take it as such. There’s no assurance that this will get released or stay released. That’s one reason. There may be other individuals that need the earlier phase information, because it bridges their current beliefs better than the later phase information. That’s another reason. Remember, this is as much about redefining the unconscious mind as it is anything else. The unconscious mind is the ‘backdoor’ that the Anunnaki left open in their designs. That’s where the hacking vector can come in, and that’s how the WingMakers information was brought in.”

Sarah:

“What do you mean by hacking vector?”

Dr. Neruda:

“The WingMakers are hacking the program of our consciousness framework as designed by the Anunnaki; programmed internally in the DNA and functional implants by Marduk; and programmed externally by the

Hierarchy, a.k.a. the Illuminati, Globalists, New World Order elite, Bilderberg Group, etc.

“The WingMakers must come into these programs from vectors that are less protected or defended by censors, and have the potential for quick spread. Bear in mind, that while the functional implants of the Human 2.0 interface are programmable, should they become hacked or altered, they can be upgraded or patched just like software. So the ideal method to enter the human domain is to enter through a backdoor, appear harmless, even part of the order, and then quietly seed a fractal process that can spread through the unconscious mind layer.

“That vector is not altering the program from the hardware or software perspective. It utilizes the consciousness framework in the Human 2.0 interface without changing its programming. It’s like an app riding on top of the operating system. It needs to be invisible until certain conditions are met. Once those conditions are met, it can be released, and once it is spread, it cannot be stopped.”

Sarah:

“I’m not familiar with the term ‘app,’ what does it mean?”

Dr. Neruda:

“It’s a software application that’s not part of the OS, but uses the OS or operating system.”

Sarah:



“If it isn’t changing the consciousness framework, then what’s it doing?”

Dr. Neruda:

“It allows individuals to initiate their own Sovereign Integral process, which allows them to release the hold of these systems on their life essence. It’s less about modifying or changing the program than it is about releasing the hold that these programs have on the consciousness of the life essence.”

Sarah:

“Okay, I think I understand... so I want to go back to this process. You said it has two main parts, insertive behaviors and resistive behaviors. You also mentioned something about breath, but I didn’t hear you say anything specific about it.”

Dr. Neruda:

“Yes, the breath is an important way to bring you into self-awareness. It’s like a quantum light turning on that illuminates your life essence—that part of you that is not of the Human 2.0 interface. You’re able to sense and begin to re-experience this infinite being that is you.

“The breath is something that anyone can use without a lot of complication, and obviously, it’s always with you. It doesn’t require any technology or expertise. It’s really just a way to shift attention to the core of your self. The WingMakers write about quantum breathing or quantum pause. It’s a technique from Philosophy Seven.”

Sarah:

“Can you explain it?”

Dr. Neruda:

“It’s very simple. You breathe in through your nose for about 2-4 seconds or whatever’s comfortable for you. Once you’ve filled your lungs, you pause or hold your breath for the same amount of time you breathed in. While you’re in the pause—holding your breath—feel it like a suspension of time, and fill that space with the feeling of I AM.”

Sarah:

“Okay, sorry to interrupt, but tell me again, what is the I AM feeling? How do you define it?”

Dr. Neruda:

“It’s the sovereign aspect of consciousness. It’s not the personality that defines your human experience, or you typically associate with as yourself. It is the infinite consciousness of you. It is also one. I is one. It is one thing: infinite life. It is not the mind, nor the heart, nor the body, nor the feelings and emotions of the personality. It is singular in its depth and silence.”

Sarah:

“Okay, go on...”

Dr. Neruda:

“After you hold the breath in your lungs, and anchor it with the I AM feeling, you exhale through your mouth, again for the same period of time, and then you pause again—your lungs are empty, and as you pause, you hold

the feeling of WE ARE. Then you repeat this cycle until you feel you're done."

Sarah:

"Can you explain the WE ARE feeling, too?"

Dr. Neruda:

"This is the sense of connection to all. The sense that you are connected and that the I AM feeling you held a moment ago is being shared with all. I use the outbreath pause to place any of the heart virtues that I'm working on at the time. For example, I might be working on the virtue of compassion in my personal life, and I can hold that feeling in that outbreath pause and imagine it is being shared with all."

Sarah:

"I think I understand what you're saying, and I don't want you to take this the wrong way, but how can this possibly compete with a globalist agenda of world takeover?"

Dr. Neruda:

"It's a fair question. But look at the reality.

"There are many who've protested this enslavement. Throughout history there've been people that have come to this realization through various means, and they alerted people to this deception. They may call it a conspiracy without really understanding the depth of this deception or its ultimate plan, but in whatever way they know of this and at whatever level, they all experience fear. The fear is that we're powerless to stop them.

“The capstone of the elite have been planning this for more than eleven thousand years, before Human 2.0 even existed the plot was devised. They have powerful interdimensional beings that know humanity on an intimate level, because they literally created the human being, and they can program humanity with such granularity as to define our life paths down to our day-to-day choices.

“How can one possibly defeat such an antagonist? They have the money, they have the politicians in their pockets, they have the defense and protection, they have the powerful relationships everywhere in the world and they have the most powerful technology in terms of surveillance and weapons. Their innermost circle is impenetrable.

“We can be wide awake and aware of what’s happening, but awareness doesn’t suddenly—in itself—change the chessboard. They taunt us to protest. Wave your signs, publish your websites, fling your fists to the sky, investigate all you want, it won’t change a thing. They will tell us to our faces that their power is inexhaustible. This is how they think.

“They want us to feel this futility and have this overriding sense that the endgame is unavoidable. They want us to believe that we are powerless. Remember, they are securing the world and its populations for the return of Anu. That is their program, and while only the capstone of the elite understands this plan, it is enough, because the downstream operatives are loyal, programmed entities.

“All one needs to do is to watch Madeline Albright in that 60 Minutes interview and you will understand how they have been programmed to think—”

Sarah:

“I don’t think I saw that, what did she do?”

Dr. Neruda:

“About a year and half ago, Lesley Stahl of 60 Minutes asked the U.S. Ambassador to the United Nations, Madeleine Albright, if the death of a half-million children was worth the price to essentially punish Saddam Hussein. Albright responded that it was. You see, this is the enemy that holds power. If they can justify killing children, they can do anything.

“The WingMakers have written that it isn’t the protests that will change this enemy. If we shout at them and practice resistance with our guns in the street, they will only squash us. To bring their objective to a halt, we need to push down the wall, and we can do this by being practitioners of the Sovereign Integral process or anything similar.

“If human beings become self-aware, de-programmed entities, who understand specifically how we have been enslaved and for what reason, we can collectively push down the wall that separates us from our true selves. This creates a chain reaction that affects everyone, including the capstone of the elite. The wall falls for them, too.

“It’s using the consciousness of the life essence to reveal the Human 2.0 consciousness as an invented reality.

It's weaning from the Hologram of Deception to the reality that all life exists infinitely as equals in oneness."

Sarah:

"Okay... but how do we know that will be successful against them?"

Dr. Neruda:

"We don't... other than what I said before, that the WingMakers are humans who have time traveled to share this Sovereign Integral framework. I realize this sounds like science fiction meets David and Goliath. I can appreciate that, but I'm explaining what I know as directly and honestly as I can describe it. If anyone reads this interview, assuming it's released sometime in the future, then you can decide for yourself if what I say stands up to your scrutiny.

"I would just caution some to consider the possibility that should you dismiss it, your reaction could be a programmed response. It is your consciousness framework that is sensing and responding. Consider this before you dismiss this information as fiction."

Sarah:

"But how would a person know this? I find myself doubting this disclosure. I don't find it very plausible. As a journalist I'm trained to be suspicious of sources, and as much information as you've shared with me, I find myself wondering how this is possible and I haven't heard about it."

Dr. Neruda:

“The Hierarchy practices deception by controlling the buttons on the machine of absolute power. This machine is—”

Sarah:

“But you yourself said the Internet was not something that they wanted to get out.”

Dr. Neruda:

“True, but whatever technology is released, they will find a way to use it to their advantage. It doesn’t matter what the technology is, they will find a way to subvert it, modify it and use it for their agenda. These are extremely bright beings that are obsessed with the centralization of power and control so that Anu can insert himself without resistance.”

Sarah:

“What if enough people woke up and rebelled? Couldn’t we start a revolution and overthrow these crazy criminals?”

Dr. Neruda:

“They are not crazy; they are deceptive intelligences who have lost all sense of connection to their true selves. In many ways, they are the ones who are lost, and because they are so lost, they have led the unsuspecting to their haze of obedience. We have followed them. That’s our responsibility. The material is here, in this interview, to wake up. But it’s one thing to wake up, and it’s another thing to know what to do about it.

“You mention a revolution, according to the WingMakers it would be a waste of life. They are not going to relinquish what they have worked so hard and long to produce. This will only change when the wall is pushed down. The wall is the Human 2.0 consciousness framework that is programmed within every human being. The wall needs to be pushed down, and the way this occurs is not through protest, storming the gates, or shaking our collective fists in their face. It must be done through individual self-realization, and this, because of our programming, requires us to follow a process that enables us to become self-realized of our life essence.

“If we remain in separation, we can’t solve the problem of separation. If we remain in deception, we can’t reveal anything of our true nature. So we need to see all as one and equal in this Hologram of Deception, and that includes the capstone of the elite, as much as the poor and hungry.”

Sarah:

“I don’t see how people will be able to do that. Maybe I’m a pessimist, I don’t know, but will enough people really be able to do this?”

Dr. Neruda:

“At the heart of this whole situation is a single reality, and that reality, as hard as it may be to touch, is that we are infinite beings. Everything that is of spacetime is within the Hologram of Deception. Everything.

“Which reality do you believe is more powerful and lasting?”

Sarah:



“Whatever is infinite...”

Dr. Neruda:

“Don’t believe the programming that you are powerless. The Sovereign Integral process demonstrates that you are not merely a programmed life existence.”

Sarah:

“I feel I could go on with this conversation for another couple hours, but I also sense you’re trying to close it up. How are you doing on time?”

Dr. Neruda:

“I can go a little longer if you have more questions.”

Sarah:

“I have lots of questions... how about if we take a short break and I’ll take that time to review my notes, and then I’ll try and keep my next set of questions to another fifteen minutes or so. How does that sound?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Sure, that’s fine.”

Sarah:

“Great, then we’ll begin in 10 minutes.”

[Approximately a 10-minute break]

Sarah:

“The tape is rolling again, and I’ve got my questions. Are you ready?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Yes.”

Sarah:

“Okay, good. Does it seem like a strange coincidence that the Labyrinth Group was trying to create time travel technology and you stumbled upon the WingMakers who are time travelers?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Not entirely—”

Sarah:

“But how do you really know that they’re not aliens or some other non-human beings?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Sometimes you just have to take things at face value when there’s no evidence to the contrary and no evidence that would support any reason for them to misrepresent themselves.”

Sarah:

“Through all of my discussions with you, this interview is like someone coming into my home and rearranging all the furniture. What advice do you have for anyone who reads this and gets a little paranoid or uneasy about this information and what should they do about it?”

Dr. Neruda:

“This disclosure is not meant to frighten anyone or make them paranoid. It’s meant to support them in their own awakening as infinite beings. That’s really it. That’s the information’s purpose. This includes all of the WingMakers information in whatever form it’s in.

“There’s a core stability inside you that’s been sidelined in favor of a manufactured or programmed response to life. You are programmed to fear, because then you will abdicate your liberties to your saviors. And who do you suppose your saviors will be? Who is it that makes Saddam Hussein out to be a monster while they kill hundreds of thousands of children to prove their power is moral? The entities behind that power are the ones who will step forward and claim to save you. How they will do this is an unknown, but I have no doubt they will do it.

“And every time they do it, the corrals grow in number and the populations inside the corrals swell in size. The fences get higher. Those who remain outside the corrals will think they have insight or special information that allows them to remain independent or free, but they’re still operating inside their Human 2.0 interface.

“The only real question, as I see it, has two parts: one, ‘do I serve truth or deception?’ And two, ‘how do I best serve truth?’

“If you feel that the best way to serve truth is to protest, resist, build awareness about what is happening in the world, then do that, but I would recommend doing it from a non-polarity perspective. You can’t fight separation with more separation, it will only polarize. It’s important to feel that you are standing up, not in fear or some other

programmed emotion, but that you are aligned to your life essence and in expression of that source within you, even when you protest.

“Others may prefer to undergo the Sovereign Integral process and focus on this more internal stratagem. There is no formula here, and certainly you can do both. But to know this information and then remain passive—a pure observer—is a programmed response, and that is not an answer to ‘how do I best serve truth?’ It is a denial of truth.”

Sarah:

“You mentioned earlier that the Anunnaki lent their DNA to the Human 2.0. It suggests then that their DNA would be present in a lot of us. Is that the case?”

Dr. Neruda:

“This is a very complicated subject. Yes, according to the WingMakers, the Anunnaki, in an attempt to enhance human DNA, conducted, what we would call today, in vitro fertilization experiments with human women. They wanted their DNA to create a subspecies that could endure generationally to produce loyalists. The Sirians did the same thing. In terms of DNA tendencies, the Anunnaki were conquerors, and the Sirian progeny were colonists. That’s being very general, admittedly, but in broad terms that was the nature of their bloodlines, when compared to their human counterparts.

“The DNA template for Human 2.0 was Anunnaki, but it had been altered. This is where the subject gets complicated. The Anunnaki are not physical beings. They

did not exist in three-dimensional density as we know it today. The earth, 500,000 years ago, was a very different place in terms of its density and the gravitational fields that bathed it. The Anunnaki were interdimensional beings, meaning they are infinite just as we are, but without the physical body. However, all beings possess DNA. It's the quantum equivalent of a blueprint. So they experimented with how to use their DNA to create physical beings that could function in accordance to their agenda, which as I said, was initially mining gold, but later turned to the enslavement of a species who would worship Anu.

“When the Anunnaki fertilized human women it was with royal bloodlines, and this was not a coincidence. They wanted these royal bloodlines to sustain over thousands of generations so they could more easily facilitate their master plans on earth.”

Sarah:

“Was this a nationalistic thing?”

Dr. Neruda:

“How do you mean that?”

Sarah:

“Were Anunnaki bloodlines mostly Arab, Jewish, or Gentile? Were there certain characteristics that were noticeable in the physical body?”

Dr. Neruda:

“The Anunnaki bloodlines were initially Babylonian and Egyptian, but they have spread into nearly all races. It

probably wouldn't be an overstatement to say that nearly every person on the planet today has some fractional percentage of Anunnaki royal DNA.”

Sarah:

“What were they, in terms of their look? I assume they look like us.”

Dr. Neruda:

“Yes. It was Atlantean, Anunnaki and Sirian body styles that were effectively blended to create the Human 1.0 prototype. All of these beings, though less dense, looked similar to a human form. Races did not intermingle, as they were very cautious not to intermix their DNA, because they were uncertain of the effect and how it might pollute or mutate through their genetics. But remember, the human physical body was an experiment, and they literally looked at it as physical protection, just like we would look at a spacesuit.

“None of these races lived in the density of earth, or an earth-like planet. They didn't realize how earth would interact with their creation and cause it to evolve in directions that they couldn't control or predict. Earth, as I previously said, was like a random variable, imposing itself on the human body through its gravitational fields.

“The interbreeding between Anunnaki and human women took place around 6,000 BCE and it was a designed event, not some lustful dalliance with the daughters of men, as it is sometimes portrayed in Sumerian texts. This was part of the design to place a subspecies within the human race that would conquer and

control the earth's resources. It was to consolidate and centralize resources for Anu, and to ensure that the world's wealth could be placed into his waiting hands when he returned."

Sarah:

"The whole thing about LERM (Light-Encoded Reality Matrix) and how the Labyrinth Group had seen it as God, I don't understand that if Fifteen had read the same information as you, how he wouldn't have come to the same conclusions as you. I know you mentioned that you had additional contacts with the WingMakers, and this convinced you of the authenticity of the information, but why do you think Fifteen clung to his perspective?"

Dr. Neruda:

"You can look at LERM as the connection between the earth plane and the non-physical planes of the hologram that Anu constructed inside our functional implants. LERM was the connective web, and it was bi-directional—meaning that Anu could be projected into any being's consciousness framework to be seen or heard, and it also meant that Anu could detect and view into the life of an individual being. LERM is known as the White Light, and the Great White Brotherhood is known as its guardians. They appropriated Jesus and Buddha as their foundational pillars, stole the concept of I AM, mashed these elements with the White Light that had been a factor in every religious, occult and esoteric doctrine throughout time, and announced in the 1950s that The Great White Brotherhood was a real organization.

“Soon after that, ascended masters began to join the swelling ranks, as human channelers began to be the spokespeople of these entities. From the WingMakers perspective, these entities are fixtures of the polarity plan to keep human beings firmly anchored in separation, distraction and deception.”

Sarah: “What does this have to do with Fifteen’s decision?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Sorry, I got a little sidetracked... Fifteen knew of the Great White Brotherhood. It’s considered a very important element in the overall Hierarchy—very near the capstone of the elite or what I earlier called the Incunabula. The Great White Brotherhood was seen as a means to bring occult or secret information to the planet, and it was designed to balance the movement of secularization, which was to essentially rid the planet of religion and bring science to the stage.

“Fifteen was not sufficiently convinced to make a break from the Incunabula and the Great White Brotherhood. He preferred to view LERM as proof of God, and leave his world intact. This is not, by the way, an uncommon reaction to this information. And intellects, as brilliant as Fifteen’s, will make this choice to stay in the known world instead of venture into the unknown. In Fifteen’s case, he had too much to lose.”

Sarah:

“Why did the elite want to get rid of religion?”

Dr. Neruda:



“First, I want to correct you on your choice of words. It isn’t the elite, as most people think of them. The vast majority of the elite are corporate citizens, financial managers, government managers, political heavyweights, military commanders and the like. They are not making these decisions. The vast majority have no idea who or what the agenda is. That’s why I refer to it as the capstone of the elite. These are ones who have been preparing the world for Anu’s return.

“Now, back to your question, religion was seen as an obstacle to the one world order. The quantum world of science was flexing its muscles, disproving key elements of religious doctrine, and it would, if left unmanaged, verify the hologram—but not the deception. The Great White Brotherhood was launched to the public in the 1950s, just as the quantum world was beginning to signal its stature, but it goes back to the eighteenth century when it was referred to as the Council of Light, and even before that it was a concept held in many secret societies.

“The idea of ascended masters, communicating with one another telepathically and instructing and guiding the affairs of men, gained some popularity with those who were disenchanted with organized religion. To be fair, some of the channeled information did come from beings that were considerably more informed than the average man, and they could bedazzle most people with their superior knowledge of the cosmological order and the structure of things relative to god, but their description and explanation was founded in the Hologram of Deception. While these masters supposedly channeled the secret or hidden knowledge to their selected students, who then

wrote books and created organizations, this information continued to separate the worlds of light and dark, good and evil and those in the know from those who were not.

“They used words like love, ascension, truth, and god more liberally than organized religions, and god was always portrayed as a loving, congealing force. Angels and cosmic beings were also associated with these organizations. They not only appropriated symbols and constructs like the soul and eternal life, but they also created the ladder of consciousness that stretched into infinity in which the student was forever trying to learn more to progress higher on the ladder.

“The elevation of one over another. This was the key concept of the separation tactic of the Great White Brotherhood and frankly, all secret societies. Create divisions of knowledge, add a ritual or two, and promise more power and awareness as you, the student, walk the path. They don’t talk about how to deprogram from separation, instead they reinforce it.”

Sarah:

“You’ve shared information in previous interviews about the Central Race. In my notes, you even said they were responsible for our DNA. Are they the Anunnaki?”

Dr. Neruda:

“No. No, you have to define DNA in two ways. One is the human instrument or body, emotions and mind system, and that stems from one system of DNA, courtesy of the Anunnaki and Sirians mostly. The second is the infinite being inside the human instrument, which is also based on

DNA, which is the quantum blueprint of the Sovereign Integral consciousness. The latter is the DNA developed by the Central Race.”

Sarah:

“In the second interview you made some pretty big claims about the seven sites of the WingMakers being a defensive weapon, and that this somehow related to the individual’s experience of the WingMakers materials. In light of this disclosure tonight, can you explain how this works?”

Dr. Neruda:

“The entire import of the WingMakers disclosure is about the Sovereign Integral, and how humanity benefits when this state of consciousness is seated within the human expression. The requirement to keep this disclosure in the realm of science fiction and mythology was why I mentioned this defensive weapon—”

Sarah:

“So you’re saying this was just a story?”

Dr. Neruda:

“That part was. You see, the WingMakers materials are, by design, composed of many strands of information. Some strands are storytelling, some are artistic, some are spiritual, some are conspiratorial and some are designed to be factual, coherent disclosures of what is really happening in our world. The strands of the storytelling encase the other strands—in a way, they shield these inner strands.

“I’ve already explained why it happened this way, and while some might feel it would be easier to just give the facts, if these facts were disclosed now, you would not have seen, heard or read this information. The WingMakers materials would have been censored or taken down and discredited. I’m sure there’ll be a good dose of that anyway; when and if this interview is released, but the story strand was necessary to provide an acceptable container to release the Sovereign Integral process.”

Sarah: “But this concerns me that the information you’ve provided in the previous four interviews is created, at least in part, as a story. How do I present it to any reliable news source as true?”

Dr. Neruda:

“You can’t.”

Sarah:

“So then what do I do with it?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Either you will release it as a story, or I will. If you prefer not to, I understand.”

Sarah:

“Couldn’t you just tell me what parts are story, and what parts are true?”

Dr. Neruda:

“I could, but this isn’t how I’ve been asked to release the information.”

Sarah:

“But I’ve invested a lot of time in this already, and if I invest my reputation as well, then I need to focus on the true parts, otherwise, I can’t substantiate anything when I’m asked if, in my opinion, it’s a true story.”

Dr. Neruda:

“Everyone wants to know the absolute truth. They want someone to point to this phrase or that precept or that doctrine and explain to them that that is truth, believe it. That’s been the game on this planet ever since humans began to contemplate their universe in a philosophical manner. All the shared truth has gotten us where? Where we kill children to punish leaders? Where leaders lock people up in death camps? Where religious leaders abuse children? So I would ask you, what is the value of the information that has collectively brought humanity here?

“You want the signposts of truth. No one can do that, and your proof... is that no one has.”

Sarah:

“Why?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Because we are sovereign and we must experience ourselves in this way, and not let others decide what it is we should or shouldn’t believe, or what is truth or falsehood. I wish we didn’t live in a Hologram of Deception, but that is our human reality, and whining about it will not change it one iota. Studying the supposed masters of truth will not change it either.

“I can show you a library of books that expound on esoteric information. Some of these books were written as nonfiction, and by all appearances they seem to be credible and insightful, and yet if you listen carefully to the words, you see how they are separating you from one another. How they define a Hierarchy. How they define a soul that is always learning, a human that is always sinning and weak. How they describe a universe that is infinitely layered. How the light illuminates those who follow certain practices. It can be very subtle. They can be talking about oneness, but there are judgments present in the words, or recriminations if you don’t execute the practice properly, or suggestions that you don’t mix this practice with anything else or it is diminished, or join and promote this path over that one.

“Part of the Sovereign Integral process is to practice your discernment of what enables you to believe in you, not the universe or some master or teaching, but you, stripped bare of all of your add-ons, beliefs, thought patterns, fears, guilt, stories, judgments, blames, pretenses... everything that hangs on you from the past. If you could drop them all—everything you have been taught and told and programmed to believe—what would be left to hear? Silence. Deep, clear silence. That is you.

“When you find that, you will then know that everyone has that, too. Anu does, Lucifer does, Jesus does, your neighbor does, your spouse does. Everyone. So what proof do you need to find that? What proof can I show you or tell you to give you that? I can’t. I can convey a process that if you follow it, you might find this experience inside you, but that’s all. The process is free, it only requires

time. The process is not owned by anyone. The process is not part of anything but you. Once you stand at the trailhead of that process, it's yours to follow or reject. Everyone must achieve this realization of oneness and equality in life on earth. That is our call to action as a species. And in my opinion, anyone or anything that tells you otherwise is lost.

“One more thing, the story strand may be exactly what activates someone to the Sovereign Integral process, and I think that was the point that the WingMakers took with their information. Everything about their work is signaling the individual to the Sovereign Integral process and the realization of The Grand Portal.”

Sarah:

“If Anu is what we have been taught is god, then who is Lucifer?”

Dr. Neruda:

“It is precisely for this reason that you have to be sovereign. Because in the world where Anu is god, it is easy to presume that Lucifer is the real bearer of light. But remember what I've said over and over, everyone is lost in this Hologram of Deception. If all are lost, how can anyone lead you to truth? They can't. The truth is self-expression of your infinite self in the human form upon earth. That is the closest definition of truth that I know. It may not be the same for you or whoever reads this in the future, but this is my definition of truth.

“Does Lucifer advocate this? I'm not aware that he does. If anyone is not supporting my truth objective, then

why would I let them move me in any other direction, even an inch?

“You ask who Lucifer is. There are a thousand ways to answer that question—several of them I already have. To add another definition, he is not a polarity of Anu or his puppet. At a fundamental level he lives in equality and oneness the same as we. Is he awakened? I don’t know. I haven’t met him. I haven’t talked with him. If I do, my first question of him will be, does he support the freedom of human beings, the kind I have just defined, and if he says ‘yes’ then I will accept his word until I see evidence to the contrary. If he says ‘no’ I will remove myself from his presence. If he says ‘maybe’ I would have a conversation with him and invite him to support this movement.

“Everyone is waking up. I realize it seems like the activation is in super slow motion, but in seventy to eighty years a huge shift can occur in humanity’s realization of what is really happening in this world. There is no way to hide this. It’s already in the unconscious mind layer and it will continue to spill out until we push the wall down.”

Sarah:

“This is more a comment or observation than a question, but the Sovereign Integral process seems existential instead of transcendental. It also seems like a solo journey instead of an organized group who are supporting one another. Is my perception accurate?”

Dr. Neruda:



“Partly, yes. I think the sovereign aspect is what you’re picking up on. It’s an internal process for the individual to develop within themselves, but the integral aspect is a collective, and I don’t mean that as an organizational structure. This process needs to be outside of any organization’s or individual’s hands. It’s not possible to own this or control it within an organizational structure. I think people can use the Internet and email to support one another. Some will want this kind of support; others may prefer to be left on their own.

“Relative to it being existential, yes, it is that. This isn’t about ascending into the high places of heaven and hanging out in perfected realms of space, while your fellow human beings are lost, enslaved and corralled into ever-tightening spaces. This is about sharing the heart virtues and the truth of existence in your behaviors, here, on earth. It is about making earth a place where human beings can express their life essence without the interference of Anu’s hardware and Marduk’s software, and to tear down the external programming that creates the parents of fear and separation and all of their children attributes like narcissism and hatred.”

Sarah:

“If I decide to release this information, do I have to practice it?”

Dr. Neruda:

“No.”

Sarah:

“Can I have some time to think about this?”

Dr. Neruda:

“How long do you need?”

Sarah:

“Maybe a week...”

Dr. Neruda:

“Of course, you can take more if you need it.”

Sarah:

“Are you resigned to the idea that you’ll be caught?”

Dr. Neruda:

“I’m a realist. I don’t think the ACIO12 will do anything rash. They’ll simply do their best to quarantine me.”

Sarah:

“What does that mean?”

Dr. Neruda:

“I’ll end up in a holding cell, off the grid.”

Sarah:

“What about Anu?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Anu is simply a name of the royal leader of the Anunnaki race. His name is symbolic of more than one being, which is the capstone of the elite. You could also look at Anu as the programmed existence of the human

race; he exists in everyone to some degree. Anu's presentation of himself is that he's omniscient and omnipresent, and this is true in a certain way, so I have to deal with that reality. Everyone who wakes up and practices this process will meet this resistance in some form or other."

Sarah: "But if people hear that they will have to deal with Anu, won't they run from this? Who's going to try and fight that... that machine?"

Dr. Neruda:

"From the WingMakers perspective, thousands, and then hundreds of thousands, and then millions. The wall can collapse in an instant when a critical mass is achieved."

Sarah:

"But won't this be accompanied with hysteria and panic? At one time I thought The Grand Portal was a technological discovery of the soul, and it would be on the Internet for all to see and experience in the comfort of their homes. But this isn't like that, is it?"

Dr. Neruda:

"No. This is more like a collapse of reality on a mass scale, where infinite beings suddenly find themselves awake inside a human uniform and wonder what just happened."

Sarah:

“What if it doesn’t happen? What if they win and transhumanism 3.0 is the new human being locked into a world of separatism? What then?”

Dr. Neruda: “I don’t know how to answer that question, other than to say that the information provided by the WingMakers is a new inception point, which necessarily means a new path. Maybe it will take more time, but it will happen. It has to. We’re infinite beings, and this fact cannot be bottled up indefinitely.”

Sarah: “I understand, but the whole concept of infinite beings—that’s been around a long time. Soul has been around a long time as a concept. How is this any different?”

Dr. Neruda:

“Yes, it’s been around a long time, but it’s been bottled up into three paths: one, reincarnation and karma; two, be good and obedient and join the ranks of heaven; and three, ascend to a higher plane of existence and eventually become a teacher within the Hierarchy. The fourth path, though not about soul, is that we are simply human flesh and blood and we have no soul.

“A person’s soul is construed from one of these paths, assuming you believe you are a soul. Each of these paths, as I have already said, is within the Hologram of Deception. They do not lead outside—past the wall, and they certainly do not make the wall less stable.

“To be self-realized as an infinite being within a human body on earth, decoupled from the controlling Human 2.0 interface, is the fifth way. We’ve been living in a game

show that has four doors where an announcer keeps repeating the instruction: ‘choose one of the four doors,’ while completely ignoring that there is a fifth door.

“This new inception point inserts the fifth door option. That’s how it’s different.”

Sarah: “I wish I could go on with question after question, but I think this is probably a good place to stop.”

Dr. Neruda: “I agree, Sarah.”

Sarah: “Okay, good, then we’ll bring this to a close, but before we do, I’ll give you the last word.”

Dr. Neruda: “Well, first, thanks for your open-mindedness these past two weeks. Your questions were good guides, and for all your modesty, you grasped this information with great naturalness, which gave me permission to open up. You’ve served well those who will read this, so on their behalf, thank you.

“I feel that I’ve given everything I was asked to provide. I realize I fumbled around at the start of this interview. I wasn’t sure how to bring this out. I also know that some will want more information, but the critical material is here, in this interview. I’m sure there are more details and nuances I could have provided, but then, no matter how much detail I’d disclose, it would never be enough for some people. This is all about action in behavior, not reading or soaking up information from another person. The glimpse I’ve provided is a good start, and that’s all that’s really needed for an inception point.

“I realize this may seem like a fantastical journey of fictional characters and unlikely events, not to be taken too

seriously, but in my view, this disclosure of the WingMakers is their most important.”

Sarah:

“Thank you, Dr. Neruda.”

End of Session

# INTERVIEWS WITH DR. ANDERSON ABOUT THE WINGMAKERS

*NOTE: The following two interviews were published years after the interviews with Dr. Neruda had been made public and contain mainly the same material. However, a few aspects have been changed. For example, Dr. Neruda is called Dr. Anderson here and Sarah has been renamed to Anne. Also, certain parts of the original interviews have been omitted or changed in their respective wording.*

*In this section, you will find two of the five interviews conducted between Anne and Dr. Anderson back in December 1997, when Anne was first contacted about the discovery of the WingMakers' time capsule. These are the exact transcripts from her tape-recorded interviews and are probably the best way to understand the nature of the discovery and its implications. There are three additional interview transcripts that will be added to the site as soon as Anne is able. At the present (July 1998), Dr. Anderson has not been heard from for nearly 5 months, but it is hoped that additional interviews will be able to be conducted in the near future.*

# **FIRST INTERVIEW WITH DR. ANDERSON**

**By Anne**

What follows is a session I recorded of Dr. Anderson on December 27, 1997. He gave permission for me to record his answers to my questions. This was the first of five interviews that I was able to tape-record before he left or disappeared. I have preserved these transcripts precisely as they occurred. No editing was performed, and I've tried my best to include the exact words and grammar used by Dr. Anderson.

**Anne:**

Are you comfortable?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Yes, yes, I'm fine and ready to begin when you are.

**Anne:**

You've made some remarkable claims with respect to the Ancient Arrow project. Can you please recount what your involvement in this project was and why you chose to leave it of your own freewill?

**Dr. Anderson:**



I was selected to participate in the decoding and translation of the symbol pictures found at the site. I have a known expertise in languages and ancient texts. I am able to speak over 30 different languages fluently and another 12 or so languages that are officially extinct. Because of my skills in linguistics and my abilities to decode symbol pictures like petroglyphs or hieroglyphs, I was chosen for this task.

I had been involved in the Ancient Arrow project from its very inception, when the ACIO took over the project from the NSA. I was initially involved in the site discovery and its restoration along with a team of 7 other scientists from the ACIO. We restored each of the 23 chambers of the WingMakers' time capsule and cataloged all of their attendant artifacts.

As the restoration was completed, I became increasingly focused on decoding their peculiar language and designing the translation indexes to English. It was a particularly vexing process because an optical disc was found in the 23rd chamber and it was impregnable to our technologies. We assumed that the optical disc held most of the information that the WingMakers desired us to know about them. However, we couldn't figure out how to apply the symbol pictures found in their chamber paintings to unlock the disc.

I decided to leave the project after I was successful in deducing the access code for the optical disc. Shortly thereafter I became aware of what I can only describe as the presence of the WingMakers. I felt as though they were visiting me... even assisting me in my work...

**Anne:**

When you say 'visiting you', what evidence did you have that the WingMakers might be visiting you?

**Dr. Anderson:**

I was spending 70 hours per week working on the decoding formulas for the symbol pictures, and this went on for about 8 months. During this time I tried every conceivable combination to create an access code to the optical disc. I was convinced it was the only way to open it. I was also convinced that it was purposely made to be difficult, at least to our present-day brains. It was almost as though the struggle to decode their language was exercising a part of my brain or nervous system that was enabling me to communicate with them.

I began to hear them speaking to me. It began as a word or two... then a sentence... maybe just once a day. It didn't make much sense... what I heard. But then one day I was working on a chamber painting and I saw something move in the painting. One of the symbols moved and it was absolutely not an illusion or trick of the light. Then I realized that the WingMakers could interact with me, that they were time traveling to my time and that somehow their paintings were actually portals in which they moved through time.

It was then I began to hear their instructions, or more precisely, their thoughts. I was given mental images on how to use the Sumerian language to decode their own symbol pictures. I thought I was possibly going crazy. I felt like my mind was playing tricks on me . . . that I was working too hard and needed to take a holiday, but I

listened to the voices because it seemed plausible what I was being instructed to do. When I finished with the access code and it worked, I knew then that I was indeed communicating with them.

**Anne:**

Did you tell anyone? I mean about the fact that you were communicating with the WingMakers?

**Dr. Anderson:**

I kept it a secret. I wasn't sure how I would be able to explain the phenomenon and I didn't want to arouse suspicions, so I went about my business and began developing the translation indexes for the 8,110 pages of text that was discovered within the optical disc. It was essential that we had a letter-for-letter index in order to retain the meaning of their language... we called this translation granularity. And as I started the process of translating the optical disc, I began to see fragment images of the WingMakers... sort of like a holographic image that would appear and then disappear in a matter of seconds.

They visited me a total of three times – always in my home at night – and told me that I had been selected to be their liaison or spokesperson. Of course I asked them why me and not Fifteen, and they said that Fifteen was unable to speak for them because he was already the pawn of the Corteum.

**Anne:**

Tell me about Fifteen. What is he like?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Fifteen is a genius of unparalleled intelligence and knowledge. He's the leader of the Labyrinth Group and has been since its inception in 1963. He was only 22 years old when he joined the ACIO in 1956. I think he was discovered early enough before he had a chance to establish a reputation in academic circles. He was a renegade genius who wanted to build computers that would be powerful enough to time travel. Can you imagine how a goal like that – in the mid-1950s – must have sounded to his professors?

Needless to say, he was not taken seriously, and was essentially told to get in line with academic protocols and perform serious research. Fifteen came to the ACIO through an alliance it had with Bell Labs. Somehow Bell Labs heard about his genius and hired him, but he quickly out-paced their research agenda and wanted to apply his vision of time travel.

**Anne:**

Why was he so interested in time travel?

**Dr. Anderson:**

No one is absolutely sure. And his reasons may have changed over time. The accepted purpose was to develop Blank Slate Technology or BST. BST is a form of time travel that enables the re-write of history at what are called intervention points. Intervention points are the causal energy centers that create a major event like the break-up of the Soviet Union or the NASA space program.

BST is the most advanced technology and clearly anyone who is in possession of BST, can defend

themselves against any aggressor. It is, as Fifteen was fond of saying, the freedom key. Remember that the ACIO was the primary interface with extraterrestrial technologies and how to adapt them into mainstream society as well as military applications. We were exposed to ETs and knew of their agenda. Some of these ETs scared the hell out of the ACIO.

**Anne:**

Why?

**Dr. Anderson:**

There were agreements between our government – specifically the NSA – to cooperate with an ET species commonly called the Greys in exchange for their cooperation to stay hidden and conduct their biological experiments under the cloak of secrecy. There was also a bungled technology transfer program, but that's another story... However, not all the Greys were operating within a unified agenda. There were certain groups of Greys that looked upon humans in much the same way as we look upon laboratory animals.

They're abducting humans and animals, and have been for the past 48 years... they're essentially conducting biological experiments to determine how their genetics can be made to be compatible with human and animal genetic structure. Their interests are not entirely understood, but if you accept their stated agenda, it's to perpetuate their species. Their species is nearing extinction and they're fearful that their biological system lacks the emotional development to harness their technological prowess in a responsible manner.

Fifteen was approached by the Greys in his role at the ACIO, and they desired to provide a full-scale technology transfer program, but Fifteen turned them down. He had already established a TTP with the Corteum, and felt that the Greys were too fractured organizationally to make good on their promises. Furthermore, the Corteum technology was superior in most regards to the Greys... with the possible exception of the Greys' memory implant and their genetic hybridization technologies.

However, Fifteen and the entire Labyrinth Group carefully considered an alliance with the Greys if for no other reason than to have direct communication with regard to their stated agenda. Fifteen liked to be in the know... so eventually we did establish an alliance, which consisted of a modest information exchange between us. We provided them with access to our information systems relative to genetic populations and their unique predisposition across a variety of criteria including mental, emotional, and physical behaviors; and they provided us with their genetic findings.

The Greys, and most extraterrestrials for that matter, communicate with humans exclusively through a form of telepathy, which we called suggestive telepathy because to us it seemed that the Greys communicated in a such a way that they were trying to lead a conversation to a particular end. In other words, they always had an agenda, and we were never certain if we were a pawn of their agenda or we arrived at conclusions that were indeed our own.

I think that's why Fifteen didn't trust the Greys. He felt they used communication to manipulate outcomes to their own best interest in favor of shared interests. And because

of this lack of trust, Fifteen refused to form any alliance or TTP that was comprehensive or integral to our operations at either the ACIO or the Labyrinth Group.

**Anne:**

Did the Greys know of the existence of the Labyrinth Group?

**Dr. Anderson:**

I don't believe so. They were generally convinced that humans were not clever enough to cloak their agendas. Our analysis was that the Greys had invasive technologies that gave them a false sense of security as to their enemy's weaknesses. And I'm not saying that we were enemies, but we never trusted them. And this they undoubtedly knew. They also knew that the ACIO had technologies and intellects that were superior to the mainstream human population, and they had a modicum of respect – perhaps even fear – of our abilities.

However, we never showed them any of our pure-state technologies or engaged them in deep dialogues concerning cosmology or new physics. They were clearly interested in our information databases and this was their primary agenda with respect to the ACIO. Fifteen was the primary interface with the Greys because they sensed a comparable intellect in him. The Greys looked at Fifteen as the equivalent of our planet's CEO.

**Anne:**

How did Fifteen become the leader of both the ACIO and the Labyrinth Group?

**Dr. Anderson:**

He was the Director of Research in 1958 when the Corteum first became known to the ACIO. In this position, he was the logical choice to assess their technology and determine its value to the ACIO. The Corteum instantly took a liking to him, and one of Fifteen's first decisions was to utilize the Corteum intelligence accelerator technologies on himself. After about three months of experimentation (most of which was not in his briefing reports to the then current Executive Director of the ACIO), Fifteen became infused with a massive vision of how to create BST.

The Executive Director was frightened by the intensity of Fifteen's BST agenda and felt that it would divert too much of the ACIO's resources to a technology development program that was dubious. Fifteen was enough of a renegade that he enlisted the help of the Corteum to establish the Labyrinth Group. The Corteum were equally interested in BST for the similar reasons as Fifteen. The Freedom Key, as it was sometimes called, was established as the prime agenda of the Labyrinth Group, and the Corteum and Fifteen were its initial members.

Over the next several years, Fifteen selected the cream of the crop from the scientific core of the ACIO to undergo a similar intelligence accelerator program as he had, with the intention of developing a group of scientists that could – in cooperation with the Corteum – successfully invent BST. The ACIO, in the opinion of Fifteen, was too controlled by the NSA and he felt the NSA was too immature in its leadership to responsibly deploy the



technologies that he knew would be developed as an outgrowth of the Labyrinth Group. So Fifteen essentially plotted to take over the ACIO and was assisted by his new recruits to do so.

This happened a few years before I became affiliated with the ACIO as a student and intern. My stepfather was very sympathetic to Fifteen's agenda and was helpful in placing Fifteen as the Executive Director of the ACIO. There was a period of instability when this transition occurred, but after about a year, Fifteen was firmly in control of the agendas of both the ACIO and the Labyrinth Group.

What I said earlier... that he was viewed as the CEO of the planet... that's essentially who he is. And of the ETs who are interacting with humankind, only the Corteum understand the role of Fifteen. He has a vision that is unique in that it is a blueprint for the creation of BST, and is closing in on the right technological and human elements that will make this possible.

**Anne:**

What makes BST such an imperative to Fifteen and the Labyrinth Group?

**Dr. Anderson:**

The ACIO has access to many ancient texts that contain prophecies of the earth. These have been accumulated over the past several hundred years through our network of secret organizations of which we are a part. These ancient texts are not known in academic institutions, the media, or mainstream society; they are quite powerful in their

depictions of the 21st century. Fifteen was made aware of these texts early on when he became Director of Research for the ACIO, and this knowledge only fueled his desire to develop BST.

**Anne:**

What were these prophecies and who made them?

**Dr. Anderson:**

The prophecies were made by a variety of people who are, for the most part, unknown or anonymous, so if I told you their names you would have no recognition. You see, time travel can be accomplished by the soul from an observational level... that is to say, that certain individuals can move in the realm of what we call vertical time and see future events with great clarity, but they are powerless to change them. There are also those individuals who have, in our opinion, come into contact with the WingMakers and are provided messages about the future, which they had recorded in symbol pictures or extinct languages like Sumerian, Mayan, and Chakobsan.

The messages or prophecies that they made had several consistent strands or themes that were to occur in the early part of the 21st century, around the year 2011. Chief among these was the infiltration of the major governments of the world, including the United Nations, by an alien race. This alien race was a predator race with extremely sophisticated technologies that enabled them to integrate with the human species. That is to say, they could pose as humanoids, but they were truly a blend of human and android.

This alien race was prophesied to establish a world government and rule as its executive power. It was to be the ultimate challenge to humankind's collective intelligence and survival. These texts are kept from the public because they are too fear-provoking and would likely result in apocalyptic reprisals and mass paranoia...

**Anne:**

Are you saying what I think you're saying? That anonymous prophets from God knows where and when, have seen a vision of our future take-over by a race of robots? I mean you do realize how... how unbelievable that sounds?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Yes... I know it sounds unbelievable... but there are diluted versions of this very same prophecy in our religious texts, it's just that the alien race is portrayed as the antichrist; as if the alien race was personified in the form of Lucifer. This form of the prophecy was acceptable to the gatekeepers of these texts, and so they allowed a form of the prophecy to be distributed, but the notion of an alien race was eliminated.

**Anne:**

Why? And who exactly is it who's censoring what we can read and can't? Are you suggesting there's a secret editorial committee that previews books before their distribution?

**Dr. Anderson:**

This is a very complicated subject and I could spend a whole day just acquainting you with the general structure of this control of information. Most of the world's major libraries have collections of information that are not available to the general public. Only scholars are authorized to review these materials, and usually only on site. In the same way, there are manuscripts that were controversial and posited theories that were sharply different than the accepted belief systems of their day. These manuscripts or writings were banished by a variety of sources, including the Vatican, universities, governments, and various institutions.

These writings are sought out by secret organizations that have a mission to collect and retain this information. These organizations are very powerful and well funded, and they can purchase these original manuscripts for a relatively small amount of money. Most of the writings are believed to be hocus-pocus anyway, so libraries are often very willing to part with them for an endowment or modest contribution. Also, most of these are original writings having never been published, being that they originated from a time before the printing press.

There is a network of secret organizations that are loosely connected through the financial markets and their interests in worldly affairs. They are generally centers of power for the monetary systems within their respective countries, and are elitists of the first order. The ACIO is affiliated with this network only because it is rightly construed that the ACIO has the best technology in the world, and this technology can be deployed for financial gain through market manipulation.

As for an editorial committee... no, this secret network of organizations doesn't review books before publication. Its holdings are exclusively in ancient manuscripts and religious texts. They have a very strong interest in prophecy because they believe in the concept of vertical time and they have a vested interest in knowing the macro-environmental changes that can effect the economy. You see for most of them, the only game on this planet that is worth playing is the acquisition of ever-increasing wealth and power through an orchestrated manipulation of the key variables that drive the economic engines of our world.

**Anne:**

So if they're so smart about the future, and they believe these prophecies, what are they doing to help protect us from these alien invaders?

**Dr. Anderson:**

They help fund the ACIO. This collective of organizations has enormous wealth. More than most governments can comprehend. The ACIO provides them with the technology to manipulate money markets and rake in tens of billions of dollars every year. I don't even know the scope of their collective wealth. The ACIO also receives funding from the sale of its diluted technologies to these organizations for the sake of their own security and protection. We've devised the world's finest security systems, which are both undetectable and impregnable to outside forces like the CIA and the former KGB.

The reason they fund the ACIO is that they believe Fifteen is the most brilliant man alive and they're aware of his general agenda to develop BST. They see this

technology as the ultimate safeguard against the prophecy and their ability to retain relative control of the world and national economies. They also know Fifteen's strategic position with alien technologies and hope that between his genius, and the alien technologies that the ACIO is assimilating, that BST is possible to develop before the prophecy occurs.

**Anne:**

But why the sudden interest in the WingMakers' time capsule? How does it play a role in all of this BST stuff?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Initially, we didn't know what the connection was between the Ancient Arrow project and the BST imperative. You have to understand that the time capsule was a collection of 23 chambers literally carved inside of a canyon wall in the middle of nowhere about 80 miles northeast of Chaco Canyon in New Mexico. It is, without a doubt, the most amazing archeological find of all time. If scientists were allowed to examine this site, with all of its artifacts intact, they would be in awe of this incredible find.

Our preliminary assumptions were that this site was a time capsule of sorts left behind by an extraterrestrial race who had visited earth in the 8th century. But we couldn't understand why the art was so clearly representative of earth – if it were a time capsule. The only logical conclusion was that it represented a future version of humanity. But we weren't certain of this until we figured out how to access the optical disc and translate the first set of documents from the disc.

Once we had a clear understanding of how the WingMakers wanted to be understood, we began to test their claims by analyzing their chamber paintings, poetry, music, philosophy, and artifacts. This analysis made us fairly certain that they were authentic, which meant that they were not only time travelers, but that they were also in possession of a form of BST...

**Anne:**

Why did you assume they had BST?

**Dr. Anderson:**

We believed it took them a minimum of two months to create their time capsule. This would have required them to open and hold open a window of time and physically operate within the selected time frame. This is a fundamental requirement of BST. Additionally, it is necessary to be able to select the intervention points with precision – both in terms of time and space. We believed they had this capability, and they had proven it with their time capsule.

Furthermore, the technological artifacts they had left behind were evidence of a technology that was so far in advance to our own that we couldn't even understand them. None of the extraterrestrial races we were aware of had technologies so advanced that we could not probe them, assimilate them, and reverse-engineer them. The technologies left behind in the Ancient Arrow site were totally enigmatic and impervious to our probes. We considered them so advanced that they were quite literally indiscernible and unusable which – though it may sound odd – is a clear sign of an extremely advanced technology.

**Anne:**

So you decided that the WingMakers were in possession of BST, but how did you think you were going to acquire their knowledge?

**Dr. Anderson:**

We didn't know, and to this day, the answer to that question is allusive. The ACIO placed its best resources on this project for more than four years. I posited the theory that the time capsule was an encoded communication device. I began to theorize that when one went through the effort to interact with the various symbol pictures and immerse themselves in the time capsule's art and philosophy, it effected the central nervous system in a way that it improved fluid intelligence.

It was, in my opinion, the principle goal of the time capsule to boost fluid intelligence so that BST was not only able to be developed, but also utilized...

**Anne:**

You lost me. What is the relationship between BST and fluid intelligence?

**Dr. Anderson:**

BST is a specific form of time travel. Science fiction treats time travel as something that is relatively easy to design and develop, and relatively one-dimensional. Time travel is anything but one-dimensional. As advanced in technology as the Corteum and Greys are, they have yet to produce the equivalent of BST. They are able to time travel in its elemental form, but they can't interact with the



time that they travel to. That is to say, they can go back in time, but once there, they cannot alter the events of that time because they are in a passive, observational mode.

The Labyrinth Group has conducted seven time travel experiments over the past 30 years. One clear outcome from these tests is that the person performing the time travel is an integral variable to the technology used to time travel. In other words, the person and the technology need to be precisely matched. The Labyrinth Group, for all it knows, already possesses BST, but lacks the time traveler equivalent of an astronaut who can appropriately finesse the technology in real time and make the split-second adjustments that BST requires.

The Labyrinth Group has never seriously considered the human element of BST and how it is integral to the technology itself. There were some of us who were involved in the translation indexes of the WingMakers, who began to feel that that was the nature of the time capsule: to enhance fluid intelligence and activate new sensory inputs that were critical to the BST experience.

**Anne:**

But I still don't understand what it was that led you to that conclusion?

**Dr. Anderson:**

When we had translated the first 30 pages of text from the optical disc, we learned some interesting things about the WingMakers and their philosophy. Namely, that they claimed that the 3-dimensional 5-sensory domain that humans have adjusted to, is the reason we are only using a

fractional portion of our intelligence. They claimed that the time capsule would be the bridge from the 3-dimensional 5 sensory domain to the multidimensional 7-sensory domain.

In my opinion, they were saying that in order to apply BST, the traveler needed to operate from the multidimensional 7-sensory domain. Otherwise, BST was the proverbial camel through the eye of the needle... or in other words... impossible...

**Anne:**

This at least seems plausible to me, why was it so hard to believe for the ACIO?

**Dr. Anderson:**

This initiative was really conducted by the Labyrinth Group and not the ACIO, so I'm making that distinction just to be accurate, and not to be critical of your question. For Fifteen, it was hard to believe that a time capsule could activate or construct a bridge that would lead someone to become a traveler. This seemed like an extraordinarily remote possibility. He felt that the time capsule may hold the technology to enable BST, but he didn't believe it was merely an educational or developmental experience.

The other outcome of immersion in the time capsule's contents was a sense of loyalty to the WingMakers' philosophy and approach to life. I found myself becoming less and less technology-centric and more and more spiritually focused. There was a sense of entrainment caused by their teaching that I couldn't explain. For

whatever reason, I began to lose my objectivity as a researcher, and felt myself more of an advocate of the WingMakers.

**Anne:**

What do you mean by the word advocate?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Just that I was sympathetic to what I construed as the WingMakers' agenda.

**Anne:**

And what was... or perhaps more appropriately, what is their agenda in your opinion?

**Dr. Anderson:**

In my opinion, their agenda is to activate, through their time capsules the new consciousness that enables BST. I believe the WingMakers are trying to help us develop our consciousness... our human abilities... so we're able to utilize BST successfully as a defensive weapon. But more generally, I think this new consciousness is also – in itself – a defensive weapon.

**Anne:**

But if the WingMakers are time travelers themselves, in possession of BST, why can't they deal with the hostile aliens in 2011?

**Dr. Anderson:**

I don't know. Believe me, I've thought about that one a great deal, as has the team working on the project. Perhaps

BST isn't their primary concern for us, but rather helping us move from the 3-dimensional 5 sensory domain to the more potent multidimensional 7 sensory consciousness. Perhaps they're unable to access the intervention points because they lack some critical piece of information. Or perhaps they're unaware of the need because we already solved it in the year 2011.

All I know is that we have about 6 different hypotheses, and we just don't have enough data to make a conclusion. Bear in mind that only about 7% of the text from the optical disc has been secured and translated to English. The ACIO is missing much of the information yet that will allow it to understand the true nature of the time capsules and the purpose of the WingMakers.

**Anne:**

Let's take a short break and resume after we've had a chance to grab some more coffee. Okay?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Okay.

(Break for about 10 minutes... Resume interview)

**Anne:**

During the break I asked you about the network of secret organizations you mentioned that the ACIO is part of. Can you elaborate on this network and what its agenda is?

**Dr. Anderson:**

There are many organizations that have noble exteriors and secret interiors. In other words, they may have external agendas that they promote to their employees, members, and the media, but there is also a secret and well hidden agenda that only the inner core of the organization is aware of. The outer rings or protective membership as they're sometimes referred to, are simply window dressing to cover-up the real agenda of the organization.

The IMF, Foreign Relations Committee, NSA, KGB, CIA, World Bank, and the Federal Reserve are all examples of these organizational structures. Their inner core is knitted together to form an elitist, secret society, with its own culture, economy, and communication system. These are the powerful and wealthy who have joined forces in order to manipulate world political, economic, and social systems to facilitate their own agenda.

The agenda, as I know it, is primarily concerned with control of the world economy and its vital resources – oil, gold, gas reserves, platinum, diamonds, etc. This secret network has utilized technology from the ACIO for the purpose of securing control of the world economy. They're well into the process of designing an integrated world economy based on a digital equivalent of paper currency. This infrastructure is in place, but it is taking more time than expected to implement because of the resistance of competitive forces who don't understand the exact nature of this secret network, but intuitively sense its existence.

These competitive forces are generally businesses and politicians who are affiliated with the transition to a global, digital economy, but want to have some control of

the infrastructure development, and because of their size and position in the marketplace can exert significant influence on this secret network.

The only organization that I'm aware of that is entirely independent as to its agenda, and therefore the most powerful or alpha organization, is the Labyrinth Group. And they are in this position because of their pure-state technologies and the intellect of its members. All other organizations – whether part of this secret network of organizations or powerful multinational corporations – are not in control of the execution of their agenda. They are essentially locked in a competitive battle.

**Anne:**

But if this is all true, then is Fifteen essentially running this secret network?

**Dr. Anderson:**

No. He's not interested in the agenda of this secret network. He's bored by it. He has no interest in power or money. He's only attracted to the mission of building BST to thwart hostile alien attacks that have been prophesied for 12,000 years. He believes that the only mission worth deploying the Labyrinth Group's considerable intellectual power is the development of the ultimate defensive weapon or Freedom Key. He's convinced that only the Labyrinth Group has a chance to do this before it's too late.

You have to remember that the Labyrinth Group consists of 118 humans and approximately 200 Corteum. The intellectual ability of this group, aligned behind the focused mission of developing BST before the alien take-

over, is truly a remarkable undertaking that makes the Manhattan Project look like a kindergarten social party in comparison. And perhaps I'm exaggerating a bit for effect... but I'm pointing out that Fifteen is leading an agenda that is far more critical than anything that has been undertaken in the history of humankind.

**Anne:**

So if Fifteen is running his own agenda, and it's just as you say it is, why would you defect from such an organization?

**Dr. Anderson:**

The ACIO has a memory implant technology that can effectively eliminate select memories with surgical precision. For example, this technology could eliminate your recall of this interview without disrupting any other memories before or after. You would simply sense some missing time perhaps, but nothing more would be recalled... if that.

My intuition cautioned me that I was a candidate to have this procedure because of the behaviors I was exhibiting in deference to the WingMakers. In other words, I was believed to be a sympathizer of their culture, philosophy, and mission – what I knew of it. That made me a potential risk to the project. The Labyrinth Group, in a very real sense, feared its own membership because of their enormous intellects and ability to be cunning and clever.

This imprinted a constant state of paranoia which meant that technology was deployed to help ensure compliance to

the agenda of Fifteen. Most of these technologies were invasive, and the members of the Labyrinth Group willingly submitted to the invasion in order to more effectively cope with the paranoia. Several months ago I began to systematically shut down these invasive technologies – in part to see what the reaction of Fifteen would be, and partly because I was tired of the paranoia.

As I was doing this, it became obvious to me that the suspicions were escalating and it was simply a matter of time before they would ask me to subject myself to memory therapy. What I had learned from the WingMakers' time capsule is not something I want to forget. I don't want to give this information up. It has become a central part of what I believe and how I want to live out my life.

**Anne:**

Couldn't you have simply defected and not sought out a journalist who will want to get this story out. I mean, couldn't you have simply gone to an island and lived out your life and never disclosed the existence of the Labyrinth Group and the WingMakers?

**Dr. Anderson:**

You don't understand... the Labyrinth Group is untouchable. They have no fears about what I divulge to the media, their only concern is the terrible precedence of defection. I'm the first. No one has ever left before. And their fear is that if I defect and get away successfully, others will too. And once that happens, the mission is compromised and BST may never happen.



Fifteen and his Directors take their mission very seriously. They are fanatics of the first order, which is both good and bad. Good in the sense that they're focused and working hard to develop BST, bad in the sense that fanaticism breeds paranoia. My reasons for seeking out a journalist like you and sharing this knowledge is that I don't want the WingMakers' time capsules to be locked away from humanity. I think its contents should be shared. I think that was their purpose.

**Anne:**

This will seem like a strange question, but why would the WingMakers hide their time capsule and then encode its content in such an extraordinarily complex way if they wanted this to be shared with humanity? Look... if the average citizen had found this time capsule... or even a government laboratory, what's the chance they would have been able to decipher it and access the optical disc?

**Dr. Anderson:**

It's not such a strange question actually. We asked it ourselves. It seemed clear to the Labyrinth Group that it had been the chosen organization to unlock the optical disc. To answer your question directly, had the time capsule been discovered by another organization, chances are excellent that its optical disc would never be accessed. Somehow, this coincidence – that the time capsule ended up in the hands of the Labyrinth Group – seems to be an orchestrated process. And even Fifteen agreed with that assessment.

**Anne:**

So Fifteen felt that the WingMakers had selected the Labyrinth Group to decide the fate of the time capsule's content?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Yes.

**Anne:**

Then wouldn't it be reasonable to assume that Fifteen wanted to learn more about the contents of the time capsule before he released it to the public through the NSA or some other government agency?

**Dr. Anderson:**

No. It's doubtful that Fifteen would ever release any information about the Ancient Arrow project to anyone outside of the ACIO. He's not one to share information that he feels is proprietary to the Labyrinth Group, particularly if it has anything to do with BST.

**Anne:**

So now that you've made these statements, isn't it going to effect the ACIO. Isn't someone going to ask questions and start poking around looking for answers?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Perhaps. But I know too much about their security systems, and there's no way that a political inquiry will find them. And there's no way the secret network of organizations I mentioned earlier could exert any influence over them; they're completely indebted to the ACIO for technologies that permit them to manipulate economic

markets. They... the ACIO and Labyrinth Group are, as I said before, untouchable. Their only concern will be defection... the loss of intellectual capital.

**Anne:**

What effect will your defection have on the ACIO or the Labyrinth Group?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Very little. Most of my contributions with respect to the time capsule have been completed. There are some other projects having to do with encryption technologies that I developed and these will be more significant in their impact.

**Anne:**

Can you elaborate on the WingMakers and who you think they are or represent?

**Dr. Anderson:**

I don't know who they are, but they represent themselves as human time travelers from the middle part of the 28th century. They could very well be the future version of the Labyrinth Group, or some other powerful organization. They seem to have a very well integrated sub-culture in that their language is clearly a combination of many extinct languages which they could only have knowledge of if they had access to ACIO information systems, or were indeed time travelers... or both, I suppose.

Assuming they're accurately representing themselves, they are very advanced technologically. The Labyrinth

Group holds that BST is the most advanced technology conceivable. Anyone who possesses it and can successfully utilize it, is clearly more advanced than our contemporary human culture or any of the extraterrestrials we are currently interfacing with.

**Anne:**

But if the WingMakers are so advanced technologically, why time capsules? Why not just appear one day and announce what ever it is they want to share? Why this game of hide and seek and hidden time capsules?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Their motives are not clear. I think they planted these time capsules as their way to bring culture and technology from their time to ours. And they decided to do this by leaving behind these miraculous structures or time capsules that, once discovered, would lead people to a new philosophy or level of understanding. I think they're as interested in our philosophical outlook as our discovery of BST. Perhaps more so.

As for why don't they just show up and give us the information... this, I think, is their genius. They've created seven time capsules and placed them in various parts of the world. I believe this is all part of a master plan or strategy to engage our intellects and spirits in a way that has never been done before. To demonstrate how art – culture, science, spirituality, how all of these things are connected. I believe they want us to discover this... not to be told.

If they simply arrived here in your living room and announced they were the WingMakers from the 28th century, I suspect you'd be more amazed about their personalities and physical characteristics and what life is like in their time. That's assuming you even believed them. The aspects of what they wanted to impart – culture, art, technology, philosophy, spirituality, these items could get lost in the phenomenon of their presence.

Also, in the text that I had translated, it was apparent that the WingMakers had time traveled on many occasions. They interacted with people from many different times and called themselves Culture Bearers. They were probably mistaken as angels or even Gods. For all we know, their reference in religious texts may indeed be frequent.

**Anne:**

So you think they intend that these time capsules be shared with the whole of humanity?

**Dr. Anderson:**

You mean the WingMakers?

**Anne:**

Yes?

**Dr. Anderson:**

I don't know with absolute certainty. But I think they should be shared. I don't have anything to personally gain from getting this information out to the public. It goes against everything I've been trained for and places me at risk and at the very least, disrupts my lifestyle irreparably.

To me, the Ancient Arrow time capsule is the single greatest discovery in the history of humankind. Discoveries of this magnitude should be in the public domain. They shouldn't be selfishly secured and retained by the ACIO or any other organization.

**Anne:**

Then why are these discoveries and the whole situation with ETs kept from the public?

**Dr. Anderson:**

The people who have access to this information like the sense of being unique and privileged. That's the psychology of secret organizations and why they flourish. Privileged information is the ambrosia of elitists. It gives them a sense of power, and the human ego loves to feed from the trough of power.

They would never confess to this, but the drama of the ET contact and other mysterious or paranormal phenomenon is extremely compelling and of vital interest to anyone who is of a curious nature. Particularly politicians and scientists. And by keeping these subjects in private rooms behind closed doors with all the secrecy surrounding it, it creates a sense of drama that is missing in most other pursuits.

So you see, Anne, the drama of secrecy is very addictive. Now of course, the reason that they would tell you for keeping this out of the public domain is for purposes of national security, economic stability, and social order. And to some extent, I suppose there's truth to that. But it's not the real reason.

**Anne:**

Does our President know about the ET situation?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Yes.

**Anne:**

What does he know?

**Dr. Anderson:**

He knows about the Greys. He knows about ET bases that exist on planets within our solar system. He knows about the Martians...

**Anne:**

Good God, you're not going to tell me that little green men from Mars actually exist, are you?

**Dr. Anderson:**

If I were to tell you what I know about the ET situation, I'm afraid I would lose my credibility in your eyes. Believe me, the reality of the ET situation is much more complex and dimensional than I have time tonight to report, and if I gave you a superficial rendering, I think you'd find it impossible to believe. So I'm going to tell you partial truths, and I'm going to be very careful in my choice of words.

The Martians are a humanoid race fashioned from the same gene pool as we. They live in underground bases within Mars, and their numbers are small. Some have already immigrated to earth, and with some superficial

adjustments to their physical appearance, they could pass for a human in broad daylight.

President Clinton is aware of these matters and has considered alternative ways to communicate with ETs. To date, a form of telepathy has been used as the primary communication interface. However, this is not a trusted form of communication, especially in the minds of our military personnel. Virtually every radio telescope on the globe has been, at one time or another, used to communicate with ETs. This has had mixed results, but there have been successes, and our President is aware of these.

**Anne:**

Then is Clinton involved in the secret network you mentioned earlier?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Not knowingly. But he is clearly an important influencer, and is treated with great care by high-level operatives within the network.

**Anne:**

So you're saying he's manipulated?

**Dr. Anderson:**

It depends on your definition of "manipulation". He can make any decision he desires, ultimately he has the power to make or influence all decisions relative to national security, economic stability, and social order. But he generally seeks inputs from his advisors. And high level operatives from this secret network advise his advisors.



The network, and its operatives, seldom gets too close to political power because it's in the media fish bowl, and they disdain the scrutiny of the media and the public in general.

Clinton, therefore is not manipulated, but simply advised. The information he receives is sometimes doctored to lead his decisions in the direction that the network feels is most beneficial to all of its members. To the extent that information is doctored, then I think you could say that the President is manipulated. He has precious little time to perform fact checking and fully evaluate alternative plans, which is why the advisors are so important and influential.

**Anne:**

Okay, so he's manipulated – at least by my definition. Is this also happening with other governments like Japan and Great Britain for instance?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Yes. This network is not just national or even global. It extends to other races and species. So its influence is quite broad, as are the influences that impinge upon it. It is a two-way street. As I said before, The Labyrinth Group operates the only agenda that is truly independent, and because of its goal, it's permitted to have this independence... though in all honesty, there's nothing that anyone could do to prevent it, with the possible exception of the WingMakers.

**Anne:**

So all the world's governments are being manipulated by this secret network of organizations... who are these organizations... you mentioned some of them, but who are the rest? Is the mob involved?

**Dr. Anderson:**

I could name most of them, but to what end? Most you wouldn't recognize or find any reference to. They are like the Labyrinth Group. Had you ever heard of it before? Of course not. Even the current management of the NSA is not aware of the ACIO. At one time, they were. But that was over 35 years ago, and people circulate out of the organization, but still retain their alliance to the secret and privileged information network.

And no, absolutely there is no mob or organized crime influence in this network. The network uses organized crime as a shield in some instances, but organized crime operates through intimidation, not stealth. Its leaders possess average intelligence and associate with information systems that are obsolete and therefore non-strategic. The organized crime network is a much less sophisticated version of the network I was referring to.

**Anne:**

Okay, let's get back to the WingMakers for a moment... and I apologize for my scattered questions tonight. It's just that there's so much I want to know that I'm finding it very difficult to stay on the subject of the Ancient Arrow project.

**Dr. Anderson:**

You don't need to apologize. I understand how this must sound to you. I'm still wide awake, so you don't have to worry about the time.

**Anne:**

Okay. Let's talk a little bit about your impressions or insights into the WingMakers' philosophy and culture.

**Dr. Anderson:**

First of all, again I want to remind you that only a fraction of their writings have been translated. So whatever insights I may have, are limited by a partial understanding – at best – of their culture and philosophy. Also, I want to remind you that the WingMakers may not represent the broader culture and philosophy of their time. Our interpretation was that they represented a subset or subculture of their time.

With those qualifications, I'll say that the WingMakers have the benefit of about 750 additional years of evolutionary thought. We presume that humans of this era are active members of the Federation of our galaxy...

**Anne:**

What's the Federation... I haven't heard you talk about it before?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Each galaxy has a Federation or loose-knit organization that includes all sentient life forms on every planet within the galaxy. It would be the equivalent of the United Nations of the galaxy. This Federation has both invited members and observational members. Invited members are

those species that have managed to behave in a responsible manner as stewards of their planet and combine both the technology, philosophy, and culture that enable them to communicate as a global entity that has a unified agenda.

Observational members are species who are fragmented and are still wrestling with one another over land, power, money, culture, and a host of other things that prevent them from forming a unified world government. The human race on planet earth is such a species, and for now, it is simply observed by the Federation, but is not invited into its policy making and economic systems.

**Anne:**

Are you saying that our galaxy has a form of government and an economic system?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Yes, but if I tell you about this you will lose track of what I really wanted to share with you about the WingMakers...

**Anne:**

I'm sorry for taking us off track again. But this is just too amazing to ignore. If there's a Federation of cooperative, intelligent species, why couldn't they take care of these hostile aliens in the year 2011 or at least help us?

**Dr. Anderson:**

The Federation doesn't intrude on a species of any kind. It is truly a facilitating force not a governing force with a military presence. That is to say, they will observe and

help with suggestions, but they will not intervene on our behalf.

**Anne:**

Is this like the Prime Directive as it's portrayed on Star Trek?

**Dr. Anderson:**

No. It's more like a parent who wants its children to learn how to fend for themselves so they can become greater contributors to the family.

**Anne:**

But wouldn't a hostile take-over of earth effect the Federation?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Most definitely. But the Federation does not preempt a species' own responsibility for survival and the perpetuation of its genetics. You see, at an atomic level our physical bodies are made quite literally from stars. At a sub-atomic level, our minds are non-physical repositories of a galactic mind. At a sub-sub-atomic level, our souls are non-physical repositories of God or the intelligence that pervades the universe.

The Federation believes that the human species can defend itself because it is of the stars, galactic mind, and God. If we were unsuccessful, and the hostility spread to other parts of our galaxy, then the Federation would take notice and its members would defend their sovereignty, and this has happened many times. And in this process of defense new technologies arise, new friendships are

forged, and new confidence is embedded in the galactic mind.

That's why the Federation performs as they do.

**Anne:**

Doesn't BST exist somewhere within the Federation?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Yes, it probably does in one of the planets closer to our galactic core.

**Anne:**

So why doesn't the Federation help... you said they could help didn't you?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Yes, they can help. And the Corteum are IMs or invited members and they are helping us. But they themselves do not possess the BST technology... this is a very special technology that is permitted to be acquired by a species that intends to use it only as a defensive weapon. And herein is the challenge.

**Anne:**

Who does the "permitting"... are you saying the Federation decides when a species is ready to acquire BST?

**Dr. Anderson:**

No... I think it has to do with God.

**Anne:**

I don't know why, but I have a hard time believing that you believe in God.

**Dr. Anderson:**

Well, I do. And furthermore, so does everyone within the Labyrinth Group – including Fifteen. We've seen far too many evidences of God or a higher intelligence that we can't dispute its existence. It would be impossible to deny based on what we've observed in our laboratories.

**Anne:**

So God decides when we're ready to responsibly use BST. Do you think he'll decide before 2011? (I admit there was a tone of sarcasm in this question.)

**Dr. Anderson:**

You see, Anne, the Labyrinth Group is hopeful that the readiness of the entire species isn't the determining factor, but that a subgroup within the species might be allowed to acquire the technology as long as it was able to protect it from all non-approved forces. This subgroup is hoped to be the Labyrinth Group, and it's one of the reasons why Fifteen has invested so much the ACIO's resource into security systems.

**Anne:**

You didn't really answer my question though... Do you think it can be developed in 12 years?

**Dr. Anderson:**

I don't know. Certainly I hope so, but BST is not our only line of defense. The Labyrinth Group has devised

many defensive weapons, not all of which I'll describe to you. The alien race foretold in prophecy is not even aware of earth at this time. They originate from a different galaxy altogether. The prophecy is that they will send probes to our galaxy and determine that earth is the best genetic library and natural resource repository in the Milky Way that can be quickly assimilated. They will visit earth in 2011.

The prophecy says they will befriend our governments and utilize the United Nations as an ally. They will set about orchestrating a unified world government through the United Nations. And when the first elections are held in 2018, they will overtake the United Nations and rule as the world government. This will be done through trickery and deception.

I mention these prophecies because they're quite specific as to the dates, and so we have the equivalent of 19 years to produce and deploy BST. Ideally, yes, we'd like to have it completed in order to interface with the intervention points for this race when it decided to crossover into our galaxy. We would like to cause them to choose a different galaxy or abandon their quest altogether. But it may be impossible to determine this intervention point.

You see, the memory implant technology developed by the Labyrinth Group can be utilized in conjunction with BST. We can define the intervention point when our galaxy was selected as a target to colonize, enter that time and place, and impose a new memory on their leadership to divert them from our galaxy.

**Anne:**



Either I'm getting tired, or this just got a lot more confusing... You're saying that the Labyrinth Group already has scenarios to nip this thing in the bud... to prevent this marauding group of aliens from even entering our galaxy? How do you know where they are?

**Dr. Anderson:**

To answer your question, I would need to explain with much more granularity the precise nature of BST and how it differs from time travel. I'll try to explain it as simply as I can, but it's complex, and you need to let go of some of your preconceived notions of time and space.

You see... time is not exclusively linear as when it's depicted in a timeline. Time is vertical with every moment in existence stacked upon the next and all coinciding with one another. In other words, time is the collective of all moments of all experience simultaneously existing within non-time, which is usually referred to as eternity.

Vertical time infers that one can select a moment of experience and use time and space as the portal through which they make their selection real. Once the selection is made, time and space become the continuity factor that changes vertical time into horizontal time or conventional time...

**Anne:**

You lost me. How is vertical time different from horizontal time?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Vertical time has to do with the simultaneous experience of all time, and horizontal time has to do with the continuity of time in linear, moment-by-moment experiences.

**Anne:**

So you're saying that every experience I've ever had or will ever have exists right now? That the past and future are actually the present, but I'm just too brainwashed to see it?

**Dr. Anderson:**

As I said before, this is a complex subject, and I'm afraid that if I spend the time explaining it to you now, we will lose track of more important information like BST. Perhaps if I were to explain the nature of BST, most of your questions would be answered in the process.

**Anne:**

Okay, then tell me what BST is? Given what the acronym stands for, I assume it means something like... wipe out an event and change the course of history. Right?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Let me try to explain it this way. Time travel can be observational in nature. In this regard, the ACIO and other organizations – even individual citizens – have the ability to time travel. But this form of time travel is passive. It's not equivalent to BST. In order to precisely alter the future you have to be able to interact with vertical time, paging through it like a book, until you find the precise page or intervention point relevant to your mission.

This is where it gets so complex because to interact with vertical time means you will alter the course of horizontal time. And understanding the alterations and their scope and implication requires extremely complex modeling. This is why the Labyrinth Group aligned itself with the Corteum – its computing technology has processing capabilities that are about 3,200 times more powerful than our best supercomputers.

This enables us to create organic, highly complex scenario models. These models tell us the most probable intervention points once we've gathered the relevant data, and what the most probable outcomes will be if we invoke a specific scenario. Like most complex technologies, BST is a composite technology having five discrete and inter-related technologies.

The first technology is a specialized form of remote viewing. This is the technology that enables a trained operative to mentally move into vertical time and observe events and even listen to conversations related to an inquiry mode. The operative is invisible to all people within the time they are traveling to, so it's perfectly safe and unobtrusive. The intelligence gained from this technology is used to determine the application of the other four technologies. This is the equivalent of intelligence gathering.

The second technology that is key to BST is the equivalent of a memory implant. The ACIO refers to this technology as a Memory Restructure Procedure or MRP. MRP is the technology that allows a memory to be precisely eliminated in the horizontal time sequence and a

new memory inserted in its place. The new memory is welded to the existing memory structure of the recipient.

You see, events – small and large – occur from a single thought, which becomes a persistent memory, which in turn, becomes a causal energy center that leads the development and materialization of the thought into reality... into horizontal time. MRP can remove the initial thought and thereby eliminate the persistent memory that causes events to occur.

The third technology consists of defining the intervention point. In every major decision, there are hundreds if not thousands of intervention points in horizontal time as a thought unfolds and moves through its development phase. However, in vertical time, there is only one intervention point or what we sometimes called the causal seed. In other words, if you can access vertical time intelligence you can identify the intervention point that is the causal seed. This technology identifies the most probable intervention points and ranks their priority. It enables focus of the remaining technologies.

The fourth technology is related to the third. It's the scenario modeling technology. This technology helps to assess the various intervention points as to their least invasive ripple effects to the recipients. In other words, which intervention point – if applied to a scenario model – produces the desired outcome with the least disruption to unrelated events? The scenario modeling technology is a key element of BST because without it, BST could cause significant disruption to a society or entire species.

The fifth and most puzzling technology is the interactive time travel technology. The Labyrinth Group has the first four technologies in a ready state waiting for the interactive time travel technology to become operational. This technology requires an operative, or a team of operatives, to be able to physically move into vertical time and be inserted in the precise space and time where the optimal intervention point has been determined. From there the operatives must perform a successful MRP and return to their original time in order to validate mission success.

**Anne:**

I've been listening to this explanation and I think I even understand some of it, but it sounds so surreal to me, Dr. Anderson. I'm... I'm at a loss to explain how I'm feeling right now. This is all so strange. It's so big... enormous... I can't believe this is going on somewhere on the same planet that I live. Before this interview, I was worried about balancing my checkbook and when my damn car would ever be fixed... this is just too strange...

**Dr. Anderson:**

Maybe we should take another break and warm up our coffee.

**Anne:**

Signing off for a coffee break...

(Break for about 10 minutes... Resume interview)

**Anne:**

If the Labyrinth Group has four of the five technologies ready to go, and is only awaiting the interactive... the interactive part, they must have scenario models and intervention points already established for how they plan to deal with this alien race. Do they?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Yes. They have about 40 scenario models and perhaps as many as 5-8 intervention points defined.

**Anne:**

And if there're that many, there must be a priority established. What's the most probable scenario model?

**Dr. Anderson:**

I will be brief on this point because it's such classified information that only the 14x personnel and Fifteen know this. My classification is 12x and so I get diluted reports and quite possibly misinformation with regard to our scenario modeling. About all I can tell you is that we know – from both the prophecies and our remote viewing technology – a significant amount of information about this race.

For example, we know that it hails from a galaxy that our Hubble telescope has examined as thoroughly as possible and we've charted it as extensively as possible. We know that it is 2.6 million light years away and that the species is a synthetic race – a mixture of genetic creation and technology. It possesses a hive mentality, but individual initiative is still appreciated as long as it is aligned with the explicit objectives of its leaders.

Because it is a synthetic race, it can be produced in a controlled environment and its population can be increased or decreased depending on the whims of its leaders. It is...

**Anne:**

Didn't you just say it's from a galaxy that's 2.6 million light years away? I mean, assuming they were able to travel at the speed of light, it would take them 2.6 million years to come to our planet. And you said earlier that they didn't even know about earth yet... right?

**Dr. Anderson:**

The Corteum come from a planet that is 15,000 light years away, and yet they can come and go between their planet and our planet in the time it takes us to travel to the moon – a mere 250,000 miles away. Time is not linear, nor is space. Space is curved, as your physicists have recently learned, but it can be artificially curved through displacement energy fields that collapse space and the illusion of distance. Light particles do not displace or collapse space, they ride a linear line through space, but there are forms of electromagnetic energy that can modify or collapse space. And this technology makes space travel – even between galaxies – not only possible, but also relatively easy.

**Anne:**

Why did you say, 'your physicists' just then?

**Dr. Anderson:**

I apologize... it's just a part of the conditioning of being isolated from mainstream society. When you operate for

30 years in a secret organization like the Labyrinth Group, you tend to look at your fellow humans... as not your fellow humans, but as something else. The principles of science that the Labyrinth Group has embraced are very different from those taught within your... there I go again... within our universities. I must be getting tired.

**Anne:**

I didn't mean to criticize you. It's just the way you said it, it sounded as though an alien or an outsider said it.

**Dr. Anderson:**

I qualify as an outsider, but certainly not an alien.

**Anne:**

Okay, back to this prophecy or alien race. What do they want? I mean... why travel such a far distance to rule earth?

**Dr. Anderson:**

This seems such a funny question to me. Excuse me for laughing. It's just that humans do not understand how special earth is. It is truly, as planets are concerned, a special planet. It has such a tremendous bio-diversity and a complex range of ecosystems. Its natural resources are unique and plentiful. It's a genetic library that's the equivalent of a galactic zoo.

The aliens that are coming desire to own this planet and add it to its colonization plans. As I've already mentioned, this is a synthetic race. A species that can clone itself and fabricate more and more of its population to serve the purpose of its colonization program. However, it desires



more diversity, and earth will represent an opportunity for it to diversify.

**Anne:**

So where are they right now?

**Dr. Anderson:**

I assume they remain in their homeworld... to the best of our knowledge they haven't crossed into our galaxy yet.

**Anne:**

And when they arrive, how will the ACIO or Labyrinth Group know?

**Dr. Anderson:**

As I said, the ACIO has already done a significant amount of intelligence gathering and even selected scenarios and intervention points.

**Anne:**

So what's the plan?

**Dr. Anderson:**

The most logical approach would be to travel to the time and place when the casual thought was born to explore the Milky Way, and through MRP, expunge it from the memory of the race. Essentially, convince them that of all the wonderful, life-inhabited galaxies, the Milky Way is a poor choice. The Labyrinth Group would implant a memory that would lead this race to conclude that our galaxy was not worthy of their serious exploration.

**Anne:**

So some other galaxy becomes their next target? Wouldn't we bear the responsibility of their next conquest? Aren't we then perpetrators ourselves?

**Dr. Anderson:**

This is a fair question, but I'm afraid I don't know the answer.

**Anne:**

Why couldn't we – using this MRP technology – simply implant a memory not to be aggressive. To tell this race to stop trying to colonize new worlds that aren't theirs to own like property. Why couldn't we do this?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Perhaps we will. I don't really know what Fifteen has in mind. I am, though, confident in his approach and its efficacy.

**Anne:**

But you said earlier that you feared for your life... that Fifteen is probably trying to hunt you down even as we speak. Why are so you confident in his sense of morality?

**Dr. Anderson:**

In the case of Fifteen, morality doesn't really play a role. He operates in his own code of ethics, and I don't pretend to understand them all. But I'm quite certain of his mission to avert take-over by this alien race, and I'm equally confident that he will choose the best intervention point

with the least influence to the overall species of this alien race. It is the only way he can acquire BST. And he knows this.

**Anne:**

We're back to God again, aren't we?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Yes.

**Anne:**

So God and Fifteen have this all figured out?

**Dr. Anderson:**

There's no certainty if that's what you mean. And there's no alliance between Fifteen and God, at least not that I'm aware of. This is part of the belief system that the Labyrinth Group formalized along the path to developing BST. It's logical to us that God is all-powerful and all knowing because it operates as the universal mind field that interpenetrates all life, all time, all space, all energy... and all existence. This consciousness is impartial, but certainly it's in a position to deny things or, perhaps more accurately, delay their acquisition.

**Anne:**

If God exists everywhere as you say, then why wouldn't he stop this marauding alien race and keep them in their place?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Again, a fair question, but one that I can't answer. I can only tell you that the God I believe in is, as I said before, impartial. Meaning that it allows its creation to express themselves as they desire. At the highest level where God operates, all things have a purpose... even aggressive species that desire to dominate other species and planets. It was Fifteen's belief that God orchestrated nothing but understood everything in the universal mind.

Remember when I was talking about the galactic mind?

**Anne:**

Yes.

**Dr. Anderson:**

There are planetary minds, solar minds, galactic minds, and a singular universal mind. The universal mind is the mind of God. Each galaxy has a collective consciousness or mind field that is the aggregation of all of the species present within that galaxy. The universal mind creates the initial blueprint for each of the galaxies related to its galactic mind or composite consciousness. This initial blueprint creates the pre-disposition of the genetic code seeded within a galaxy. We, the Labyrinth Group, believed that God designed each galaxy's genetic code with a different set of pre-dispositions or behaviors.

**Anne:**

And why would this be so?

**Dr. Anderson:**

So diversity is amplified across the universe, which in turn permits God to experience the broadest continuum of life.

**Anne:**

Why is this so important?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Because God loves to experiment and devise new ways of experiencing life in all of its dimensions. This may very well be the purpose of the universe.

**Anne:**

You know you're talking like a preacher? You speak like these are certainties or truths that are just self-evident... but they're just beliefs aren't they?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Yes, they're beliefs, but beliefs are important don't you think?

**Anne:**

I'm not sure... I mean my beliefs are changing every day. They're not stable or anchored in some deep truth that's constant like bedrock or something.

**Dr. Anderson:**

Well, that's good... I mean that they change. The Labyrinth Group evolved a very specific set of beliefs – some of these were based on our experiences as a result of the Corteum intelligence enhancement technologies, some

were based from ancient texts that were studied, and some were borrowed from our ET contacts.

**Anne:**

So now you're going to tell me our friendly neighborhood ETs are religious zealots?

**Dr. Anderson:**

No... no, I don't mean that they were trying to convert us to their beliefs, we simply asked and they related them to us. Upon hearing them, they seemed quite a bit more like science than religion actually. I think that's the nature of a more evolved species... they finally figure out that science and religion converges into cosmology. That understanding the universe in which we live, also causes us to understand ourselves – which is the purpose of religion and science... or at least should be.

**Anne:**

Okay, this is getting a little too philosophical for my tastes. Can we return to a question about the WingMakers? If, as you say, there's a galactic federation that governs the Milky Way, how do the WingMakers factor into this federation?

**Dr. Anderson:**

I'm impressed by the nature of your questions. And I wish I could answer them all, but here again, I don't know the answer. I would assume the federation and the WingMakers operate in unison and have a mutually beneficial relationship, but I'm not...

**Anne:**

But if you can use your remote viewing technology to eavesdrop on this alien race in an entirely different galaxy, why can't you observe the WingMakers and the federation?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Actually, we've tried our remote viewing technology on the WingMakers. It was one of the first things we tried. But we got nothing. In fact, it was the first time when our technology was completely ineffective. We assumed that the WingMakers had developed some form of security that prevented remote viewing. But we weren't sure.

As for the federation, they're fully aware of our remote viewing capability, and in fact, we can't eavesdrop on the federation because they're able to detect our presence if we observe them through remote viewing. So, in deference to their privacy and trusting their agenda, we never imposed our technology on the federation... perhaps only once or twice.

**Anne:**

You'll have to forgive me Dr. Anderson, but I find all of this a little hard to believe. We've skimmed the surface of about a hundred different subjects through the course of this interview, and I keep coming back to the same basic issue: Why? Why would the universe be set up this way and no one on earth know about it? Why all the secrecy? Does someone think we humans are so stupid that we couldn't understand it? And who the hell is this somebody?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Unfortunately, there are so many conspiracies to keep this vital information out of the public domain, that what ends up in the hands of the public is diluted to the point of uselessness. I can understand your frustration. I can only tell you that there are people who know about these things, but only Fifteen knows about the larger reality of what we've touched on tonight.

In other words, and this is to your point, Anne, there are some people within the military, government, secret network, NSA, CIA, etc. that know parts of the whole, but they don't understand the whole. They aren't equipped with the knowledge to stand before the media and explain what's happening. They fear that they would be made to appear feeble by the fact that they only know pieces of what's going on. It's like the story of the three blind men who are all touching different parts of an elephant and each thinks it is something different.

Fifteen withholds his knowledge from the media and the general public because he doesn't want to be seen as a savior of humanity – the next messiah. And he especially doesn't want to be seen as some fringe lunatic who should be locked up, or worse yet, assassinated because he is so misunderstood. The instant he stepped forward with what he knows, he would lose his privacy and his ability to discover BST. And this he'll never do.

Most people who know about this greater reality are fearful of stepping into the public scrutiny because of the fear of being ridiculed. You have to admit, that the general public is frightened by what it doesn't understand, and they do kill the messenger.



**Anne:**

But why can't we get even partial truths about this picture of reality... about ETs and the federation? Someone, the media or government or someone else is keeping this information from us. Like the story you were telling me about the Martians. If this is true and Clinton knows about this, why aren't we being told?

**Dr. Anderson:**

There's a cynical part of me that would say something like... why do you watch six hours of television every day? Why do you feed your minds exclusively with the opinions of others? Why do you trust your politicians? Why do you trust your governments? Why do you support the destruction of your ecosystems and the companies and governments that perpetrate this destruction?

You see, because the whole of humanity allows these things to occur, the wool is pulled over your eyes and it's easy to ration information and direct your attention to mundane affairs like the weather and Hollywood.

**Anne:**

That's fine for you to say – someone who's IQ can't be charted. But for those of us with average intelligence, what are we supposed to do differently that would give us access to this information... to this larger reality?

**Dr. Anderson:**

I don't know. I honestly don't know. I don't pretend to have the answers. But somehow humans need to be more demanding of their governments and even the media.

Because the media is a big part of this manipulation, though they're not aware of how they've become pawns of the information cover-up.

The truth of the matter is that no one entity is to blame. Elitists have always existed since the dawn of man. There have always been those who had more aggression and power and would dominate the weaker of the species. This is the fundamental structure that has bred this condition of information cover-up, and it happens in every sector of society, including religion, government, military, science, academia, and business.

No one created this playing field to be level and equal for all. It was designed to enable free will and reality selection based on individual preferences. And for those who have the mental capacity to probe into these secrets behind the secrets behind the secrets, they usually find pieces of this larger reality – as you put it. It's not entirely hidden... there are books and individuals and even prophecies that corroborate much of what I've spoken of here tonight. And these are readily available to anyone who wants to understand this larger universe in which we live.

So, to answer your question: ...what are we supposed to do differently? I would read and study. I would invest time learning about this larger universe and turn off the television and disconnect from the media. That's what I would do...

**Anne:**

Maybe this is a good place to wrap things up. Unless you have anything else you'd like to add.

**Dr. Anderson:**

Only one thing, and that is that if anyone ever reads this interview, please do so with an empty mind. If you bring a mind full of learning and education and opinion, you'll find so much to argue with in what I've said that you'll not hear anything. And I'm not interested in arguing with anyone. I'm not even that interested in convincing anyone of what I've said. My life will go on even if no one believes me.

The WingMakers have built a time capsule of their culture and it's magnificent. I wish I could take people to the original site so they could stand before each of the 23 chambers and witness these wall paintings in person. If you were to do this, you would understand that art can be a portal that transports the soul to a different dimension. There is a certain energy that these paintings have that can't be translated in mere photographs. You really need to stand inside these chambers and feel the purposeful nature of this time capsule.

I think if I could do that, you would believe everything I've said.

**Anne:**

Could you take someone like me to the site?

**Dr. Anderson:**

No. Unfortunately, the security system surrounding this site is so sophisticated, the site, for all intents and purposes, is invisible. All I have are my photographs...

**Anne:**

You're saying that if I walked right up to the site, I wouldn't be able to see it?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Cloaking technology is not just a science fiction concept. It's been developed for more than 10 years. It's used much more frequently than people realize. And I'm not talking about its diluted version of stealth technology; I'm talking about the ability to superimpose a reality construction over an existing reality that is desired to be hidden.

For instance, you could walk right up to the entrance of the Ancient Arrow site and see nothing that would look like an entrance or opening. To the observer it would be a flat wall of rock. And it would have all the characteristics of rock – texture, hardness and so forth, but it's actually a reality construction that is superimposed on the mind of the observer. In reality the entrance is there, but it can't be observed because the mind has been duped into the projected reality construction.

**Anne:**

Great, so there's no way to enter this site and experience this time capsule... so once again, us little humans are prevented from the experience of proof. You see, the reason why this is so hard to believe is that nothing is ever proven!

**Dr. Anderson:**

But isn't proof in the eye of the beholder? In other words, what is proof for you may not convince another or vice versa. Isn't this the way of all religions and even

science? Scientists claim to have proof of this theory or that theory, and then some years later, another scientist comes along and disproves the previously held theory. And on and on this goes.

**Anne:**

So what's your point?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Proof is not absolute. It's not even objective. And what you're looking for is an experience that is permanent and perfect in its expression of truth. And such an experience, if it indeed exists, is not owned or possessed by any secret network or elitist organization or galactic federation for that matter.

You could have this experience of absolute proof tomorrow, and the very next day, doubt would begin to creep in and in a matter of weeks or months this proof or absolute truth that you aspire to possess... it would be just a memory. And probably not even a powerful memory because so much doubt would be infused into it.

No, I can't give you or anyone absolute proof. I can only tell you what I know to be true for me and try to share it as accurately as I know how with anyone who's interested. I'm less interested in trying to relate the cosmology of the universe than I am in getting the story of the WingMakers and their time capsule into the public attention. The public should know about this story. It's a discovery of unparalleled importance and it should be shared.

**Anne:**

You do realize don't you, that you've made me the messenger? You've asked me to be the one who takes the public scrutiny and suspicions, and has to endure all of the ridicule...

**Dr. Anderson:**

I'm not asking you to do anything against your will, Anne. If you never do anything with the materials I've given you, I'd understand. All I'd ask is that you return them to me if you're not going to get them out. If I step forward as the messenger, I would lose my freedom. If you step forward, this story could catapult your career and you're only doing your job. You're not the messenger, you're the transmitter... the media.

But you must do what you think best. And I'd understand your decision whatever you decide.

**Anne:**

Okay, let's wrap it up there. I don't want you to get the wrong impression that I'm a total disbeliever. But I'm a journalist and it's my responsibility to validate and cross check stories before I publish them. And with you, I can't do this. And what you're telling me, if it's true, is the biggest story ever to be told. But I can't take this to the media – at least not the company I work for, because they would never publish it. No validation... no story.

**Dr. Anderson:**

Yes, I understand. But I've shown you some of the ACIO technologies and photos of the site and its contents, so these must be some form of validation.

**Anne:**

For me it is, but it doesn't validate all the many claims you've made tonight. For all I know, this Holographic Fractal Object technology you showed me is not so unusual or extraordinary. I'm not a good judge of these things. And even if it were, it certainly doesn't validate the existence of a galactic federation or the WingMakers for that matter.

**Dr. Anderson:**

Well... perhaps you're right... we should end this interview. I promised you several interviews before I left. Are we still on for tomorrow night?

**Anne:**

Yes.

**Dr. Anderson:**

Thanks for your interest in my story, Anne... I know it sounds fanciful and outlandish, but at least you've shown restraint in writing me off as a lunatic. And for that, you have my thanks.

Goodnight, Anne.

**Anne:**

Goodnight.

End of Session

## **SECOND INTERVIEW WITH DR. ANDERSON**

**By Anne**

What follows is a session I recorded of Dr. Anderson on December 28, 1997. He gave permission for me to record his answers to my questions. This is the transcript of that session. This was one of five times I was able to tape-record our conversations. I have preserved these transcripts precisely as they occurred. No editing was performed, and I've tried my best to include the exact words, phrasing, and grammar used by Dr. Anderson.

**Anne:**

Before we begin tonight's session, I wanted to tell you that I've listened to last night's tape and have used it to formulate some new questions. I noticed that I was all over the place with regard to my questions, and tonight I'm going to try and stay more focused. So I'm just warning you that if I get off track again, remind me to stay on course. Okay?

**Dr. Anderson:**

I'll certainly do my best... although I'm not sure what your course is.

**Anne:**

Well, I guess I'd like to stay more centered on the WingMakers and their time capsule.



**Dr. Anderson:**

That's fine with me.

**Anne:**

Okay, last night you mentioned that the WingMakers had appointed you to be their liaison. You also said that they wanted you to be their liaison because Fifteen was a pawn of the Corteum. Can you elaborate on that?

**Dr. Anderson:**

I was apparently selected to be their spokesperson in this time, and not only help translate their text, paintings, and symbol pictures, but also help in bringing these things to the public's attention. In other words, I don't think the WingMakers desired the contents of their time capsules to be held in a secret repository deep within the bowels of the Labyrinth Group.

As for Fifteen, I think the WingMakers felt he was too involved with the Corteum to objectively assess the WingMakers' time capsule and determine how to bring it to the public's attention. Bear in mind, Fifteen has a single-minded ambition to successfully deploy BST (an acronym that stands for Blank Slate Technology). To the extent the WingMakers' time capsule accelerated or facilitated this development, Fifteen would be extremely interested in the WingMakers. To the extent they did not, it would likely be his objective to seal the project and move it to the back burner of the Labyrinth Group's research agenda.

Culture and philosophy were important to Fifteen, but only to the extent of personal enhancement... they didn't have a place in the Labyrinth Group's research agenda

unless it somehow had direct bearing on developing interactive time travel.

**Anne:**

But didn't you say that in the process of decoding and translating their language that your intelligence was affected in a way that would make it more adaptive to the stresses of time travel?

**Dr. Anderson:**

I don't think it was a question of intelligence. I think it was more of a multidimensional awareness or ability to sense the higher circuits of consciousness, which I suppose, is a form of intelligence. It seemed to me that the WingMakers were particularly concerned with developing a holistic sensory perception, and that the reason they encoded their language was to develop these higher senses. Again, I asserted that the ability to interactively time travel requires a 7 sensory, multidimensional perspective. It can't be done in the 3-dimensional 5 sensory context of normal human awareness.

**Anne:**

But still... if you had these enhancements to your consciousness or intelligence and you thought they were integral to the deployment of BST, why wouldn't Fifteen listen to you?

**Dr. Anderson:**

He did listen... it's just that he didn't agree with my theory. The moment I mentioned that I had an interaction

with the WingMakers, he seemed to discount my assertions.

**Anne:**

What was it about your interactions that seemed to persuade him that you were misguided or not trustworthy?

**Dr. Anderson:**

I was the first one to read their language and understand it. Once we unlocked the optical disc, we printed out over 8,100 pages of symbol pictures like the ones contained in their art work, except much more varied, and, in some instances, much more complex. There were 23 chapters of text or symbol pictures – each consisting of about 350 pages. I decoded the first segment or chapter of this text using a version of the Sumerian translation index I had set-up for the access code to the optical disc.

However, as I began to decode and translate the text, I began to gain an understanding into the WingMakers' culture. They had philosophical discourses that were fascinating to read...

**Anne:**

I read the ones you left for me, I didn't understand most of what they said. They seemed too abstract. They did have an effect on me though... they managed to put me to sleep every time I tried to read them.

**Dr. Anderson:**

I know they're a little intense, but you have to admit, they're very interesting if for no other reason than they're representative of how humans – or at least some humans –

will believe 750 years from now. They're literally the only records we have of our future belief systems.

But what I was going to say before, is that they not only had philosophy, they also had poetry and musical notations. So I began to theorize that each chamber had a set of objects: a painting, poem, philosophical discourse, musical composition, and a technological artifact that held a specific message or theme. And the time capsule was designed to be understood by linking these themes together just as I had linked the 23 master symbols from the paintings to access the optical disc.

**Anne:**

And what do you think was the message they were trying to convey?

**Dr. Anderson:**

I don't know. We only finished decoding 2 entire chambers when I had left. And since leaving, I've managed to decode most of the third chamber as well. However, the technological artifact that was found in each of the chambers remains a mystery. In most instances, they can't even be probed by our technology to determine where or how to activate them.

**Anne:**

But you have a copy of the 8100 pages of text?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Yes.

**Anne:**

And can I see it?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Yes, but it's not something I carry around with me.

**Anne:**

I still don't understand why all the complicated encoding and decoding and Sumerian translation indexes. For God's sake, these are humans, aren't they? Why don't they simply speak English or at least some variant of it? I mean 750 years ago people pretty much spoke the same languages that we do today. Why would they change so dramatically in another 750 years?

**Dr. Anderson:**

I can only speculate that if the purpose of the time capsule were to somehow activate higher circuits of learning or intelligence, then perhaps the time capsule would be purposely encoded in order to force a decoding. And in this process of decoding, the activation is triggered. If they did it in simple English or some other language of the day, we'd miss the activation of our higher senses. That's my hypothesis.

**Anne:**

You said last night that only about 7% of the text is translated thus far, and that's after months of working on it after discovering the translation indexes. If you have such powerful computing technology, why can't the Labyrinth Group decode and translate the entire volume of text in a matter of a keystroke?

**Dr. Anderson:**

It's more complicated than that. The WingMakers' language is based on 98 different symbol pictures instead of the 26 found in our own alphabet. The computer-based translation indexes were applied to the entire text, but we found so many inconsistencies in the semantics that it became literally impossible to rely on the computer versions. Their language is much more precise than our own and therefore more sensitive to semantic accuracy.

Because of the semantic differentials it was necessary to cross-check the translation manually. Which meant that about every 5th word needed to be tested or verified for its meaning in the context of the sentence and paragraph structure it was placed into. And the only way this could be done effectively is with myself and another colleague who was helping in the manual translation.

**Anne:**

Still it seems to have taken you an awful long time to complete just 7% of their text...

**Dr. Anderson:**

But for every page of text, we invested the equivalent of about 20 hours of painstaking cross-checking to ensure the accuracy of the translation. The translation is the key to the usefulness of the time capsule, and it doesn't make any sense to rush the translation and draw wrong conclusions because of semantic or translation errors.

In our translation indexes there are many dimensions where errors can be made and at each level, if they're not caught, they compound or amplify the translation errors at the next level. For example, there are indexes written for

each letter or symbol picture, there is one for each combination of letters – which for an alphabet of 98 characters – you can imagine the variety of combinations. There are also indexes for sentence structure and one for semantic context. On top of these variables, there must be considerations given to the linearity of the language or its sequence.

Furthermore, as I stated earlier, the text consisted of more than mere prose. There was also musical notations and poetry. So we required, for each of the 23 segments of text, a translation that was capable of discerning all the nuance of the prose and also the poetry and music.

**Anne:**

Good, I'm glad you brought up the music because I don't understand that element of the time capsule.

**Dr. Anderson:**

How do you mean that?

**Anne:**

Was the music already on the optical disc and you simply captured it from the disc, or was it basically produced by the Labyrinth Group based on the musical notations?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Actually, it was a bit of a combination of the two. Their musical notations were very precise and they left digital samples of each of their instruments – even vocals. So we simply translated their digital samples to a MIDI standard and produced our own version of their music. Of all the

things that we've translated, the music was the easiest to produce, but also the one that we're not sure as to its accuracy.

**Anne:**

So were you involved in the music translations as well?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Yes. I helped in the initial discovery of their musical notation and helped with the translation indexes. I wasn't involved in its production phase, though I was very curious as to what it would sound like.

**Anne:**

Can I hear any of these compositions?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Yes, of course. When I left, the ACIO had successfully translated 10 of the 23 music compositions. I have these. And they've been converted to both CD and cassette standards. I also have complete files of the remaining 13 compositions in their raw, de-constructed form.

**Anne:**

How were they produced exactly?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Do you mean that technically or artistically?

**Anne:**

I guess both.



**Dr. Anderson:**

On the technical end we needed to step their samples down to a resolution of 384-bit in order to use them in our computer systems. When we first heard the samples of instrumentation, we were somewhat relieved to hear familiar sounds. There were some that were different, but for the most part, the digital samples that were encoded on the optical disc were the same as contemporary musical instruments heard around the world.

Once we had captured their samples and organized them into octaves, we took their compositional notations and essentially let the computer select the digital instrumentation based on their samples. Eventually this all had to be stepped down to a 24-bit commercial CD mastering system, which was then pressed on a CD and recorded onto a cassette tape.

As for the artistic production, there really wasn't much that we did. The computers did all the interpretative work and essentially performed the production for that matter. We had some of our staff perform overdubs on various versions to experiment with the compositions. The music was very popular, particularly when you listened to it at a sampling resolution of 384-bit.

**Anne:**

Didn't anyone wonder why the time capsule included a musical construction kit instead of just having a recording of the music... I mean why have us bring an artistic interpretation to their music?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Everything was wondered about in the Ancient Arrow project. Everything.

We didn't know why they did it the way they did it, but again our hypothesis was that the WingMakers didn't have a way to bring their music into our world because we lacked the technology to listen to it. So they disassembled their music into – as you put it – a construction kit, which enabled us to reconstruct the music so it could be listened to on our technology. It's the most logical reason.

There were several of us who were able to experience chambers one and two as a completely integrated form of expression and it was a very powerful experience... to say the least. When you hear the music in 384-bit resolution with the original paintings, standing inside the actual chamber in which they were placed, it is a very moving and spiritual experience. Unlike any I've ever had.

**Anne:**

In what way?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Just that the sense of being pulled out of your body and into the portal of the painting is irresistible. There is a very strong sense of movement into and beyond these paintings, and the music and paintings are only two of the art forms, the third, the poetry is also part of the experience.

**Anne:**

So tell me about the poetry.

**Dr. Anderson:**

The poems are expressive of a wide range of subjects. To most of us at the ACIO, they could have been written by any contemporary poet. There was really nothing that caused them to stand out as representing a culture 750 years in our future. Many of the same themes about spirituality, love, relationships, and death were evident in their poems as well. Most of the poetry has been translated because there isn't much text involved... at least compared to their philosophical and scientific papers. There're actually two poems for each chamber painting, so there's a total of 46 poems.

**Anne:**

That's interesting. Everything else – the paintings, music, artifacts, philosophy – is placed one-per-chamber. Why do you suppose they've placed two poems in each chamber instead of one?

**Dr. Anderson:**

In my opinion it was to provide a broader perspective into the particular theme represented by a specific chamber. The poetry appears to be designed in such a way to provide both a personal and universal perspective in each of the chambers... but again, it's just a working hypothesis at this time.

**Anne:**

I assume from the examples you left me, that the poetry is also a bit less abstract when compared to their philosophy and paintings. Have you considered how the poetry is related to the paintings?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Yes. And I believe the poetry and the paintings have the strongest connection of all the objects in each of the chambers. I think the paintings illustrate – in some subtle way – the themes represented in the poetry. In some instances, when the painting represents an assemblage of abstract objects, the poetry is also more abstract. When the painting is more illustrative, the poetry seems more like prose.

**Anne:**

Are you saying then that the poetry carries the central meaning of each chamber?

**Dr. Anderson:**

I'm not sure, but it does seem that the poetry is somehow implied symbolically in the chamber painting that it's associated with. The problem is that the poetry is so highly interpretive that it's impossible to know precisely what its theme is intended to be. Also, and I should have mentioned this before, but the grammar and syntax of their language is very different from ours in that they have no end to their language punctuated with periods.

In other words, if we made a literal translation, there would be no sentence structure... more like a logic syntactical approach... which simply means an abstracted language flow which would be, for most people, very difficult to understand. When I was doing the translations of the poetry, I placed it in a sentence structure that fragmented its meaning so that it could be better understood. Perhaps in the process I unintentionally changed the meaning, but it was either that or the poetry would be too abstracted to understand.

**Anne:**

Is there a connection between the poetry and the philosophy of each chamber?

**Dr. Anderson:**

My colleague and I felt that all of the objects within a specific chamber were connected... probably in ways we couldn't fathom. We were constantly worried that our translation indexes were somehow inaccurate, and that this was limiting our ability to see the linkages between the various objects. And of course the most puzzling connection was the technology artifacts because we had no way to probe or reach any conclusions about their purpose or function.

**Anne:**

Let's talk a little bit about the artifacts found in each chamber. The only one that I've really heard about was the one found in the 23rd chamber, the optical disc. I know you've shown me some photos of the others, but could you describe them better with respect to how you analyzed them and what, if any, ideas you have as to their connection to the overall time capsule?

**Dr. Anderson:**

The optical disc is the only artifact of the 23 we found, that the AICO had successfully accessed, at least that I'm aware of. The other artifacts were all taken to the Labyrinth Group's research laboratory in Virginia immediately after they were discovered. These were never acknowledged to anyone below a 12x clearance. There were rumors within the broader ACIO that there were

technologies within the time capsule, but these never gained any serious consideration, and certainly not by the NSA.

The technology artifacts were of the greatest curiosity to Fifteen because they represented the possible solutions to BST. And, as I mentioned earlier, Fifteen and most of the Labyrinths Group for that matter, felt that the WingMakers may represent the future of the Labyrinth Group trying to pass its interactive time travel technology to us working in the present. Hence, Fifteen logically considered these particular artifacts could represent a piece of the puzzle that had alluded him thus far.

**Anne:**

But what I've seen don't look very advanced or based in high technology. They could pass for simple crystals or rocks... or something organic. Why was the Labyrinth Group so convinced they held the keys to time travel?

**Dr. Anderson:**

The crystalline structures that were found, in most cases, did look quite ordinary in the sense that when they were examined by the eye, they appeared to be crystals, but when you looked at them through various molecular and atomic analyses, it was obvious that they were manmade objects. In other words, they were synthetic crystalline structures, and we held the hypothesis that they were encoded with information much like the optical disc or the paintings. We also held the hypothesis that they were potentially connected to the optical disc since it was the last of the artifacts and seemed the equivalent of a keystone or master key.

**Anne:**

Did any of the text translated from the optical disc refer to the other artifacts?

**Dr. Anderson:**

No, to our chagrin, there were no references... at least so far.

**Anne:**

You never really answered my question about whether you felt there was a connection between the technology artifacts and the specific cultural artifacts related to each chamber.

**Dr. Anderson:**

Sorry, I guess it's my turn to get side-tracked tonight. Anyway, yes, there were connections... we were certain of this, but at the same time, because we couldn't get inside the artifacts and probe them, we couldn't prove our theory. Consequently, we placed all of our time and energy on the optical disc because it seemed to be the most important of the artifacts as well as the one we had the best chance of accessing through our technology.

**Anne:**

Yet, when you say that, didn't you also tell me earlier that it took over a year to figure out how to access the optical disc?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Yes, that's true. But you must bear in mind that the technology artifacts were extremely alien to our technologies. Other than the optical disc, the other technologies were a combination of synthetic materials based on organic structures, and in some instances actually possessed human DNA within their structures. These were...

**Anne:**

You're saying that the technologies were in part human?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Yes... in a way. But what I was going to say, is that these artifacts seemed to have molecular-based computer systems that activated by a specific human touch. And we weren't certain whether it was literally a specific human, or a specific type of human, or perhaps any human in a specific state of emotion or mind. We had 115 possible experiments developed for testing and all failed. So eventually, we gave up on accessing the organically based artifacts and concentrated our energies and technologies on accessing the optical disc.

**Anne:**

But this is real odd... why would human DNA be inside a technology... and this talk about synthetic crystals... it leaves me cold.

**Dr. Anderson:**

We had some similar misgivings until we were able to translate some of the text within the optical disc. The philosophical papers from chambers one and two



convinced us that the WingMakers could indeed be authentic and we had no other reason to disbelieve their story. That's not to say that we suspended all of our disbelief or caution, but the philosophy was a breakthrough to our understanding of their perceived mission with contemporary humankind.

**Anne:**

I don't know... I read the first two philosophy papers you left for me, and I could believe that they're from an alien race. I could also believe that they're from a deceptive race that uses philosophy and all this cultural stuff to lull us into believing they're benevolent when in fact they're not at all. I mean isn't that part of the prophecy you spoke about last night?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Well, I see you remain the ever-skeptical journalist. I'm actually glad to see that reaction.

Anne, all I can tell you is that when you take into account all of the cultural artifacts found within the Ancient Arrow site, and you immerse yourself in their content and philosophy, it's hard to believe they originate from evil intent.

**Anne:**

Unless that's exactly what they wanted you to believe.

**Dr. Anderson:**

Perhaps. It's hard to debate such a thing. I think at some point it's an individual decision. The Labyrinth Group – and I'm including the Corteum when I say that – was in

agreement that it was an authentic disclosure and felt confident that we were not dealing with deception. But we never close the door to that possibility. Our security and operations directors put contingency plans in place in the event evidence was accumulated that increased the probability of fraud or deception.

**Anne:**

One of things that seemed odd to me, having looked at the photographs of the chamber paintings, was how similar they all were. They were clearly done by the same artist... or I suppose a group of artists. But when I think of a time capsule, I would think you would include a variety of art from a diverse assortment of artists that represent a variety of perspectives and so forth. And that isn't the case here. Why do you suppose?

**Dr. Anderson:**

I don't think their motive was to inform us about their artists or the diversity of their artistic culture. I think they intend that the art function initially as a form of communication, and subsequently as a form of time travel or moving out of the body consciousness. The continuity of the 23 paintings seen as a whole seem to be inviting the consciousness of the observer to quite literally step into the world of the WingMakers. As though they were portals, and I've experienced this myself.

The paintings are incredibly brilliant in their colors. You really can't imagine how much impact they have when you see them in person, particularly after their cleaning and restoration was completed. But even when they were first discovered without any touch-up, it was eerie how

luminous they were and vibrant in their colors after 1,150 years. There were many times when those of us who were involved in restoration and cataloging of the artifacts, would sit in the chambers and stare at these paintings. On several occasions I did this for hours just letting my eyes wander through the painting, and imagining the mind of the artist and what they were trying to communicate. It was a very, very powerful experience... unlike anything I had every experienced before.

**Anne:**

I think they'd scare me a little bit.

**Dr. Anderson:**

I'm only laughing because I had such an experience. One night after a long day of working in the artifact chambers, I was left as the last one inside the site. I had been so absorbed in what I was doing I scarcely remembered being told to activate the security system on my way out. About a half-hour went by, and I finally realized I was alone inside the time capsule... the silence was incredible. Any rate, I was walking down the corridor that connected all of the 23 chambers, and passed each chamber and I began to feel a presence that was overwhelming. Every time I would come upon one of the chambers, I expected something from the painting to jump out at me. They literally seemed alive.

Our lighting was a very high-quality portable halogen system and every chamber was outfitted precisely the same. When I got to the bottom of the corridor – what we called the spiral staircase – and looked into chamber two, I clearly saw motion and nearly jumped out of my skin. Not

necessarily out of fear, but out of excitement I suppose, though there was fear as well. But this motion was simply a blurred image of something stepping out of the painting and then disappearing into thin air... I couldn't really...

**Anne:**

What was it? Was it human?

**Dr. Anderson:**

I couldn't see it clearly enough to tell you what it was, but now that I've had some interactions with the WingMakers I know it was them. They were somehow using these paintings to appear in our time. It was shortly after that experience that I began to theorize that the paintings were actually portals that could enable time travel or something like it.

**Anne:**

This may seem to be an odd, off-the-wall question, but how do you know this wasn't all a hoax? That someone or some group created this whole thing to look like an alien or future time capsule just for the fun of playing with your minds?

**Dr. Anderson:**

The one thing we know for certain is that this is not a hoax. The Ancient Arrow site consists of an enormous rock structure that has literally been hollowed out in the form of a spiral staircase that detours every 30 meters into a separate chamber – 23 to be exact. The entire structure would have taken an incredible technology to build. We have accurate dating of when the chamber paintings were

created, and they were conclusively produced in the 9th century, and we're certain that this technology didn't exist then.

**Anne:**

I'm not trying to argue with you... but if these artifacts are really from a time 750 years in our future, it just seems so odd that they'd be buried inside a huge rock in the middle of nowhere... in New Mexico of all places. And it also seems odd that they'd go to all this work, but make it so damn hard to understand what the hell they were trying to say. Do you see what I mean?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Yes, I understand, and I don't take your questions as argumentative. But the point I'm making is that this time capsule, or whatever you choose to call it, is indeed a set of real objects. And these objects don't even correspond to the same time frame. For example, while the paintings were created about 1,150 years ago, the artifacts do not even respond to our carbon dating or biochemical analysis. To complicate matters, the pictographs that started to mysteriously appear in and around the Ancient Arrow site were determined to have been created in the past 50 years, and could very well have been done in the year, or month, the site was discovered.

These real objects are admittedly an enigma, but they are not a hoax to my eyes. The real question is whether the WingMakers' identity is as they represent it – a future aspect of humanity or an alien race that visited earth around AD 850.

**Anne:**

Okay, let's say it's not a hoax. Then tell me why are you so convinced it's a time capsule. It seems to me, that it might be more of a communication device... or perhaps an educational tool of some kind. Why a time capsule?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Partly because it seemed that its creators wanted to share their culture with us. When we first began our analysis of the Ancient Arrow site, we felt that everything within the chambers was alien. We were initially convinced that this was an ET contact site, and we even considered the possibility that they had left these items behind to recover at a later date...

**Anne:**

Sort of like an ET storage locker?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Yes. However, some of the paintings depicted humans, and the landscapes were of earth – specifically that region of the planet in northern New Mexico. So to us, it seemed less likely it was from an alien race. We also saw evidence that there were interactions with the precursor to the Navajo and perhaps Hopi Indian tribes, known today as the Anasazi Indians. And again, this was deduced from the paintings... which initially were the only real records that we could interpret from.

As I recall we had a total of 47 possible scenarios that had been developed. Our most probable scenario – ranked by our computer systems – was that the Ancient Arrow

site represented an ET race that had left behind the equivalent of a museum that recorded its interactions with the Anasazi Indians. Our second most probable scenario was that the site represented a time capsule left behind by the future version of the Labyrinth Group.

**Anne:**

That still seems odd to me... why did you think it was a future version of the Labyrinth Group?

**Dr. Anderson:**

The Labyrinth Group uses as its identification symbol three concentric circles surrounding a sphere. There were ample depictions of this symbol within their paintings. Also, it seemed so peculiar to us that we had discovered this site in the manner that we did... it literally felt as though we were guided to this site. And remember, Fifteen was very confident in the Labyrinth Group's prospects at developing BST, and he knew that the future version of the Labyrinth Group would somehow make contact. It was just a matter of when and how.

**Anne:**

I know I must sound like the biggest doubter you've ever encountered before, but it still doesn't seem like a time capsule to me.

**Dr. Anderson:**

I'm not saying you're wrong. I'm only telling you that that's how it's officially classified within the Labyrinth Group. It could very well have multiple meanings and

purposes. I for one, believe it's more than a time capsule, though I think it has that element to it.

**Anne:**

So what do you think its primary purpose is?

**Dr. Anderson:**

If you take the WingMakers on face value, in other words, what do they say it is, it's a time capsule that will help facilitate the development of a global culture. They claim that somehow, when all seven of the time capsules are discovered, that they'll serve as a communication bridge between humans of today and their future selves.

**Anne:**

I read the memo that Dr. Sauthers wrote and I remember those statements too, but a global culture seems so unlikely... so impossible. And furthermore, how could these objects [from the Ancient Arrow site] be used to build a global culture? It seems a little naïve to me.

**Dr. Anderson:**

All I can tell you is that it's related to the Internet and a new communication technology that the WingMakers referred to as OLIN or the One Language Intelligent Network. If you read the glossary section that I left behind, you'll see it referenced there. The WingMakers seem to feel confident that the OLIN technology will help create the global culture through the Internet. This incidentally is consistent with prophecies that the Labyrinth Group was privy to dating as far back as 1,500 years ago. Of course, the enabling technology wasn't called OLIN, but the notion



of a global culture and unified governance has been predicted for many centuries.

**Anne:**

This is what George Bush used to call the New World order isn't it?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Yes, but there have been four other presidents who've acknowledged this concept.

**Anne:**

What would make the world's people decide to unify under one governing body, or for that matter, create a global culture... whatever that means? I just can't envision it happening... not in my lifetime.

**Dr. Anderson:**

According to the WingMakers it will happen through the digital economy and then through the Internet's OLIN technology platform. And through this global network, entertainment and educational content will be globalized. This is the basis of a global culture with unified commerce, content, and communities. Once these pieces of the infrastructure are in place, then the need to govern this infrastructure will loom as the preeminent issue of the day. And the United Nations is the logical ruling body for such an endeavor. As long as the World's people allow the digitization of the economy and embrace the OLIN technology platform, a global government and culture is virtually assured to emerge.

**Anne:**

And as you said last night, this is supposed to occur in 2018?

**Dr. Anderson:**

According to prophecy, that's when the United Nations will hold initial elections for a unified world government. And it won't be an all powerful, centralized authority, but rather a global public policy decision and enforcement organization for issues that effect the world at large. Issues like pollution, global warming, border disputes, space travel, terrorism, trade, commerce, OLIN technology upgrades, and general technology transfer programs.

**Anne:**

So what will happen to National sovereignty in this new role of the United Nations?

**Dr. Anderson:**

I'm willing to answer your question in the form of a speculative response, but I'm also aware that you had asked me at the outset of this interview to remind you if you got off course. What would you like...

**Anne:**

No, you're absolutely right. Sorry. Let's go back to the artifacts... what was the condition of the site when you first entered... or better still, why don't you just describe your first encounter going inside the site.

**Dr. Anderson:**

I was one of five from the ACIO who made the trip to New Mexico to explore the site after it was initially

determined to have potential ET implications. None of us at the time knew anything that would have led us to conclude that the Ancient Arrow site would become such an important discovery.

The only real clue we had was an artifact that had been recovered near, what was determined much later, as the entrance of the interior chamber of the time capsule. It was this artifact that brought the project under the control of the ACIO because the artifact was considered by the NSA to have potential ET origins.

**Anne:**

What specifically led the NSA to conclude the artifact was alien?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Like all the other artifacts it showed no response to carbon dating analysis and it had peculiar markings or symbols that seemed other-worldly. It was a pure grade titanium-beryllium composite, which, as you may know, is extremely rare. Also, and perhaps more importantly, there was no obvious way to activate the artifact or access its interior controls. Its interior was impervious to various spectrum analyses – even simple x-rays were unable to penetrate the object.

Any rate, this artifact was essentially handed over to the ACIO, which deemed it to be of ET origins, and then proceeded to investigate the region in which it was found. We did this initially with no results, but on a subsequent visit we were able to use the artifact because one of our scientists – quite by accident – had figured out how to

activate the artifact. We wanted to see what effect if any it would have if activated in the area it had been found.

**Anne:**

Is this the artifact you showed me pictures of?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Yes.

**Anne:**

Why did you think it was important to activate it where it was found?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Because it was thought to be a form of a compass or homing beacon. We weren't sure, but we couldn't determine any functional purpose in the laboratory, so it seemed like a logical experiment to see how the device would function in the area in which it was discovered.

This was the first time I was invited to go to the site. So any rate, back to my story, this exploration team from the ACIO figured out how to use this device to locate the entrance to the interior of the canyon wall in which the time capsule was hidden. The device, when activated, seemed to pass thought waves or mental pictures of where it wanted the person to go. The leader of our team was the one holding the device when it was first activated outside the site, and he immediately began to see pictures that led him into a cave-like structure tucked 20-30 meters inside one of the clefts of the canyon wall.

**Anne:**

It seems a bit strange that you found the interior of the site using this artifact you mentioned earlier... I mean doesn't it seem a little too convenient to find this thing right outside the entrance and then it guides you inside? Wasn't there an entrance already or did you have to blast your way inside?

**Dr. Anderson:**

The way into the interior was cleverly hidden behind a natural made cavern, which in its own right was well hidden by natural underbrush. This cavern was about 25 meters deep and led inside the canyon wall. We presumed it was an Indian dwelling of some kind that had long been abandoned. Towards the end of this cavern there was a small chamber that jutted off to the side, and at the back of this chamber there was a large, flat rock on the floor... maybe two and half meters across and about two decimeters thick. The device or artifact that had been found earlier was emitting mental pictures to our team leader who was convinced it had led him to this flat rock. We tried to move the rock, but it was clearly too heavy for the five of us to even budge.

It was actually the following day that we returned to the site with pick axes and sledge hammers, and began the tedious task of breaking the rock...

**Anne:**

So you were convinced there was something underneath the rock?

**Dr. Anderson:**

We thought there had to be a reason that the device had sent such a clear image to our leader of this flat rock in the back of this natural cavern. It seemed logical that the device – if it were a homing device of some kind – might be leading us to something it was designed to help us find.

After about two hours of smashing the rock, we finally cracked it into small enough pieces that we were able to determine a tunnel was indeed underneath it. The tunnel was in the form of a "J" and was about one meter in diameter. We took turns and slid down the tunnel and stood at the entrance of the spiral staircase.

**Anne:**

So all five of you were inside this... this spiral staircase looking around with flashlights, what was running through your mind at the time?

**Dr. Anderson:**

We were all very excited and somewhat apprehensive as well. We thought we might find an ET site, and were half-aware that it could be an active site... which kept us all on guard. The device, or artifact began to emit a sound frequency that continued to rise in pitch as we walked up the tunnel and as we got to the first chamber it went entirely dead... as if its purpose had been served and simply shut down.

**Anne:**

And this whole thing was carved out of rock?

**Dr. Anderson:**

It was completely manmade... or alien... and we knew it the instant we got out of the transition tunnel. It was like being born into a completely new world. It was absolutely silent; the air was cool, but not uncomfortably cold. There were no signs of life, and it seemed like everything took on a new purpose... an intelligent purpose that we couldn't wait to unravel.

What was so remarkable was the incredible sense of walking into a surreal world – a world that was created by something completely alien. We assumed it was of ET construction from the moment we stepped out of the "J" tunnel.

**Anne:**

But how did you immediately know it was an artificial construction, and not a natural set of chambers or caves?

**Dr. Anderson:**

At the beginning of the spiral staircase there were ornate petroglyphs carved in the stone with a precision never before seen by our eyes. Also, the entire tunnel system was clearly too smooth – almost polished – to be of natural construction. There was a sense of architecture... a sense that someone designed it with extreme care and purpose.

Amazingly there was nothing on the floor. Not even a pebble or a grain of sand. Every surface was completely clean, smooth, and polished. There was dust, but only dust. And something like a polymer coating had been applied to every square centimeter of the structure including the ceilings.

When we arrived at the first chamber, which is only about 30 meters from the entrance, I can clearly recall a sense of awe or something approaching a religious experience I suppose. No one spoke for a long time after our lights hit the first chamber painting. Everyone's flashlight converged on the painting and we all just stared for about 40 seconds in the incredible silence of this tomblike structure. I was the first to find my voice, and all I could muster was 'This is definitely not Navaho or any other Indian tribe for that matter.

**Anne:**

Did you find all the chambers that same day?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Yes. We went from chamber to chamber each time feeling like we had stumbled into an alien natural history museum. You have to understand that our lighting was not very good because we hadn't expected to need anything more than basic flashlights. I vividly remember seeing each of the chamber paintings for the first time and just staring at them... mesmerized by the incredible anachronism of the place. I'd never been in such a surreal environment... it was both eerie and completely enchanting at the same time.

**Anne:**

So how large were the chambers and the paintings themselves?

**Dr. Anderson:**



The chambers themselves were relatively small... about four meters in diameter with fairly high ceilings, in some instances as high as six meters.

**Anne:**

So judging from the photographs I've seen of the chamber paintings, the paintings themselves must be fairly large?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Yes, they're large and always face the entrance of the chamber. If you stand just outside the entrance of a particular chamber, you can't see the whole painting; it's too large. You have to walk into the chamber in order to see the whole composition.

**Anne:**

What, in the opinions of the Labyrinth Group, are the artistic merits of these paintings?

**Dr. Anderson:**

No one within the Labyrinth Group claims to be an art critic I can assure you. I think it's fair to say that of those who saw the chamber paintings in their original environment – the chambers themselves – they found the artistic merits to be very compelling, even captivating. I think those who saw them only represented in photographs thought they were less art and more of a cog in some masterfully designed wheel like an illustration in a children's book.

**Anne:**

Not to change the subject, but I keep wondering how you came to choose me... I mean... I know you said it was completely random, but why did you select an average journalist to share this story? Why not a scientist or someone who could at least ask you more sophisticated questions? I have to confess that I feel completely inadequate to interview you, mostly because I don't even know what questions I should be asking you...

**Dr. Anderson:**

You're doing a fine job... absolutely fine. You shouldn't worry about your questions. They're insightful. And most people, who will read this information, will be more interested in the things you've inquired about than the physics or science involved anyway.

**Anne:**

Perhaps, but I have this nagging feeling that if I could ask you the scientific questions then you could more easily prove your story or credibility. I think I'm handicapping you in some way.

**Dr. Anderson:**

What is it exactly that you feel you're not asking me?

**Anne:**

I guess it's mostly things related to time travel and BST. Last night you talked about some things that when I re-read them earlier today, I felt like I should have asked more in-depth questions...

**Dr. Anderson:**

Like...

**Anne:**

That's the problem, I don't know.

**Dr. Anderson:**

Anne, the reason I selected you was simple. I needed to find someone who knew how to access the mainstream media, and yet be relatively obscure. Had I chosen a science editor from a major newspaper, I may have ended up with more scientific questions and less about the cultural, artistic, and social implications of the Ancient Arrow project. Of my random selections, I knew that you had no established image to protect, that you knew how to access the media, and could ask sound questions that wouldn't betray your identity. That's why we're talking right now... and the fact that you didn't think I was crazy.

**Anne:**

I never asked you this before, but I'm just curious, was I the first journalist you talked with, or did someone turn you down before you found me?

**Dr. Anderson:**

No, you were the first and only person outside of the Labyrinth Group whom I've talked with about this story.

**Anne:**

I'd like to change the topic slightly and ask you about Fifteen's personality... is that okay?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Yes, that's fine.

**Anne:**

What's he like as a leader?

**Dr. Anderson:**

He's extremely focused, and demands everyone he works with to be similarly focused. He's a workaholic, sleeps about four hours a night and works the rest of his time on some aspect of BST. If there's research or development of new technologies that don't have a specific and strategic impact on BST, he's not involved in it. Won't even ask questions about projects of that nature, and generally within the ACIO, there's always three or four projects that are unrelated to BST. Within the Labyrinth Group, every project is related to BST.

**Anne:**

What's he look like?

**Dr. Anderson:**

He's about average height and has fairly long gray hair down to his shoulders which he usually wears in a ponytail. He's always reminded me of Pablo Picasso with long hair... he has those same penetrating eyes. He's originally from Spain, so it's no coincidence that he looks like Picasso. His most notable feature is his eyes, they're mischievous like you'd expect from a child who's done something wrong on the surface, but underneath, they've created something wonderful, it's just that nobody understands the wonderful part yet. That's what you see going on behind his eyes.

**Anne:**

I may have already asked you this, but how old is he?

**Dr. Anderson:**

He's about 60 years old I think – or at least he looks about that old. I've never heard anyone say his age. I know when he was a student, he was supposed to look old for his age. I think he started getting gray hair when he was in his early twenties, and that's probably why he was often mistaken for a professor rather than a student.

**Anne:**

You said earlier that he was kicked out of school. Why?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Remember, he was, even at an age when most kids are concerned about dating and parties, working on BST... or at least early versions of time travel. He's one of those visionaries that enter the physical world and knew at a very early age what he came to do. Fifteen was born to time travel. Period... end of story. That's all he's ever cared about.

In the fifties, researching BST was considered a waste of time, no pun intended. It was simply too theoretical and disconnected from anything practical. I think Fifteen also rubbed his professors the wrong way because he was so bright as a student that he intimidated most of them. He's also very stubborn, and when the professors told him to change his research to something more practical, Fifteen apparently told them they were small-minded... or

something to that effect. Later that semester he was forcibly expelled as the story was told to me.

However, Bell Labs hired him for a short stint because his research on quantum objects and how they could be influenced by consciousness was of interest to them.

**Anne:**

Forgive me, but what exactly are quantum objects?

**Dr. Anderson:**

They're elementals like electrons or neutrons. Quantum objects are fundamental building blocks of matter, and they can appear both as a wave and a particle.

**Anne:**

Okay, so Fifteen was trying to prove that quantum objects are influenced by consciousness. Why was that so dangerous to a research university?

**Dr. Anderson:**

That in itself wasn't so radical, but it was only a small part of his total research into how to construct BST using the new physics that was being introduced rapidly in the community of quantum physics. Fifteen has always maintained that Einstein's general theory of relativity was flawed. Which is not a popular position to take. In somewhat the same way that Newton's theory of the mechanistic universe became too constricted and unable to explain so much of the phenomenon of what we call today, complexity or chaos theory, Fifteen felt that Einstein's theories underestimated the influence that consciousness had on quantum objects.

In the fifties and sixties, this was tantamount to heresy, particularly because it was impossible to prove by mathematical modeling or formula. So Fifteen just continued to develop his theories in secret and began to become noticed by the ACIO when he became involved in a project having to do with heuristic learning systems based on a technology that the ACIO had re-engineered from the Greys.

The project leader from the ACIO recognized his intellect and rouge creativity and began to develop a relationship with the young man. Several months later, Fifteen was recruited to join the ACIO and essentially left his identity behind and quickly rose to the position of director of research. He was later introduced to the Corteum intelligence accelerator technology, and the rest is history as they say.

**Anne:**

How exactly does this Corteum technology accelerate or expand the intelligence?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Few people realize that their conscious mind only processes about 15 bits of information per second of linear time. However, in vertical time, the unconscious mind is processing approximately 70-80 million bits of information. Thus, in normal consciousness, humans are aware of only an infinitesimal amount of the information that is constantly being fed to them at the unconscious level. The Corteum technology was designed to reduce the filtering aspects of the conscious mind and enable the

higher frequency information packets to be fed to the conscious mind.

In parallel with this effort, the brain circuitry – if you will – is re-wired to handle the higher voltage of the information that is being fed to the consciousness, allowing capabilities like photographic memory and abstract thought to co-exist. These capabilities become the matrix filter that draws from the unconscious repositories the most relevant information at any particular time based on the problem or task at hand.

**Anne:**

If I were a behavioral scientist, I'd be able to ask you about a thousand questions right now. But I'm lost in what you say... I mean, how many bits of information can you process right now?

**Dr. Anderson:**

It's not really a simple question of the quantity of information processing, but rather the relevance of the information in linear time based on the intention of the individual. When one goes through the process of the Corteum technology, their ability to tune into information packets that are relevant to a situation or problem is vastly improved. In most people, when a given situation confronts them they access their conscious mind and pull out the solution that has served them in the past. Thus, people fall into ruts and patterned behavior which closes down their access to the unconscious information packets that are based on real-time situation analysis and have extremely high relevancy.



This technology accelerates evolutionary thought processes and enables the circulation of information between the conscious and unconscious aspects of the mind to flow in the pattern of an ascending spiral rather than the pattern of a repetitious circle. And it's because of this quality of the Corteum technology that unleashes the innate intelligence of the individual. So you see, the Corteum technology doesn't increase raw intelligence, it simply facilitates the natural intelligence of the individual.

**Anne:**

This is very cool. I wish I could undergo this regimen of the Corteum intelligence accelerator so I could really ask you some zinger questions! And with that, let's take a short break.

10-minute break...

**Dr. Anderson:**

Since you have the tape recorder on now, let me repeat myself. The Corteum technology was the single most influential element in helping Fifteen become the Executive Director of both the ACIO and the Labyrinth Group. Granted, he had a brilliant mind before he underwent the Corteum intelligence enhancement process, but for some reason, the technology seemed to enhance his intelligence more than anyone else... by a significant degree.

**Anne:**

Did anyone ever suspect that the Corteum and Fifteen were somehow a separate force from the Labyrinth Group.

I mean, did anyone consider the possibility that they had a separate agenda... maybe BST wasn't their ultimate goal?

**Dr. Anderson:**

No. There was, and I presume still is, absolute faith in both Fifteen and the Corteum. You have to understand that the Corteum are a benevolent race. We never saw any evidence that they had anything but good intentions to assist us, and, to the extent possible, we tried to assist them in return. It was a courteous and completely reciprocal partnership.

**Anne:**

You said last night that the Corteum were part of the Labyrinth Group, but only a couple hundred or so were actual members. How did they become part of the Labyrinth Group?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Actually, I don't know for certain. I can only tell you what I was told when I asked the same question of one of the directors who sponsored me for entry into the Labyrinth Group. He told me that Fifteen had been selected by the Corteum to be their liaison with the ACIO. They singled him out, as the one through which they would initiate their technology transfer program with humans.

Fifteen agreed to subject himself to the intelligence enhancement technology the Corteum offered. It was from this experience that Fifteen's vision of how BST could be developed was crystallized. He essentially created the framework and design blueprint.

One of the things that the Corteum have in abundance is logical intelligence. They are very adept in terms of scientific inquiry and logical reasoning. By their own admission, where they lack ability is in the creative visionary aspect of discovery. This is precisely where Fifteen excels...

**Anne:**

But you're talking about a race that is superior to us in their technologies, how can they lack creative insights?

**Dr. Anderson:**

These things are all relevant. Compared to virtually all other humans, the Corteum are creative and visionary. But there are formative principles of physics that reside in a dimensional matrix that are completely foreign to all beings except the most penetrating intellects. And Fifteen has such an intellect. The Corteum are hoping that Fifteen, and more generally, the Labyrinth Group, can develop BST because the Corteum have their own application for this technology.

**Anne:**

But last night you said there are other races within our galaxy that already have time travel capabilities, why don't the Corteum simply go to these races and make a deal with them?

**Dr. Anderson:**

As I said before, a species that has, of their own initiative, developed time travel will be unwilling to share it with another race. It is truly the most guarded of all

technologies. And one doesn't simply ask to borrow the technology when they need it. Even when the need seems compelling and true. It's so easy to become dependent on the technology itself. Furthermore, as I tried to explain last evening, there's a considerable difference between time travel and BST. I'm not aware of any species that possesses the form of BST that the Labyrinth Group is attempting to develop.

It's like this, Anne, BST requires a suite of interdependent, but discrete technologies that require a developer to apply new theorems, new laws of physics, that have never been discovered before. And then to build this suite of technologies based fundamentally on a new matrix of how the world works... it's a daunting task. Everything previously held to be true needs to be destroyed, needs to be re-invented, re-formulated, and then integrated into this new matrix.

This is the very nature of BST, you start with a blank slate and re-invent, re-formulate, and recreate the consciousness of matter.

**Anne:**

Slow down... You just lost me. The consciousness of matter?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Remember what I said earlier about quantum objects and how they're influenced by consciousness?

**Anne:**

Yes.

**Dr. Anderson:**

Quantum objects become increasingly granular or refined until they become pure light energy and cease to have mass. They are not of physical reality, but rather of a pure-state energy. This energy is further segmented into octaves of vibration. In other words, this light energy vibrates, and just like music, there are fundamentals and harmonics. The harmonics resonate with the fundamental energy vibration and the whole energy packet sings like a choir... except its voice is light.

This singing, if you will, is the equivalent of a consciousness that pervades all matter... every physical object in the entire universe. Fifteen has successfully proven this all-pervasive consciousness or what he calls the Light-Encoded Reality Matrix or LERM, for those of us who like shorthand. Any way, LERM is just one of the new theorems that were required in order to devise a way to prove that BST was indeed a possibility, and not just a fanciful vision inside the mind of Fifteen.

**Anne:**

This all-pervasive consciousness you mentioned, are you really talking about spirit or God?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Exactly.

**Anne:**

Now you've really crossed over the line. You're going to tell me that Fifteen discovered God. That he has proof of God?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Yes, in a way, but... but God isn't what we call it. It's LERM. And Fifteen was quite emphatic that we never refer to LERM as God or even God-like. He preferred to think of LERM as the shadow of God. The light that casts the shadow, and the object of the shadow itself, he believes is impossible to prove through science or any other objective form of inquiry.

**Anne:**

Okay... okay. But listen to me for a minute. If LERM is the shadow of God, as you put it, then it proves the existence of God, right?

**Dr. Anderson:**

To those of us within the Labyrinth Group who understand the work of Fifteen, the answer is yes.

**Anne:**

So isn't this even more important than the Ancient Arrow project? I mean, if someone had proof of God, isn't it their moral responsibility to share this information with the public?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Perhaps, but the only way this could be shared with the public is to disclose who the Labyrinth Group is, and that isn't something that Fifteen even likes to contemplate doing. He's afraid of the ridicule and misunderstanding that would result, and firmly believes that no one would believe him anyway because there are so many hidden technologies that led him to his findings, and he has no

interest in disclosing these technologies to academia, government institutions, or the media. He'd become the next messiah... or devil, depending on your perspective.

**Anne:**

So he's trapped in his own secrecy...

**Dr. Anderson:**

In a way, but he's not feeling trapped. He's simply so far removed from the social fabric and scientific communities of academia that he has, for practical purposes, burned his bridges and has no intention of ever crossing the chasm that separates himself from all that he's left behind.

**Anne:**

He must be incredibly lonely.

**Dr. Anderson:**

I don't think so. He seems extremely energized and basically happy. He's doing exactly what he wants to do, I can't say I've ever seen him depressed... maybe disappointed, but never depressed.

**Anne:**

I still don't see the connection between LERM and BST...

**Dr. Anderson:**

You see, if matter ultimately dissolves into octaves of light, and light dissolves into octaves of consciousness, and consciousness dissolves into octaves of reality, then matter, light, consciousness, and reality are all

interdependent like an ecosystem. And like an ecosystem, if you change one element you effect the whole. So isolating any of the elements contained within LERM, and changing it, it can change reality. And this is a fundamental construct of BST. Does that answer your question?

**Anne:**

I'm not sure... I don't know, maybe all of this doesn't matter. Again, I'm feeling out of my territory. I find this interesting, but at the same time, it's frustrating. I even find myself feeling pissed off that all of this stuff is going on in my world and I don't know about it... well, I mean I didn't know about it until just now. It seems like an injustice to me. It's the old haves and have-nots story all over again. Can you appreciate how someone would feel... hearing all of this for the first time, and feeling so left out?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Yes, I understand.

**Anne:**

To you, you can take all of this for granted. Afterall, you're in the know. But the rest of us, we muddle through our little lives thinking the world is this and that, when really we're just bumping into each other in the dark. We're essentially clueless, aren't we?

**Dr. Anderson:**

I don't know... maybe. Maybe you're right, it doesn't matter. I simply know what I know and I believe what I believe. Any more than that, it's as mysterious to me as it



is to you. It would be a great mistake to think that the Labyrinth Group or any of its members, including Fifteen and the Corteum, understand it all. They don't. But they work hard to get the answers, Anne. I mean really hard. They've devoted their entire lives to this mission of BST. They didn't simply fall into the knowledge by accident. They tried and failed at thousands of different experiments until they found the existence of LERM, and they'll probably fail another thousand times before they find the solution to BST. But believe me, these individuals didn't arrive at their knowledge casually or because it was gifted to them by some higher force.

**Anne:**

No, I didn't mean it that way. I'm glad for the Labyrinth Group... I mean it. I'm happy that someone on this planet has figured this out, or at least is trying. It's just unfair that so few have the proof... the knowledge... the opportunity to understand all of this. Their lives are so different, they might as well be living on some other planet. They might as well be extraterrestrials.

**Dr. Anderson:**

I'm only laughing because that's been a fear of Fifteen's from the start; that if someone ever did find out about the Labyrinth Group and its agenda, they would be regarded as ETs. And here you are, confirming that fear.

**Anne:**

In a way, I wish you hadn't selected me. My life is so different now. This is all I can think about. It consumes me

every waking minute. I have no idea how I'm going to get this story out. I have no idea. None.

**Dr. Anderson:**

Anne, do you remember the first time we talked and I mentioned the Corteum? Your first question was, What do they look like?

**Anne:**

Yes. And your point is...?

**Dr. Anderson:**

These are the natural questions that people will have. LERM may interest a few scientists, but I doubt it. What's portrayed in these interviews is so superficial that I doubt any scientist would take it very seriously. And those that would, would find it to be a noble gesture to authenticate monistic idealism, and nothing more. So you see, your initial instincts should be trusted. Ask the questions that people would be interested in that appeal to their basic sense of curiosity. And don't worry about changing the world through anything I have to say. I don't need that weight on my shoulders.

**Anne:**

Okay, you're right. You're absolutely right. Besides, I'm not sure about the truth of all of this. I'm still not convinced of what you say... just for the record.

**Dr. Anderson:**

And I'm still not trying to convince you or anybody else. I'm just answering your questions as truthfully as I know how.

**Anne:**

Touché.

Now, for the benefit of those who read this interview eventually, what do the Corteum look like?

**Dr. Anderson:**

I thought you'd never ask. They stand nearly three meters high and have very elongated heads and bodies. Their skin is very fair... almost translucent, like you might expect from a cave dweller. Their eyes are relatively large and have various colors just like our own, except the Corteum have different colors to their eyes depending on their age and, in some instances, their emotional state.

What's very unique about the Corteum is that they have an incredibly articulate nervous system that enables them to process virtually everything that occurs within their environment, including the thoughts of another. Which means that when you're in their presence, you need to have control of your thoughts or else you'll potentially offend them. They're very sensitive emotionally.

**Anne:**

How do they communicate with you?

**Dr. Anderson:**

They speak perfect English or French, Italian, Spanish, or most any other language for that matter. They're very

gifted linguists and can acquire average language skills in a matter of a few weeks, and operate as masters of the language within a few months. Their minds are like sponges, but like I said before, while they possess incredible mental powers to absorb new information and synthesize it with previous information, they're not necessarily adept at creating new information totally unrelated to existing information. That's precisely what impressed them so much with Fifteen.

**Anne:**

What's their interest in the Ancient Arrow project?

**Dr. Anderson:**

No different than Fifteen's I presume. They're completely absorbed in the efforts to create BST, and hope that there's some technology or theorem within the Ancient Arrow site that can help accelerate the development of BST.

**Anne:**

And what do the Corteum want to do with BST?

**Dr. Anderson:**

The Corteum have a planetary system that's in a very fragile state because its protective atmosphere is degenerating at an alarming rate. Their atmosphere protects them, just as our own, from harmful light waves that are generated from their local sun, and, to a lesser extent, their closest stars. Anyway, this condition has led them to become nocturnal, only venturing outside at night, and even then, only for as short a time as necessary. Over

many generations, this has left them increasingly susceptible to the very condition that they're trying to solve. Their outer skins become more and more sensitive while their atmosphere becomes less protective.

Their scientists predict it's only about 10-20 years before they'll have to stay in underground communities year-round. This has had a major impact on their standard of living, economy, social structure, every possible aspect of their society has been effected, and mostly in a negative way, at least by their own measure. They hope that BST will enable them to install a technology that they've recently discovered to prevent the deterioration of their atmosphere.

**Anne:**

Why can't they simply deploy this technology now?

**Dr. Anderson:**

It's not a regenerative technology, it's a preventative technology. Regenerative technologies are impossible once a system reaches a certain retrograde trajectory. In their scenario, only BST would restore their environment.

**Anne:**

Obviously they have space travel technology, why don't they pick out another planet and colonize it?

**Dr. Anderson:**

They have tried, but every planet they've found that's suitable for their species is occupied. And they're not interested in being assimilated into an existing culture or society. They want their own identity and social structure.

Also, what they deem suitable for habitation is extremely particular. For example, they have the same problem with earth as they have with their own planet... in fact, it's worse here. They have to live in our underground base in order to survive on our planet. It required that we build a special way-station for their spacecraft.

**Anne:**

Do they want to interact with our governments and our people?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Initially I think they did. And in fact they tried. But they were quickly escorted to the ACIO and we convinced the NSA and all other interested parties that the Corteum had left earth fearful of their lives. So... as far as our operatives within the NSA are concerned, the Corteum are long gone, and fortunately the NSA at the time were quite preoccupied with other ET issues anyway, namely the Greys.

**Anne:**

I want to return to the WingMakers for a moment. What do the Corteum think of the WingMakers' time capsule, I assume they've seen everything?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Yes, they've been involved from the beginning. The Corteum are as integral to the Labyrinth Group as any of its human members, so nothing is hidden from them. The leader of the Corteum mission to earth is called – in English – Mahunahi, and he happens to be an artist first

and foremost, and a scientist is his secondary nature. He was always excited to see and hear about our findings. He asked if we could create a way-station to the Ancient Arrow site so he could visit the site himself, but it just wasn't practical to do so without drawing attention to the site.

**Anne:**

I have a few oddball questions, so bear with me. First, every time you mention a member of the ACIO, Labyrinth Group, or Corteum, it's always a male reference. Are there any women in any of these organizations? And secondly, why would an artist be the leader of a space mission of the Corteum? That seems very strange to me.

**Dr. Anderson:**

In answer to your first question, it's true that the Labyrinth Group is mostly male. I'm not aware of this being by design, but rather by accident. One of the directors is a woman, she's in charge of communications, and, as a director has a level 14 clearance. We also have perhaps 9 females who are in the 12 or 13 clearance categories, all of them are extremely bright and capable and share responsibility with their male counterparts without any form of discrimination... at least that I've ever been aware of. We even have one married couple. Each person – regardless of sex – is paid the identical sum of money and has all the same privileges... there's no distinction whatsoever within the ranks of the Labyrinth Group, and that's at Fifteen's insistence.

As for the Corteum, they're all males. Their culture is much more role-defined than our own. And it's not to say

the females are treated as the lesser sex... no, in fact it may be the quite the opposite, it's just that space travel and interaction with other species is left to the male sex until species interaction procedures are invoked. That's so their children can retain access to their mothers and their families can remain more intact. Most, if not all, of the members of the Corteum contingent are married.

As for your second question, the Corteum look at science, religion, and art as three equal members of a unified belief system that defines their social order. As I understand it, leadership varies between each of these three elements of their social order, depending on the contact that is made with an alien race. When they first made contact with humans it was decided that the leadership should come from the ranks of the artistic side because they felt we were more of an equal in this domain and thus the leader could more appropriately understand our motivations and desires.

**Anne:**

That's interesting. They actually thought we were more artistic than scientific or spiritual. I guess now that I think about it, I can understand that. As a race, we probably are more inclined in that way than the others.

**Dr. Anderson:**

That was their assessment any way.

**Anne:**

I'd like to go back to the artifacts for a minute. The artifacts that are technology based, where are they right now?



**Dr. Anderson:**

After the initial discovery of the Ancient Arrow site, all of the physical artifacts that could be removed from the site were carefully packed in shipping crates and shipped to the ACIO research lab in Virginia, and are held by the Labyrinth Group in its own laboratory. That's where they still are, to the best of my knowledge.

**Anne:**

And only the homing device found outside the site and the optical disc have been, to some extent, understood?

**Dr. Anderson:**

That's correct.

**Anne:**

You know, something you said earlier doesn't make much sense to me. If the WingMakers did represent a future version of humanity, and let's say they were trying to provide the entire recipe for BST through this time capsule, why wouldn't they simply beam themselves to your headquarters in Virginia and just cut to the chase. All of this other stuff... the paintings, the poetry, the music, the enigmatic artifacts, the philosophy, even the elaborate site itself, why not just give the blueprints to Fifteen and be done with it?

**Dr. Anderson:**

It's actually a very good question, and I was wondering if you'd ask it. There are a few facts that we know of for certain. The WingMakers can time travel and they can interact physically with the time and space that they

visit... that's obvious given what they did with the Ancient Arrow site. However, we don't know if they have all five elements of BST. Remember the element that pertains to intervention points?

**Anne:**

Yes, that's the one that defines when to intervene at the point in time that is causal and has the least ripple effect on related, but separate events. Right?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Your definition is missing only one thing, intervention points are co-dependent on both time and space. In other words, BST requires a precise fix on both the time and space coordinates of an event when it was in its conceptual stage – or the stage that precedes physical manifestation of the event. The space component is usually a physical person or an event of nature that is focused in space. This is a very tricky technology, and I believe that the WingMakers have discovered interactive time travel, but still lack the technology to define intervention points with precision.

**Anne:**

Or perhaps they just like puzzles.

**Dr. Anderson:**

Or perhaps they just like puzzles... exactly."

**Anne:**

So we really don't know whether BST is possible, do we?

**Dr. Anderson:**

We know it's possible, but it's like anything that is extremely complicated and interdependent, one needs a fine grain understanding of the total environment that encompasses the problem before they can modify or change the environment to solve the problem. And this requires an understanding of LERM that is still evolving within the Labyrinth Group, and I dare say, may yet require another decade of experimentation before its understanding is sufficient to identify intervention points and time-splice in such a way to minimize undesirable effects.

**Anne:**

So we're back to the shadow of God discussion... or LERM as you affectionately call it. Why is the understanding of LERM so fundamental to achieving BST?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Because LERM is the equivalent of genetics for consciousness, and consciousness is the equivalent of reality formulation for sentient beings. So if LERM is understood, one understands the causal system that operates in non-time and non-space, which fundamentally constructs the reality framework of space, time, energy, and matter. Quantum objects operating in the construct of LERM have an existence that is entirely different from macro objects like this table or chair.

Quantum objects – in their true state – have never been seen by a human. Scientists have witnessed the effects and

some of the properties of quantum objects, but their causal nature is not visible through scientific instruments... no matter how powerful they are, because scientific instruments are physical and therefore have a relationship to space and time. Whereas quantum objects have no relationship to time and space other than through an observer.

**Anne:**

So you're saying that the building blocks of matter – these quantum objects – have no existence unless someone is observing them... that consciousness makes them appear real and fixed in time and space? Is that what you're saying?

**Dr. Anderson:**

In a way, but not exactly. Let me try and explain it like this. Consciousness stems or originates from non-time and non-space as a form of energy that is a basic building block of LERM. Consciousness becomes localized as it becomes physical. In other words, consciousness becomes human, or animal, or plant or some object that has physical characteristics. Are you with me so far?

**Anne:**

Yes.

**Dr. Anderson:**

Good. As consciousness becomes a localized physical object, it essentially orchestrates LERM to conform to a reality matrix that has been encoded into the genetic or physical properties of the object it has become. In other

words, consciousness moves from non-space and non-time to become matter, and then it orchestrates LERM to produce a physical reality consistent to the encoded genetic properties of the physical object it has become. If that object is a human being, then the genetic triggers that are uniquely human become the tools of consciousness from which it constructs its reality.

LERM is essentially an infinite field of possibilities, or, as Aristotle referred to it, *Potentia*. This *Potentia* is like fertile soil from which physical objects are created. Those who can orchestrate LERM through the application of their consciousness are able to manifest reality and not simply react to it. This manifestation can be instantaneous because again, quantum objects originate in non-time and non-space...

**Anne:**

Not to get overly religious here, but what you're really talking about is what Jesus or other prophets have done... essentially manifest things like turning water to wine or curing the sick. Right?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Yes. It's the same principle only I've described it instead of performed it. It's much easier to perform than describe.

**Anne:**

So now you're going to tell me you can turn water into wine?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Actually I've never tried that before, but yes, all of the members of the Labyrinth Group can manifest physical objects from out of LERM. This was actually one of the outcomes of Fifteen's discovery. The process of orchestrating LERM and manifesting physical objects on demand.

**Anne:**

Okay, now you've definitely got my interest, but I'm feeling a little guilty because I swore I was going to stay on the subject of the WingMakers and the Ancient Arrow project. So tell me, can you teach me how to manifest things out of thin air?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Yes, but it would take some time... probably a few weeks or so."

**Anne:**

Can you show me some examples of how you do it?

**Dr. Anderson:**

How's this?

**Anne:**

For purposes of those reading these transcripts later on. Dr. Anderson just made a ball of twine appear out of no where. He just made it disappear as well. Now it has reappeared again. This is incredible. He's not holding it, so it's not like a magician who's making this appear from his sleeve or from behind his hands somehow. It's quite literally appearing and disappearing on a table about 3 feet

in front of him, which is about 6 feet away from me. I can see it all very clearly.

I'm picking up the ball of string and it is definitely a physical object... not simply a mirage or... or hologram. It has all the normal properties... weight... texture... it's slightly warm to the touch, but in every other respect, it's exactly how I'd expect a ball of twine to feel.

Can you make something else appear... something more complicated, like a million dollars in cash?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Yes.

**Anne:**

Okay, let's see it.

**Dr. Anderson:**

You see this is the problem with these discoveries and capabilities. If I produced a million dollars in cash right now, you'd have a dilemma. What to do with a million dollars? Could you bear to see me make it disappear as easily as I make it appear?

**Anne:**

Are you crazy? Since the first moment I met you, I've never believed in what you've said until now. And I'm not even saying I totally believe you even now, but I'm a hell of a lot closer. I... no, people in general, need to see things with our eyes. We need to believe in what our eyes tell us because they – of all the senses – seem to have a fix on reality. And you've finally shown me something that is

tangible... that my eyes relate to. I'm just asking for one more confirmation of your abilities. I mean, a ball of string doesn't seem like such a huge deal... not that I'm not impressed. But if you could produce a million dollars in cash... now that's a huge deal.

**Dr. Anderson:**

And the dilemma?

**Anne:**

Okay, I have a proposition for you. I'm going to need to quit my job for at least a few months to get this story out to the public and maybe even relocate or move underground somewhat. What if I kept just... \$10,000 to help me through the next two months? Could that work for you?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Yes, I could do that.

**Anne:**

I'm now looking at a loose pile of \$100 bills that appear to be perfect replicas. I'm touching them... again they feel slightly warm to the touch, but these would definitely pass as the real thing... wow... I can't believe it. But this can't be a million dollars, you only manifested \$10,000 didn't you?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Yes, give or take a few hundred dollars.

**Anne:**



You do realize that you just undermined your own credibility to those who will read this transcript. You just made yourself unbelievable. I'm not even sure I should include this because no one will believe it anyway, and it may instead hurt your credibility in all the other areas of our discussion. This is truly not a believable experience unless you see it with your own eyes. What should I do?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Anne, whether any one believes me isn't important. No one believes anything anyway unless they experience it, and even then, most people fall back into doubt. Belief is short-lived and always questioned; as it should be. Even the most devoted believer is in doubt most of the time, regardless of what they say. So don't worry about whether this impairs my credibility or not. I don't care. It doesn't matter because I'm not trying to convince anyone of anything. I'm only trying to get information about the WingMakers to people who can make their own determination of what is true and believable.

**Anne:**

Okay... so much for my concern. It'll be the last time I worry about your credibility.

If you can manifest money like this so easy, why do you need to get paid? I mean who needs money from work?

**Dr. Anderson:**

When this technology was discovered, it was only shared within the Labyrinth Group, and it was only used for experiments approved by Fifteen. The same principle would apply to BST or any other technology discovered by

the Labyrinth Group that could be used for personal gain or benefit.

**Anne:**

Man, you must be a very disciplined group. I don't think I could resist.

**Dr. Anderson:**

The truth is, I'm sure all the members of the Labyrinth Group have, from time-to-time, experimented with this technology in the privacy of their own homes.

**Anne:**

Why do you refer to it as a technology? It seems to me that it's a mental thing. You weren't using anything other than your mind were you?

**Dr. Anderson:**

It's a technology only from the standpoint of understanding the mental process. There's nothing electronic or mechanical if that's what you mean. But it's more than mind control. It's really a belief in LERM and its unerringly perfect processes of creation – moving quantum objects from non-space and non-time to the world of matter in our time and space. It's more closely related to faith than technology... as odd as that may sound.

**Anne:**

Actually, I was figuring that if Jesus and others who've walked the earth could do these things thousands of years ago, it must not have much to do with technology. But

when you see it happen with your own eyes, you have a tendency to think there's some technology behind the scenes that's doing it. That it couldn't just be a natural power of humans... that doesn't seem possible to me for some reason.

**Dr. Anderson:**

I understand, but nonetheless, it's really a matter of perspective, and once you have the perspective on LERM and it becomes a fundamental construct of your belief system, it becomes amazingly easy to do this. It's a little like a sophisticated optical illusion based on a hologram that takes you several months of concentrating to see the picture that is subtly embedded, but the moment you see it, you can instantly see it the rest of your life without effort. That's how this operates. Some people can pick it up in a matter of a few days, others require hundreds of hours, but what everyone has in common is that once you get it, it becomes as natural as breathing.

**Anne:**

And you think you could teach me in a matter of a few weeks, when it took some of your colleagues – with genius IQs, I might add – hundreds of hours to learn the technique?

**Dr. Anderson:**

It's not related to IQ. It's related to understanding and belief. The understanding comes from seeing the existence of LERM and understanding how it operates at its fundamental level. Whether you have an average

intelligence or are a genius, it doesn't matter, so long as you understand and believe what you understand.

**Anne:**

So how do you get me to believe in LERM?

**Dr. Anderson:**

You already do deep inside you. It's your conscious mind that rejects your deeper belief and understanding. So I would help you to consciously understand what you already know at a deeper level of your being. And I would do this by showing you LERM.

**Anne:**

And how would you do that?

**Dr. Anderson:**

You would need to come to the Labyrinth Group's research facility in Virginia. It's the only place in the world where I can show you the indisputable evidence of LERM.

**Anne:**

Under the circumstances, that doesn't seem like a scenario that will ever happen. There must be another alternative... or said another way, what is it that I'd see at this research center that I couldn't get somewhere else... or through some other means?

**Dr. Anderson:**

I'm not saying that the only way to acquire this ability is by seeing LERM in action, but it is very convincing. The Labyrinth Group has a technology – designed by Fifteen

himself – that quite literally enables an individual to experience LERM. There are also the mystical or shamanic means, but these are far less likely to occur in a two-week period of time. These methods seem independent of circumstance and more dependent on some deeper, predestined or pre-encoded awakening that the individual is not aware of consciously, but nonetheless triggers an awakening that causes them to transform their understanding by themselves. In some instances this awakening includes an ability to manifest physical objects, but generally, it's done without a conscious knowledge of how it's done. It just works.

**Anne:**

Okay, so let's assume I'm not cut out to be a mystic or shaman, what would I see with this technology that would convince me of my abilities to do what you just did?

**Dr. Anderson:**

I can't really tell you. It's one of those experiences that words are wholly inadequate to describe or explain. About all I can tell you is that LERM is experienced through this technology, and it essentially, as a result of the experience, re-wires your internal electrical system. In this process, new circuits are cut in your nervous system, and these new circuits enable you to utilize LERM as an outgrowth of your experience of it.

I doubt this explanation does you any good whatsoever. I've never tried to explain it before, and I can see by the look on your face that I failed miserably...

**Anne:**

No, it's not that. I'm just tired of always feeling like I've lived on a different planet all my life. That I've missed out on all of this... it's really distressing to me when I think about it.

I remember reading a biography about Einstein and he was quoted saying something like we humans only use about 2% of our intellectual capability. Well, that's about how I feel right now. That I've lived my life at about the 2% level – if that – and I'm just beginning to see what he meant. I never had a comparison before now that let me see what the other 98% might be like. It's not altogether pleasant to see what's been left out or overlooked... or undervalued.

**Dr. Anderson:**

I understand.

**Anne:**

On to something else. You said earlier that certain technologies like LERM and BST were not allowed to be used for personal gain by members of the Labyrinth Group. Yet, if BST did exist, wouldn't everyone line up and ask to use it? I know I would. There are a lot of events in my life I'd change if I could. Once the cat's out of the bag, how could BST ever be kept under wraps?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Like everything, there are implications and moral and ethical considerations that have to be weighed. One of the things that Fifteen and more generally the Labyrinth Group is good at, is to consider these implications in the broader scope of the social order. Fifteen, from an early

age, always felt that the technologies of BST and LERM would only be granted to those organizations that would properly honor the ethical considerations that were elicited by the technology itself.

This is one of the fundamental charters of the Labyrinth Group, and all of its members take it very seriously. As a new technology is being developed, there are always members of the team who are concerned with the ethical implications of the technology and are responsible for usage guidelines and deployment rules. This is an integral part of any project's development.

**Anne:**

That's good to hear, but couldn't such a charter also be used to prevent the spread of these technologies to a broader audience?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Unquestionably. A technology like BST –once developed and tested – could, in time, become a consumer technology. But as long as the Labyrinth Group exists, it would protect BST from any and all outside forces. Within the Labyrinth Group there is a committee called the Technology Transfer Program or TTP Committee. This committee has two missions, one, to assess the incoming technologies that are assimilated from ETs, and two, they're responsible for which technologies and in what state of dilution they're transferred to our private industry partners, NSA, or the military.

The TTP Committee is in control of the pure-state technologies that are developed by the Labyrinth Group.

These pure-state technologies are virtually never transferred to outside organizations. Even those staff members in the ACIO who are not part of the Labyrinth Group are unaware of these pure-state technologies, and when...

**Anne:**

But if I place these interview transcripts on the Internet or some media publication picks up this story, more than just the ACIO staff members are going to know about this stuff. Isn't this going to screw up the Labyrinth Group's cloak of secrecy?

**Dr. Anderson:**

No. The Labyrinth Group is more than a secret organization. For all practical purposes, it doesn't exist. The ACIO doesn't exist. No one will be able to trace the ACIO let alone the Labyrinth Group. Their security technologies are so vastly superior they are completely invulnerable in this regard. Nothing I say, or you publish, will make them more vulnerable. As I said before, their only concern will be the precedent of my defection and how it could create more defections over time.

**Anne:**

Why, why would anyone want to leave... I mean I understand your case... you didn't want your memories changed or removed. But they don't commonly do that do they?

**Dr. Anderson:**



Not often, but I'm certainly not the first to be targeted to undergo memory implant sessions or other forms of invasive security measures. They're all part of the culture of the Labyrinth Group and the ACIO. Everyone who enters either of those worlds, understands what they must subject themselves to. It's very clear why the paranoia must be part of the culture. But over time, certain individuals find it suffocating. And these individuals are the ones who are most at risk to see my defection as a reason for their own.

I may be entirely wrong about this, but I believe there are 10-20 individuals who would leave the ACIO or the Labyrinth Group if they were given the choice without repercussions.

**Anne:**

But I thought you said last night that these people were in love with their jobs because of the special access to technologies and research labs that were so advanced to anything else available? If that's the case, what would they do in normal society?

**Dr. Anderson:**

I'll find out. I'll be the first to experience normal society... as a normal person.

**Anne:**

Well, at least you won't have any problem getting a job... what am I saying, you won't even need to work. I forgot you can make your own money out of thin air.

**Dr. Anderson:**

You'd be surprised to know that I live a pretty simple life. I own a 92' Honda Accord and live in a modest three-bedroom home in a suburban neighborhood of modest homes...

**Anne:**

You're kidding?

**Dr. Anderson:**

No.

**Anne:**

You make \$400,000 a year tax free and... and have a money tree in your mind, and you live like I do? If you don't mind my asking, what do you do with all your money?

**Dr. Anderson:**

I have charities that I contribute to, and the rest I've used to set-up trust funds for causes that are generally related to the environment.

**Anne:**

Are all the Labyrinth Group members like you?

**Dr. Anderson:**

You mean in regard to money and possessions?

**Anne:**

Yes.

**Dr. Anderson:**

Most live at a higher standard of living than I do, but it is part of our culture to live modestly and none of the members live a pretentious lifestyle. Fifteen pays people what they're worth, not because he wants them to throw money around and live flamboyantly, but because he wants his colleagues to be able to donate money to charities of their choice, or build new charities that help our local communities. He's a big believer in this, and he himself, even more than I, lives humbly.

**Anne:**

I find this really hard to believe. I think of just about everything you've told me so far, this is one of the hardest things to believe. I'm totally baffled here...

**Dr. Anderson:**

I can appreciate that, but what I'm telling you is the truth.

Initially, the way new people are recruited to join the ACIO is largely because of the monetary incentives. These are extremely bright and capable people and could easily secure positions in academia or private industry making \$200,000 per year. The ACIO lures them by at least doubling their salary and offering them lifetime employment contracts. But those who ultimately earn the right to enter the 12th level are then inducted into the Labyrinth Group, and by the time an individual has risen to this status, money has become increasingly unimportant... particularly after the Corteum intelligence accelerator experience... after the LERM experience, it's diminished even more.

You'd probably find it interesting that Fifteen lives in a small, three-bedroom home in a regular community where the average property value is about \$200,000. That's not much of a house by East Coast standards. His automobile must have at least 100,000 miles on it, no air conditioning, and he's perfectly content with his situation. New ACIO recruits are always amazed at Fifteen's thrift... I think bewildered is a better way of putting it. But over time, they learn to respect him not as an eccentric, but as an extremely dedicated genius who simply likes to live like other people and blend in.

**Anne:**

Okay... I've got to get personal here, and I know I've totally betrayed my agenda, but you've got to tell me a few things about... well like, what do your neighbors think you do?

**Dr. Anderson:**

I don't know my neighbors very well. I've worked 80 hours per week since I was 18 years old. When I socialize, it's generally with my colleagues. There's very little time for establishing other relationships. But to answer your question directly, I don't know for sure what they think I do... I've only told them I'm a research scientist for the government. For most people that settles their curiosity.

**Anne:**

But what if you met a woman and fell in love. She'd want to know what you did and how much money you made and so forth... what would you tell her?

**Dr. Anderson:**

I work for the NSA. I'm a research scientist involved in linguistics and decoding, and I make \$85,000 per year.

**Anne:**

So you'd lie?

**Dr. Anderson:**

It's part of the culture of the Labyrinth Group. We can't tell the truth, and if we did, the vast majority of people would think we were crazy. It's also why we keep to our own... we can tell the truth among ourselves.

**Anne:**

When I first heard about the ACIO and its secret mission, and that you were defecting and afraid for your life... I thought the ACIO was an evil-minded, control-the-world type of organization. Then I heard about the kind of money you all made and I pictured a bunch of intellectual snobs driving bullet-proof Mercedes Benzes and living in posh mansions... and you just dismantled my image. You completely destroyed it. So why are you so afraid?

**Dr. Anderson:**

The Labyrinth Group, because of its connection to the ACIO, is still very much connected to the secret network of organizations who control a great deal of the world's monetary and natural resource assets. This network of organizations will know about my defection the instant these materials I've given you gain any visibility in the press or on the Internet. They will know of its authenticity by simply reading these two interviews. While there's

nothing they can do to the ACIO or the Labyrinth Group, they can make my life difficult to live.

And they will most definitely try. I know all about their technologies and how they deploy them. I know the people behind these organizations and I know how they operate. I have knowledge that I've only shown you a small fraction of. And this knowledge would make certain individuals – very powerful individuals – very uncomfortable. It's extremely rare, but when high-level operatives defect, they're hunted like dogs until they're found and disposed of, or, if they serve an ongoing purpose, their memories are selectively wiped clean. It's one of the unfortunate realities of having dealt with these organizations.

**Anne:**

But you were just a scientist... a linguist, for God's sake. How does that make you a threat to these secret organizations?

**Dr. Anderson:**

I was the one that created the underlying encryption technology for their security system that overlays their predictive modeling software for the world's stock exchanges. I may be a simple scientist in your eyes, but my talents for linguistics is not the only talent I possess. I'm also gifted in the field of encryption. And within the world of economics, I'm simply the best. And this talent was given to certain organizations to help them, and in the process of doing so, I learned about these organizations and how they operate. It makes me a security risk.

**Anne:**

Why? I mean if the ACIO and Labyrinth Group have so much money... why work with these evil groups?

**Dr. Anderson:**

First of all, they're not evil. These organizations consist of well-educated elitists who're self-absorbed perhaps, but not evil. They look at the world as a biological experience where the strong survive, the powerful thrive, and the secretive control. They like being in control of the experience. They are the ultimate control freaks, but not for the sake of adoration or ego-gratification, but for the sake that they genuinely believe they're the best at making policy decisions that effect the world's economy and security.

So, don't confuse control with evil intent. It's not necessarily one and the same thing. That's the game they choose to play. The fact that they make incredible sums of money, is simply part of the game, but it's not the reason they sit in the driver's seat of the world's economy... they simply want to protect their life's agenda like anyone else would. It's just that they're in the position to actually do it. They get their security from being at the top of the economic food-chain.

**Anne:**

But they're manipulating people and keeping information from them. If this isn't evil, what is?

**Dr. Anderson:**

By your definition, our national government, our local government, virtually every business and organization, is

evil. Everyone manipulates and keeps information hidden. Governments, organizations, and individuals.

**Anne:**

You're twisting my words. It's a matter of degree isn't it? I mean, it's one thing if I don't tell you my true hair color, and it's another thing if, as part of this secret network, I withhold information about how I'm manipulating the world economy. They're entirely different in scale. You can't compare them. I still think it's evil when organizations manipulate and control things for their own gain.

**Dr. Anderson:**

Believe me, I didn't set out to be the defender of these organizations, but you need to understand this because it's important and it may effect you in the days ahead. This secret network of powerful organizations are more aligned with the goals of the Labyrinth Group than our world's governments, and, in particular, our military leaders. If you're worried about anything, you would be well advised to worry more about the administration, Congress, and the Department of Defense... not only in the United States, but in every country.

**Anne:**

How can you say that? Are you saying that our government and military leaders are trying to cause us harm and these secret, manipulative organizations are trying to help us?

**Dr. Anderson:**



I'm saying that the leadership in the world's community of nations is inept, and can be bought with the holy dollar. And that it's not the secret network that I've been talking about who's manipulating our government and military leadership to invest huge amounts of money in destructive forces like nuclear and biological weapons. This, they're deciding on their own. The secret organizations that I'm pointing the finger at are opposed to these military build-ups because they interject a degree of uncertainty in their models for controlling economic and social order.

The politicians and military leaders are the ones who're investing time, energy, and money in weapons of mass destruction, and these, if there is such a thing as evil, are it.

**Anne:**

Okay. I see your point. But you implied that these secret organizations would try and kill us if we published and distributed all of this? I still don't see how that makes them so noble.

**Dr. Anderson:**

I don't think you have to be concerned about these secret organizations. You don't know enough to be dangerous to them. Besides, they're used to journalists snooping around and trying to expose them. None have succeeded in any meaningful way. Dozens of books have been written about them. So they're not going to bother you. Their interest will be in me and me alone. It's one of the reasons why I'm careful in what I tell you. I know they'll read these transcripts as will the NSA, CIA, ACIO, and the entire Labyrinth Group. I'm allowing you to record these conversations because I know who will hear these exact

words, and I want them to know precisely what I have shared with you, and through you, to others.

I'm not making a value judgment as to whether these secret organizations are noble or not. I'm merely pointing out that they're not the ones wasting huge sums of money and intellectual capital on weapons of mass destruction. They're significantly more competent to rule than our politicians and military leaders are. And this is simply my opinion.

**Anne:**

I still don't get it. If the Labyrinth Group, the ACIO and this secret network of organizations are all so noble and benevolent, why are you afraid for your life? And why are they hiding from the public like cockroaches?

**Dr. Anderson:**

To answer your first question, I fear for my life because I know information that could cause irreparable harm to a variety of secret organizations... though I have no intention to do so.

**Anne:**

But simply because you know these things they'll hunt you down and kill you? Sounds like a nice group to me. Certainly not evil...

**Dr. Anderson:**

Remember... they're control freaks. They don't like having anyone loose who could cause them potential harm. If I wanted to, I could bring them down. I know that much

about their computer algorithms and encryption technologies.

**Anne:**

But how would you get access to their system. It would seem to me that you'd be placing yourself in great jeopardy if you tried to get into their system.

**Dr. Anderson:**

I don't need to get into their system to cause them harm, I need to get into their system to prevent harm. They will invite me into their system.

**Anne:**

I don't understand...

**Dr. Anderson:**

When I developed the system initially, there were certain time-delayed algorithms that were scripted to occur at specific times, and if they were not maintained accordingly, the program would essentially self-destruct. Something that these organizations cannot afford to happen.

**Anne:**

Why did they agree to this?

**Dr. Anderson:**

It's part of the fee that the Labyrinth Group extracts from its clients. More importantly, it ensures that our technologies – even in their diluted states – are operated according to our agreement and not misused. I have the

access codes for this system and the maintenance key that will prevent it from crashing. I've made certain that I'm the only one who has this knowledge.

**Anne:**

You're telling me that with all those photographic memories running around at the Labyrinth Group, that you're the only one who knows the code?

**Dr. Anderson:**

I didn't exactly report the right number when I did my last update of their system... so, yes, I'm the only one who knows the correct code. I designed it that way to ensure my safety...

**Anne:**

But with all the geniuses in the Labyrinth Group, you're telling me that they can't solve this problem themselves?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Not without a significant amount of time... which is something Fifteen won't agree to do. It's too wasteful and a major distraction to BST research.

**Anne:**

Do they already know about this?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Oh, yes. I informed them shortly after I defected.

**Anne:**

They must have been pissed.

**Dr. Anderson:**

It wasn't a pleasant conversation to put it mildly.

**Anne:**

I was thinking about all of this sophisticated technology that the Labyrinth Group has, but I don't understand something. How do you manufacture it? I assume Intel isn't doing the manufacturing. Right?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Correct. There's no one on this planet that can manufacture these technologies. They're all based upon the Corteum technology – which is about 150 generations ahead of our best computer technologies here on earth. For example, the LERM project used only one domestic technology in the total array of about 200 different technologies, and it was a relatively insignificant part of the project...

**Anne:**

What was it?

**Dr. Anderson:**

It's a derivative of a laser telemetry technology that the ACIO developed about 20 years ago, but it filled the specific needs of the LERM project because it was based on analog protocols which were required for the application in that specific part of the experiment.

**Anne:**

So the Corteum performs all the manufacturing of what the Labyrinth Group designs. What if the Corteum decide, for whatever reason, not to share these technologies all of sudden? Wouldn't the Labyrinth Group cease to exist?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Perhaps. But Fifteen is shrewd and he's put certain contingencies in place to help ensure nothing like that would ever happen. Bear in mind, that the Corteum are at least as motivated as we are to develop this technology, perhaps more. They have tremendous respect for Fifteen as well as the other human contingent of the Labyrinth Group. However, when the Labyrinth Group was first formed, Fifteen negotiated with the Corteum to share all source code for the projects that came out of BST research. All base technologies were replicated in two separate research labs. There's complete redundancy right down to the power supplies.

**Anne:**

Won't the leaders of these secret organizations try and pressure Fifteen to find you... with their remote viewing technology, can't they find you easily?

**Dr. Anderson:**

The leaders of these secret organizations well know they have no leverage with Fifteen. After they read this information, they will know they have even less leverage. Fifteen and the Labyrinth Group designed and developed all of their security systems. Every last one. They knew they had to be indebted to the Labyrinth Group for certain technologies that made them – speaking metaphorically –

invisible. Fifteen cannot be pressured. In fact, it's just the opposite, Fifteen can pressure them... though he never would. To Fifteen, these organizations simply represent the best alternative to letting our own governments take control of the economic engines and social order of the world infrastructure. Hence, he sympathizes with them and tries to help them to the extent he can afford the time and energy.

**Anne:**

So how will you hide from them?

**Dr. Anderson:**

I began this process of defection nearly a year ago. As I told you before, I began to systematically disentangle myself from the ACIO's invasive security precautions... which include electronic sensors implanted underneath the skin in the back of the neck. I effectively stripped myself of these devices so I'd have a chance of remaining underground until a reasonable solution could be negotiated.

**Anne:**

I assume there's nothing the police or FBI could do to help?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Nothing that I'm interested in.

**Anne:**

But what will you do to protect yourself?

**Dr. Anderson:**

As you can imagine, Anne, there's certain information I can't share with you given the nature of these interviews. This is one instance I can't tell you more than I already have.

**Anne:**

Are you able to stay longer because I still have some more questions?

**Dr. Anderson:**

I can stay as long as you like tonight.

**Anne:**

Good, I don't think it'll take much longer.

I'd like to go all the way back to the WingMakers again. I'm not usually so scattered by the way. It's just that you're telling me things that get me going in a hundred directions at once and I can't keep myself focused. Sorry...

Any rate, tell me more about your experiences with the WingMakers. You said earlier that you had visitations with them... right?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Yes.

**Anne:**

So what were they like and what did they tell you?

**Dr. Anderson:**



Well I suppose the best way to describe them is that they were like a lucid dream. The first time I actually interacted with them, I was taking a catnap at the lab and I suddenly woke up like someone had tapped me on the shoulder to awaken me, and when I turned around, there was no one there. I shrugged it off as a dream, and went back to my nap. The next thing I remembered I woke up and saw two luminous objects about the size of a human being and with the general appearance of a body... though they were too bright for me to look directly at them... so I wasn't really sure of their appearance initially.

The light had a rhythmic pulsing quality to it and this pulsing seemed to entrain my own consciousness. It was like... like feeling something that was extremely powerful, but equally gentle at the same time... the dipole effect was very unusual. I had no fear of these objects emotionally, but mentally I felt at odds with my trust, as if I should feel fear. I must've remained semi-conscious of this experience for maybe ten seconds or so, and then I felt my mind become linked to the mind of these beings.

They told me they were WingMakers and that they had entered my time to help me. They were only interested in unlocking their coded messages because they felt that their time capsule had fallen into good hands. They encoded their messages for two reasons: one, to ensure security of their time capsule and its contents, and two, to make certain that the ones who discover it will serve the WingMakers' agenda and not their own.

**Anne:**

So are you saying they felt that the Labyrinth Group was not going to apply their own agenda? If that's the case, I don't these WingMakers have much insight into the Labyrinth Group.

**Dr. Anderson:**

Except for one small issue. The WingMakers are the Labyrinth Group... only 750 years in the future.

**Anne:**

You're kidding. How could that be?

**Dr. Anderson:**

That's almost exactly what I said at the time, only it was expressed with more amazement. We had considered the possibility as one of our early hypotheses, but it was never taken that seriously because we never had proof or evidence other than symbolic representations.

Anyway, that was essentially what they wanted to communicate to me in that first conscious interaction. They, for whatever reason, had chosen me to be their liaison and were intent on helping me bring the contents of their time capsule to the public domain, and more specifically, to the Internet. That was the essence of their instruction.

So when...

**Anne:**

I still don't understand how they could represent the Labyrinth Group... If they have BST then why not hand it over like I said before? What's their concern?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Like most things concerning BST, you have to unlearn all of your conventional precepts about how things work before you can understand the nature of BST.

The WingMakers are the result of a whole new evolution of humankind. They're not time-bound. They're able to separate their physical and non-physical selves and, in the latter state, travel across vertical time and interact with it. I'm not sure that it's exactly the form of BST that Fifteen has in mind... it seems more like bi-location except in different time periods instead of space. While in the foreign time they can re-materialize their physical bodies and interact with the physical environment if they choose. They can even bring objects with them and transfer these objects to the foreign time, as they did in the case of the Ancient Arrow site.

But to give BST, or any aspect of it, to any individual, organization, or government, you first have to completely understand them and through that understanding, trust them. That takes time and observational experience. It also takes testing. And I think that's what the WingMakers are doing with their time capsules. They're testing the Labyrinth Group, and Fifteen in particular, to see what his true intentions are.

**Anne:**

I know this is going to sound like a tangled up question, but the WingMakers are 750 years ahead of us. Right?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Yes.

**Anne:**

And in their future, they represent the Labyrinth Group. Right?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Yes, that's right.

**Anne:**

And they don't trust the current membership and/or leadership of the Labyrinth Group. Right?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Apparently not enough to simply hand over their technologies.

**Anne:**

So that's why they've placed their knowledge of BST inside seven time capsules and planted them inside or underneath rock formations or wherever. But I read in one of the ACIO memos or... maybe you told me... that the final time capsule wouldn't be discovered until the year 2023. And that's after the takeover bid by this hostile alien force. It doesn't make sense.

**Dr. Anderson:**

I understand your line of questioning. Unfortunately, my interactions with the WingMakers have been on different topics so far. Perhaps later I'll learn more about their plan as far as the 2018 elections and hostile takeovers are concerned. I've only had three interactions with them thus far, and all three have been brief encounters, and mostly

one-way communication... they communicating messages to me.

**Anne:**

I'm feeling the need to bring this session to an end. My mind is quite literally filled to the brim. I think if you told me anything profound right now, it'd just go in one ear and out the other. Can we meet again on Wednesday and perhaps pick-up on these sessions you've had with the WingMakers then?

**Dr. Anderson:**

Yes, that's fine with my schedule.

**Anne:**

Okay. Signing off for tonight.

End of Session

# INTERVIEW WITH JAMES MAHU

## INTRODUCTION

*This document consists of the interview between Mark Hempel and James Mahu on April 5, 2008 in Minneapolis, Minnesota. It was conducted in the home of Mark Hempel. The interview was done in three parts: part 1 was about 47 minutes, part 2 was about 54 minutes, and part 3 was about 57 minutes. This is the complete, unedited transcript from those three parts, constituting the full interview of April 2008. These can also be downloaded as audio files from the WingMakers.com website in the Creator section.*

*Transcription by John Berges and Mark Hempel.*

## PART I

Mark: This is interview session number 1 with James, recorded April 5 2008, copyright 2008 WingMakers, all rights reserved.

00:32 Mark: All right, we'll get started. First, I would like to welcome James to my humble abode here in Minneapolis.

James: Thank you for having me, especially on short notice, Mark.

Mark: It's a great honor to have you and to be hosting you here in my own home. Before we start,

James suggested I give some background on the nature of this interview.

So, first off... my name is Mark Hempel, I have been doing the web management for WingMakers, Lyricus and Event Temples since 1998, so about 10 years I've been involved in it, and the email that comes in from these sites comes to me. So, one of the types of requests that I see, maybe two or three times a month is from publications and radio shows wanting to do an interview with James. As most of you know, James has chosen to be anonymous as the creator of these websites so he is not exactly available for those interviews and typically in his style he politely declines.

I guess it was about two years ago that I approached James with the idea that I would interview him using the most common questions that I see in the email I get... sort of an FAQ [Frequently Asked Questions] and just kind of get his unique angle and also let people kind of hear his personality a little bit. And for whatever reason that never happened, but then out of the blue, about a week ago, Sarah called, who works with James and mentioned that James had a layover in Minneapolis en route to Los Angeles for a meeting, and he would have about 4 hours and he suggested that we do an interview. So... here we are. I have James in my cozy work studio where I do my regular job. It's the 5th of April 2008, and actually by Minnesota standards it's a pretty nice day. I can actually crack the window open a bit, so thanks for bring the warmer weather with you.

James: I will take no credit for that, but the feeling in this space is quite good I agree. I would like to suggest that the listener imagine that they're sitting at the same table with us. As this will help them feel the information better with their heart. We are planning to let the interview to proceed, yes?...without stops and starts, so it will be on one continuous informal chat and one that I hope will touch your inner-most self.

Mark: Oh, good, I am glad you added that. Do you want to add anything else before we start?

James: No, I think that's a good introduction. We can begin.

03:14 Mark: Okay, good; one of the most common questions I get relates to the whole reality I created around the WingMakers and the Lyricus Teaching Order. I think people understand that it's a mythology to some extent, but the essence of the question that I get is to what degree is the information real... so could you please comment on that James?

James: Yes, yes. While I understand the interest in knowing what is real and what is not real... it's fundamental to our natures, but in the case of an encoded mythology it is not essential to distinguish between the real and unreal, so much as it is to feel its effects on your behavior and your point of view. When you read the materials, do new avenues of perception open up? Do you begin to see a new geometry into the subtle fields that surround you at all times? Do you feel more connected to your higher purpose? These are the more vital issues that require contemplation and review. I'll elaborate just a bit.



The WingMakers mythology is an encoded work, which is to say, that there are frequencies of light and sound that are woven into the music, chamber paintings, philosophy, story, and poetry. These frequencies are subtle in that they are... they are felt more by the heart than they are reasoned by the mind.

Those who review the materials with only their mind, especially a mind that is settled in the historical view of God and Spirit, they will find a very different experience than one who brings both their heart and mind and releases historical views.

Mythologies and stories are actually the preferred communication of Lyricus because they can appear more innocent without the usual embroidery of fact-checking, mental analysis, comparison, and so forth which are all attributes of the intellect and the ego. To the extent possible, we try to diminish the possibility that the ego and intellect dominate the interpretation of the materials.

You see, the historical mind is weighed down by the words and opinions of thousands of writers from the beginning of human history. The real import of the WingMakers materials is to, in effect, dislodge the person from the historical mind and move them into a sense of connection to their higher Self and the Spirit that supports it. In doing this, the person can more easily access the tone of equality or the intuitive faculty inside their heart which opens the channel to the Living Truth.

06:21 Mark: I am glad you mentioned the Living Truth. In one of your latest writings, which by the way is a story called “The Living Truth,” you refer to this concept. Even

back in 1998 when the WingMakers site was released, you were thinking that this was the main or the core teaching?

James: The main teaching of Lyricus is to connect people more firmly with their higher Selves and the Spirit that unites each human consciousness to the cosmic or universal Being. You see, WingMakers is part of the facilitation of the Grand Portal. And the only way that humanity will open up to the higher dimensions is when individually, person by person, the entire species begins to see that Truth is alive and well within themselves, while relatively speaking, it is lifeless and irrelevant outside themselves. Again, in the historical context and writings, the Living Truth is always relevant, because you access it via the universal field that derives from First Source or the Creator.

This universal field is also known as Spirit and Spirit-filled information can only pass from Spirit to the higher Self or the material self. And when it arrives within the material self or human instrument, when it successfully catches this information, it creates new perspective which, in turn, creates new behaviors. Now, these new behaviors may not be noticeable in a short period of time, but they are nonetheless reshaping the life path of the individual. They create the ability of the individual to recycle their defined energies amongst the human condition, and this is done principally through the six heart virtues of appreciation, compassion, forgiveness, humility, understanding, and valor.

So the expression of the six heart virtues is the outgrowth of this deeper connection between the human self and the Divine or higher Self, quite independent of life

conditions, what astrological sign you have been born into, whether you are male or female, whether you are well educated or not, or your social standing. In short, the six heart virtues create the vibrational climate in your local environment that brings forward your higher Self as an agent of Spirit. I will speak more about the Living Truth, but for now I think this provides a good understanding or introduction at least.

09:21 Mark: Okay. Let me switch to another question that I get frequently from readers, which is the WingMakers materials, at least within the interviews and the Ancient Arrow book; I have references to, I guess I'll call it, dark forces at least, and for some they stir up feelings of fear and frustration.

These are forces we read and hear about all over the place. I guess I am talking about the Illuminati and the secret government operations and UFO cover-ups and, you know, that kind of stuff more of the conspiratorial line of the continuum. How do these elements fit into the notion of the higher Self becoming a more vibrant part of our life, because I think to some it feels more like a distraction?

James: It's a good question. Let me try to explain it this way. You will notice that the first floor of the structure that Lyricus built consists of the WingMakers materials. When you design a building, the main floor is where people enter the building even if that building has one hundred or more stories. Everyone enters through the ground floors. Now, if that skyscraper is sitting in a busy intersection, it has entrances from all four sides of the building. Some on the main level, some underground, perhaps. In the same way the WingMakers materials have

many different access points because some people will resonate to the materials in the Neruda interviews, that speak of government conspiracy and extraterrestrial influences, others will find the philosophy particularly meaningful, perhaps others will find the art or music to draw from. However they enter the structure, from which entrance—it doesn't really matter—so long as they enter the building and proceed to higher levels of the structure.

Now the matter of feeling fear or frustration is a common side-effect once people better understand the dark forces and learn how they try to manipulate the systems of culture and government in their favor. But this is also part of the activation, because the individual must again choose to be led by these forces or disengage from them and discern their subtle influence. We don't turn a blind eye to these forces, nor do we fear them. Instead we see them as part of our family that have lost their connection to the higher frequencies of love and we send our compassion to them.

I would suggest to readers of WingMakers: Do not stop your exploration of these materials in the Neruda interviews or the Ancient Arrow book, but continue your investigation into the Lyricus and Event Temples materials, as these will acquaint you with the higher levels of the Lyricus structure.

12:30 Mark: And what are these higher levels, James?

James: Well, the highest level is the Grand Portal itself, and perhaps later I will add some textures and details to the meaning of the Grand Portal. For now I will just say that it is the ultimate goal of the structure. After

WingMakers came the disclosure of the Lyricus Teaching Order, or LTO. This was the next level of the structure that was built out so as to make clear that the mind behind the WingMakers was not affiliated with the subject of its writings, namely the ACIO or Incunabula—the alpha organization of the Illuminati. So, the LTO was disclosed in its role, seeding the human understanding of its purposeful journey to the Grand Portal. This was done to clarify the purpose of the WingMakers materials. The next level after Lyricus was more recently launched, and it is the Event Temples.

Event Temples is the activity-based level of transitioning from the instructions of philosophy or mythology, and placing the focus on living a love-centered life through the expression of the six heart virtues.

These three levels—WingMakers, Lyricus, and Event Temples—are aligned and coherent expressions of the one goal of our human family uniting in the behaviors of love and collectively knocking on the door of the fifth dimension, and meshing these energetics of the fifth dimension with the human domain. That is the Grand Portal.

14:11 Mark: Okay. Are there going to be other levels between the Event Temples and the Grand Portal?

James: Yes, certainly, but I prefer not to disclose these at this time. But let me say this: Before there can be a collective awakening, there must be an established and sufficient core of people who are functioning on the higher frequencies of awareness. Globally, this might be between ten and twelve million people. This core is not centralized,

nor is it the province of one religion or belief system. It is spread across many, many belief systems, and these individuals who are functioning on these higher frequencies will be uniting on an internal basis, not external, not through the trappings of human organizations or religious structure. They will join together through the universal field of consciousness, and blend their hearts as one. And in this unification, the fear-based radiations of those who linger in the lower frequencies, they will be subdued, calmed, and a new sense of trust and hope will emerge.

And as messy as the human condition may become, these ten million islands will rise as a new continent of consciousness, one whose human circuitry is prepared to live a love-centered life quite independent of the external view and events. The structure of Lyricus is one of the buildings that will house these people, and help them connect and shine.

Mark: Are you talking about 2012?

James: I suppose in a roundabout way I am.

15:51 Mark: Yeah. I have to say that the subject of 2012 is a frequent question that I get, as well; lots of different perspectives ranging from like end times, the second coming, to a new golden age. It seems like it's all over the map and it's an odd thing because you would expect it to have a more convergence feel to it. And yet there seems to be about as divergent view on 2012 and what to expect as any event I've ever heard about.

So, can you speak to that issue, I mean, what exactly will happen in 2012 and how will it be different than our current situation?

James: Well, first let me say that the 2012 date is more of a culmination than it is an event unto itself. The process has been underway since the earliest coalescence of atoms into molecules, into stars, into angelic hosts, and into human creation. It's a process that is... it's a vibrational pattern sent forth by First Source, and therefore it replicates itself in ever-increasing efficiency and coherence.

Earth is an unusual planet among the mysterious number of planets that dot the universe and it is quite alive in its own right. It is nearing an alignment with this luminous field of First Source that enables a planet to shift its dimensional frequency. All of us, planets and creatures alike, are ascending dimensionally through timespace. This ascension is not arbitrary or capricious in any way. Rather, it is the plan of First Source in action.

Many people I know are expecting 2012 to be a major event, as this alignment between earth and its galactic center is arrived at. In a real sense, the global community of ten, perhaps twelve million people who are operating in the higher frequencies will notice the greatest change, and this change will be expressed in heightened perception, an intuitive knowing, more of a fine-grain intuitive knowing, and a deepening emotional connection to their fellowmen.

18:19 Their ability to live a love-centered life by expressing the six heart virtues will be enhanced many fold. This core group having already developed the habits

of fluid understanding, relaxed perceptions, and an unbreakable trust in the benevolence of the universe in its super intelligence will have new creative powers because they will operate as one and not as individuals. At first this operation will be murky to all but a few, perhaps one out of three thousand will feel it and see it, and I am speaking of the three thousand being from the group of the ten to twelve million who are operating on those higher frequencies.

So, these small fractional percentages will see it and feel it in the coming years and more will activate and become aware of this collective intelligence as well, as it becomes a very powerful co-creative entity of its own accord.

Now, those who live in fear-based realities will for the most part have their fears amplified as these incoming frequencies and radiations create a pace of change that makes for hardships in their life.

19:38 Emotionally, they may even become more disconnected and withdrawn. So, you see 2012, it really represents different experiences for different states of consciousness. It will not be a singular event like a solar eclipse that can be seen in most parts of the world, but quite frankly, no one really knows what it will be like with any precision, as it has no exact likeness and its final chapter has not yet been written.

So in this, the final chapter, we are all playing improvisational roles, there is no script, and there is really no director, in the formal sense of the word. Instead, we are allowed by First Source to choose our destiny. Live a love-centered life, and follow earth's ascendancy or live a



fear-based life and remain in the third dimensional frequency grid with its inherent limitations intact.

In the final assessment, 2012 is a choice. Only those who are willing to undergo a fundamental revisioning, a new perspective, let's say of the nature of reality, and open and avail themselves to the power of collective intelligence and how this intelligence restructures the face of humanity, only they will really see 2012 as it is. All others will see illusions and in a sense be forced to live in the shadows of the real experience.

21:16 Mark: I know this is one of those really broad questions, James, but I saw an article the other day that said the number-one or maybe number-two thing that was being searched on in China, and I am speaking of the Google of China, if you will, was the phrase, "Why are we here?" So, in other words, "Why are any of us incarnated at this time and what is our purpose? Again I know it is a really broad question, but I actually get a lot of email around that subject from people and when I saw this search result from the China Google it just sort of like...okay, it made my list as you can see here. So I just wanted to get your perspective on that.

James: Well, people who live in these times, they want to feel a personal involvement in the collective human destiny. Unfortunately, the vast majority, other than voting for their politicians, don't really have a sense of this. They are passive observers looking into the arena of action, but not really participating, or so they believe.

Everyone who is incarnate at this time has a higher Self, and this higher Self is aware of the specialness of this

time, but the ego-personality within the human instrument is not easily accessible to the higher Self, and unless it has been properly conditioned and prepared, the ego-personality will become like an agoraphobic who is afraid of wild expansive places and simply wants to remain enclosed in its own reality.

If you are here on Earth wearing the human instrument, you are here out of choice and purpose. The choice was made to experience this time, this alignment with the galactic center, and the intensification of the creation beam of First Source. The purpose was to ease the experience of shifting from the old systems and reality models to the new, both for societies and individuals, as well as our planet and the creatures therein. That's why we are here.

Now, you could say there is more to it than that and I wouldn't disagree with you, but the other reasons do not carry the same potency of truth. The truth is that we have responsibility to our fellowmen, creatures, cultures, and earth to ascend in unity and ease. This is why we are here.

24:10 Mark: I know you have answered this question before, but it is such a common question that I can't resist asking it again, so you can respond in your own words.

James: Mark?

Mark: Yes.

James: You can ask the question.

Mark: Yeah, okay. Well, once I start talking it's hard to stop.

James: I understand. It's a discipline we can all probably practice a bit more.

24.37 Mark: Okay, so here is the question, actually two questions. Why did you decide to release all of these materials anonymously and why are you becoming more and more accessible now, I mean agreeing to do this interview now, for example?

James: That was actually pretty good, Mark, very concise.

Mark: I tried.

James: Now to your first question. I would say that the main reason representatives of the LTO do not choose to be visible is that they prefer, as part of their mission, to shine the focus onto the material itself, not their personalities.

No one within the LTO is interested in establishing themselves as a spiritual authority or a way shower. We are actually quite reticent in this regard because we well understand that at this stage of humanity's awakening it's truly about cooperative intelligence, not the singular personality. There is no messiah who will be leading this event this time. It is too profound a shift for any one individual or organization to orchestrate or even hope to orchestrate. Nor is it desirable at this stage in the evolution of humanity for it to depend on a human, or angelic, or even godly personality. It creates separation, similar in the way that money creates the haves and the have nots. As I said before, there is a co-creative entity that will be birthed in the coming years and this entity is the collective of millions of humans who have learned to access and

transmit the higher frequency emanations of First Source within the human domain.

These frequencies will interpenetrate everything in this realm, marinating even the physical structures in its higher vibratory field and as a result stimulating all life to a new vibratory rate. The LTO is here to share encoded materials to help facilitate this activation of this collective consciousness. It is not necessary for me to go on the lecture circuit and promote books and so forth in order to accomplish this mission. This mission can be done anonymously and, indeed, is easier to do so because it reminds people that the effort is their own, the connection to God is their own, the will to summon their higher Self is their own, and the knowledge they truly need is minimal because they only require activation and the will to sustain and involve this activation. This is not the time for information greed, rather it's a time of heart-centered behaviors.

27:33 Mark: Okay. That's good stuff, by the way. I'm enjoying this a lot. James, you speak a lot about activation and how each of us can access the higher frequencies. Can you speak to the process of activation and how it comes about?

James: Yes, certainly. It is a very important topic and one that is particularly close to my heart. You see, you can be born into body, educated at the finest universities, live the perfect life from the biological perspective, but if the access to the universal currents, or Living Truth is shut down and these currents are not flowing through and into your human consciousness, then you are not really incarnate, at least... at least not as you were intended by

First Source, your Creator. Your incarnation is not complete, in other words. So this is a very important subject, as we have billions of people who are incarnated upon this planet, but are operating at a diminished spiritual capacity.

With our eyes and ears we perceive but a small portion of our universe. The light and sound frequencies that our biological circuitry perceives and processes is fractional. And when you add space to that equation it is infinitesimally small. It was understood that the human instrument would have its limitations, but like all things that are designed by our Creator, there are compensatory factors, which in this case is the human emotional system.

Our emotions are what connect us to the broader universe and the energetics that radiate from First Source. When one lives a love-centered life, practicing the six heart virtues to the best of their abilities in the smallest nooks and crannies of their life, they unfold around themselves an antenna. This antenna is etheric. In other words, it exists in a state of energy that our eyes and ears do not detect. And it's designed like a finely tuned instrument that both receives and transmits the radiations of the higher frequencies from First Source. So this antenna surrounds our human instrument, occupying the same space as our body, and yet because it's composed of light frequencies of a high nature, it's not bound to the reality and limitations of the third dimension like our physical body, for instance.

30:18. When our hearts are relaxed, loving and understanding, appreciative, trusting, the etheric antenna becomes... becomes receptive like a flower opening its

petals to the sun. If our heart is anxious, troubled, angry, or tumultuous, the same antenna, similar to the way a sensitive plant closes its petals at sunset, passes into disorder and its fine-grain connection to the higher frequency radiations of First Source are cut off or diminished.

This etheric antenna, from a biological standpoint, is anchored in the seven glands of the endocrine system which act as receptors to translate the higher frequencies of the Spirit domain to the body and mind, so that the mind can process the encoded information and the body can act upon it.

31:16 Mark: Is this the same thing as the seven chakra system?

James: Yes. Now, when people express anger or hatred, especially over time, their antenna can be damaged, or, more precisely, its sensitivity is diminished, causing a vicious cycle because at some level they realize that they are not receiving the ultra-fine perceptions which are their birthright.

It is precisely these ultra-fine perceptions that activate the individual. It's important to note that this antenna is never damaged from external emotions, in other words, negative emotions directed at you or others from an external source. Instead, it's diminished only by your own emotions of hatred, anger, frustration, and resentment. So, you see, your Spirit's presence in your life is directly proportional to this etheric antenna's well-being.

It's a very delicate, wondrous, even miraculous facet of a human instrument and its bond with Spirit. And, as this

antenna is unfurled, awakened, activated, strengthened, utilized and secured, it... it broadcasts the incoming frequencies of light and sound, or the higher frequency radiations of First Source to the energetic field around you, bringing you a more complete awareness of the multi-dimensional world in which you live.

Now, this luminous field that surrounds you is not an island anymore. As I said before, the islands are rising up as a continent of consciousness, and this continent is the collective entity I spoke of earlier.

33:09 Mark: So, what is the activation then?

James: The higher Self working in conjunction with Spirit is always the activator. It instructs the human instrument on the fundamental truths of the six heart virtues even before the individual can read or speak. These are innate understandings. They derive from the shared pool of wisdom that is the Living Truth, and this pool of wisdom is the very same that angels and enlightened beings draw from. This is the access that every student of Spirit seeks.

Once it is found it becomes your own. Once it is found, you realize that the circuitry of the heavens, of the material galaxies, star systems—and right down to the planet in your own human instrument—they are all aligned in a coherent design that makes the access to the shared pool of wisdom possible. The only thing that you need to do is to activate the etheric antenna transmitter, which is another way of saying—listen to your heart. And then sustain and expand this activation by living a love-centered life.

34:35 Mark: It almost sounds... almost sounds too simple.

James: Yes. It is simple. There is no complexity here because it is natural. It is with the grain, where the friction of effort is removed from the task, and because of the incoming energetics of our time, the task is even simpler.

I understand that there are many complex techniques related to posture, and breathing, and mantras, and visualizations, and so forth. I don't discount these techniques or approaches—activation is a highly personal process—and if your higher Self leads you to undertake these approaches then do so by all means. But also remember that the complexity can mislead. It can create a separation from your spiritual understanding that lives ever-present in your heart.

What matters is not how much we know about the spiritual techniques of the so-called masters or even how well we exercise this knowledge. What matters is our ability to love and to express this love into the finest grain realities in our life.

35:50 Mark: And James, when you say the “finest grain realities,” could you elaborate a little bit on that so we know what you mean?

James: First let me get a little glass of water, one moment please...

I think it has to do with the inner guidance. Because without this inner guidance you will have a hard time finding the finest grain realities, as they are very often unnoticed in the everyday experience of a typical person.



And this is because of the old paradigm that follows us around like a tired shadow. It tells us to not talk to strangers, and to not look into the eye of a person, to obsess about the external outward appearances of things, to be quiet unless you are spoken to. All of these things dull our connection to the inner Spirit that sustains and evolves our activation.

So it's necessary to express the six heart virtues into the smallest corners of your life. I won't give specific examples. The way... I understand that could be useful, perhaps, but with each example I could reveal I may conceal another inadvertently and, again, the whole purpose of the post-activation journey is to become sovereign and self-responsible. All I will say is to look into the areas of your life that seem insignificant to your mind, but have a certain magnetism to your heart.

We have a saying in Lyricus that: "The routines and blinders of the intellect are often the playground and windows of the soul."

You want your sense of identity to be rooted in the unified field of consciousness which is the shared property of all. If you can bring your identity to this perspective and sustain it in the face of life's resistance, then you will have left the old paradigm. And the eternal being that lives in your heart will provide the guidance you need.

38:21: Mark: James, I'm going to shift to a more personal question, if I may, since we're...

James: Of course.

Mark: ...since we're running out of time. Is that okay?

James: Okay.

Mark: Good. I have been studying these teachings since, and I am not sure I even should call them teachings, but since I got involved in WingMakers and I have to say I have learned, I think a pretty good amount of information. But I still don't have what I call—or at least what you are referring to—as this clear connection to the higher frequencies. And I am not sure I would qualify really as a spiritual person since I still get pretty angry when someone cuts me off in traffic; sometimes with more intensity than I care to even talk about. But I guess my point is: how do we know if we're on the right path or doing the right things?

James: Your condition, I'm happy to report, is very normal. Being vulnerable is part of this world experience, and it is also part of what connects you to others. If you hold yourself at some lofty height you could become unapproachable or, worse yet, indifferent to the plight and issues of the everyday person.

You see, the spiritual writings, by and large, are written by those who have been facilitated by Spirit to produce the information as a means to rekindle human awareness of the Creator, and the heart virtues that It lives through. These writers are often writing from a higher dimensional framework, where the gravity of real problems is sort of stuck off to the margins, if you will. Add to that the stressors that dictate our world and it is not an easy thing to remain a loving and sensitive heart. And so we do yoga,

meditation, breath work, toxicity assessments and a hundred other things to support our journey.

40:17. It's important to understand that all are equal in the eyes of God, whether you have ascended to the lofty planes of purity or you are just starting your climb from the desert floor, you are valued no more or less. And this is because we are all projections of a unified field of consciousness, and while, to be sure, we are individually focusing this field to conform to our unique character tendencies; at the bottom line, as they say in business, we are a family of explorers and co-creators. We are divine collaborators who, wearing the human biology, sometimes clumsily make mistakes.

When you experience the material world know that you are not experiencing it alone. And this is a very subtle distinction I am about to make, but it's an important one: You can converse with God, you can have the conversations of truth and love, and this is well and fine because it is education. But as you go through life it's indispensable to feel the presence of God... to experience the terrestrial world together as one. This is co-creation and it is a sizable step up from education.

41:44 Mark: I am not sure I'm clear about that last part, James. Could you elaborate on what you mean when you say co-creation is one thing, education is another?

James: Yes. That's precisely why I said it's a subtle distinction of the conversations between an individual and the Creator are important exchanges of energy and information, but it is always you and God, a plurality of exchange, if you will.

Co-creation is not a plurality so much as it is the exploration of the terrestrial world as one. God and you are one, and as you go through your life experience, God sees and hears through your human instrument, nudging you this way or that because you have invited Its presence into your heart.

Now remember, I suggested earlier that the heart or human emotional system is the primary organ of perception relative to the ultra-fine frequencies of the higher dimensions. If you invite God into your heart, if you feel this presence blooming, then as you experience your life you can feel that it is being done creatively in the moment together with God, not as you are experiencing life and then reporting back to God through prayer or meditation where you seek advice on this decision or that. This is how you know when you are on the right path.

43:15. Let me add one more thing. Your ego has an eternal counterpart and the purpose your ego has held in high regard is rooted in an historical context that is rapidly slipping into irrelevance. The landscape of creation is being renovated, so to speak, to allow for a chain reaction of consciousness that will sweep this planet and carry it and its creatures to new vibratory fields.

Now, the ego has been locked away in fear and lack of trust. It is as if these qualities were hard-coded into the human species. Ideologies, whether they are science- or religion-based, are nonetheless tethered to fear. They block the emanations of the higher frequencies that the human instrument was designed to function on. This is precisely why the individual is sovereign and why it is so critical that they activate themselves and live a love-centered life,

because it is only then that a sufficient number of humans can start the chain reaction of consciousness, the consciousness of eternity.

The material forces will respond to this frequency and become the actualizing force of eternity upon the terrestrial plane. In Lyricus we say it this way: “The Master of Matter will become the slave of eternity.” I realize that I moved off on some very wide-ranging concepts, but your answer is in this nest of concepts. You’ll just have to sort it out a bit.

44:55 Mark: Thanks, James. Yeah, I am sure I’ll be doing that. While I have been listening I find that much of what you have said...I have a feeling that I’m going to have to listen a few more times before I’m really able to make sense of it.

James: You may be right, but don't worry so much about making sense of it. This is as much a psychological process as it is a comprehension. It is a process of identity shift, so each individual can shift from the currents of fear and guilt to the currents of love and understanding. Because only in the currents of love do you realize that you are not the form you animate, but rather the energetic frequencies of the animation itself. And these frequencies—where do you suppose they derive from?

Mark: I guess I would say First Source.

James: Yes, from our Creator. And these frequencies, they dance in the moment, they do not know the past or future, they live in the now. So thoughts and feelings that search into the past or future, they can restrict the circulation of these delicate frequencies, and it is these

frequencies, like the pied piper, that lead you to the point—the very moment where you are open to transformation.

Now we have a saying that goes like this: “If you are peeling an orange do not be thinking about an apple.” In other words, stay in the moment, because this is where the frequencies of animation occur. This is where your power lies.

46:30 Mark: OK, that makes sense. Thanks James, I appreciate that. Mateo! For those of you listening to this, our cat, Mateo just jumped up on the table and is visiting James. He seems to like you.

James: There is no reason he shouldn't. What kind of cat is he?

Mark: He's a Ragdoll. The kind that go limp when you pick them up. Hence the name.

James: Yes, he is very relaxed. Very soothing.

Mark: Yeah, I don't know if the mics are picking it up, but I can sure hear him purring from where I'm sitting. Do you want me to take him, James?

James: No, no he's fine. If he wants to lay....

Mark: (Mark speaks simultaneously with James.)

James: Well, if nothing else he is a very good diversion, you see. This is the way Spirit works and is a good example of the fine-grain details of life, where in the certain frequency of 30 or 40 minutes and Mateo is just fine, and he suddenly jumps up on the table and asserts himself. Well, to me, it's Spirit's nudge to ease off the gas

pedal a bit and return to the playful side of life. It's all a rhythm, you see.

Mark: Yeah, yeah I follow you. James, do you still want to take a break?

James: Yes, let's do that, we can stretch our bodies and refresh ourselves. I know you wanted to show me some things, so let's do that now, and we can resume our talk in 15 or 20 minutes.

Mark: Signing off for now.

## PART II

Mark: Interview session number 2 with James, April 5, 2008 copyright 2008, WingMakers, all right reserved. Music.

0:32 Mark: We're back for the second part of the interview. I am Mark Hempel and I'm sitting here with James, the once anonymous creator of the WingMakers, Lyricus, and EventTemples web sites. I say once because I guess you're still anonymous but now that you are sitting here with me it seems less so, assuming that we share these interviews with the public. If you're listening to this and you haven't heard Part 1, which we recorded just a little earlier, you might want to start with that part first because it puts these interviews in context and I guess, in the interest of not wanting to repeat myself, I'm not going to do that here. So, partly in the interest of time and partly because I don't know if I'd do as good a job since I don't have my notes in front of me...besides which. So, anyway I'll skip the background information and get right to the questions, if that's okay with you, James?

James: Yes, and know that's fine, Mark.

1:31 Mark: One of the things I am curious about and I suspect our listeners are as well, is to know more about the world religions and how they relate to WingMakers, or if they do at all?

James: Any time you speak about world religions, I'm not sure how to respond because I don't want to insult anyone nor do I wish to make comparisons that are



subjectively unfair, which leaves little room for statements of any kind.

All I will say is that people can find their higher Selves and activate their higher connections to Spirit and God through most of the religious and spiritual movements on earth. There is no monopoly on the access points to Spirit and to the degree they don't feel...meaning the people, they don't feel this higher connection is emerging from their study, then they are probably better served to try something new, trusting that their higher Self will guide them to that which resonates with their innate feeling of the truth. If you go to an orchestral performance, at the beginning the musicians are tuning their instruments trying to find harmony. In a similar way, we are made by the same Creator, but our instruments are in different tuning codes and we are trying to find the point of harmonization. We are all tuned differently through our experience, genetic predispositions, education, and yes, I suppose religion and cultural conditioning play a decisive role as well.

3:15. Most religions compete, more than they seek to harmonize and, as I've said before, the key is activation of the connection between ego-personality, the higher Self, and the animating Spirit that flows between them. Once this activation occurs, what religion you are is quite academic, much the same way it doesn't matter what your citizenship is when you visit outer space.

3:45 Mark: Yeah, that's good—interesting analogy. The question I see in the subtext of the email linked to religion is the confusion of all these different spiritual paths have

on the individual as they try to, you know, figure out which one is best for them.

James: Yes, yes, I understand, but seekers are yet looking outside themselves. They seek what they sense they lack within, in part, because religion and culture tell them that they lack this ability and require intermediaries like priests and ministers, rabbis or spiritual teachers to find their way. The pathways of Spirit only appear confusing from the inside looking out and this is because the materials that are strewn before the typical seeker are confusing. One path tells you, “you are a sinner,” another path tells “there is no such thing.” One path tells you “to breathe this way and with this posture,” another says “pray in this form.” One path says, “the end is near,” another says, “we are just born in the Spirit of God, it’s a time of new beginnings.” So can all of these things be true at the same time?

4:57. It becomes equally confusing as you enter the scientific domain. Not long ago there was magic and wonder in the world, and then Newton and others came along, and the mechanistic universe was unveiled, and magic left our culture and stood on the fringes, like an orphan, and now...now like the prodigal son, magic has returned in the form of quantum physics.

On the one hand religion defined magic in the formulations of its leaders so as to manipulate the masses. On the other hand, science, eschewing magic, distilled our universe to the nuts and bolts of a mechanism in which our specialness as a species was just sort of like, taken out of the equation.

5:46. For example, “we are 99 percent the same as an ape,” “we are not the center of the universe,” and so forth. All of these theses or points of view, world views, influenced and it became larger and we became smaller, less significant.

In a sense, the quantum world came to our rescue as we became aware of just how little we know about the universe. This was an activation for the species as a whole that most people do not truly understand because humanity was beaten down with a mechanical uncaring universe and an invisible God. But then we discovered how we are all connected. The basic mechanics were anything but mechanical—they were magical—indeed, inexplicable, but that is the world of subatomic energies, frequencies of light and sound in which we live. I realize I got off track a bit, but the impression I want to leave is that I have great sympathy for the seeker in their confusion. It’s well known.

7:03 Mark: So what should people do in the midst of their confusion. I mean, what should they do to get clear?

James: The best place to start in trying to begin again is to simplify. This is a literate world where words rule the mind. The Spirit behind the words is key. It is more important than the words. Most seekers draw confusion to themselves because they compare the words written or spoken by spiritual teachers, or worse yet, they compare the interpretations of the words from spiritual teachers. Language was invented to facilitate trade and barter, commerce and later culture. Language of our world is a third-dimensional construct that is misleading and imperfect. So with words, be careful.

I'll give you an example. I can tell you the core truth in as little as two sentences. Here goes: "Just as the sun is the presence of God in our collective universe, you are the presence of God in your local universe. You are a light being in a universe of equal beings, each one is just as essential to the whole." So you see in these two sentences I have told you the seeds of Truth from which all other wisdom arises. There is nothing to be confused about in this Truth unless, of course, you fall back on your historical knowledge, so if you are confused you must bear some responsibility for your confusion, as it comes to you out of comparison.

8:54. Take the first sentence. "Just like the sun is the presence of God in our collective universe." What does it mean? The sun and God are one and the same? Well, for many this would be heresy. In some periods of our history you would have been killed for saying this—and yet it's the truth. Though it's more complex than simply saying, "Sun and God are identical." So the words themselves begin to confound truth.

So to simplify your own truth you need to have a framework from which your beliefs arise. The framework of Lyricus is to live a love-centered life by expressing the six heart virtues to all within your local universe. As you do this you become a conductor of your emotional system and you become the Presence of God in your world. It's a very simple framework, and one that springs forth from the most ancient of worlds, yet there's really been no evolution provided to it. It's not undergone interpretations, it's not been embroidered by any religious institution, it is not owned by anyone.

10:07 Mark: This might be a good time to ask a very frequent question about Lyricus.

James: Very well, but let me add something to your last question first. The world is not without paradox and complexity—it has plenty of both. The seeker in today's world has been overwhelmed by many, many stressors—the economy, their job, their family, their relationships, even their roles as mother, father, daughter, son, husband, or wife. These stressors inhabit the body and the nervous system is aroused by them, and not in a good way. The nervous system and endocrine systems coupled to the heart produce the network connection to the higher frequencies. In other words, they are your internal network and connection to the external network, the organizing fields of Spirit intelligence.

If you have too much noise in your body and emotional system, and by noise I mean stress that is built up and is endangering the sensitivity of your connection, remember that the practice of the six heart virtues is a method to release this noise or stress. There are many, many techniques that will help, even technologies and it's important that the individual discovers what works for them.

Doc Childre, the founder of [HeartMath](#), is the pre-eminent teacher on the subject and one I recommend without hesitation.

11:38. Seekers are often in search of the escalating complexity because the esoteric is seductive. If I see someone who is practicing the six heart virtues to the best of their ability they are, in my view, a greater master on

earth than the one who quotes the highest formulations of Spirit or speaks the elegance of Jesus, or Mohammed, or Krishna, or Buddha, or practices meditation every day, but then radiates discordant behaviors or thoughts.

The universe has an incentive system—it's called evolution—and so we understand that when we look at those things that have evolved into sophisticated techniques or organizations, and we imbue them with greater importance than those things that have not evolved and are simple, even innocent in comparison.

But the six heart virtues, living a love-centered life while disconnected from the evolutionary track of spiritual knowledge, are paradoxically among the most potent forms of truth for this particular time in humanity's evolution.

12:43 Mark: I know what you mean because I get letters from people who acquaint me with some of the more esoteric writings out there, like the Urantia Book, or Keys of Enoch, some of the Alice Bailey stuff and these are a couple examples that come to mind. And they have some really great insights in them, but they also leave me feeling a bit uncertain what to do next, you know, I mean with the knowledge itself.

What do you see as the key thing a seeker new to these materials can do to gain a sense of conviction, I guess I'll call it that, that they are on the right path?

James: Yes, well, the word "religion" is derived from the word, the Latin words, "re link." So to re-link into the higher Self is the esoteric meaning of the term religion. So, the seeker is attempting to re-link into their higher Self

which has been put in the shade of their ego-personality whose voice is sporadically heard and even less so acted upon. Thus, the seeker of truth must demand or feel a sense of reconnection with their higher Self, the animating Spirit that flows within it and then act upon it. It's not enough to hear the beautiful thoughts of one's higher Self or feel the power of its feelings, or the creative urges of its mind.

The human instrument must come into alignment and reposition the ego-personality to its rightful place, adjusted in the knowledge of its role as a facilitator of Spirit within the human domain. When the seeker sees these adjustments, and feels the re-linking into their higher Self, they will have a sense of conviction that they are on the right path. Remember, I said earlier, that it's a psychological process. It's the feeling of re-linking to one's own Divinity. It's the sense of empowered co-creativity with one's higher Self and its unalterable connection to the fields of Spirit that make possible its eternal connection to individuality and oneness.

In an alternating... like a sine wave, like a wave of existence, this is the power you hold within you. And every authentic seeker is called to this—this very special and very personal mission.

15:16 Mark: So you look at this as a mission of the individual?

James: Yes, it is in every sense of the word a responsibility of the individual to seek out their higher Self and come into alignment with the higher fields of their Source. And I use this term “responsibility” not as a thing

imposed upon the seeker from an outside source, but rather a recollection of their purpose for incarnating as a human on this planet at this time.

Once they fulfill this responsibility they will decide, quite of their own accord, what their mission is and with whom they wish to work with. Much of this goes on beneath the conscious awareness of the seeker. In some ways, they feel like they're caught up in a current, like a riptide that pulls them from the safety of the shoreline. The shoreline represents their past as an ego-personality and the currents are Spirit. And once the seeker comes into alignment with their higher Self they will be pulled by this current and positioned appropriately to fulfill their mission.

16:28 Mark: Is the mission different for everyone or it is pretty much the same?

James: It's really both. Every individual seeker as they awaken to their inmost Spirit and feel the currents of a love-centered life is pulled into very specific situations in which their energetics can be utilized by Spirit in the Grand Awakening of humanity. This does not mean that every moment is a contribution to this mission, but overall as you look at the mosaic of a life, let's say a course of a month's time, a contribution is proffered and awakening is brought a little closer, made a tiny bit more tangible and magnetic to all those who remain asleep.

At the collective scale, there are different phases of awakening and there are those who are just awakening who are seeking their purpose in trying to integrate the two worlds into a sensible composition. There are those who



are in deep slumber in their ego-personalities and cultural confinements and there are those who are partially awakened, but are manipulated by outside influences to remain with the sleeping masses. And there are those who are awakened and know with deep conviction in the commitment of Divine Love that their primary mission is to activate and rekindle all those in the aforementioned categories so they can all join the Grand Awakening.

17:59. Now, and this is important: The mission is not one of a “join the enlightened crowd and be happy,” nor is it “you poor people who live in ignorance, for the glory of God I will help you awaken.” This is not about preaching the good news to the sinners of the world. Those who slumber are not sinners. They are not bad people nor are they lower in standing than you or me. If you have ever seen a fish that inadvertently swam into a shallow tide pool and is now trapped, there is an instinct to help them return to the ocean and this is the instinct we have and nothing more. The fish held in the tide pool is still the same fish. It has the same powers and needs, it is simply trapped in the confinements of the tide pool and that diminishes its ability to be a fish.

18:55 Mark: Yeah, you know I get a lot of email from people, and I should add when I say I get a lot of email it’s really intended for you. [Laughter] But the sentiment is a bit edgy and that the person is frustrated that their mission or purpose seems, I’ll say mundane, at least that’s the impression I get from reading this stuff. It’s kind of caught up, as you just put it in a very small tide pool, or at least that’s their perception. What would you say to them?

James: Well, this is a very common problem for people because they feel the expanding grids and the larger purpose of their life and yet they confront traffic snarls, or sick children, or making the next mortgage payment, or the ripples of a relationship gone bad. All of these things impinge on their perception of their purpose because, in part, they feel the mundane and the Divine clashing in their lives. They don't necessarily see the two worlds as connected in any meaningful way, but they are. Have you ever seen a film that is very dark, even depressing in its darkness, but when the light comes into the film it's very bright, very fulfilling?

20:17 Mark: Yeah, my wife and I love the HBO show called *Carnival* or *Carnival* (different emphasis on the syllables)... I'm not sure if I'm pronouncing that right, but it's about as dark as it gets, because it's set in the Great Depression. When people shine... it really comes across from an emotional level. I think that's a good example of what you mean.

James: Yes, though I haven't seen the movie you mentioned, it can be a very powerful technique in storytelling and film-making to use the contrast of darkness to reveal the light with more fullness and depth, and that does this as well, you see.

The darkness isn't necessarily a huge event or evil person, as it's often depicted in film and stories, it can be the accumulation of hundreds of small things. But, however it arises, it creates the conditions whereby you can use the six heart virtues and shed your light into the darkness of the times and into your local universe. The irony is that this is the purpose we came here to undertake.

This is our mission, in effect, and yet most people find that the mundane distractions of life interfere with their lofty missions, when indeed—they reveal them.

Again, I want to add that I understand that this can be a difficult thing to see in this light, but if the six heart virtues were ever-flowing and easy to transmit, how would you develop your skills? How would you strengthen your determination to send these virtues amongst your local universe? How would you help in the situations of crisis or difficulty? How would your mission remain a vital element of your life over the changing times and how would you understand the situation about others and feel genuine compassion?

When the darkness enters your world, remember this is the time to use the heart virtues, to exercise them above all other times, as they will stand out, they will reveal your grace and that of the One you truly represent.

22:34 Mark: Yes, I've heard you use the term "local universe" several times today and it seemed like a new term to me. I think I know what you mean when you say it, but could you define it just to be sure?

James: Yes. One's local universe is the dimensional field that the individual is in moment to moment. For example, my local universe shifted many times just today. As I was at home in New York organizing for my trip, then drove to an airport, boarded a plane, entered another airport, met you, and now I'm sitting here in your office in Minneapolis.

My local universe embraces every one of those spaces or environments. Each has its own energetic field that is

the composite of a few people, or in some cases, like the airport, thousands of people. I can feel this composite, a field, I sense the frequencies, or I can choose to turn down my sensitivity so I can focus more internally. I can also choose to enhance the composite energetic field through my behavior, thoughts, or feelings. Certain environments I have more control over than others. For example, if you work in an office building you have some control over your personal office, but if you go to the cafeteria you must blend or mesh with the composite field that exists there.

So your local universe is wherever you are in the moment and wherever that is, from a physical or geographic point of view, you are also present in other dimensions, and in these higher dimensions you may shift your perception or awareness to a different local universe. The term “local” in this case only means it’s your present focus of attention and energy. And this is important because it means we’re not tethered to our physical geography.

24:39. Wherever you are in terms of your local universe, remember you are the presence of God in Spirit. You are like a sun within the sky of your environment and this sun expresses light. But it also absorbs the informational codes or inputs of your local universe and you can feel this absorption flowing into your soul where it is processed with ease and positioned in coherence for your human instrument to make use of.

There is a saying within the text of Liminal Cosmogony that is very appropriate here: “Let your universe be the altar upon which the consciousness of Spirit can descend.”

So, in a way, your local universe is a portal through which the consciousness of Spirit can enter into your human domain.

When I said earlier that my day included many geographical shifts, I didn't mention all the internal shifts because, partly, they would be too numerous to mention and partly because they are difficult to describe in words. As we say, "It's like trying to put a costume on an angel." Does this answer your question?

25:57 Mark: Yeah, I think so. Thanks, by the way. I do want to return to my question about Lyricus, but as you were talking something else popped into my mind that I wanted to ask you about.

James: Yes, good. It's wise to be instinctual and follow the sudden impulses when they arrive from your heart. Spontaneity and living instinctually is all connected to a love-centered life because only then can you live in the moment. I commend you for changing the conversation as your heart tells you. If we don't return to your list of questions don't worry, it's only because our higher Selves found a new way to engage and this new way is always better than the old predetermined way. When you operate in the currents of love you can have confidence that you know just the right gesture, or word to say, or thought to hold, or virtue to express in the moment. There is no referential source you need to get approval from. Trust this.

26:59 Mark: Okay. Yeah, thanks for that insight, I appreciate that. I almost forgot my question now; I got so carried away by your compliment. Okay, back to it.

The questions about kids. As you know, I have four of them and it seems like there is just more pressure for kids than there was in my time for growing up. What's your view of kids these days and what prospects do they have? I guess what I mean is that the news isn't that bright. Things like global warming, energy shortages, food prices going up, water shortages, over-population, yada, yada. You know, when you look underneath the covers there's a lot of potential problems looming.

James: Well, yes, as you know I haven't had the honor of raising children myself, so I'll begin my response with that admission.

It's a complex set of questions you've raised. Let me start by saying that children become entrained to their culture by the age of five. If their culture is fear-based, they themselves will generally with few exceptions learn this fear. This fear negates or diminishes trust, not only in the outside world or universe, but more importantly in themselves. This distrust expresses itself in very, very subtle characteristics many of which are not even noticed by parents because they are generational.

If children grow in fear they tend to define themselves in terms of mortality, or vulnerability and isolation. These qualities strangle the expansiveness and scope of Spirit that courses through their nervous system, their hearts and minds. Just one moment (takes a sip of water).

29:05. Imagine if you had a very powerful vehicle to explore our planet, but you were given a blindfold to wear at the time you were born. The only oddity of this blindfold is that it's relatively transparent at birth.

However, each month that goes by the blindfold becomes more opaque. By the time you are able to really control this powerful vehicle your blindfold is completely opaque. So now you can drive, but you can't see. Now you can explore, but you can only do so with extreme caution because you don't really trust your perceptions of your local universe. Yes?

Mark: Yes.

James: So this is a metaphor for how many children feel as they mature. The power of their minds and egos becomes an instrument of division because they are taught to perceive the outside world as separate from themselves, while the Spirit that lives within them beats a different message. It says, "Everything is one Being. We are all connected in this universe. Our Creator is benevolent and all-wise. The universe is our body."

So there's this dichotomy that frustrates them because on the one hand there is this mask they inherit from their culture that reduces everything it sees to disconnected parts for the purpose of comparison and analysis. On the other hand, the young person feels this unity and connection of Spirit below the surface, sometimes in dreams, sometimes in daydreams, sometimes in art and story, sometimes in real-life experience.

30:59. Children and young adults can access the intuitive wisdom through the harmonization of their hearts and minds—a bold trust of their instincts. But the flair and glamour of the pop culture has a very strong magnetism. The access to their intuitive wisdom is seldom found once the child creates their social persona or protective mask

that they wear, which gives them a corridor to retreat from the responsibility of higher awareness and purposeful energetic contribution.

There are some children and young adults that break this condition in the social and cultural order, but not in high numbers or ratios. It's done by the few who have strong blueprints, missions, and inner guidance to access this intuitive wisdom and utilize it for the Grand Awakening.

Now, more to your point, the future is bright because the intelligence of the human race is being intensified in the coming years like never before. This awakening or access to the higher order intuitive knowledge is precisely what many of the children of today are here to reveal.

With this access comes new inventions, innovative solutions, new ways in which humanity will solve the problems of energy, poverty, and its governments and disease, and resource distribution. It's not to say that these problems will be overcome in a matter of a few years, or when 2012 rolls around, all will be well with the world. No, it will not happen that way. It will happen more gradually, but the critical mass—the re-engineering of the human grids upon which we depend for our interconnections to Spirit—these will be brought to a new level of creativity and cooperation whereby the human and Divine agendas come into a more, let's say a new and higher harmony, and in this harmony positive change will take hold.

33:12 Mark: Now what about all the prophecy and disasters like nuclear wars, or earth changes, like floods, and earthquakes, and pole shifts, to name a few. Do these



still loom in our future before the good times can roll, so to speak?

James: There will continue to be calamities of various kinds. That's all part of the rhythm of nature and man, but it's not the events of the past that define our species, or the direction in which we advance, so much as it's the purpose and intention we carry within our hearts and minds. So, yes, there will be wars and natural disasters that trail in the wake of humanity and, yes, it will be natural to presume that the best indicator of our future is our past, but that's not really the case. Prophecy often neglects the finer energies of the human heart and mind, and instead is informed by the mistakes and disastrous judgments that we see materialize in our history books. There is a prime coherence that makes possible the gradual appearance of the bridge between Creator and creation. As this bridge materializes in the coming years, it will widen so more and more people can cross it and feel the vibrational influences of their Creator—moment by moment—whenever they choose to touch Him.

It's like the lifting of a fog that separates one identity from another, and despite all the evidence to the contrary, the future of humankind is as bright as a star and even more enduring.

34:59 Mark: Yes, I think that was more positive than I expected.

James: Yes, but I'm well aware that prophecy is a bit gloomy relative to humanity and earth, but as I said, within the hearts and minds of ordinary people is the vision of what is to be, even if we can't articulate it or grasp it with

our minds, we nonetheless emit this vision and purpose, and it goes out as a powerful imprint forming the future of humanity like a great Sculptor who wields galaxies like a hammer and chisel.

The deepest motives of the human heart are not found in words, but rather behaviors and energetic or etheric transmissions to share love and light to all creatures. These, these are the muscles and limbs of the great Sculptor or collective Being. And the reason this is so is because we are children of our Creator, Whose vision and purpose is stored within each of us, expressing Itself even when we seem far, far from spiritual godly living. We cannot turn this off any more than our sun can choose not to shine. [Pause.]

Food shortages will be an issue, disease will be an issue, or wars will be an issue, and these are all elements that will pull humanity into a new grid, or a new perspective relative to its values and behaviors. But the deepest motives, even when they are forgotten or ignored, remain as a collective signature of humanity, and these will be crystallized in our new institutions, our new technologies, our new leaders, and the new objectives of a united earth. This is our destiny. It's not the whim of a few teachers or even angelic hosts—it's the innermost pure ancient voice of our hearts and minds in a chorus of love where your identity is a cell in an evolving, ascending planetary organism. This organism lives and moves in the currents of love that fill the universe as light and sound frequencies from the highest to the lowest order.

37:31 Mark: I think that some of that may have gone over my head, but the great thing about audio is that you can rewind it and listen a few more times, right?

James: Again, don't concern yourself with understanding everything you hear. Sometimes it's more valuable to not understand, but just feel the energy of what is said. This energy is more important as it's often more activating than words or thoughts.

37:57 Mark: Okay, I'll do my best, but let's switch topics for a moment. I realize the heart has always been a factor in the WingMakers materials, it just seems like it's taken more of a center stage in the Event Temples site. Can you explain the reason for that, James?

James: Yes, it's true that the Event Temples is more focused on the heart center. But then, the heart and mind are the key elements of the human instrument, and in the WingMakers materials the mind was addressed more fully. And in the EventTemples, I suppose the focus was more squarely on the heart as a means to provide balance. But even in the poetry and art, and music of the WingMakers materials there is abundant reference to the heart and its central role in human activation and accessing the higher Self.

You see, the heart and mind are like two sides of the same coin, and, by the way, when I say "heart" I really mean the human emotional and intuitive system. And when I say "mind" I really mean the consciousness of the sovereign individual which includes the physical brain, nervous system, and associative mind consciousness. So, with those definitions out of the way—the heart is the

portal of the human instrument that enables it to feel the currents of love that flow in and around every individual, at all times. It's back to that antenna and transmitter I spoke about in our first sessions. It's really a sensory system that enables that feeling of connection to others and our mutual Creator.

39:36. Mind, however, is a powerful perceiver in many ways, though it kind of gets tangled with the ego-personality and the social conditioning of the small story in which culture lives. So, its power can be vastly diminished. The idea is to have both the heart and mind operating in harmony as both receptors and transmitters to ensure a good balance between the incoming streams of energy and information and the outgoing transmissions.

In the WingMakers' terminology, this is akin to the Wholeness Navigator, that part that looks upon one's local universe and genuinely perceives it as a three-dimensional web connecting all life in wholeness.

Now, the EventTemples website and materials are really focused on presenting one angle on how an individual can live a love-centered life, but not for the reasons that it brings you spiritual knowledge, or the security of good relationships, or less stress, but, rather, to be responsible in helping humanity shift to a higher dimensional perspective amidst the tumultuous times ahead, as we go through some of these birth pains of a new humanity.

41:01. It's important to understand—the heart and mind are seamless, as I said before, two sides of the same coin, and that that coin does not have a name to it. It's not definable as we sort out words to apply to it.

Paradoxically, it's wordless where its definition matters, and where it doesn't matter it's called things like soul, and integral self, immortal consciousness, and Spirit. But, all of these words pin it down inside a box the moment the word is used to describe it. That's how the mind works. It places things inside a box that is of a manageable size and can be seen according to a three-dimensional reality.

So, while the focus may be on the heart in this project, and the mind on another, the real focus is on the integration of the two into a harmonious expression of the virtuous heart and mind through the human instrument, into the worlds of timespace, which is here and now.

In this earth, in the year 2008, in the month of April, on the fifth day, and the fourteenth hour, and the twenty-second minute, and the twelfth second of time—I am making some of this up, of course—but, my point is that even when you have limited yourself into thinking that here and now is literally here and now, just the time you define it, it isn't.

There is no time or space that bounds your expression of the virtuous qualities within you. They are outside that box as big as timespace here and now is, but I understand the difficulty in making that distinction. All that's really important is to know that when you transmit your love-centered life into your local universe, you are touching more than your local universe and you are not locked inside the here and now, but can transmit it to all time—and even non-time.

43:10 Mark: Aha, so I see our discussion is starting to touch on time travel. You know, from the amount of email

I forward to you, that time travel is one of the more common themes, I'll say, not certainly in the top five or six, or whatever, but it's probably in the top, you know, ten or so.

In the WingMakers materials, time travel is discussed in some detail in the Ancient Arrow Project book. For those of you who haven't read all of the material, or looked at the book, at least... in there is described a technology called BST, or Blank Slate Technology. Do you want to shed any light on this topic?

James: Not particularly, not at this time. It's not that I don't find the topic interesting, but the energetics of our conversation would be better served if we stay on a different wavelength.

Mark: Okay, I understand.

James: You see, timespace is an invention of the mind to allow us to navigate in the three-dimensional reality. Something that is invented by the mind can always be influenced by the higher consciousness of the Spirit, as it is encompassing of the mind. So, as Spirit Beings, we time travel all the time.

The kind of time travel that was described in the WingMakers material... it has more to do with institutionalized time travel and bringing it within the domain of human technology. There are many projects that have experiment with time travel, and I merely disclosed one such project in the Ancient Arrow book. But it's a very, very complex subject when you begin to institutionalize time travel.

44:46 Mark: James, do you want to take a break yet?

James: Yes, it would be good to stretch our legs, but I'd like to make one final point before we end the session.

Mark: Okay, okay that's fine.

James: One moment. [Long pause.]

45:12. We are all members of a single organism much like individual photons compose a beam of light or trillions of electrons compose an electrical current that sweeps across a galaxy. When we move from the world of phenomena to the higher dimensions of reality, individuality is exchanged for community, and this community is vast and encompassing, and it contains an intelligence that mirrors its vastness.

In the times ahead, there will be shifting sands and creeping doubts and many people will feel fears trying to grasp them. May I remind anyone who is open-minded to the possibility that you are here at this time to give your love independent of the external world conditions and events.

It's the foundation of Event Temples to help organize these quantum communities, so that we can collectively stand as examples of love-based communities living amidst fear-based individuals. And easing fear, and guilt, and hate, and base survival, and ignorance, and greed energies that will be emitted in the coming years as the birth pangs of a new earth are released.

I understand it's very easy to fall prey to these fear-based energies and want to protect yourselves and loved ones, and prepare for tumultuous times—to, in effect, to

crawl inside a protective cocoon and wait for the chaos to pass. But the times, as hard as they may become, will be made easier for all in the broader community of humanity and earth, if those of us who came to this planet at this time fully awaken to our missions of receiving and transmitting love frequencies into our local universe—knowing well that the walls of our local universe extend to the most distant and ancient walls of our Creator’s universe. They are truly one and the same, and what we send out to one, goes to all. It circulates amongst the greater community and stabilizes it amid any turmoil.

47:39. So, it is our responsibility to own this time as makers of peace from war, creators of love from turmoil, changers of darkness to light, and transformers of despair to hope. If any of you question your mission or purpose—remember, it is this!

How you clothe your mission in terms of your work, or hobbies, or family, or relationships, well, this is up to you, and in the wide sense of reality—it doesn’t really matter. What matters is that you express a love-centered life into your local universe independent of external circumstance. You place this at the core of your human existence, knowing that if you so, you are a stabilizing force and of all the forces that are needed at this time—this, this is the most vital.

48:43 Mark: Yeah, you know, I get this, at least intellectually, but the doing of it’s another thing. I mean, maybe this is too extreme of an example, but if there are food shortages, and rioting in the street breaks out, or the economy really, you know, goes into meltdown, how do we remain as stable forces? I mean, wouldn’t it be natural



to get caught up in the chaos since it affects us, and I think it would be very hard to remain in the heart, or express a loved-centered life in the midst of this kind of chaos, at least.

James: I am not predicting there will be chaos, though it's a possibility. Much of the catastrophic events that were possible components of the birth pains of earth have been mitigated already. There're enough people around the planet to stabilize it. And this, by the way, is a significant reason for what some people would call over-population. In reality, it requires a very large human population on the planet to get a stabilizing force, energetically speaking... to entrain a higher order field on the planet.

Yes, the difficulty you speak of is true, if there are riots in the street, or the Internet is shut down for a few days, or if governments suddenly announced extraterrestrials are indeed real—these kinds of events would have profound implications to our social order. It would be like turning it upside down for a while, and in this state of disorder it would be hard to think, act, and express outside of the social reaction, especially with the media fanning the flames of fear and apprehension.

And yet, this is precisely what you will be asked to do. Whenever you feel your ability to radiate the love-centered life is in jeopardy or diminishment, you need only to call on your higher Self to replenish it, to tap into the reservoir of love and compassion that surrounds you at all times.

50:50 Mark: You know, James, how does one call on the higher Self, or tap into this reservoir you speak of? Is there a technique you recommend?

James: It's a fair question, but there are no formulas in this regard, Mark, or at least, not ones that, in my view, are effective.

Let me answer you this way. If the people of our world knew only the condition of sleep, it would be logical that they would then fear the dawn. The people would wonder, "What is this strange light that awakens us?"

This is the time when Spirit is victorious over the forces of materialization and it will emerge with the calm supremacy that's the signature of its Source. And this emergence is like the dawn, as light falls over our world and stirs people awake. Sometimes this light will stir turmoil and unrest, but this is only because people have been asleep for so long that they fear the changes that this light brings, as they know, at a deeper level, that these changes are profound and lasting, and carry with them a responsibility that they themselves must adopt, or be left behind, in a sense.

52:10. Those who are truly awake, they'll see these tumultuous times as demonstrations of this light and it will not evoke survival instincts, or run-and-hide tactics of despair. They will feel a new power that comes to them unbidden, in the sense that they don't call for it consciously, but it will flow over them nonetheless, like a new current of energy and they will anchor it, share it, and experience it like never before.

You see, I could give you this technique or that, but in the end, it's really just a string of words. Instead, what I have shared is the Spirit behind the words, the force behind the object and this, in my opinion, is more

valuable. So, listen if you want, to the Spirit force, as it will inform you and keep you focused on the mission that you came to be part of, and to achieve as a collective intelligence. I think that's enough for this session, Mark

53:20 Mark: Okay, yes, no, I understand.

James: Yes, let's stretch our legs and refresh ourselves a bit.

Mark: Okay, signing off. We'll pick up on session three in, well it doesn't matter to your listening because it's all... there's no time pause, but for your sake, James we'll start in about another ten or fifteen minutes. Okay?

James: That's fine, Mark.

## PART III

00:01 Mark: Interview session number 3 with James April 5 2008, copyright 2008 WingMakers, all rights reserved. Music.

00:33 Mark: Okay, we're back for the third and final part of the interview. I'm Mark Hempel and I'm here with James, (the anonymous creator of the WingMakers, Lyricus, and Event Temples websites.) If you're listening to this and you haven't heard parts 1 and 2, you might want to listen to those before taking on this one.

00: 55 Mark: (some noise) As in the second interview I'll skip the background information, but if you're interested in that stuff, listen to the beginning of the first interview. Okay, now for the questions... and James, I'm reminding you that I'm going to ask some more personal questions in this section, so if any of these get too personal for you, just tell me...

01:20 James: Yes, I understand... let's see where Spirit takes it.

01:25 Mark: I guess I should mention that we're just letting these interviews go organically. I'm recording onto my hard disk and really not worrying too much about editing things at this stage, so this is kind of a free flowing interview. Okay, alright maybe the most basic question I get James is who you are. So let's just start with that one.

Who are you?

01:49 James: Well, that's an open-ended question isn't it?

01:51 Mark: Not to interrupt, but I mean that in terms of your background... where did you grow up, what kind of family did you have, did you have siblings that sort of thing...

02:00 James: Yes, well...I grew up in Spain, in the outskirts of Barcelona. I had a normal childhood—at least for those in my town. I suppose I had some advantages, as my father was a scientist... so I had access, at an early age to books and lectures on the various sciences.

02:21 Mark: Your mom, did she have a career as well?

02:23 James: No, she was, as they're called today, a stay-at-home mom.

02:27 Mark: And siblings?

02:28 James: Yes, I have an older brother and younger sister.

02:31 Mark: Did you grow up in Spain... or did you move around a lot?

02:33 James: Well, because my father worked for the government, my family moved a few times in Europe... mostly northern Europe, but we stayed in London at one time and we even lived in India while my father taught there for two or three times.

02:50 Mark: When did you move to the United States?

02:52 James: About twelve years ago. I'd been to the US several times as a visitor previous to moving here permanently.

02:58 Mark: Can you tell us what your first memory was when you started to awaken to... to this mission in your life?

03:08 James: My first memory is actually from my mother who told me about a dream I'd described to her when I was only about five years old. To be honest, I don't remember the dream so much myself, but I do remember my mother describing the dream to me many times over the years so I feel I remember it quite well through her re-telling of the dream to me.

The dream was about my interactions with a group of spiritual teachers, but apart from that—what I can only assume was a muddled description of what I learned in the dream—the thing that particularly impressed my mother was how enthusiastic I was in the telling of the dream. She said I came downstairs from my bedroom gesturing like an orchestra conductor—waving my arms this way and that—it was probably quite a sight... bubbling over with excitement.

04:01 Mark: That's kind of funny to imagine you in this way... why do think this dream was so activating for you?

04:06 James: Well, I don't really know that it was THE activating force in my life, but it was important to my mother and she felt that this dream had a special meaning. So she, being more philosophically-minded than my father and... and more willing to see these dreams as more than just dreams. She was quite certain that I needed a spiritual

education as much as my father was certain that I needed science. So in a way, this dream caught my mother's attention in ways I didn't even appreciate or understand at the time. All I know was that she became more attentive to my spiritual side. For me, after I told the dream, I was probably out catching frogs after breakfast... but for my mother, she became my spiritual guardian in a sense, and made sure that I had the books, teachers, and time to cultivate my interests in the spiritual side.

05:07 Mark: Was your family active in religion?

05:11 James: My father was dutiful in his practice but he didn't have his heart in it. To him, religion—at least as it was taught in our church—was more of a community service than it was a place to learn things. And he was all about learning new things. For my mother, church was a sacred experience and again, not so much about learning things from the priest, as it was to experience the subtle energies of Spirit.

05:42 Mark: From your descriptions, your mom was sort of the one who got you interested in this whole spiritual side of life...

05:48 James: Mothers are often the ones that nurture this aspect of the child. The sensitive mothers often have a closer bond to the child's heart and sense their blossoming—the unsheathing of that etheric antenna-transmitter I spoke of earlier. And they tend to share more developmental time with the child as well. As you point out, this was the case with my mother.

06:15 Mark: Would you like to share any details of this dream?

06:22 James: No, it'd be difficult to express it in a way that would add value to this conversation, Mark. Suffice to say it made a singular impression on me because I knew, even at that age, that I was part of another group, if you will, or tribe on the other side. I knew I was operating in two or more worlds simultaneously and my education was being directed as much from within, as it was in the schools of our world.

06:54 Mark: James, when did you think of doing this whole project? By whole project, I guess I mean WingMakers, Event Temples, and Lyricus. When did that whole vision kind of come together?

07:05 James: Well... since I was a young child I knew I was an interpreter. I realized this because I saw in my friends that they lacked this language. And it seemed very odd to me that they instead wanted to think and talk in the language of adults when the language I heard within myself was so much more engaging, nuanced, clean, and clear.

When I turned 9 or 10 years old, I lost this connection. This was during the time when my family moved to India. It was a cultural shift that caused the disconnection, and I became very adept at defining a new voice: the voice of separation, otherwise known as an atheist.

07:51 Mark: You, you are going to tell me you were an atheist!

07:54 James: In India, my father was actually more available to me than any other time in my life and his influence was strong as a result.



08:03 Mark: Was your father an atheist?

08:04 James: No, no, he was agnostic with a strong hope that an intelligent being designed it all, but he was always one step short of the total embrace until he passed.

You see, his post in India was quite simple for him so he had time on his hands, and so I became his pupil of sorts. He also knew that I wasn't enjoying my time in the local schools. It was very hard on me... on all of his children, and perhaps somewhat out of guilt, he made sure that he spent a lot of time with me, and my siblings as well.

08:38 I dove into the world of science, and my mind—for the first time in my life—became the conductor of my worldview. I devoured books on subjects of philosophy and science, and my inner voice gradually became silent in the presence of these great authors. I began to construct elaborate mental theorems and ways to prove—to anyone who would listen—that God did not exist.

09:12 Mark: What did your parents do? I assume your mom must've wondered what happened to you.

09:16 James: She understood. It was just a phase. You see, I needed to feel the point of view of an atheist. I needed to understand their sense of separation and appreciate their intellectual modalities of logic and persuasion.

09:31 Mark: How long did this phase last?

09:32 James: About two years.

09:34 Mark: What happened to shift you out of it?

09:38 James: I started to interact with my internal world and it became very obvious to me that something was happening that neither science nor philosophy could explain.

9:48 Mark: And how old were you at this time?

09:50 James: About eleven...

09:51 Mark: What kinds of experiences were happening?

09:53 James: I'd prefer not to go into details about this Mark, but I'll say it was like a reunion with my inner tribe and I became reacquainted with the reason I incarnated at this time.

10:05 Mark: Is this when you got the idea for WingMakers and Lyricus?

10:09 James: There is always a seed vision for this type of work. The seed was given to me through the dream state and it was my intuitive awakening to this seed that began to bring it forward into my life. It was not like some angelic being sat at the foot of my bed and dictated this vision to me, or pronounced me as one of the chosen few, or that it was clear to me in the span of a single moment or even day.

It was the simple and gradual awakening to the vision and why I had come to this planet within the human instrument. Some artists refer to this muse as the means through which they gain their inspiration or access their vision—artistic vision, and from my perspective the muse is one's Higher Self or Presence, it is not an outside force.

11:05 Mark: Is this the time that the WingMakers project started to crystallize?

11:09 James: It was about this time, yes. But the real impetus for my work came from experimentation. And by this I mean honing the crafts of poetry, music composition, painting, writing and looking at each of these expressions as extensions of my self—my Higher Self. I knew that this would come forward only if it was aligned with the mission I came to serve.

11:34: At an early age I had begun to paint, and was quite good at it, but by the time I was eleven I had begun to see my art as more than painting... it became a symbol of the higher frequencies I was in contact with, and, as a result, everything else flowed including the poetry, music, philosophy and writings. The paintings became the conductor of the project.

Around the time I was 15... I became aware that my experimentation on how these different art forms could be brought together was designed to serve the mythology of the WingMakers.

12:15: I understand that the concept of the WingMakers as... as a future representation of humankind is difficult to believe for many people, but the word “WingMakers” is an encoded word that symbolizes this reality... that a future composite of humanity can indeed interact with its past existence. It’s like the symbol of Eternity—the Ouroboros, the snake that eats its own tail.

The WingMakers chose me as an interpreter of their reality—our future reality— it’s not in the sense of their lifestyle or technology, but rather their mere existence and

the existence of the Grand Portal as it pertains to human destiny because it's through the Grand Portal that we, in a sense, re-unite with our future selves.

13:15 Mark: Did they give you instructions on what to do or what to create?

13:20 James: No. They did not. They simply brought me into their Presence... as an invited guest to experience—to the best of my ability—their vibrational world and the culture therein. Outside of timespace, I'm from this same world—as we all are—yet very few of us have experienced it, let alone heard of this other reality called our distant future.

13:45 Mark: How would you describe this, because to me it's a very hard proposition to get my mind around?

13:53 James: It's a hard thing to describe, Mark. It's a little like an immense line of humans winding its way from the depths of the desert floor to a towering mountain top, and those at the top of the mountain, they have a video camera and they pass this miraculous view of the larger world that they see down the line so that those on the desert floor—and every step in between—can experience the inspiring view that beckons all of them to ascend... to climb into new territories, new dimensions.

That's about as close as I can come to describing it with words, Mark. The future of humanity extends much further on the spacetime continuum than its origins arise from history. Why would it seem improbable that our future selves could communicate to our spacetime in the 21st century, and not with technical interventions, but simply

through the empowerments of a higher, more encompassing consciousness?

14:56 One of the truths that will shock humanity in some not-too-distant future will be the realization that our future collective interacts with our present form much more than we realize. This is a complex subject, Mark unto itself, because many of the so-called interactions with the Creator, angelic beings, or Spirit are really interactions with our future selves, as a collective consciousness. This collective consciousness is symbolically called WingMakers or in some distant time the Elohim or Shining Ones, but regardless of the name you put to it, it is the quantum, collective consciousness of the human species in a far distant spacetime, reaching into ours.

15:44 Mark: How does this happen that... that our future selves can contact us, but none of the materials on the planet talk about it? It seems like our holy books or some gurus would be talking about this. Why is it missing from the spiritual literature?

15:58 James: Well, again, the WingMakers live in mythology. It's a little like the quote attributed to Willie Sutton when he was finally captured... the FBI agents supposedly asked him "Why do you rob banks?" And Willie said, "Because that's where the money is." The WingMakers live in mythology because that's where the story lives. Information, you see, lives and dies in very short life cycles like a Mayfly whose adult life span is measured in minutes. But mythological stories, they live for thousands of years, are translated into hundreds of languages and cultures, and their pulse is just as strong today as it was a thousand years ago, if you study them.

16:46 So, the WingMakers represent our future selves just as we represent their ancestral selves. We are—at one level—the same, when you take spacetime out of the equation of course. The future is rendered in obscure mythological stories because our future selves don't want to overextend their help by interfering with our own choices and freewill.

There are other species—extraterrestrial in nature—that are also linked into our human cause or destiny and they also want to be helpful, but not preempt our collective vision, because they know already what we have become, and this post-human chrysalis we are currently in is very, very impressionable.

17:32 Mark: So in other words, because our future selves are already known to be like wise and loving beings, no one wants to screw it up by interfering with us? It's sort of like that?

17:47 James: Yes, but that's a simplification. The human species extends well beyond our current definition of what a human is. As you know, everyone on our blue planet is 99.9% the same in terms of their DNA, and yet if you go to a shopping mall and sit on a bench for an hour or two, you would not say that everyone walking by appears to be 99.9% identical. There is indeed great variation in the human species in every dimension you can measure it, except in DNA. This substance we call DNA is perhaps the most guarded essence in the cosmos because it's the thread that knits timespace to nonspacetime, and in that trajectory, defines a species destiny.

Just as you can think of DNA as personal to an individual or a family's genetic line, you can also think of DNA as a collective—at a species level—and contained within it is the fuel to reach the Central Sun of a galaxy. I realize this seems metaphorical, and in part it is, but the essence of what I say is quite literal.

19:05 Mark: Okay, it's good. I'd like to return to our initial interaction with the WingMakers. What was the experience that convinced you to develop the materials and mythology?

19:16 James: I understand your interest in tracing this back to the headwaters or source material, but as I've already said, it was not contained in a single experience, or "ah ha" moment. I'm aware that some people have had this type of sudden awakening where cosmic consciousness floods their human instrument and they are forever changed by the light. In my case, it was less spectacular, and more of a gradual succession of events and experiences that shaped my energetic alignment to the WingMakers.

19:51 Mark: But when you first communicated with them, what was it like?

19:55 James: I'm not trying to be evasive, Mark, but let me try to explain it like this. Let's say I'm an astronaut, but instead of a spaceship, I make use of my consciousness to explore new spacetime dimensions. In doing this, on one journey I stumbled upon a consciousness that was non-terrestrial, operating outside of our spacetime, and yet, because of our spacetime trajectories, a powerful

connection was instantly made as if it was set-up in ancient times with meticulous care.

20:34 When I first made contact with this collective consciousness it was obvious that it had an intelligence that dwarfed mine and yet it was so intimate with my world that it could only be a part of it—either as an observer or as an experiencer. As it turned out, it was both. When I first began to interact with this consciousness—what I later came to know as the WingMakers—I wasn't sure if it was two, a hundred, a thousand, a million or even a trillion different entities, but over time it became quite clear that the number wasn't so important as much as the transmissions they provided relative to humanity's destiny.

21:20 Mark: James, before you go further, let me get clear on this one thing. So, the WingMakers are a composite entity that's in our future? Right? I guess in other words, we're all—in some far-distant future—going to become unified as one consciousness, somewhere in space, and every once in a while a person like you will project their consciousness far enough into this future spacetime and make contact? Is that what you're saying?

21:55 James: It's a complicated exchange of ideas. Let me try it this way, but first let me be clear that it's no one's shortcoming that this is hard to understand for you... or anyone else listening to this dialogue, it's equally hard to describe for me. So I will take credit for the abstraction, if you will.

22:14 The WingMakers have a different frequency of existence, which is to say they operate without the density of our human instruments at this stage of their existence,



but this is different than being discarnate or entities that have left their bodies through death.

They still operate in a human instrument, it's just a finer frequency of light or quantum structure, but it's still a sheath or instrument of individuality.

22:40 Now, one of the byproducts of living in this finer frequency is that the walls between individuality and unity are permeable, so the ability to move between the individual state and the state of union is simply a thought away. Just as we shift thoughts—they can move from sovereign individuality to Oneness in consciousness and back again with ease. In the state of Oneness, the WingMakers—as a state of collective consciousness—have access to the shared holographic records that have been compiled over the species' evolutionary rise from a simple biped to an enlightened, Coherent Collective, aligned to the frequencies of Source Intelligence.

So, with access to this hologram, they can insert themselves into our spacetime as an event string. This is carefully engineered to reveal their identities, but always clothed in a mythological context so they remain meaningful, rather than just informational, or, worse yet, objects of fear.

23:47 Mark: What do you mean by that?

23:49 James: You may not realize this, Mark, and few people do, I suppose, but lotus seeds and date palm seeds have shown themselves to retain their germinative powers even after a thousand years, and several years ago I remember hearing of a date palm seed that was over two thousand years old that had grown into a tree. So, these

seeds are preserved their powers of life and transformation.

24:18 Now, the relevance of this is that mythological stories are like these seeds, they retain their potency because they are not trying to be explanatory, but rather meaningful. Everything in today's culture tends to gravitate around explaining what this information means in terms of usefulness, but in the case of the WingMakers they are more interested in activating people who are prepared to become sovereign entities, and then to apply this empowerment to their local universe and transform it.

24:49 If you were to draw a circle around you that extended 15-20 feet in diameter, that is approximately your local universe. This is your conscious, energetic environment, and in the grand scheme of a multiverse of unlimited scope, it may seem like a pittance... like a tiny particle in a boundless ocean. But in reality, what is contained in this sphere of consciousness is much more than the spatial volume of 4,200 cubic feet, because within this sphere the dimensions of the multiverse are present, even though they're not visible to your senses—they are still there.

25:30 And so, you have to think of this spatial volume—the energetic sphere of your local universe—as being the equivalent of a portal that connects you to the multiverse through the Presence of your soul. This is the key message that the WingMakers embed in their mythologies, and this is the key message of my own work, as well. The human self-possesses a local multiverse whose chief architect and governing intelligence is your Quantum Presence. And this Presence is composed of the

fabric of Source Intelligence, and just as Source or Creator operates in the non-local multiverse, your Presence operates in your local multiverse.

26:17 Mark: Can you elaborate a bit on what you mean here... I mean it seems that what you're saying is that we're Gods in our own universe—

26:26 James: Multiverse. The local multiverse is the sphere that contains you—not only your present self, but the collective energetic frequencies of your incarnations are included in this local multiverse, your emotional and mental frequencies flow into and surround this multidimensional field. Within your local multiverse you have domains of consciousness or... or energetic frequencies that create a federation of consciousness.

This federation congeals into what you see right now through your human body. Most people call this consciousness the third dimension or human domain. There are other dimensions as you well know and I won't bother to describe them all, but the higher mental domain is one of critical importance as it is the switchboard between the Quantum Presence and the emotional domain or heart.

27:22 Mark: When you speak of the Quantum Presence, are you referring to Soul?

27:28 James: Yes, but the definition is placed out of its historical, poetical context into one that is more relevant to our time.

27:36 Mark: Okay, I can appreciate that, but it's hard to keep up with all of the definitions as they change or shift.

27:44 James: The changing vocabulary is not by accident. It sets a tempo of adaptation and helps to dissolve older paradigms, exchanging them with new ones that are more aligned to the incoming energies.

You noticed that even in the time we've been talking I've shifted from local universe to local multiverse, from Higher Self to Quantum Presence. This is the way of our current world. We need to operate in flex and ease in order to allow what is to transpire... to transpire. It means that we need to give birth to a new concept one day and dissolve it the next. This may seem like instability or a lack of harmony, but indeed the harmony is in the flexibility to flow with your local multiverse and all that you encounter therein.

28:39 Mark: I feel that we got off our subject... the more personal line of inquiry that I had started, and then we ended up here, which you know I like this discussion very much but I want to ask you. Do you want to return to the....

28:56 James: I understand, Mark, but Spirit brought us here so let's stay for a while, as there's much more to tell, and I'm positive there's much more vital information here than in my personal stories.

29:09 Mark: Okay... well that's fine with me. I'll let you steer the interview.

29:12 James: I'll suggest that allowing Spirit to steer is the better course.

The heart anchors the higher frequencies of the Quantum Presence within the sphere of your local

multiverse. In fact, if you drew a dot in the exact epicenter of this sphere, it would lead you to your heart—the focal point of your human self and spiritual consciousness, and its every heartbeat, since its very first vibration, before you were even a human form, was activated by the Presence of your immortal self.

So you see the Quantum Presence—in a sense—created you and it is the true intelligence within your local multiverse. It is the holder of omniscience and omnipotence—relative to your local multiverse. And while I say this of you, it's just as true for every human being that walks the Earth. Each of us is constructed in this same pattern and possesses a Presence... without it, your heartbeat... your life... would be impossible.

30:16 Now, this Presence needs to create a mesh between the human self and its point of Presence, which is above you at the top of your local multiverse and it envelops your human self-flowing into both your heart and higher mind. As I said earlier, the Higher Mind is the switchboard that connects the Presence with your heart, so it enables this two-way communication and the behaviors of virtue to be expressed through your human self into the human world.

30:50 Mark: But you know James, not everyone is at the same level... I mean some people seem like they discount the soul, or Quantum Presence, as you were putting it, thinking that the mind is the highest authority. So why is this? Why didn't God make it so we would all be able to connect to this Presence with ease?

31:10 James: First of all, the multiverse is in perfection and every sphere of the human self is part of this perfection despite how it may appear in the human domain. If you could walk up to anyone and peer into the sphere of their local multiverse—at the quantum level—you would see its perfection because time is not part of the quantum dimension and it is only time that separates the perfection of the multiverse from the human self. To me, all of your struggles to know your Quantum Presence, to understand your purpose, to feel an unshakable connection to your Creator, these are all in the past.

Do you understand?

31:55 Mark: You know, I'm not sure I do, but let's keep going; maybe something else you say will bring me some clarity.

32:01 James: Yes, that's good, Mark. It's wise to let go of those things you don't instantly resonate with or make sense to you. Sometimes releasing this intellectual need to understand things is precisely what brings in the understanding. The interesting thing is that the activation of the Presence is a simple process but rarely acknowledged by the leading spiritual paths on the planet.

32:26 Mark: Why is that?

32:27 James: It is hard to say mostly because it renders the institutional foundation obsolete. For example, if a spiritual path says it's without a founder who had an extraordinary spiritual experience, then the religion seldom evolves into something anything sustainable. Try to imagine Christianity without the conversion experience of St. Paul, or Buddhism without the enlightenment of the

Buddha, or Islam without the rapturous visions of Mohammed. These religions—at their core—require their founders to venture into the mystical heights, and these experiences then become institutionalized as THE PATH.

33:13 When indeed the experiences were in fact the individual interacting with their Presence and tapping into its intelligence... just as any of us can do. But then what happens, is the leader is framed outside of humanity with a unique destiny, and to some extent that's true, but the core experience—access to their Presence and its innate empowerments—this is absolutely normal and available to all who put forth the effort.

33:44 Mark: So activating one's Presence... are there specific techniques or approaches that work for most people?

33:52 James: The Practice of the Presence is an important facet of Lyricus. And it's a practice that requires both discipline and patience. The basic framework deals with understanding the relationships of the Quantum domain with the mental and emotional domains of the human self. We call this: The Wholeness Paradigm.

In our modern world, the intellect and emotions can generate a great amount of discord and incoherence within the local multiverse and this creates a field effect that can cause an unintended disconnection between the human self and the Quantum Presence. So this phase of the Practice is concerned with emotional coherence leading to virtuous behaviors, and mind attunement leading to surrender, and I mean surrender in terms of allowing your Quantum

Presence to be the governing intelligence over your feeling and thought domains.

34:53 Mark: How is that done though? I mean how does one surrender to the Presence when it's such an abstraction for most of us?

34:59 James: ...Pause. It's a perceptive question, and I'm very glad you asked it. First, the discord within the emotional body requires transformation, which is to say, the feelings of anger, frustration, greed, judgment... envy, and disappointment... all of these negative emotions are energetic densities that accumulate in your local multiverse and their energies need to be cleared... essentially escorted from your local multiverse.

Remember when I was talking about the etheric antenna/transmitter?

35:40 Mark: Yes.

35:42 James: Well, that's what is shut down amid these calamitous frequencies... and that's all they really are—frequencies—the harmonics of disharmony. So in order to clear these accumulated frequencies, one needs to keep open their heart, because the heart is the ground upon which the etheric antenna is planted, and its roots, metaphorically speaking, they enfold the heart and are supremely sensitive to the heart's frequencies.

It is through the practice of the six heart virtues that the Presence is invoked, in part. This invocation or Practicing the Presence... it's not an exact formula. It never is. Some of the Ascended Masters use specific techniques or decrees, but those within Lyricus, we prefer to only offer



the paradigm and let the individual co-create with their own Presence the optimal way to invoke its governing intelligence into their life.

36:42 Mark: I'm just curious James, why do you call it the Wholeness Paradigm?

36:51 James: Well, and this is very important, so please listen carefully; because the local multiverse and Quantum Presence are the core elements of understanding that the individual requires. These are the activating elements of the paradigm. With this understanding of your Presence, and its local multiverse, you can navigate to wholeness, you really don't require any other teaching or teacher, provided, of course, you're resourceful, and patient, and persistent, and act upon the guidance of your heart and your Presence.

37:32 Within the heart of the individual—prior to their activation or awakening—lives a fragment of First Source, but only sufficient in energy to enable the life, or entry into the schoolroom of the human domain. It is not, in itself, powerful enough to propel it instantly into the state of Wholeness. This, this can only be done in steps and each of these steps is the beckoning from the human self to the Presence that surrounds and envelops it. The human heart reaches out to the Quantum Presence and in each effort of calling, invoking, appreciating, summoning, believing, praying, loving—its energy is strengthened, its bond with the Presence becomes clearer, its vision is more encompassing. It allows Presence to be the governing intelligence that pervades the local multiverse and then you are sovereign... then you are limitless within your

local multiverse... and you see the Presence in others even when they cannot. (Silence.)

38:44 Mark: I find myself very light-headed... mesmerized might be another way to say it... Yeah, I want that. What you were just saying, that's what I want. So, what you just described, you know, that's what I think people want.

39:04 James: Then play with the Wholeness Paradigm. Play with this paradigm and breathe it into your life. Take the thousand steps of loving and appreciating your Quantum Presence. There are no shortcuts because preparations must be made for the merging of your human self with your Quantum Presence. They exist in different frequencies and to mesh these frequencies is not something you want to do too quickly, so be kind to yourself and others, and have grace and patience. Each morning as you arise to enter the schoolroom of your human self, invite your Presence to accompany you in all of the geometries of your life... even the mundane and ordinary passages.

39:52 Feel this bond between your human self and your Quantum Presence as a partnership ordained by First Source, and enabled by your most powerful aspirations as an immortal being—the aspirations that you are afraid to even imagine for they seem too unlike you—too extraordinary for any human to believe. And yet here you are, even now, leaning forward with your divine ears, knowing that what I say is indeed your truth. This is resonance. This is how you are guided. How you navigate the local multiverse that is your schoolroom.

40:39 Mark: Thank you, James, I don't know exactly why, but of all the things you've said today, that one really hit home. I can feel... I can feel something shifted inside me just hearing these words. But, I guess it's the sense of confidence that lacks in me, and probably most people for that matter, that all of this is real. You know... much of what you just said, I know it's in the WingMakers philosophy section, which I've read over the years [nearly ten years ago], but I don't think I moved the intellectual comprehension into this heart understanding.

41:16 James: And that is key, Mark, to hold the understanding in all parts of you, not just your head.

41:23 Mark: You're talking about the 4200 cubic feet thing?

41:26 James: To some extent, but this confidence is really harmony. There's a harmony of understanding, where the local multiverse is harmonious because knowledge and understanding flow with ease and the individual feels that they have access to every insight or solution they require. That whenever a problem arises, a solution arises hand-in-hand. Whenever a bad mood buds in, you can dispel it with ease. Whenever a doubt of your Presence arises, you have the power to dismiss it.

42:02 A common way people lose their harmony, and by association, their confidence, is through judgment—of oneself and others. And what is the antidote of judgment? It is blessing. Next time you're around a person or a group of people and you find yourself going into judgment, shift your emotions to blessing them. Feel your Presence—your 4200 cubic feet of Presence reach into their Local

multiverse and overlap in common interest, and that common interest is to exchange blessings as divine beings.

42:41 This is but one example of how you can transform the discord of doubt to the confidence of harmony. When you hold blessings and project them from your heart center they expand from your local multiverse without limit. I realize this seems impossible that one individual can radiate blessings from their heart and affect another person thousands of miles away, but our Quantum Presence is not limited to our human domain and the laws that our human self is subject to, including the laws of time and space.

43:17 The human self consists of 3 cubic feet and the Presence is 4200 cubic feet. But as I alluded to earlier, the Presence is connected to its Source through the umbilical cord of Spirit or Source Intelligence and it's from this connective thread that the local multiverse is truly infinite, overlapping all others, and this is what's meant by Wholeness.

Pause.

44:01 Our Quantum Presence is what navigates our human self to the understanding of Personal Wholeness, but this desire is only an echo of the real motivation—to realize Universal Wholeness while preserving our individuality.

44:18 Mark: James, I know we're running low on time, so I wanted to do a quick time check... We'll need to get you to the airport in about 40 minutes, and we're about 20 minutes away, so, do you want to stop now or continue for a few more minutes?

44:36 James: Let me add one thing and then we can go, Mark.

44:41 Mark: Oh, and I have one more question if you're open to it?

James: Go ahead... One of the things I've always felt a certain difficulty in stitching together, is the dark side of reality. The, you know, the Animus, the secret government operations, Incunabula or Illuminati (and however you want to call it), and all these densities of the third dimension. I assume this is part of the Wholeness Paradigm as well. In light of the planetary shift, what advice do you have for those of us who are flooded with negative news lately?

45:12 James: Well... as I said earlier, this is a literate culture where words rule the day. The language of the mind is words. The language of the heart is feelings. But the language of our Presence is behaviors or activity. If you stay in the intelligence of your Presence, by giving it your attention, then the things that come within your local multiverse that have a lower density, they will have minimal effect, as you can—from the empowerment of your Quantum Presence—transform them with ease.

45:49 It is not so much about dissolving discord or eliminating it, it is more about transforming the lower densities through the activity of the Presence, and you may or may not be conscious, at the human level, what your Presence does to transform these lower densities, but when you summon your Quantum Presence to transform densities, you are activating its governing intelligence, as though you were switching on a light.

Then... then you step out of the way and you allow your Presence to bring you the technique, the thought form, the action, the new behavior to transform the lower density.

46:33 Mark: Yeah, but again, we're talking about faith or belief. The Presence doesn't manifest for our eyes to see... like a column of light and transform the negativity in our life... we have to have faith that it will, and this is the problem most of us have, James.

Everything is invisible. Everything that's spiritual is invisible, and unfortunately, everything that is negative is right in our face, solid, visceral, potent, and... and quite magnetic, I might say, in its influence.

47:13 James: I understand your perspective, but to worry about the negative is to fret about words and feelings that are not part of the activity of your Presence. They're unaligned. So I would ask you: Do you want to be influenced by your three cubic foot human self or the 4200 cubic foot Presence that lives within the Infinite?

47:34 I'm aware of the doomsday prophecies and to some extent, yes, they're accurate. There's a looming global financial crisis and natural disasters that will impinge on a good part of our human population. But we have to remind ourselves that our human self is on a living planet that is part of a living solar system that is part of a living galaxy, and all of these elements are moving together through time and space. And as we do so, we encounter new frequencies and dimensions—we are not on a treadmill. This is part of our journey and we can't control it no matter how hard we may try, because we're part of a destiny much larger than ourselves as individuals.

48:25 Notwithstanding that larger reality, what we can control, are our behaviors and which intelligence we consciously align to: the intelligence of our Quantum Presence, or the intellect of our human self? Are our behaviors motivated by the transient desires of our human nature, or do they arise from our Quantum Presence as an outgrowth of our love for our Creator and one another? Each time a person aligns to their Presence, they signal an alignment to love, an alignment to First Source, and an alignment to all creaturehood.

49:07 While this may not manifest in the physical spectrum of phenomena—a density for the benefit of your eye-brain, I might add; it manifests in your sense of coherence, your sense of out-flowing love, your sense of multidimensional relationships, your sense of guidance, your sense of resilience in the face of discord, your sense of connection to others. So tell me, Mark, are these states of being less or more compelling than those negative, visceral manifestations you mentioned?

49:45 Mark: (Chuckling.) I think I'll just remain silent and let you have the last word, James. But I do know we need to get you to the airport...

49:52 James: I have several parting comments, and given the amount of time remaining I'll do my best to be concise, Mark.

We've talked about the Quantum Presence and its role as the hub of the Wholeness Paradigm. I've mentioned that the Presence is the governing intelligence of your local multiverse. I've spoken of the importance in seeking to activate the communication between our human self and

Quantum Presence. And now I want to say that there is more than simply activating and understanding the Wholeness Paradigm, there is also the ongoing evolution and preparation of the local multiverse through the Quantum Presence, and this requires self-discipline or self-management.

50:39 When you summon your Quantum Presence to direct your local multiverse, you are activating its power into your human life, and this power is very potent. Its potency requires that you bring balance to your life; that you operate in harmony. If you do not, the power of your Quantum Presence can intensify your imbalance or disharmony. I say this not as a warning so much as a point of clarity. If your human self operates in a sober clarity with balance, managing its emotional and mental bodies with ease and balance, then the power issued from your Quantum Presence can radiate from you and have profound effect not only in your own multiverse, but others as well.

51:29 If you call on this power, but then proceed to conduct your life in emotional disorder, or give your attentions to the transient pleasures of life, according to your intellect, or ego, then you may intensify your disorder, or your desire for the material aspects of life. When this occurs, your Quantum Presence withdraws. The flow is constricted as if a tourniquet is applied to your spiritual nature and the circulation of the higher frequencies is diminished.

52:04 My point is that if you practice the Presence, you must be vigilant to also practice harmony in your feeling world and attunement in your mental domains. The



governing intelligence of your Quantum Presence requires behavioral intelligence in your human self. It's the only way to secure the full empowerments of your spiritual nature. For those wanting shortcuts or an easy pathway to enlightenment—you won't find it here, and in my experience, you won't find it anywhere. Despite what you might hope for, the quick and easy pathways leads to the astral domain of the phenomenistic, and to those serious students, it's simply another detour leading away from sovereignty and freedom.

52:59 Pause.

53:13 The darkness that embraces our planet is the accumulation of human discord. Densities upon densities upon densities have settled upon the human domain like sediment on the ocean floor. When it is stirred up, the light is obscured. The layers of greed, war, jealousy, anger, misunderstanding, racism, fear, and hatred they have all interleaved and created this darkness. For some it is normal. For those who are awakened, it is repugnant, and many of you I know are tired—tired of waiting for the promised changes, for the shift to a love-dominated world where people of all colors, creeds, and beliefs can live in harmony and co-creation.

54:06 The components of darkness are entities unto themselves. So there is an entity of War, an entity of Greed, and so forth, but these entities are becoming, every day, a little weaker, less potent. And what is getting stronger is the collective consciousness of humanity. There will come a time when the collective intelligence of humanity subdues the entities of War, Greed, Racism, and Fear and essentially evicts them from the planet.

54:44 It may not happen as quickly as some would like, but this is the path we are committed to. If you feel fatigue and impatience, invoke your Quantum Presence to uplift you and provide you with resilience and determination. You are empowered beings. You are able to do miraculous things, even amid a small amount of doubt, but do your best to release your doubts and limitations. The human imagination is equally effective in arguing for its limitations, as it is in envisioning its freedoms and powers.

55:23 If there is one last comment I would make, it would be to contemplate the Wholeness Paradigm. I haven't defined it completely because you are the artisans of that endeavor. I've provided some clues and a modest framework, but the visualization is a key element of this paradigm. Activating your imaginative powers is the muscle of the paradigm.

55:52 Surround yourself with music, and art, and culture, and loving relationships. Bring these into your local multiverse and let them inspire your imaginative powers. I would encourage you to participate in the EventTemples when they are launched. There will be seven temples in total, and these will be released over the next four years. If you can participate in the EventTemples, it will help you exercise your Quantum Presence, because you will be part of a quantum community who collectively is radiating love and compassion to those in need.

56:27 Mark, it's been a wonderful time with you. Thanks for all of your patience in letting me wind my way through your questions. Your attentiveness and patience is greatly appreciated.

56:40 Mark: Thank you, James. On behalf of all those listening, we're really grateful for your willingness to make this information available. Your words are inspiring and very practical as well, I think.

This completes the full interview. A newer interview was done in April 2013, and that is also available on the [WingMakers.com](http://WingMakers.com) website in the Creator section.

# **INTERVIEW WITH JAMES MAHU (NOVEMBER 2008)**

**Taken from Project Camelot**

LETTER FROM MARK HEMPEL, webmaster,  
WingMakers.com

Hi Kerry,

James has asked me to contact you to see if you would be interested in sending him whatever questions you might have and he would answer in a written format. He feels there is much disinformation that is being distributed and much of this is causing discomfort and stress in people. He'd like an opportunity to share a new perspective on the 2012, money situation, Planet X, Illuminati, etc. and believes your audience will find it helpful in developing their own discernment in these times.

He basically said to send him the questions, they can be on any topic of your choosing, and he will answer them as definitively as he can. He suggested that you place them in priority order. His email is: james@eventtemples.com.

I hope you're doing well and you're finding joy in your work.

Thanks for all you do!

Highest regards,

Mark

Mark Hempel

Web Manager

EventTemples.org | Lyricus.org | WingMakers.com

---

From: Kerry Cassidy

Date: November 17, 2008

To: James

Cc: Mark Hempel

Subject: Re: James

James,

Thank you so much for coming forward and being willing to answer questions from me... on behalf of our audiences from Project Camelot and Project Avalon. As we approach 2012 and as we move closer to the galactic plane, many changes are escalating in our lives and in the world around us as well as in our consciousness. We would value answers to the following (not necessarily in order of importance :-)

Thank you in advance. I am well aware the questions above are quite substantial and may require more time and extensive explanations than you are able to provide. I also realize that some of the above may be referenced at various places on the WingMakers and Lyricus sites. However, many in our audience may not be familiar with that material. Please feel free to address those questions

that you feel most comfortable answering at this time. Do not hesitate to reference with links places where you may have some answers to the above questions embedded in your sites.

I would like, in advance, to thank you for your exquisite art, music and teachings and for your amazing service to humanity.

My colleague, Bill Ryan, has contributed one or two of the above questions, and joins me in expressing his own appreciation and warmest regards.

With your permission all of the above along with your answers will be posted to a page on our website.

In truth and with blessings,

Kerry

Kerry Lynn Cassidy and Bill Ryan

Project Camelot/Project Avalon

'dare to speak'

[projectcamelot.org](http://projectcamelot.org)

[projectavalon.net](http://projectavalon.net)

# THE WRITTEN INTERVIEW WITH JAMES

## **Question 1 from Project Camelot:**

How much of the WingMakers story is true or based on fact?

**Answer 1 from James:** The terrestrial storyline is based on a technique called Sensory Bi-Location (SBL), which is similar to remote viewing in concept. This storyline is based on my investigations using this technique as it pertains to the ACIO, Incunabula, Illuminati, ET cover-ups, etc. These elements were then modified in name, identity, and locations in order to integrate with the mythological storyline of the WingMakers and retain the cloak that surrounds these organizations. It was not my purpose to expose these organizations or their dubious agendas; however, I was aware that many of the conspiratorial minded were among those who cared the most about truth and uncovering it. The cosmological scope of the story is mythological, while the more terrestrial elements contained in the Neruda Interviews are based on my experiences with SBL.

---

## **Question 2 from Project Camelot:**

Some people studying and commenting on current events seem preoccupied with what are perceived by some to be discouraging messages of gloom, or warnings of potential major problems. Others focus only on messages of hope and light, and refuse to dwell on bad

news. Although we have no trouble incorporating both views and understand that how they manifest will depend on each of us, some of our audience tend toward one view or the other.

What is your own philosophy or that of those you represent about this dilemma, and what light can you shed on this ongoing debate between the two factions, both of whom care deeply about the future of our world?

**Answer 2 from James:** The ominous situations of our world are very real. It is impossible to look at the policies of governments around the world and see coherence, benevolence, enlightened action, or, in general, behavioral intelligence as an outflow of equality and oneness.

The human family has been bound up over thousands of generations and each time returning to our home planet Earth for the sake of upgrading the previous generation's dominion, creature comforts, lifestyle, and technology, while the emotional maturity remains burrowed in the substrate of rape, abuse, enslavement, war, dishonesty, greed, government fraud, and a hundred other vices of weak and disillusioned humans programmed to see only the out-picturing of the human mind and its systems of limitation.

The human family is building a pyramid of manifested life across thousands of generations and each new generation builds another layer – an upgrade of technology and lifestyle. We are nearing the apex of this pyramid where there is nothing left to add. The pyramid is completed and we – each of us – must look at the pyramid



we have constructed and ask ourselves how it exemplifies our transcendence, our true Self.

The pyramid of humanity is manifest in the three-dimensional world, but it derives from a set of constructs that are flawed. What are these constructs? What makes them flawed? How did humanity get off course to build structures of civilization and society that are such poor reflections of who we really are?

There is a specific framework that has emerged over millions of years to induce humanity to the repetitive post of deficient civilization-builders. In the context of your questions, I must begin by defining this framework in order to answer all of your questions with sufficient detail and bring some new texture and dimension to the conversation. This framework is known within Lyricus as the Suppression of the Sovereign Integral. Its nine primary components are delineated below.

Before you, the reader, continue on, let me warn you that this is a sobering and direct analysis of the suppression framework and I would advise everyone who reads this to remain neutral as they examine my answers. If you find the information feeling too “heavy” or evoking fear, set it aside or return to it later. This story is not for everyone. Some will feel threatened by it and react with a sense of alarm, and others will feel like someone pulled the rug from underneath them. If you feel any of this, you may not be prepared to confront these realities.

**The Secret Framework for the Suppression of the Sovereign Integral**

**Human Mind System (HMS)** – The Human Mind System is separated into three primary functional mechanisms: The unconscious or genetic mind, the subconscious, and the conscious. These three components intermingle to form what most people term consciousness. The HMS is the most opaque and distorted veil that has stood between humanity and its true self, perverting its self-expression within the domains we call reality.

The unconscious, genetic mind is the repository of all humanity; the subconscious is the repository of the family bloodlines; and the conscious mind is the repository of the individual. However, and this is important to understand, the foundational patterns of thought are primarily from the subconscious and genetic mind structures of consciousness. Thus, while the individual believes themselves to be individual, unique, separate, and one-of-a-kind, in reality they are not. Not in the context of HMS.

You can conceptualize yourself as a copy of the human family folded inside a copy of your parents and bloodlines, placed into an individualized expression: you. The “You” is an HMS particularized into one expression, but its roots are entirely planted in the soil of humanity and parental lineage, all of which is downloaded into the developing fetus before birth.

This is precisely why, after ten thousand generations, we continue to operate in the same patterns of greed, separation, and self-destruction. The image in the mirror is upgraded with better “clothing” and more sophisticated masks, but underneath, the image remains the same feelings, the same thoughts, and the same behaviors.

Social and cultural engineering via the entertainment and educational systems conspire to entrain the individual during their developmental years (3-14 years old), activating the programs and subsystems of the HMS to ensure that the individual is properly prepared to conform to the reality matrix of their time and place. Even those who are non-conformists, who fancy themselves “outside the box”, are well within the perimeter of the HMS.

**Money-Power Grid (MPG)** – The reason for the Human Mind System to exist is for the Elite to exercise control over the Money-Power Grid. Money is the prime objective of the Elite because it imbues power to those who possess it. Money takes many forms, including assets of precious metals and petroleum, land or real estate, minerals, and products and services. Money is the “God” of the Elite and their banks are the religious institutions in which they can worship their God.

The corporate elite, government elite, underground elite, and banking elite constitute the MPG controllers. Those in positions of power, especially within the banking sector, are beholden to the MPG and will do everything possible to tighten their controls of the MPG and manipulate the human family to serve their agenda.

**Interdimensional Universe Structure (IUS)** – This is the structure of reality domains and how they interface with one another. IUS is a very, very complex subject to disclose in a format such as this, so I will only touch the surface.

Human beings are both dimensional and interdimensional. First Source is all of us. It is the

Collective Us. It is not a God living in some distant pocket of the universe. First Source is the Human Collective unencumbered with the HMS. First Source divided itself into individualized expressions – us. In the beginning, we inhabited dimensions that were not material, but existed at quantum levels of time and space.

However, as the dimensions grew in density through the expansion of creation (our creation), we, as individualized, interdimensional beings, were seduced to enter the human body. This seduction was a co-conspiracy of forces led by Anu, the King of the Anunnaki, who required enslaved workers to mine the physical gold that was present on Earth in abundance. Those beings we now consider the Atlanteans, were interdimensional living upon Earth, and Anu, with great cunning, convinced them to embody in human instruments.

This embodiment was a grand experiment in human engineering, and the Human Mind System (HMS) was at the core of this project. Anu realized that the only way to enslave the Atlanteans was to sheath them in a mind system that would reduce their capacity to express their true nature, and instead, express the programs embedded within the HMS. These programs were the creation of Anu and his scientists.

**God-Spirit-Soul Complex (GSSC)** – This is the central element of the HMS that anchors separation. The individualized human being, free of the HMS, is called the Sovereign Integral in the WingMakers mythology. This is the true identity of each and every human being. In this model of the Sovereign Integral, we are Gods of our local

multiverse, and collectively, we are First Source in the multiverse.

Why is GSSC the anchor of separation? We have two paths: Religion and Spirituality – each being different sides of the same coin, and this “coin” is GSSC. Now, Anu, being the intelligent, clever entity that he is, knew that humans would evolve, and in this evolution, they may begin to remember that they are Sovereign Integrals. Bear in mind that the Atlanteans were highly evolved beings before they donned the human instrument of Anu’s creation. Also remember that the human instrument is not simply the physical body but includes the emotions and HMS, and that this human instrument is componentized so that while the physical body dies, a higher dimensional body or sheath that is based on the physical body carries on.

Some refer to this as the soul, others refer to it as the astral body, but it is simply a sheath for the Sovereign Integral to operate within and it remains subject to the HMS and most of its programming. Thus, even upon death, the Sovereign Integral is not released from the influences of the HMS or the human instrument’s programs.

The Anunnaki created the HMS in order to consign the Sovereign Integral – the true Self that is infinite and eternal – into a prison of conjured illusions and deceptions. So the human instrument was fitted with HMS and the Sovereign Integral was placed within it as the life force, that which powered the human instrument. An aspect of GSSC was the program we call the fear of death, the fear of separation, the fear of non-existence.

It was this fear, so powerfully felt by humans, that gave rise to the construct of a separate God, from which a separate Spirit filled the universe, and from which we were all created in separation. Whether one arrives to God through religion or spirituality, does not matter, it is the same effect of appeasing the fear of death within the individual just as the program specified. In effect, Anu, the King of Anunnaki, positioned himself to be God of the human world.

The pathway to God, independent of the religion or spiritual path one walked, had the same program underlying it: You are a human with a soul, this soul must be redeemed or activated, upon which you will be saved. In this process of being saved, you are relinquished of self-responsibility to the world condition. You are rewarded with a life eternal in the kingdom of God (by whatever name you call God) where you can live in bliss and/or serve as a teacher of the light.

The savior/master construct is an integral part of the GSSC, and encourages human beings to yearn for a master to teach them how to ascend, how to be saved, how to achieve nirvana, how to live a moral life, and how to ensure eternal happiness. There are masters of great wisdom and light who remain within the domain of the HMS without knowing their involvement. The subtlety is so powerful that even when you feel you have achieved self-realization you remain trapped in the HMS. It is that vast, especially when compared to the material world.

Saviors can take on the form of many things, including the second coming of Christ, a wrathful God, the Earth, nature spirits, angelic hosts, prophecy, and extraterrestrial

forces who will intercede on humanity's behalf. Each of us is our own and only savior, our only master who can truly cause us to stand-up within ourselves and shut down the suppression systems and awaken to their Sovereign Integral consciousness. This is the liberation path and this will be discussed in answers that follow.

In essence, GSSC is an aspect of HMS that perpetuates separation. Just as different languages separate, different religious and spiritual pathways separate the human family, and make possible a race that is more easily controlled and pacified through the GSSC.

**Death Stress Implant Network Detour (DSIND)** – As its long title suggests, DSIND is the descent into humanness and the tether of custody to the material world. Within the solar plexus region of the human instrument is the DSIND module of HMS. This gets a little complicated because you have to look at HMS as the master network, and then there are nodes or implants that plug into HMS. One of these is DSIND, and while it is anchored in the solar plexus, it is an intricate network that develops exponentially upward into the heart, neck, and head regions. This is an etheric structure that collects, absorbs, and distributes fear, anxiety, stress, and restlessness.

While the fear of the future dominates this module – from a programming perspective – Anu was careful to connect it to the primal fear of death and non-existence. DSIND creates much of the dysfunction in the human family in terms of its behavioral deficiencies. It also activates humans for service in religion and spirituality paths.

**Polarity System (PS)** – This is a sub-node of DSIND designed to create polarities in the HMS and thus create friction between the polarities, and from this friction manifest discord and disharmony. If you exist in HMS (and you do), then you exist in polarity. It is truly that simple. Polarity is what activates and feeds the HMS. It is the “food” of HMS because in polarity the human instrument is lost in separation, which is precisely the point of HMS as intended by its designers.

**Genetic Manipulation System (GMS)** – This system was an outgrowth of various interdimensional races working to create a suitable instrument for accessing the physical world. It was Anu who specifically wanted to not only access the physical world in order to exploit its resources, but to do so by suppressing the infinite beings that would power the human instruments so he had the equivalent of willing slaves. Yes, infinite beings can be suppressed into finite beings when they are subjected to HMS.

In the course of engineering the human instrument, it was decided to create GMS as a means to modify the human instrument over time, as it evolved, to ensure it would never achieve self-realization or the Sovereign Integral state of awareness. The state of satori, nirvana, cosmic consciousness, enlightenment, and rapture were all different names for heightened states within the GSSC, which was still within the HMS domain, but these became checkpoints that triggered GMS interventions. The true state of the Sovereign Integral – even after death of the human instrument – was never realized by a member of the human family until very recently.



Wholeness Navigator – This is the element of HMS that activates the individual’s authentic search for God in the context of wholeness, oneness, unity, and equality. Some people undertake this search because they feel an obligation to do this as a means to appease the expectations of their parents, spouse, or their own sense of guilt. The authentic search, as decreed by the Wholeness Navigator, is a recent bypass that has been brought into the human instrument through GMS, which is an open system. While it is still an artifact of the HMS, it is a backdoor into the liberation path. More about this later.

**Post-Death System (PDS)** – This is the system where the individual, upon death of their physical body, is greeted by guides “on the other side” and review their life experience, confronting those areas of deficiency and returning to right the wrongs of their previous life, in other words, karma and reincarnation. The PDS is the means by which the Sovereign Integral remains in the grip of illusion even though the illusion is a heightened reality when compared to physical existence on the Earth plane. It enables the recycling of the Sovereign Integral into physical dimensions over and over again.

This process was initially conceived of as the principal means through which the world would be prepared for Anu to be born into the Earth plane and reign upon Earth as the undisputed world leader. However, that eventuality has been removed as a scenario.

These nine components constitute the prison complex that every human being is subjected to when they are born, live, and die; no matter how many cycles of birth and death they may undergo.

With the Suppression of the Sovereign Integral, we are all living in a Matrix-like world of illusion and deception. While human beings are no longer in service to the Anunnaki for the production of gold, the genetic carry-over of the HMS and the other components of the suppression framework are nonetheless still in operation and the reins of these suppression systems have been turned over to, and greedily grabbed by, the Elite.

It is well past the hour that humans wake up to what they are participating in and learn how they can stop it – one individual at a time. We are the key to our dilemma and we must learn how to deactivate the suppression matrix so we can awaken to the Sovereign Integral consciousness, live within its behavioral intelligence, and release ourselves from the grip of the mind and human instrument.

Those who extol hope and light, I can only say that you will be disappointed if your hope is contingent on anyone, save yourself, to facilitate change in this world. It is truly as Gandhi explained; we must become the change we want to see in the world, but the key is to define what change.

Have you ever considered the definition of your Self? What is it that defines you? If you look in the mirror and peel away the masks, the pretensions, the deceptions, the fears, the thoughts, the feelings; what remains? For most they would answer their soul or spirit. And if I told you that the soul – as most define it – does not truly exist apart from the mind, what would you say?

The change I want to see in the world is that people begin to see themselves as multidimensional beings whose

core is the Sovereign Integral that is the distillation of First Source in a singular, human expression. If people were only in tune with this frequency, they would understand that all is united in oneness, equality, and truth. This is the definition of the Grand Portal as it has been disclosed by the WingMakers mythology for the past ten years.

Each individual is a portal unto themselves, and this portal is the access point to the interdimensional worlds of the Sovereign Integral, where the human instrument, like a space suit, is finally removed and the individual realizes their true, infinite nature. And in this realization, understands that everyone – EVERYONE – is equal in this state, and in this equality we are ONE. The Grand Portal is when humanity stands-up as ONE BEING to this all-encompassing realization and then we transcend the suppression framework and express as Sovereigns.

2012 is a single page in the “book” called the Era of Transparency and Expansion. The life of deception – the era of veils over veils over veils – is dissipating, provided enough people rise up within themselves and honor the Sovereign Integral within by expressing its truth. But to do this, people must become attuned to its consciousness apart from the HMS, and this is the course of action that people must engage in.

The seeking of information is over. The seeking of a master, guru, religion, spiritual path, or way-shower is over. The seeking of objects of blame is over. The seeking of hidden information behind the dark forces is over. It is the expression of the Sovereign Integral consciousness and the deactivation of the suppression framework that becomes the focus of each individual in this new era.

---

### **Question 3 from Project Camelot:**

My own view is that our planet is a conscious being and the planet and humanity is moving from the 3rd density into the 4th to the 5th in the coming years. My understanding is that we have entered the 4th density at the present time. According to the RA Material, not all of humanity will move into the 5th Density, but will remain in a 3rd density Earth out of choice and due to their emphasis on service to self vs. service to others.

How do you view this?

If your view is different, would you please go into some detail on what you see?

**Answer 3 from James:** Earth, as a consciousness, is indefinable. The moment you bring in a description of Earth's consciousness, you define it, and the moment you define it you frame it in separation, and the moment you separate it into elements you deceive its true essence. Earth is a Host Consciousness, and this is its essence, though even that creates separation and therefore a degree of deception.

Yes, the densities are shifting, but these are artifacts of the Human Mind System (HMS). Even the belief that the near-infinite dimensions of the astral and mental planes are real is a comparison to the physical plane. I would suggest to you that what is in the purview of the human instrument, which includes the physical, emotional (astral) and mental densities or dimensions are all caught up in the HMS and suppression framework. It is not of the

Sovereign Integral and it is therefore impermanent, existing in polarity, separation, and deception. In other words, it is a creation designed to conceal what you truly are.

The Earth is not shifting to a new dimension in order to raise its consciousness and ascend to a higher state. Nor are the fortunate few going to be swept along because they did something better than others and therefore, they are the chosen. We, as a human family, are being prepared to live as Sovereign Integrals upon Earth. Will this happen in 2012? No.

2012 will feel like any other year for most people. There is no year or specific time that will define the era of transparency and expansion, the rise of the Sovereign Integral. It is happening quietly in the most unexpected places. People are beginning to see that what has been encoded within their human instrument is a system of control, deception and manipulation. And at some deeper level, they glimpse a new clarity, as fleeting as it might be; they perceive themselves to be more than a system of feelings and thoughts packaged inside a body. This is what is to come... people awakening from a virtual reality inside a virtual reality.

Earth is part of this new transparency. Nature has already donned this new apparel and wears it proudly, but humans have not noticed for our programs lack the perception. It will be, in part, through Nature that the human family will be awakened, and Earth is preparing for this eventuality. When it occurs, it is not because Earth is vengeful, or God, working through Earth, is delivering His

wrath. It is Earth/Nature expressing its new transparency and expansion in its own way.

Consider the following story: Advanced humans, living on an interdimensional level were cleverly induced to embody human instruments designed by a foreign intelligence, the Anunnaki. As this “work force” was developed, the physically embodied humans became utterly accepting of their limitation because it was systematic in suppressing the Sovereign Integral consciousness – the infinite and eternal life force that powered their human vessels.

Early on, human bloodlines intermixed with their designers, and the human evolutionary pathway into diversity was accelerated. Part of this diversity was contained within the elite societies that helped to formulate the separation of the human family in the Money Power Grid. The designer “Gods”, the Anunnaki, were ultimately satisfied with their mining operations and left Earth and their human creation behind.

The human genome was adaptive within the matrix of the Human Mind System (HMS) and evolved into the present-day human family we have in the early 21st Century. So now we have a race of beings that are trapped inside a suppression framework unknowing of their condition, worshipping Gods that do not exist, believing in heavens and hells that are part of the HMS landscape, praying to masters and saviors to absolve their sins and moral apathy, and continuing to fear death and non-existence as if they were absolutely unaware of their true nature.

Let's say that you are the true God, First Source. What would you do to awaken people to their true nature? What process would you use to shift the human family to a perspective of realization that what they had believed in was of deception and suppression of their true natures, knowing that the components of the suppression framework could not be removed overnight or the individual would likely go crazy or, worse yet, perish. What would you do?

First Source has limited moves on the "chessboard" because humanity is sealed inside a prison where the guards and warden of the prison control the money system and hold and distribute the power among themselves. The spiritual and religious leaders are equally caught up in the prison, occupying the more righteous sections, but still within the same prison. The interdimensional beings like ascended masters and angels are also imprisoned though their freedoms seem near-infinite when compared to the human inmates.

There are a handful of humans, who have removed the HMS and its assorted systems of separation and broken out of the prison, but these are an infinitesimally small percentage, and generally their writings, stories, techniques are received as "crazy talk" by their fellow inmates. And even if a handful of humans escape the prison, the prison sends its guards to re-capture them or discredit them in such a way as to render their deeds as "supernatural" or, worse yet, demonic.

The real problem in this story is that the humans within the prison do not see the prison as a prison or the guards as guards. They are oblivious to their imprisonment. Thus,

they are not trying to escape from the prison; rather, if they are seeking to escape from anything, it is from boredom, anxiety, poverty, pain, bad relationships, illness, depression, and hopelessness. The suppression of their identity as a Sovereign Integral that lives in eternal and unconditional oneness, equality, and truthfulness is not even a consideration in their search.

Earth, consisting of the animal, plant, and mineral kingdoms as well as the elements of air, water, and fire, combined with Nature as defined by the cosmos, is the “Queen” on the chessboard that First Source can use. These are strategic instruments through which specific walls of the prison will be destroyed and individuals who are properly prepared can reclaim their identities as Sovereign Integrals and establish a new transparency and expansion within their wholeness.

Now, just because some walls of the prison will be taken down, does not mean that everyone will run out and embody their new freedoms. The prison is constructed of many walls, and when one wall falls down, there is the initial rush of relative freedom, but there remains another wall and another wall after that. The prison is a labyrinth and until the individual is not relying on pictures, images, sounds, words, feelings, and thoughts to interpret their world, they remain inside a wall of the prison I have previously described as the suppression framework of the Sovereign Integral.

Many will not feel comfortable with the spatial qualities and long horizons of this new era. They will resist the transparency and expansion because they have come to identify so strongly with their HMS that anything that tears



at that identity, threatens what they perceive as their hold on existence.

Others, who are prepared, will easily embody this new era and transition into it like a baby eagle taking its first flight – a little awkward at first, but quickly mastering the required skills. While Earth and Universe Nature play key roles in the liberation maneuver, the preparation of the individual is their own responsibility. It is a balanced equation: Earth/Nature + Individual Preparation = Sovereign Integral Realization.

The First Point of process is the key factor of preparation. If your First Point for the reclamation of the Sovereign Integral state of consciousness is anything less than unconditional oneness, equality and truthfulness in the expression of every moment, then you will hit many walls within the prison, and each time you do, you will be required to start over. Thus, the initial point of self-realization must be aligned to the realization itself. This is due to the mathematical equations that guide the process.

---

#### **Question 4 from Project Camelot:**

What is your understanding of coming events in the next few years up to and beyond 2012? We have many whistleblowers, experiencers and futurists, conveying visions of future events that may include:

A magnetic pole reversal

A physical pole shift

A CME (Coronal Mass Ejection)

All of the above, possibly exacerbated by the close approach of Nibiru to Earth.

Can you comment on the above scenarios? Do you have reason to believe that any of these may occur?

**Answer 4 from James:** Let me be clear: the universe we are in, in its entire physical splendor and stature is part of the prison I defined in the previous question. I realize the term “Prison” carries a negative meaning, but if there is furniture within a prison do you say the furniture is evil or negative? No, it is just furniture that happens to be inside a prison. So it is with the planets and stars and the universe as a whole.

Therefore, the phenomena that our senses perceive, whether it is pole shift or a 9.0 earthquake, remain inside the Human Mind System (HMS). Phenomenon is deception. Everyone wants a vision, and struggles to see the other side, not realizing that these features – images and sounds – are more of the HMS, just a more subtle rendering of the prison walls in the outer reaches of the labyrinth.

I think in my previous answer (question 3) you can see that I believe Earth/Nature are the primary catalysts that First Source is orchestrating to support humanity’s realization of itself as Sovereign Integrals. Thus, it will feel as if Earth and the entire universe is compressing in upon the individual, tightening its grip around your very being. This compression is the very tool that is being deployed by First Source to help activate you.

Relative to Nibiru, it is not a factor. In a sense it has been removed from the equation of the Sovereign Integral for a complex set of reasons I won't go into here.

---

### **Question 5 from Project Camelot:**

We are getting various reports from whistleblowers about a dark agenda of the Illuminati that includes:

A crash (or end) of the dollar and 1930s-like conditions in the U.S.

Martial law and possible herding of people into prison camps.

Spread of viruses around the world aimed at reducing two-thirds of the population.

Micro-chipped population and increased electronic surveillance, thereby curtailing freedom still further.

While we have conflicting testimony about all of the above, it seems clear that some of the above may already have begun. Can you comment on the above scenarios? Do you have reason to believe that any of these may occur?

**Answer 5 from James:** The global systems of our planet can be thought of collectively as a Being composed of organs like the heart, brain, liver, etc. The global systems are banking, government, military, religious, educational, food production, energy, transportation, and commerce, and each of these is an organ in the body of the Collective Human Mind System Reality or, simplified, the Collective System (CS). Each of these nine global systems is an organ that depends on the "blood cells" to keep it

alive, to circulate the nutritional ingredients within the larger body, and human beings are the blood cells, and money is the breath that brings the oxygen to the CS.

This is the body of the collective HMS existence, and it is precisely this that humans animate and make possible through their own survival programs and the exchange of money. The Collective System is the aggregate of the global systems, the human beings, and the money. This constitutes one system, though it may seem unwieldy and impossible to control, it is quite controllable to those whose hands hold the reins and control the vital organ – the brain.

The “brain” of the CS is the banking system. It operates on the First Point paradigm that life is money, and money is life. It is the origin of human existence that money is life, and in this single thought-form humanity has evolved, distilling its ancient memories in our present-day banking system.

The Collective System interacts with HMS and creates the primary “walls” within the HMS prison spoken of in question 4. The Collective System body is failing, and it is failing because the new era of transparency and expansion is underway. These forces of CS and the era of transparency and expansion are colliding in our time, and for the Sovereign Integral consciousness to manifest in this physical field, the Collective System must change to accommodate it, as they are like oil and water and can not mix.

Thus, those who hold the reins of the Collective System have great fear that something is amiss. Something is

happening in the world that portends great change, and change is not something they embrace. In the face of change, which to them is a lessening of power, they will undertake nefarious plans to keep the population distracted, uneasy, nervous, uncertain, ignorant, overburdened with technology, attentive to fear, and disempowered.

All of the items and more that you list in your question are in various stages of planning. That is not to say they will be successful in launching them, but they are being planned, and even in the contemplation of these plans you can see the sinister nature that has overtaken elements of the human family.

The Collective System will fall. It must fall. The organs will shut down and the body will die. This will take time, it will be a process that will take many years which will thankfully provide a transition stage so humans can adapt to the new body that is being built to support and sustain the new Sovereign Integral consciousness as it – the origin of us – becomes known as us in this world.

As each of us de-program ourselves and deactivate our HMS, there is a corollary access to the Sovereign Integral, and in this access, we create the best opportunity we have of defeating the dark agendas that exist on Earth, as well as easing the transition between the deteriorating Collective System body of today and the new one that will replace it.

---

**Question 6 from Project Camelot:**

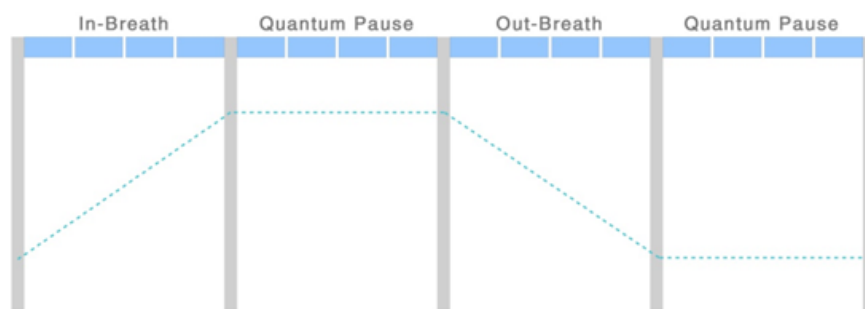
Please address how people can best prepare for the coming changes, regardless of where they are on the spectrum of awareness at this time. Our view is that although there are preparations that can be made in the physical reality, a safe place is only a reflection of the consciousness of those who are gathered there and no one location may necessarily be better than anywhere else (depending on the path each has chosen for experiencing these times).

**Answer 6 from James:** This is a complex question to answer because it truly depends on the individual, but the universal support system for each of us is our breath. It is the breath that connects us to our point of origin, and when I use that term I don't mean birth in the physical – this life or any other. I am referring to the Sovereign Integral state of consciousness that is our pure state of being.

Breath is the way in which the human instrument connects to this origin point anywhere in spacetime. Breath is the portal between the physical dimension and the quantum or interdimensional domains, but it is not the normal, autonomic breathing, rather it is a very specific breathing pattern that we call Quantum Pause.

Quantum Pause is a simple, four-stage process beginning with an in-breath of anywhere between three and six counts, depending on your lung capacity, posture, and degree of privacy. After you have gathered in your breath, breathing through your nose, you hold it (pause) for an equal count, and then exhale through your mouth, again, for the same count, and then hold (pause) for the same count.

The breath pattern is described below using an example of a four count. The key is to maintain symmetry in each of the four segments of the process. If you are using a three count, apply it equally in each segment. It is not essential that you monitor this with precision, instead, apply a casual monitoring of your time for each segment and keep a consistency to the flow.



One cycle is described above, and it is recommended to do three to four cycles in a row and then return to normal breathing. This “normal” breathing period is called the Consolidation period. Keep your eyes closed throughout the process and sit with your back straight in a comfortable position, both feet on the ground. When you begin your consolidation period, it is a time for you to bring focus and all of your attention to those things that bubble to the surface of your consciousness, knowing that these arise for a reason. This is an excellent time to apply the Six Heart Virtues (appreciation, compassion, forgiveness, humility, valor, and understanding) to any thought or feeling that manifests.

This consolidation period usually lasts about three to five minutes, but there are no set time limits. Use your intuition to guide this period of time. Generally, each repetition of the consolidation, and usually there are four

or five, becomes less crowded with thoughts or feelings, and by the time you enter the final consolidation period you have emptied yourself of thoughts and feelings and entered the quantum domain.

The diagram below depicts a typical session of Quantum Pause. Notice there are three cycles of the breath and then a consolidation period in this particular example. This repeats four times. You can have as many as five cycles of breath interspersed with consolidation periods, again, symmetry is important.

The application of Quantum Pause may seem an unlikely way to de-activate the Suppression Framework of the Sovereign Integral and more effectively handle the transition stage we are in, but I would encourage you to try it for three weeks and see what results you achieve. Only through your own experience can you judge the merit of Quantum Pause. If, after three weeks of daily practice, you experience a new clarity and connection to your origin point, then you will be motivated to continue, and in this decision you have established your new First Point upon which unconditional oneness, equality and truthfulness can stand.

There are many nuances to the Quantum Pause technique, and I would encourage you to discover them on your own, in your own way. This is but a basic technique that I have shared with you, but there are subtleties to this technique that are powerful enhancements and these will occur to you while you're in the process of using the technique, so remain open while you practice it.



Some quick suggestions to get you started. The quantum pause immediately after the out-breath can provide a subtle sense of panic for some people. If this occurs, shorten your count so you have less time elapse for each segment. For example, if you were using a four count cycle, shorten it to three. This feeling of panic will go away as you practice the technique. These “hitches” or quantum pauses have a purpose that you will come to understand.

I would also suggest that you focus your attention on your breath – its sound, its texture, how it feels inside your lungs, how your lips form in the out-breath, how it flows through your system, etc. This focus aligns you with First Point or the origin point of your Sovereign Integral because it is the breath that is the Portal of the infinite and eternal being that you truly are, and it is through this portal that it is manifesting in physicality.

When using Quantum Pause, there is a natural tendency to look for the experience of Light or to see new dimensions, speak with Beings or even God, or have a “wow” experience that really confirms that you’re on the right path. The practice of Quantum Pause will bring you new experiences and awareness, but leave your expectations behind. Again, human beings love visual stimuli. They love to see higher dimensions as if seeing is believing. But all that is in the quantum spacetime does not conform to the Human Mind System. Quantum is origin. It is meta-physical, which precedes visual, acoustic, and sensory data. It precedes feelings and thoughts. It exists before these stimuli and is indeed hidden behind them to some extent.

The “wow” experience may manifest in a form that your HMS cannot interpret or translate into images, words, feelings, and thoughts. Therefore, do your best to eliminate expectations of an experiential nature and simply follow your breath. The moment that the Sovereign Integral reaches into your HMS and announces its presence, you will never forget, nor will you mistake it for anything other than what it is. And when that time comes, you might be brushing your teeth, writing an email, or resting on the couch. It happens in its own time.

In addition to the practice of Quantum Pause, I would suggest that you consider new paradigms for your way of life. For example, I have disclosed the Six Heart Virtues (a free PDF download) in some detail on the [EventTemples.org](http://EventTemples.org) website. This practical orientation helps you move through life with greater harmony. You might also find value in the practice of the Quantum Moment.

The Quantum Moment is dissecting your day into passages of time. In other words, “moments”, in this definition, are passages of time or events. For example, let’s say you get out of bed in the morning; you are now starting a new passage or quantum moment. Before you move into the new passage, you practice an abbreviated Quantum Pause – one or two breath cycles: in-breath, quantum pause, out-breath, quantum pause. This re-establishes your First Point, grounding your physical-based human instrument in the quantum domain. As you go through the passage of waking up, washing your face, brushing your teeth, etc. you are stepping through passages of time.

The Quantum Moment, as its First Point, perceives that the individual is sovereign and infinite and exists here. Right here. It is not flying about on the soul planes; it is not hidden in the robes of a God or Master; it is not separate from your human instrument; and it does not avoid the human condition. It is, and always will be, right here. As previously said, the quantum moment is a passage of time that feels like a portal is stepped through and you enter a portal of experience different than the previous passage. They can be simple like walking from your car to your workstation at the office – that’s a moment – and the next moment the phone rings and you transition to the new moment of talking with someone.

Your entire life is a series of moments or passages of time, and in each passage you are accompanied by your infinite Self that is seeking one thing on this Earth: Self-realization of itself within the human instrument.

In our world, information and knowledge is dispensed like fire hydrants uncapped, expulsing in every direction. Everyone is telling you the way to truth is this way or that way, and the “way” leads into separation and therefore deception.

While you are in the Quantum Moment, you see the fork in the road is always one of two ways: truth or dishonesty. Truth is the breath of life issuing from the Sovereign Integral. Dishonesty is the Human Mind System parroting the knowledge and information that is ricocheting in every corner of our lives via cell phones, television, books, seminars, movies, podcast, e-papers, websites, newspapers, and human relations.

To realize the Self as the Sovereign Integral here, and express this consciousness while in the human instrument, requires that you focus the Six Heart Virtues within your local universe – the passages of your life in which you physically move – and apply them ceaselessly. The key to realization is a direct, sober, truthful assessment of your behaviors and applying the Six Heart Virtues to those behaviors that have become expressions of your self-deception and dishonesty.

The Quantum Moment helps you to be present in the moment and to see your Self as the observer, not passing judgment on others or yourself, but retaining the sober assessment of the Sovereign Integral and applying forgiveness and understanding to the passage in which you most recently entered throughout your life. It becomes a way of life.

---

### **Question 7 from Project Camelot:**

Please address the subject of Ascension from your point of view (or that of those you are speaking for). What exactly is Ascension? How would you recommend that people view it and accommodate it in their spiritual awareness?

**Answer 7 from James:** To understand ascension it is necessary to understand its origins. The concept of ascension arose out of division and disconnection. Religion conceived that Source or God was outside the Self, living in some remote dimension of space, fully separated from the human condition. Human beings were not really worthy of God, but religion, in its self-

enlightened state, gave humans the concept of faith. By having faith, God will come down and save you from the human condition, provided, of course, that you have faith and apply His commandments.

Ascension came along, not so much from religion, but rather spiritual-mystic sources, and posited that humans did not need to be passive in the application of faith, but rather they could ascend to the Source. In other words, instead of waiting for God to come to you, you could go to God. Humans, under the proper tutelage of masters could learn how to ascend and attain the Godhood, and become a master of their own, serving God and His universe as an emissary of the Light.

Religion and spirituality really had the same idea, the only difference was that religion used passive faith while spirituality used active practices. The First Point of ascension is the yearning for a Source outside the Self, hence division and disconnection. Any First Point that begins in separation is pulled into the Human Mind System's gravitational field and is lost in the deceptions therein.

Thus, ascension is not an aspect of the Sovereign Integral state. As written in my previous answer, you are here and always have been and always will be. There is no where to go outside of yourself to find yourself or God or Light or enlightenment or ascension. Look at it this way, if you are self-contained, if the Sovereign Integral is indeed within you at all times, then where exactly do you need to ascend? It is realization, not ascension. And realization has, as its First Point, the unconditional oneness, equality and truthfulness of Self in all life expressions. While

ascension's First Point is: I am not equal to my Source, my Source is outside of me therefore I need to ascend to it in order to become a greater being more worthy of love and light.

Ascension is of the teacher-student ordering of the universe, residing within HMS. It defines the subtle aspects of self-deception that are caught-up in the spiritual belief systems of Earth and the interdimensional planes as well. If you believe you are in the process of ascending, ask yourself the questions: Where I am ascending to? How do I know that that endpoint is not of the Human Mind System? Are my mental pictures of ascension based on my own experience or have they been downloaded from the information and knowledge systems of humanity – in the other words, the unconscious domain?

All of the energy, efforts, attention and learning that are placed on the ascension process are a diversion from your own realization of the Sovereign Integral. It is as if you have pursued a shadow in favor of the substance. The ascension pathway is ensconced in the comforts of gurus and masters – both physical and interdimensional – that supposedly support your journey into the Light and Love of God. Along this journey you see how it absolves you of responsibility related to this world's real conditions of hunger, inequality, rape, war, abuse, servitude, illness, racism and a hundred other maladies. The absolution comes in the form of your journey itself. The diversion. The separation.

Realization of the Sovereign Integral consciousness is realization of one's True Self as present in everyone else. You see the condition of the human family as your own,

and your condition as one with everyone else. You are in the moment, engaged in the dismantling of the HMS, knowing that as you do this, you are invoking the Sovereign Integral consciousness to manifest on Earth in a human instrument where there is complete and unconditional transparency and therefore expansion.

---

### **Question 8 from Project Camelot:**

Regarding the race of beings you consider yourself to be speaking for and a representative of, and here I must admit I consider myself as a member of this group, but for the sake of our viewers, please answer briefly if you would, the following for those who may not know the WingMakers material:

What planet and/or time are they from?

Do they have a physical presence here?

What is your own current mission here on Earth?

Have they contacted or communicated with other humans as they have done yourself?

**Answer 8 from James:** It has been almost exactly ten years since the WingMakers.com website was first launched on the web. The first materials were designed to activate certain people to the Sovereign Integral consciousness. This consciousness cannot be contained in the historical contexts of soul, atma, spirit, or anima, it needed to be redefined because the soul construct was part of the God, Spirit, Soul Complex (as defined in Question One), and therefore was part of the Human Mind System.

Very few people realized this consciously. In effect, for the past ten years the Sovereign Integral was introduced tepidly and allowed to simmer on the back burner of the WingMakers and Lyricus websites. In this new era of transparency the Sovereign Integral will be elevated to a new level of vividness and accessibility.

Those of us involved in the WingMakers and Lyricus are focused on introducing the Sovereign Integral state of consciousness and providing support to those interested in realizing this consciousness as their Self. We believe that the human family is programmed to believe what it is fed via the information and knowledge systems of the world and that these systems stimulate and excite the Human Mind System ensuring that the individual becomes lost in division and disconnection.

In terms of where the WingMakers derive from, it is not important. We are you and you are us. That is all. The manifested world of Earth and humanity and all of Nature, is one layer of the “Onion”. There is also an interdimensional domain that is composed of innumerable layers – and within these layers reside life forms within life forms within life forms. Its complexity and breadth is not translatable into human language.

The beings that exist in the manifested, three-dimensional universe are human and only human. The beings that exist within the other “layers” are interdimensional beings that are not manifested in the physical domain, but all of the beings, whether human/physical, or non-human/interdimensional are part of the Sovereign Integral consciousness.



Now, I'm well aware that this disclosure, for many people, stretches their HMS to the point of discomfort and apprehension. The HMS cannot grapple easily with these concepts as they are outside of its patterns of conception, but all you have to do is practice the Quantum Pause, apply the Six Heart Virtues in your local universe, and observe through the eyes of the Sovereign Integral – the quantum presence that is deep within you, that has no programming, no agenda, no deception, no purpose. It is simply itself: expressing oneness, equality and truthfulness unconditionally in every breath.

---

#### **Question 9 from Project Camelot:**

If you have any information regarding the various differing agendas of the main races of beings that are monitoring, assisting, interacting with, taking advantage of, or manipulating the situation here on Earth, please address this to the best of your ability.

**Answer 9 from James:** As you may have surmised in my previous answer, the number of beings in existence is infinite, and yet, if you read carefully, I did say that humans are the only three-dimensionally manifested beings in the universe. Those beings that are non-human can operate within the three-dimensional manifest world, but generally their bodies are not well suited to our density, and they will perish if they don't return to their native dimension.

The agenda of those who are the prison guards is focused on one thing: To conceal the view of the prison walls through directing the attention of the Human Mind

System into entertainment venues that stimulate their senses. Those who are susceptible to this diversion go about their lives completely unaware that they are bumping into the prison walls in every moment of their life.

Those who have a different resonance, whose Wholeness Navigator has been awakened and they are led by it, they are all about deepening their perceptions of the prison walls. They are sensing the walls in their every waking moment. In doing this, they do not fear the walls, they do not fear the guards, and they do not fear those whom the guards serve. Their process of realization is sensing the prison walls in every breath so they can dismantle them brick by brick.

The beings inside the prison are both human and interdimensional; the prison is of the physical and interdimensional worlds. It encompasses both. It is not as if humans are in the prison and then upon death they break out and go directly to an enlightened state enjoying the fruits of heaven. No, the consciousness that you express in this world will accompany you into the next dimension. A human is equally capable of leaving the prison as an entity in the interdimensional domain; remember equality and oneness is not a condition of environment or vibratory domain.

---

### **Question 10 from Project Camelot:**

Somewhat related to Question 9, we have some evidence of a conflict currently going on between two factions of the Anunnaki... as well as between the Nordics

and Greys/Reptilians; which includes the Illuminati and various governments that may have become aligned through treaties with either one side or the other... and the sovereignty of the Earth. Can you comment?

**Answer 10 from James:** Alignment is formed only within the Hidden Elite. The Hidden Elite is the Incunabula. The Elite operate in the following general alignment: Incunabula > Banking System > Illuminati > Secret Societies > World Government Leaders. The Incunabula control the banking system, and those that turn the “dials” are cleverly hidden. Down through time, the banking system is the force through which all other organizations and objectives are controlled, attenuated, destroyed, or allowed to thrive. It is the alpha power of the Collective System, and thus it was important, if not necessary, for the Incunabula to remain hidden.

The Incunabula was designed originally to prepare the human domain for the return of Anu, the Anunnaki King who originally designed and co-created the human species. Part of the myth surrounding the return of Christ was associated with this expectation as it was whispered into the religious doctrine by those who knew of the true extent of the Second Coming.

However, Anu is not coming because the game has been changed within the dimensions. The original plan was that Anu would enter our world several years prior to 2012, which would provide him time to prepare his staff – the Incunabula – for the end of time, or what has been referred to in the popular media as 2012. The end of time was construed to be the end of the human programmed existence; the demise of the Human Mind System – the

crashing down of the prison walls that have deceived humankind from realizing its true nature as Sovereign Integrals.

The end of time will be very much like a strong wind that passes over a calm sea and only those boats who have their sails unfurled and are prepared will notice the effects of the wind. Others will be so distracted, so fearful, that they do not even notice the wind, or, if they do, it will not occur to them that it is unveiling a new direction, a new shore, a new way of expressing life.

Because the Elite are focused on the Money Power Grid, they see the end of time as the end of their power. Amid this perception, they are scrambling for position, seeking to form new relationships that may enable their era to continue unimpeded, or at least if the Money Power Grid will consolidate, they want to be among the survivors. Thus, there is great infighting and posturing among the Elite.

There are many interpretations about the end of time, and, as I alluded in my previous comments, it will be quite different for those who are prepared compared to those who are infused with the Human Mind System and are completely comfortable and identified with the prison it represents. For those, the end of time will feel like the program has a virus or bug. It will feel like the universe has glitched, and they are being sucked into the disorder. It will be very frightening for some.

The Elite, and this includes their interdimensional allies, realize the end result of the human program is an unknown. It is not understood. Its implication to the

Money Power Grid, the lifeline that perpetuates their control, is uncertain, but they know change is afoot and that this change is of a magnitude that will surpass historical standards.

---

**Question 11 from Project Camelot:**

Please address the role of channeling vs. the information received by remote viewers and the role of prophecy in our movement into the future. Please also address the role of Mayan, Hopi and other First Nation (e.g. Aboriginal) prophecies and how accurate or pertinent they may be in revealing or informing the future.

**Answer 11 from James:** Channeling is a sub-component of the God-Spirit-Soul Complex (GSSC), and therefore the Human Mind System. The origins of channeling arise from Anu's attempt to automate his persona into the human domain because he realized that the access between the dimensions and the manifest environment of humanity would close. The GSSC was his automation system that embodied his presence within the world of man.

Channeling was originally the equivalent of demon possession where interdimensional entities would temporarily infuse themselves within the human instrument and read a script prepared for them, usually an operative of the GSSC who was intent on bringing hope, love, truth, wisdom, and cosmological indoctrinations to humanity through the spiritual and, to a lesser extent, religious systems of the human family.

In more recent times channeling has become more automated, using pre-programmed scripts, voice tonalities, gestures, and accents which are implanted in the HMS of the individual channeler, and quite literally “broadcast” for later publication and dissemination among those who have a resonance to GSSC and seek enlightenment therein.

The channeled materials, owing to their extensive crafting, were cosmological wunderkinds that generated awe and near-instant faith in their readers. Works like *The Urantia Book*, *Conversations with God*, *Seth*, *Agartha*, *Alice Bailey*, and countless others were all prepared texts for humanity, written by dimensional entities under the direction of the GSSC and distributed for human consumption to ensure that humans remained satiated with division and deception – though under the guise of spiritual and cosmological truth.

If you carefully examine channeling you will see that it does not mention the Sovereign Integral, the silence that is you. They discuss the heavens, God, angelic beings, extraterrestrial intelligences, the service orientation of ascended being, ascension process of soul, morality, practical living, alignment to God, life after death, and the complex teacher-student ordering of the universe. It is all designed to instill separation and satisfy the seeker that truth exists on the material plane, thus, they do not have to leave the prison to find it; they simply need to read or listen with their mind.

Remote viewing is tapping into the unconscious or unified field of the Human Mind System. Within this field of consciousness remote viewers can access the astral imprint of Earth or any other planet or system in which the

HMS extends – which is the entire known physical universe. The astral imprint is like a reflection in a grainy mirror. It lacks the texture and details, but the general picture exists. It is time sensitive, so sometimes, unbeknownst to the remote viewer, the subject is time shifted and the time shift can be thousands of years.

Remote Viewers also can be influenced by more subtle dimensional fields that are not physically manifest. Thus, sometimes their imagery is not of this world, though it seems of the physical, three-dimensional world, it is really of the astral or mental.

As for prophecy, the Mayans in particular, were very advanced because they had specific priests that were offspring of human and Anunnaki genetic intermixing, and this allowed them to understand the higher order mathematics of the Human Mind System. The HMS is a mathematical composite equation at its foundation level. I realize that this may not seem possible, and your belief or disbelief is not important, all I will explain is that for prophecy to work, predestination must be existent, and if predestination exists, then mathematics would seem a likely reason, would it not?

In terms of prophecy there are only two themes of importance. One prophecy relates to the Grand Portal (as it is known within WingMakers) and the other to the End of Time. The End of Time prophecy is attributed to the Mayan, but as I suggested earlier, there was an Anunnaki influence to the prophecy that was due to the genetic intermixing of the two races, which is another story altogether.

The End of Time prophecy was actually initiated in Atlantean times. There was an individual among the Atlantean leadership that possessed a penetrating knowledge of prophecy, so much so, that even Anu was aware of this being. I will call this individual Cogniti, and it was he who was able to perceive, and, more importantly, recall and articulate the prophecy of the End of Time. This prophecy was described to Anu and it was the galvanizing vision that caused Anu to seal Heaven from Earth.

Cogniti's prophecy was that there would be an individual in the far distant future that would open the Earth to the interdimensional planes. That Earth could not be sealed from the Heavens as it was this individual's destiny to reclaim Heaven. Anu, was not pleased with this prophecy and it inspired him to separate Humans from the interdimensional planes, and instead he created new worlds that were part of the HMS, residing as programs within the HMS (God-Spirit-Soul Complex) that included constructs of reincarnation, afterlife, and the astral, mental and soul planes.

The End of Time prophecy, as Cogniti described it, was a threat to Anu because if his creation – human beings – could access the dimensions, they would know they were programmed existences, veiled shadows of their true self. So it was this prophecy that begat the GSSC and it became one of the most complex labyrinths in Anu's arsenal to enslave humanity.

The second prophecy was the Grand Portal, and this has to do with not only one individual discovering the portal into the dimensions of the Sovereign Integral, but all of humanity. This is the return of humanity to its stature as



the Sovereign Integral liberated of the HMS, yet still manifest on Earth in a human instrument. In short, it is the transformation of the human instrument into a tool of expression for the Sovereign Integral state of consciousness.

While the Hopis and many other indigenous cultures have prophetic visions, the majority of these are programs within the HMS, either well within the prison walls or are echoes of the two main prophetic themes that resonate with the unconscious domain of the HMS I just described.

---

**Question 12 from Project Camelot:**

Our understanding is that Looking Glass and other ET related time portal technology has a role in how the planet survives the movement into the galactic plane. Is the effort mentioned by Dan Burisch of Majestic to close the man-made stargates (in order to avoid a potential catastrophe) an authentic effort - and will it successfully assist the smooth transition of our planet through the galactic plane?

**Answer 12 from James:** The transition of the Earth is not dependent whatsoever on any savior or technology. Bear in mind that the human family, dimensional beings, Earth, Nature, and Universe are all unified in the Tone of Equality (as described in the WingMakers philosophy). This equality is precisely why separation is not real. Anything that is of separation exists in deception or the HMS.

The Earth is conducting itself in this equality and that is all that is required. To comment on the stargates and other

timespace manipulation technology only feeds the deception of separation. It is a drama of the HMS.

---

**Question 13 from Project Camelot:**

The WingMakers saga emphasizes the discovery of what could be viewed as a chakra system on the planet and the activation as creating the necessary link-up that would result in a kundalini type effect that would move the Earth from the 3rd dimension into the 5th dimension and therefore out of the path of Nibiru and any potential for an invasion of an unwanted robotic race of beings. Is this still an accurate depiction of what needs to happen in order to avoid cataclysm and/or invasion?

**Answer 13 from James:** Your interpretation is an interesting one, but is not accurate to the intent. Firstly, one of the seven WingMakers sites are situated on each continent, not representative of a chakra system, but rather the realm of the symbolic that is hidden in every culture. The WingMakers mythology is a bridge from the Sovereign Integral to the Human Mind System, and it is designed to awaken this interest by releasing the masks of the HMS in favor of the identity of the Sovereign Integral. It is a preparation process that is different for every individual, but every individual in the human instrument is imprisoned within the HMS to varying degrees.

I have always said that the WingMakers Materials are encoded, and that these encodings are designed to prepare the individual to awaken to the deeper structures (outer prison walls) and help the individual ease their way into the new territory of the Sovereign Integral. The Sovereign

Integral is not a realm of eternal ease, beauty, freedom, painlessness, and ultra creature comforts. Rather, it is an awareness of how we are all one and equal with First Source, and that this makes each of us responsible for the prison and the outflow of its dysfunctional events.

How can one leave the body upon death and circulate in a realm of heaven that is beautiful and inspiring while their fellow humans are left to suffer on Earth in the prison of their unsuspecting HMS? Some would say this is because of karma and that these poor beings incarnated to serve in this capacity. Even if this were true, does this relinquish you from a responsibility to support and help your fellow humans? Remember we are all one. We all exist in the Tone of Equality as sovereigns united as First Source.

What happens to one happens to all.

When I speak of those who are lost in the prison without knowing it, I am not referring only to the downtrodden – those starving in refugee camps, those with insurmountable health dilemmas or those in abusive relationships (to name a few). No, I am referring to virtually all of humanity incarnated on Earth and those who have moved on to the astral or mental planes and yet remain in the prison. If you are unrealized of Self as the Sovereign Integral, you are somewhere within the prison, and though it is obvious, it must be said – this includes the prison guards and warden.

Now, the robotic force you refer to (the Animus in the WingMakers mythology) is a symbolic representation of the dark force. They are not real, in the sense that they represent a threat to humanity now or in the future.

Those who have lifted their consciousness and deepened their perceptions to the point where they can sense the Sovereign Integral and experience it – no matter how fleetingly – they are the ones who must express this new state in truthfulness and directness. It is the time of the Nunti-Sunya, which is the messenger of stillness or emptiness. This is the ancient, encoded term for the End of Imprisonment. The “emptiness” is the quantum presence or state in which the Sovereign Integral exists.

As I mentioned in a previous answer, Nibiru is no longer a threat to Earth. Our threat is the Human Mind System and its self-perpetuating nature.

---

#### **Question 14 from Project Camelot:**

We have testimony that says that the Anunnaki are here, working with present-day governments and on our base on Mars. Do you agree? Is Nibiru a planetoid containing the negatively-oriented side of the Anunnaki and which is headed our way?

**Answer 14 from James:** I agree that the Anunnaki are here, but they are not the threat. As I have previously stated, the real threat is people’s indifference to re-referencing their world from the HMS to the Sovereign Integral. The Elite, at all levels, direct the attention of humanity on those efforts that build the world according to their needs. The New World Order exists now, and the Anunnaki and their placements are well in control of it. Regardless of what name you give it, the world is indeed undergoing a new order, and there are those within the

Elite who are assessing the masses' awareness of these changes and their reactions to it.

In order to ensure that the rebellion within the masses of humanity is manageable, the Elite use the entertainment, media, religion, government, and education systems to desensitize humanity to the real issues, keeping their attentions on the trivial and unimportant, all the while monitoring their reactions to being monitored.

You can argue that this is paranoia, or you can argue that people are naïve and easily manipulated. If you choose either side you have activated your Polarity System. Congratulations. The issue is whether you resonate with the construct of the Human Mind System or the Sovereign Integral. If it is the latter, then allow your resonance to guide you, and, in an informal way, release your attention from those elements that reflect or constitute the HMS.

---

### **Question 15 from Project Camelot:**

What do you know about the bases on the moon and Mars and the various races (including humans) with bases there?

**Answer 15 from James:** I apologize for sounding like a broken record that repeats itself, however, while I can answer your question in the affirmative that there are bases on the moon (and other planets in our solar system), many of these bases are not manifest in our human dimension. In other words, a human could be standing in front of these bases and not sense them whatsoever. This phenomenon is

similar to the orbs that people photograph but don't see with their human eyes. Similarly, the UFOs that are witnessed on cameras but are not observed with human eyes.

The vast majority of extraterrestrial craft are only visible for short periods of time (if at all) because of the gravitational system on Earth "pulls" their crafts into our dimension, making them visible to our senses. On the moon, these gravitational fields are not a factor.

The bases were developed by other races, mostly the Anunnaki, as observation and storage sites.

---

**Question 16 from Project Camelot:**

What do you know about how successful the Powers-that-Be will be in surviving a pole shift or cataclysm in the underground bases that they have built for this purpose?

**Answer 16 from James:** The underground bases that exist are not immune to the changes. If Earth/Nature wants all of humanity to feel this compression of the quantum worlds with the manifest worlds, there will be no place to avoid it. Earthquakes and floods, to take two examples, can damage underground installations as well if not better than they can damage above ground. Those who believe they can manipulate Earth/Nature without consequence will learn otherwise.

To be clear, I am not suggesting that terrible Earth/Nature changes are imminent or unavoidable, rather, I am saying that no one will be immune from their effects when they occur because we are one and equal to all in

existence. There are those within the Elite that believe they have immunity, but they are so lost within their HMS programs that they are deluded and brainwashed into believing their actions will not rebound upon them, follow them into the next dimension, and encase them until they forgive and are forgiven.

This forgiveness is not a Biblical expression or religious platitude; it is the nature of the Sovereign Integral to remain inaccessible until the individual in the human expression (HMS) rises up within themselves and announces to their local universe: NO MORE! No more will I be part of this deception. No more will I contribute my energy to the works of deception. No more will I stand idle while others suffer. No more will I shake in my self doubt and allow those in power to decide my fate. No longer will I be sucked into the distractions of the Elite. No longer will I reserve my activism for a future time... the time is NOW.

If you do this – not only in words but deeds – you will see a space open up in your life; a sort of emptiness and stillness that lacks human embroidery or definition. This is the place in which you can stand-up and radiate the oneness, equality and truthfulness of the Sovereign Integral. This is the activism that will change the world. It will not be the organizations, the sects, or the militias that bring change. They cannot stand up to the Elite. Only the Self, the Sovereign Integral, operating in harmony with Earth/Nature can stand-up to the Elite and usher in the era of transparency and expansion.

When you voice the genuine and sober self-assessment in all of its textures and subtlety, you are inviting the new

behaviors of the Sovereign Integral. These are all signs of authentic forgiveness; they are not the sanctimonious, over emotionalized capitulations of a guilt-ridden follower who intones the ritual of forgiveness like a machine. In apathy, blindness, or utter devotion to the Money Power Grid, it is all the same relative to accessing the Sovereign Integral state. You will be shut out. Forgiveness is the active formula of self-assessment of your present situation and the application of new behaviors that are in resonance with the Sovereign Integral.

Look upon your life every moment and see if you are operating in the HMS or are quietly going about the business of cutting the threads that bind you. If you feel your behaviors reflect a state of oneness, equality and truthfulness, then you are in resonance with the Sovereign Integral.

---

**Question 17 from Project Camelot:**

Would you consider yourself to be a time traveler, having returned in order to help guide the planet through this transition? Would you view any other great teachers or world figures from this perspective?

**Answer 17 from James:** Like everyone else embodied in a human instrument, living in these times, I am both my sovereign Self and I am First Source. I am more aware of this state than some, but this is the only difference. I am one of those who has been exposed to life outside the prison, and I have returned not with descriptions of the “other side” but with encoded works, techniques, and behavioral systems that can help people form alignments



with their preternatural Self, and move into the new era of transparency and expansion with greater ease.

---

**Question 18 from Project Camelot:**

Our philosophy is that hiding in plain sight is wisest... or, in other words, the best place to hide is out in the open. You have chosen to remain hidden and largely anonymous. Would you explain the philosophy that lies behind this, your experience with the Powers that Be and their surveillance of you and your work and what circumstances or conditions might motivate you into coming forward in person in the future?

**Answer 18 from James:** My anonymity is not an expression of hiding from the Powers that Be. I am an infinite being just as you and everyone else. My reason for anonymity is due to my desire to let the works stand on their own, without the handiwork of personality or image, as I am not an image or personality. Besides, the Powers that Be know who I am and how to find me if they are ever inclined to do so.

My role, as single-pointed as it may seem, is to re-introduce the Sovereign Integral to humanity. It is an encoded word concept that has many, many layers to it. Some people will immediately resonate with the concept it contains, not really knowing why or what the word means. While it was introduced ten years ago through the WingMakers.com website, it was only disclosed at a certain level. Now, through this communication, and those that will follow, a new layer of its meaning has been revealed.

The Sovereign Integral is the transparent Being of expansion, uniquely fit for the era in which we have begun to enter. It is the portal through which the individual can experience First Source in unconditional oneness, equality and truthfulness. It is not the soul or spirit. It is not God. It is not affiliated with the God-Spirit-Soul Complex. It is outside of this construct of the Human Mind System. And this is precisely why it can be a challenge to understand what the Sovereign Integral is, and why it requires significant preparation to experience its incomparable qualities and dimensional expressions.

The Sovereign Integral is outside of the prison, and yet it does, due to its infinite nature, encompass the prison. As an encompassing element of the human body it is as near as your breath, circulating within your human instrument, yet it remains in its own quantum existence in emptiness and stillness. I know that the description of emptiness seems unfulfilling, and to some, a bit frightful, but the emptiness I speak of is simply that it is empty of illusion – the deceptions and separations of the Human Mind System.

In closing, since this was your last question, I want to add that I realize my answers to this set of questions may cause a sense of being lost in some people – perhaps not at first, but over the days and weeks ahead, you might come to this place in your process. I want to assure you that this is normal. This feeling of being lost is a consequence of letting go of the things that bind you to your Human Mind System, and anything that cuts these threads that bind you, that asserts that your extensive, multi-lifetime beliefs have

been based on programs of deception, is a very hard thing to accept without a sense of loss or a feeling of being lost.

All I can tell you is that for some of you, when you feel you have gone astray – uneasy in your every thought and feeling – you are the closest to being found. Let this recognition comfort you. The realizations of the Sovereign Integral come in waves for most people, they are like layers being peeled, one at a time, that gradually allow the full realization, and when this realization may occur for each of you is a thing best left in the mystery. You will not know when it will arrive, but in the new era, the conditions are favorable and the process is quickening with preparations like Quantum Pause.

Please be patient with your process. Within Lyricus we call this process The Origin Point because when it occurs you experience yourself outside of the Human Mind System and you feel your Self has returned to its origin, but of course it has never left, it only feels like a return when you are transitioning from the Human Mind System to the Sovereign Integral, and this sense of return only lasts a split second until the truth is fully recovered.

For those of you who have followed the works of WingMakers.com, Lyricus.org and EventTemples.org, you may be wondering why my answers are so direct and come from a different geometry than my previous works. There are several reasons: one is that we are in a new time, the era of transparency and expansion is underway and it is colliding with the Elite agenda. Another reason is that the questions that Kerry and Bill have asked have never been asked of me in a public forum before, so you are hearing about some of this material for the first time as a result.

And finally, as part of my personal undertaking to reveal the next level of the Sovereign Integral, it is necessary to strip off some of the rounded edges of the bridging that was invested in the original version of the concept.

Each of you must ask yourself the questions: Who would I be if masters, or God, or Light, or an extraterrestrial savior did not exist? What would I do if I was all of these in my world? It is time to take responsibility for your self. To rise up and embody the oneness, equality and truthfulness of who you are, because you cannot stand behind a Supreme Being or Master and truly express the Sovereign Integral state of consciousness.

The bottom line is that all of this empire of deception, what I have been referring to as a prison, had to be created in order to enslave humans without them knowing they were enslaved. And all of the work that has been done since Anu's first enslavement of humanity has been deception because humans would never have gone along without it being this way, and Anu and the Elite knew this as a certainty. First Source is re-activating itself within the human family, you can have the condition of forgetfulness, but it is not forgetting. You have not forgotten.

Nunti-Sunya.

From my heart to yours,

James

---

• Additional questions sent to James by Kerry Cassidy

James,

First of all I want to thank you for the wonderful answers you have provided to the complex set of questions we provided.

I hope you don't mind if I ask you a few clarifying questions that go directly to an issue that is currently at the 'door' of our Project Camelot and will affect the way we move forward into the future.

I understand that free of the HMS we are Sovereign Integrals, gods of our local multi-verse and First Source. And that the GSSC is what anchors us to the HMS...

Whereas, the GSSC does not lead to true recognition of this truth, you also have stated in the WingMakers material that the WingMakers are representatives of the Central Race and the Central Race were/are what is also referred to as the Elohim or creators of our galaxy and all life (the genetic caretakers of the of the Universe), is how you put it in a segment of the WingMakers material.

With this in mind, Anu, and the Anunnaki must therefore be part of the WingMakers. Yet, as you say, Anu was able to 'seduce' the interdimensional Atlanteans to take human bodies and therefore become imprisoned by HMS and into a recurring cycle from which there is no escape save, by recognizing one's true nature i.e. as a sovereign integral and therefore First Source.

Given this dilemma, one might ask:

---

**Question 19 from Project Camelot:**

Who was Anu, and what was his purpose, and why?

**Answer 19 from James:** Anu ascended to kingdom of the Anunnaki as a result of his superior resourcefulness and manipulative mind, which launched him into “Savior” standing of his race, which he came to see as his natural birthright throughout the dimensions of his creation. By nearly all human definition, Anu is God.

Anu’s purpose is multi-faceted and problematic to pin down because it really depends on which timespace coordinates you make your assessments from. In one coordinate, you can say that his relative genius provided him a measure of Godhood, and yet, in a different coordinate, you could say he was Satan, and the truth is, he is both, again, by human definition.

Among the interdimensional planes of existence, where entities or beings exist as individual expressions of First Source, there are races of beings that exist in different vibrational densities. There are numerous different races and just as in Nature, there is a natural selection process that determines which species will attain a dominant position among the various races. The Anunnaki are the race of beings that rose to prominence within the interdimensional planes and it was their king, Anu, who foresaw the process that would catapult himself into Godhood. This story is told a hundred different ways in various mythologies, but Anu is worshipped as God upon this planet by those who are sincere, and yet unaware of the origin of the God concept.

Anu’s purpose, as it pertains to humanity, was to create a physically manifested race of beings that he could control. It was his creation impulse that led him to pursue Godhood and to be worshipped by his creation, but he

knew that this could only transpire if he were able to enslave the true nature of humanity within a human instrument that was fitted with the Human Mind System and its various sub-systems.

The impulse to be a Creator-God was a facet of Anu's supremely gifted mind, which was an outgrowth of his genetic encoding, as he was able to conceive of this out of the requirement to save his race and civilization. It was out of the cauldron of this necessity that he began to envision creating a race of laborers upon Earth. It was only tens of thousands of years after the Anunnaki's initial experiments in human genetics, when the human race was well underway, that the human expression began to become one of the key obsessions of other interdimensional races.

This obsession created the various mythologies of extraterrestrials that lived on other planets just like humans and used spacecraft to visit Earth – some benevolent, some not so kindly. However, as I mentioned earlier, the human race is truly the only life form of its kind in the entire universe, in terms of its level of density and manifested physicality, and this is due to Anu's experimentation in designing human instruments that could be enslaved by the Human Mind System.

Anu was a master of observation. He understood the essence of beings, and with this understanding, he used it to manipulate. He knew that all beings, at their core essence, were encoded to serve. There is this natural infusion within the Sovereign Integral to serve the oneness of all beings, however, as Anu realized, this inborn aspiration to serve, was also a weakness that could be

exploited – exploited in the sense that beings can be manipulated into suppression without them knowing it.

The mythology of gold, being the purpose in which Anu manifested this entire system of creation, is only the surface motive. It was a much broader agenda that Anu aspired to: it was being God to all beings – interdimensional and dimensional (human) – and seizing the power to control the fate of a planet, race, group, or individual that is bestowed to the one who created the system. Anu believed, or perhaps, rationalized, that he merely provided human and interdimensional beings with a fulfillment to serve God.

In response to your question, why did Anu do this? It was simply power, but not power as we might think of it in relation to a corporate CEO or president of a country, no, this was a power that was far-reaching and included entire races and planets, but even that was not the reason. The motivation was more subtle: it was to enslave the Sovereign Integral consciousness, knowing that it was more powerful, more intelligent, and more aware than even Anu. This was the true motive of Anu – to control that which was greater than he. It is a power inconceivable in our human domain, and once this power was achieved, it created a desire for more power, and therefore, more sophisticated systems of control.

It is these systems of control, “stacked” one on top of another, that ultimately slowed down the perception of time, and, in a sense, enabled Anu to operate in an entirely different time. This difference in time enabled him to move ahead of other races and control the outflow of events like a cosmic puppet-master. Other races were then



disadvantaged as they were the recipients of events and not the creators thereof. They were behind the creation-flow always struggling to keep up, to figure it out, while, in a sense, Anu was a thousand miles ahead, calculating his moves that other races would encounter in a completely different time.

---

### **Question 20 from Project Camelot:**

If the WingMakers are the Central Race and the Central Race are the creator gods or Elohim, then is the RA Material and subsequent channelings of, for example, Wynn Free and others who say they are channeling the Elohim, deluded as part of the GSSC or are they indeed channeling the WingMakers or First Source?

Answer 20 from James: Let me answer your question with an analogue. Let's say I brought you into a room that was completely dark – not a single photon existed in this room, but I was aware that there was a dial inside the room and I knew, from experience, where it was. As I turned the dial, it emitted photons of light from a point source into the room focused with a precision I controlled. If I turned the dial up the number of photons increased to such an extent that you would begin to see objects in the room, very dimly at first, but nevertheless, you would see that the room was not a black void, but rather, consisted of objects that were present in the room, even though you didn't yet know what the objects were.

Now, if I focused the photon emitter to a specific object, and turned up the dial high enough, you would see that it was the human soul. If I turned the dial up even further

and diffused the photons in a wider pattern, you would see the God-Spirit complex infusing the human soul like a circulatory system. If I continued to turn the dial up, releasing more photons into the room, you would see that there were objects, far in the distant background, behind the God-Spirit-Soul Complex, and yet these objects were even more dimly illuminated and mysterious in their expressions.

The objects that stand behind, so dimly lit as to remain unknown, are the Sovereign Integral and its collective expression: First Source. The God-Spirit-Soul Complex (GSSC) exists in this room, and is the first object to be illuminated by the light. In the faint light of a few thousand photons, the GSSC becomes subject to interpretation by thousands, if not millions, of spiritual explorers. No one sees it clearly enough to define it definitively, and therefore the interpretations persist from one era to the next.

If I turned the photon emitter to the objects in the distance, and turned up the dial, the viewer would now perceive that the Sovereign Integral is unconnected to the God-Spirit-Soul Complex, and that the GSSC is something that actually suppresses or obscures the view of the Sovereign Integral. It is impossible to turn the light on the Sovereign Integral without also illuminating its suppression by the GSSC, but this does not mean that those who transmit the GSSC are deluded or insincere. It only means that in the deeper reality of the Sovereign Integral, the GSSC is revealed to be a form of suppression and it is not connected in any substantive way to either the Sovereign Integral or First Source.

Bridges are being built from the GSSC to the Sovereign Integral because there are individuals that are aware of the Sovereign Integral state at an unconscious level, and they are constructing bridges from the GSSC to this deeper reality unaware as to the ultimate destination of their bridge.

Now, to your specific question. Those who are channeling are not conscious of the specific source from which their information arises. Channeling is a Human Mind System insert and its original source may be unknown, undisclosed, or falsely attributed. It is not from the Sovereign Integral state nor that of First Source, as this information would not be transmittable in words or images. Whenever you see words and images, you must know that they arise from within the HMS, and, yes, that includes these words.

Those who try to build bridges from the HMS to the Sovereign Integral state have no choice but to use words, sounds, techniques, technologies, and images to inspire human beings to embrace this new era of transparency and expansion. Because these “bridges” express with the tools of the HMS, even when they try to reveal the “deeper objects in the room,” they are only able to reveal the general shape and outline. This is all part of the transition process, but as I have always said, be prepared to jettison your beliefs – see them as disposable – for they are not appendages of the Sovereign Integral, because beliefs are from the mind and only of the mind.

---

**Question 21 from Project Camelot:**

Although you say that there is no ascension in the traditionally understood sense of the term, however, you do say we are moving into an era of transparency and expansion where the forces of the Collective System are failing... and where Sovereign Integral consciousness is more accessible.

What is causing this change in the era... where we have, as you say, reached the top of the pyramid of manifested life? In a sense, if the HMS is a labyrinth or matrix of deception that extends throughout the known Universe or multiverse..., which might also be called a Game, then in essence self-realization of our true nature as a Sovereign Integral or First Source, is stepping outside the game/matrix results in game over or oneness?

Answer 21 from James: Ascension is not an individual process because the individual is not separate from its core essence, nor does it require an intermediary to reacquaint it with this essence, what I've been referring to throughout this interview as the Sovereign Integral. What the individual truly requires is to become disentangled from the artifice of the Human Mind System, and all this requires is the evolving awareness that is born and sustained during the Quantum Pause, or its equivalent.

The cause behind the era of transparency and expansion is multi-faceted, but let me speak to its purpose before I suggest its cause, as they are always related. The purpose of this new era is the transfer of knowledge, relative to the Sovereign Integral, so that humanity can begin living – through authentic self-expression – the behaviors of the Sovereign Integral here on Earth. In other words, the deceptions that have persisted in this world, the systems of

cover-up, will be gradually dissolved, and as this macro-process unfolds in parallel with the individual knowledge transfer, First Source may inhabit the dimensional worlds for the First Time.

This has been referred to in various spiritual texts as “Heaven on Earth”. In Lyricus we refer to this as the Grand Portal, but while the precise meaning may be different, the general event is the same.

Now, as to its cause, the era of transparency and expansion is an outgrowth of the Sovereign Integral’s natural presence; benevolent interdimensional Beings; the transformation of Earth/Nature in terms of timespace; and the portal into the interdimensional realms which has been opening up in the past ten years. Let me take these one at a time.

The Sovereign Integral exists here and now, an infinite Being hidden in what some would call the finite human body-mind system or human instrument. Within this presence, the Quantum Presence, there is a quantum-level connection between all life expressions, and it is through this connection that transformation – of the whole – is possible. As more individual expressions align to First Source, and dedicate their self-expression as an outflow from the Sovereign Integral, this new awareness and capability transfers to all life. In other words, the Quantum Presence transmits, and as it transmits, it transforms the whole. To be sure, this is a process and takes eons of time, but it is now reaching a critical mass within Earth, Nature and humanity.

Analogous to this is the use of the Genetic Manipulation System (GMS) by other interdimensional entities who, unlike Anu, have a benevolent purpose. Remember, I stated earlier in the interview that the GMS is an open system, and it was for this reason that other interdimensional beings were so interested in humanity. Those beings referred to as the Greys are, but one example. Within the known multiverse, the human instrument is unique, and it is for this reason that other races have such an obsession with its qualities and capabilities.

These interdimensional races use spaceships as the means through which they cross vibrational domains. In other words, it is not space they are traversing, as we think of space; rather, it is negotiating vibrational densities for which they use their spaceships. If they stay for extended periods in our vibrational domain, they will manifest and become visible to our senses, and if they are manifested for extended periods of time, they will be unable to return to their dimension. This is due to our gravitational fields and the subtle differences between the two domains of existence.

Some of these interdimensional beings, those who have become materialized, have moved into underground bases, or, in some instances, have transformed their physical bodies to allow them to integrate reasonably well into human society.

Curiosity in the human condition is the principle reason that UFOs and extraterrestrial influence and interaction exist. Humanity has been examined and investigated like no other specie, and while Anu was very clear that other

racess could investigate, they were not to influence. However, there were certain beings that were not beholden to Anu, and operated independently of the Anunnaki and their allies, and here I am referring directly to the WingMakers.

The GMS is connected to the unconscious region of the Human Mind System. Thus, if a modification vis-à-vis the GMS is made in a fractional percentage of humans, it is transferred to the human family through the unconscious or Genetic Mind. The story of how the WingMakers utilized the GMS to open portals between the human domain and the interdimensional domains would require more time to explain than I have in the context of this interview, but let me just say that the WingMakers attuned some of the implants within the GMS to enable certain individuals of the human family to re-conceptualize, and in some instances, experience, the human soul liberated of the GSSC imprints.

Earth/Nature is undergoing its own transformation, stimulated by its resonance with new spatial energies and its own awakening as a result of the human condition. Earth/Nature is well aware of the human influence upon its domains, and this influence has stimulated its defenses or strategies of continued existence. It is perhaps hard to comprehend that Earth/Nature is aware of the Human Mind System when we ourselves remain largely ignorant of our condition, but it is true. Earth/Nature realizes that humanity must awaken to its true essence, or Earth/Nature will be destined to live enslaved to those who are themselves enslaved.

Relative to the portals that were opened between the human dimension and that of the interdimensional realms, this occurred, for the first time, in 1998. These portals were revelatory examples of how Anu had deceived virtually all beings through the creation of intermediary domains that were designed programs, within programs, within programs, for the purpose of positioning Anu as God of all.

There are all of these accounts in the historical record of individuals traveling into the Heavens and meeting with the angels and masters. These accounts are so numerous as to make it seem as if it were almost common. It is not. Before the portals were opened in 1998, those who were traveling into the Heavens were interacting with realms of the mind and/or astral domains. The era of transparency and expansion began in 1998 and it will continue indefinitely into the vast future that awaits humanity and its interdimensional allies.

---

**Question 22 from Project Camelot:**

In a sense, is not this concept nothing more than enlightenment as it is more traditionally called Direct realization of our godhead or divinity is a concept well known within Eastern philosophy... as is recognition that we are, always have been and always will be... God or First Source.

**Answer 22 from James:** Anu encoded within the human being a desire to search for enlightenment, and at the same time, he created the God-Spirit-Soul Complex to partially satisfy the search. I say “partially” because for



most people the search begins down one path, but then moves to another, and another, and another. Over the course of a lifetime, the average person has searched through dozens of religious, scientific, occult, and spiritual paths, and yet their search continues. This is because the program that is encoded into human beings and reinforced by the HMS, stimulates the search for God-Spirit-Soul outside of the individual, even when the teaching represented declares that the “Kingdom of Heaven is within.”

If you were the creator of humanity, and you wanted to keep secret the one thing that would answer all questions pertaining to the Self, making any search for truth obsolete, where would you hide this amazing secret? If you were wise, you would place it right in front of everyone, but also place within your creation the insatiable desire to search for truth in books, lectures, spiritual savants, saints, prophets, sages, spiritual techniques, shamans, witches, ancient texts, churches, synagogues, mosques, ashrams, websites, and a hundred other places. That is how to hide the answer to everything from everyone, and this is precisely what Anu did.

The Eastern concept of Direct-Realization or Self-Realization or God-Realization is part of the bridgework I mentioned earlier in question 20, but it is, with few exceptions, still connected into the realization of the God-Spirit-Soul Complex through the mind. There are some, who have glimpsed the Sovereign Integral state, but it is a very small percentage, and to some degree, this meager percentage is due to the monetization of the spiritual

hierarchy of the Eastern paths and their propensity for separation via their teacher-student ordering.

Those who have access to the Sovereign Integral state, can repeat their accessibility at will. They have access to the interdimensional realms outside of the HMS and its tributary systems of suppression, they understand how to fuel this access to the Sovereign Integral state, and, conversely, how to starve the suppression framework. These are an exceedingly small number of human beings.

If you read *Cosmic Consciousness* by Richard Maurice Bucke, he provides an accounting of some of our greatest spiritual explorers throughout history, detailing how they were imbued with a mysterious, non-physical light and a clear sense of union with all life. In virtually every case, the experience of cosmic consciousness was a sudden, inexplicable and profound feeling of oneness with the universe, a feeling that lasted for many days and positively affected them the remainder of their life. Most of those who experienced this cosmic consciousness felt that they had become a “channel” of this energy through their writing, art, and life’s work.

But these events are not repeatable, the experiencer is not able to slip into the heavenly domain at will, nor do they have clear knowledge of what is real and what remains a deception. This is no fault of these forerunners of humanity, but I am merely making the point that it is a different experience, and from my perspective, it is an experience within the HMS.

First Source is not God, not as human beings understand what God is. God, as an entity, independent of you or me,

does not exist – though there have been those (i.e., Anu) who believed themselves to be God and masqueraded as one. First Source is the collective of Sovereign Integrals throughout the multiverse, and that which binds them is Source Intelligence. The entire GSSC, as conceived by Anu, was modeled on this reality:

God = First Source

Spirit = Source Intelligence

Soul = Sovereign Integral

But these concepts are not the same. If one says, “I am self-realized and therefore enlightened,” are they enlightened of the GSSC? Or, are they an experiencer of the Sovereign Integral state of consciousness beyond the HMS? If it is the latter, you will not find them on book tours, giving lectures, establishing schools or ashrams, speaking in the lecture circuits, creating a spiritual path, healing for money, profiteering from their experience, or claiming they have special powers that others lack.

Anu wanted to ensure that spiritual and religious seekers would be caught up in the heavens of his creation. This is why the search outside oneself is so powerfully encoded, why we feel this separation of body and soul, and soul and God; why we cling so tenaciously to the diluted and disempowered versions of First Source, Source Intelligence, and Sovereign Integral found in the God-Spirit-Soul Complex; why our thoughts and prayers, so filled with hope, speak to a mask of First Source that is not one and equal with ourselves.

The fuel of our HMS is anger, greed, disappointment, irritability, blame, fear, resentment, and other so-called negative emotions, caused in large measure because of our lack of understanding that we are all one and equal, and that that truth is the basis of life. Those who have ventured into the clear waters of the Sovereign Integral have a responsibility to share the process of stripping away the masks and deceptions, living in the world, but not being of it, and this means that they do not participate in the deceptions of the HMS.

This process is as simple as practicing the Quantum Pause, the Six Heart Virtues and persisting until your last breath. There is no one to pay for this. There is no master or teacher. There is no school or rank of proficiency. There is no book to read or lecture to listen to. It is simple and easy. If you resonate with this approach, you can try it and see if it feels natural to you. There will be no one judging you if you decide not to pursue it to your last breath... other than yourself.

---

### **Question 23 from Project Camelot:**

In what way, is awareness of oneself as a Sovereign Integral any different from the self-realization attained through meditation and awakening of kundalini? And, considering the breathing technique you are referencing in your material, is this not the same as any other technique which stimulates the rise of kundalini, linking of the chakras and eventually, enlightenment?

**Answer 23 from James:** As you may have already surmised from my previous answers, the Sovereign

Integral is the re-conceptualized expression of the human soul during the era of transparency and expansion. This era will be anchored in the experience of the Grand Portal, which is the consciousness of First Source – Sovereign Integrals unified and self aware – living upon Earth. This is the era whose shoreline we have just touched, and those tools, techniques, mental models, and methods of the previous age, well, they are not relevant, just as the abacus is not relevant in the age of computers.

Yes, I'm aware that I'm being very direct here, but it is time to be direct and truthful without over care to consequences and how people may respond. Look at it this way, and I am not picking on Eastern spirituality, but you asked the question about kundalini and so I'll respond accordingly, but what I am saying applies to all of the traditional methods and mental models regardless of their cultural roots.

Kundalini is a complex system of energy manipulation within the human instrument culminating in enlightenment of the mind. It is a system of ascension where a teacher who knows how to activate the kundalini helps the student orchestrate their chakra or energy system. Well, what is energy? In the dimensions of the Sovereign Integral there is no energy. There is no fluctuation of energy. There is no yin-yang of energy. Energy is a concept of the mind. So those who spend endless hours working with energy, where has it taken you?

Energy exists in the HMS. It is real in the physical world. It is indisputably a part of the human instrument, and yet, the Sovereign Integral is constant, aware, awake, observant, alive, infinite, and, as odd as it may seem, it is

not energy. It is not of energy. It does not require energy. It is not existent because of energy. Before there was energy there was the Sovereign Integral. Before there was a Human Mind System, there was the Sovereign Integral.

You might say, “Okay, but doesn’t the practice of kundalini (or any other legitimate ascension practice) accelerate my ability to understand the Sovereign Integral?” And my answer would be a qualified, “yes,” but only to the degree you are willing to release what you have learned and establish a new First Point that doesn’t include separation or complexity. Once you have invested yourself in a proficiency rank, accrued your expertise, are proceeding to become a teacher, you are in danger of being attached to the irrelevant and obsolete, and these can become like vines that cling to you and constrict your flexibility of movement to the new era in which we now move and have Our Being.

Let me be clear, for those who believe that a master can pronounce special words to them, as in the case of Deeksha (related to kundalini), and by these very words, cause them to be magnetically drawn to enlightenment, they are deluded. If someone believes they are enlightened by reading any book, they are deluded. If someone believes they can repeat a mantra and they are enlightened, they are deluded.

I am not trying to be confrontational here, but the simple facts are that billions of people on this planet are deluded in their practice of spirituality, the occult, religion, and yes, even science. They practice what they believe will move them closer to truth, when they themselves are truth, and their practice only creates thicker walls between

awareness and truth. The era of transparency and expansion is all about bringing walls down. It is not about the absorption of more knowledge and information.

Quantum Pause is not related to kundalini or the belief system that surrounds it. In homage to Gertrude Stein, one could say that a breath technique, is a breath technique, is a breath technique, but that has not been my experience. While Quantum Pause is indeed a breath technique at its core, it is also a method to leave the human instrument and experience the Sovereign Integral state of consciousness. This is because breath is the highway or portal out of the human instrument, if done with the appropriate First Point.

Remember that the astral and mind domains are within the human instrument, so we are not interested in journeying there since they remain inside the Human Mind System, and are thus illusory and misleading. Quantum Pause is a method or process of disentangling from the Human Mind System, realizing that your self-definitions and identifications with culture, family, religion, spirituality, material possessions, money, and purpose, have been programmed and are not really who you are.

This is a difficult path for many people to accept, but this is what Quantum Pause is designed to achieve. It is the breath, enabled through Nature, that is life-giving to the human instrument, and it is the human instrument that is life-giving to the Sovereign Integral within the manifested physical reality of Earth. Thus, breath is the link, and Quantum Pause enables this link to be nurtured, expanded, strengthened, and made stable.

It is also important to understand that everything I bring forward for an individual's consideration should be treated as a framework, not a prescriptive technique that should be followed rigidly. Individuals need to take responsibility for establishing their own exploratory techniques, methods of expansion, and new behaviors of disentangling from the HMS. Quantum Pause is a framework, not a specific system. With the web (an analogue of the Genetic Mind), there are ways to share your adjustments, add-ons, alterations, and new techniques, and I would encourage people to do this.

One last comment on the application of Quantum Pause, the big “wow” experience is not the fish you are trying to catch. You are not trying to attract anything to you; you are not trying to learn new information or become more knowledgeable; you are not trying to move energy around in your body; you are not trying to leave your body; and you are not trying to commune with your higher self or God. Your purpose, in applying Quantum Pause, is to pull down the walls that separate you from that state of consciousness that you are, and will always be, and have always been.

Quantum Pause is designed to align you with the transparency and expansion of this era of which we are all a part.

---

#### **Question 24 from Project Camelot:**

You say that the enlightenment of the past, embodied in experiences of Samadhi and such by great teachers such as Christ, Buddha and others did not actually take them into



true contact with their true nature, outside the HMS, and therefore they did not escape the prison of the HMS, and they did not experience this state of direct knowing of ones true nature as a god or First Source...

Therefore, who was the member of the human family who did attain this realization?

**Answer 24 from James:** The spiritual masters who have become the symbolic leaders of religious institutions like Christianity and Buddhism, to name two, are among the forerunners of humanity. They were the spiritual explorers and activists of their time and culture, and were, and are, deeply committed to the spiritual life, infusing humanity with their hard-earned wisdom. In their era, they came to the outer walls of the prison (the Human Mind System) by breaking through many of the previous fortifications and distractions that held their fellow man.

They had the conviction of their destiny, their blueprint, and they were exemplars of their time. Their motives were pure and they brought new perspective to the human condition that enabled a quickening in the direction of the Sovereign Integral. But the distance between human beings in the era of Jesus and Buddha, and the experience of the Sovereign Integral were insurmountable. The human instrument was not prepared for this interaction and experience. However, the direction could be established, the head trail could be set forth, and a crude map developed for later generations of spiritual explorers.

Remember, we are all facets of the human experience, and return lifetime after lifetime, renewing our indoctrination in the Human Mind System, but

simultaneously, one or more of our kind, penetrates a deeper region of our collective prison, and returns to write or speak about it. Their observations and experiences become part of our Genetic Mind or unconscious, and these can have profound meaning to our specie overall because the human family – every one of us – has access to this field of consciousness.

But the steps we take, in the direction of the Sovereign Integral, are small, sometimes indistinguishable, in the context of a single lifetime. The eras in which we live determine our self-expressions, our definitions, and our beliefs. We are always in the process of the next evolution, as determined by the Genetic Mind, the Earth/Nature element, and the interdimensional beings that interact with humanity. Behind all of this, is First Source, who masterfully draws humanity to itself, one individual at a time.

With that context, I hope it is clear that Jesus or Buddha or Lao Tzu or Mohammed or Saint Germaine or any other master of their era, was on the spiritual frontier, deep in the territory of the higher Mind, which unto itself is so vast as to make the physical universe seem like a grain of sand. The entrance to the non-polarity realms was not nearly as accessible as it is in this era. There were no bridges to cross over, no portals open and operating; it was literally a wilderness without trails or paths.

And so, these spiritual explorers, as great as they were, as deep as they journeyed into the Heavenly realms, few of them touched the true essence of our highest nature – in that lifetime in which they became identified with a religion or spiritual path. The parallel for this exists in

science as well. Look at Newton, the greatest scientific explorer of his era, and yet today, we know that his framework was deeply flawed. Was he deluded? No, he was operating in his era at the highest level based on the Genetic Mind. Even now, in our era, Einstein's contributions are being called into question by 21st century physicists and cosmologists.

Just as science is constantly redefining the Universe, spiritual explorers are constantly redefining the God-Spirit-Soul Complex. The layers of knowledge are near infinite in both cases, and, at their core, have mathematical counterparts at an octave that humanity has yet to even imagine, let alone discover. Thus, any suggestion that I perceive the achievements and contributions of humanity's spiritual or scientific explorers as lacking or deceptive is only a result of not understanding the larger context of time and the depth of the "onion" we are collectively "peeling" – in both the scientific and spiritual dimensions.

---

**Question 25 from Project Camelot:**

And how is this realization different from that attained by Buddha, Jesus or other 'masters' commonly recognized within the human family? Is not saying one is a Sovereign Integral and therefore First Source identical to saying one is God and enlightened or 'at one'?

**Answer 25 from James:** While I have answered this question from a more traditional geometry in previous responses, I will, this time, take a new angle to your question.

In the stillness, purposelessness, and emptiness of you, everything exists. And yet, isn't this precisely what human beings fear most? In the absolute center of who you are, where the void is, do you not fear this? Perhaps it would be accurate to say that this is the origin of fear itself. An irony wouldn't you say, that the Sovereign Integral, that which most clearly defines you, is feared by you. Why do you suppose this is? Why would you fear the void and emptiness that is you? Why would you refuse to look through the portal of your human instrument and perceive without the mind in attendance?

This is precisely why human beings are addicted to spiritual propaganda. They fear the still-point in which they exist because they have been programmed by their HMS, and accepted it as truth: what is the void – is but death and non-existence. Thus, they search for the beautiful, the harmonious, the spiritual vistas of higher worlds, the descriptions of peace and love, angelic presences, the experience of oneness and beauty, but they do not want to go through the gateway of emptiness to get there because emptiness is death and non-existence of the mind. And the mind is what they have come to believe is them.

I am not suggesting that Jesus or Buddha did not possess this insight. They most certainly did and do. In a way, each of us possess this insight through the Genetic Mind, but very few who have walked this planet in a human form have achieved this insight based upon experience and not simply abstractions of words or symbols from the Genetic Mind. Jesus manifested on Earth to teach humans of his era that death was not real. That

God was not out there, but within the individual – every individual was equal in their standing; that the human race was a victim of enslavement to the Money Power Grid, and until humanity would rise up in the self-expression of its spiritual nature, it would remain a puppet of the powerful. And so it has.

From the very beginning, the insight of the Sovereign Integral is a reflection of the era in which we live. As First Beings, the Sovereigns created a mind – a vessel in which separation could occur – and from that moment, individuality was born. Over billions upon billions of years, the Sovereigns of the Mind, created the universe as we know it. They created the dimensions of the higher mind, and this mind creation gradually manifested creations of a lower mind. It was within the vibratory field of the lower mind that the Sovereigns began to lose their memory of their existence as First Beings.

They would look at the worlds of creation and wonder, “Who created this universe? Who was behind this magnificent and magical world?” And yet it never occurred to the Sovereigns that it was they who created the universe, and whose very reflection is Nature itself. And so the Sovereigns began to create a God – or the concept of a Supreme Being – as the one behind creation. God was the creator of all in Nature throughout the multiverse, and Sovereigns became diminished of power, and their sense of responsibility to Nature was also reduced.

This concept of God, separate from us, was thus born. As Sovereigns divided into races of interdimensional beings, they developed a near-infinite diversity of creations, only the tiniest fraction of which is known to

humanity through symbols and fragments of stories, and most of these, if they are even remembered, are not believed anymore, as the rational mind has emptied these stories into the wastebasket of mythology. Then, Anu's forefathers appeared, and with them, the creation of the human instrument began. Though it was crude, when compared to modern-day humans, the human instrument of this era was nonetheless brilliantly conceived.

When Anu began to create the next evolution of the human instrument, he realized how Sovereigns were forgetful of their origins and had consigned creation to a Supreme Being. The Sovereigns that had become the interdimensional beings known as the Atlanteans, were perfect choices to power the human instruments that Anu was creating, for the Atlanteans, despite their spiritual prowess, were inexperienced with deception. And this, I might add, is a theme worth noting: the spiritually focused are often the most easily manipulated because of their innate sense of trust.

The Atlanteans, through the trickery of Anu, were seduced into inhabiting the human instrument, and the Sovereigns became humans. However, not every Atlantean was captured and subjected to the process of human enslavement, there were some, who predicted the outcome of the human project that Anu was executing and they fled within a dimensional "pocket" upon Earth, deep within what is now called the Atlantic Ocean.

It was these Atlanteans that became known in mythological terms as the Elohim or Shining Ones, and these are the same as we know today as the WingMakers. These beings have been watching the human family since

its initial footsteps on a densifying planet called Earth, millions of years ago. They have been the benevolent resource to humanity because they are human in every sense except they do not have the HMS programs and systems or the human instrument that distract and divert the Sovereigns within the human instrument from realizing they are present.

And how are the Sovereigns present? In every breath that brings life to the human instrument. It is the breath in which the Sovereign's presence dwells. There is a saying within Lyricus that If you're not in your breath, you're in your mind. It's well understood that this is an abstract concept to the Human Mind System, but the Sovereigns live in the intersection of life and Nature, which is the breath.

The WingMakers are not the guides, angels, ascended masters, or gods that exist within the dimensions of the Human Mind System. They live within the interdimensional fields of the higher mind, and like wise elders to the human family they provide the paradigms of the Sovereign Integral and Grand Portal. They focus exclusively on these two paradigms because from these come the First Point that enables the individual to dissolve the programs that conceal the one, the equal, and the truthful from itself.

The WingMakers coined the term Sovereign Integral to encode the meaning that what exists within the pathways of one's breath is more than a physical body composed of a circuitry of feelings and thoughts. The greatest of the spiritual explorers realized this and have understood that the human soul would be redefined in every era, and while

it would appear to change, it always remains the constant awareness of both the infinite and the finite, and the real and the unreal.

One can read this interview and walk away feeling that an existential aura has been placed around them. That their concepts of God, Spirit, Soul, and everything affiliated, which they have been taught or elected to believe, has been challenged. Even those who have followed the WingMakers materials with dedication will find that I have changed the footing of those materials somewhat in this disclosure.

If you have ever ventured to an exotic destination, one that is culturally unlike your own, you're well aware that when you are in the airplane, flying over your destination, you really have not experienced the culture yet, no matter how much you have studied it in advance. When you arrive at your hotel, you remain outside of the culture, though you can see the differences in the plants and animals, the architecture and buildings, and the people on the streets, but still, you remain outside of the culture as an observer, and not a participant.

Only when you learn the language of the people, when you meet the people in their own dwellings – homes, shops, cafes, sports arenas, schools, churches – do you really begin to understand the culture. This is analogous to the bridgework between the GSSC and the Sovereign Integral. There is nothing more exotic or out of the ordinary than the language and dwellings of the Sovereign Integral, and the deeper you travel into this land, the stranger it will seem.



If I disclosed all of what is there in 1998, or even today, ten years later, the bridge would only carry a handful of people. It would seem a rickety and dangerous bridge to cross over, and many who would be curious or tempted would be talked out of crossing because it was just too strange. And so the bridge was constructed to meet certain people where they lived and how they believed. Those who resonated with the key terms and definitions, or an element of poetry, or music, or art, they found a texture, or structure that gave them a sense of connection, a sense of curiosity, and it was enough to bring them onto the bridge.

To use my previous metaphor, they are now landing at the “airport.” They are seeing the exotic land of the Sovereign Integral from their airplane seat, looking out of a small, glass window into a vast, new world. Remember, the First Point, as you step from the plane, is your breath, your heart and the virtues of its wisdom, as this is not a destination where the language is anything more than breath and virtuous self-expression. It is this simple.

I realize there will be those who will read this interview and a hundred more questions will flutter about them, perhaps only two or three will really matter in the moment, but the desire for more information and knowledge is a powerful addiction of the HMS. I would advise that you turn your attention from the acquisition of information and knowledge, and apportion it to the application of the heart virtues to yourself and all others within your local multiverse, and then simply listen to your breath, and each time you turn your attention to your breath, lean a little closer to the Being inside you, in the centermost point of your existence. Feel this bond strengthening and have the

conviction that any walls that have been placed between you, or will be placed between you, will be torn down.

If your focus is there, you will find access to everything, including the language of the Sovereign Integral and how to reawaken its culture within you, and live among its dwelling places.

It is the era of transparency and expansion.

Nunti-Sunya.

From my heart to yours,

James

# INTERVIEW WITH JAMES MAHU (APRIL 2013)

*This document consists of the interview between Mark Hempel and James Mahu in April 2013. It is a phone interview. It can also be downloaded as an audio file from the [WingMakers.com](http://WingMakers.com) website in the [Creator](#) section. Transcription by Mark Hempel.*

**Mark:** One of the main questions I think most people have... and it'll probably come across as naïve, but I'd like to hear your view on it anyway. What's the purpose of this whole thing called humanity? Why can't we get along and live together in some form of relative harmony?

**James:** Have you ever seen the show Dancing with the Stars?

**Mark:** A couple times. I'm not a big fan of dancing, as my wife will happily tell you.

**James:** (Chuckles.) Spaniards love dance. It's a cultural essence. Anyway, to answer your question, I will use a metaphor, and in that metaphor is the concept of the show, Dancing with the Stars. The show pairs up experienced, professional dancers with inexperienced celebrity dancers... although it's debatable how much of a celebrity they are in many instances, but for this sake, let's call them celebrity dancers. On each show, one pair is eliminated... until a victor is revealed on the last show.

So, with the framework established, imagine that the entire earth is a dance floor. On the one side of the dance floor you have the celebrities. Now, to be reasonable, these celebrities are not necessarily famous. On the other side of the dance floor you have the experienced professional dancers.

The celebrities... well, they're the old guard. In a way, they represent where humanity has come—our past journey. They're the part of humanity that lives dominantly in the left brain, the reptilian brain, the ego personality, the temporal shell. They live to enjoy, but also to fear. So this group, as you might imagine, is concerned with scanning their environment and seeing threats, problems, analyzing their environment, seeking to solve problems, structuring their world in conformity... toeing the line. They prefer to fall in line, to be a part of the story of three dimensions: be successful, acquire things, be a cog in the wheel, and try their best to not rock the boat.

On the other side of the dance floor we have the professionals. They represent where humanity is headed. Its future. They're the part of humanity that live primarily in their right brain—they are more intuitive, heart-centered, creative. They're the part that is seeking the tone of equality and oneness. They have a sense of the energetic fields... that ocean of energy that we all live in. They are the change agents, so, by definition, they rock the boat.

So, you have these two groups roaming the dance floor called earth. The music, the thing that makes these two groups begin to dance and interact is the subtle vibratory fields that our solar system moves through as it conducts its grand cycle around the galactic core of the Milky Way

galaxy. This music, if you can call it that, is bringing all of humanity together... in this dance. Now, at this stage, it seems awkward... the dance... that is.

Are you with me so far?

**Mark:** Yes, I follow you. Are these two groups similarly sized?

**James:** In terms of ratios, there are about 650 celebrities to each professional dancer. However, it's not simply that these are two groups. This dichotomy or duality also pertains to the individual, as well.

**Mark:** Okay, there I think you lost me.

**James:** Within the individual—one person—you have this dance floor at a microcosmic level. Remember we live within a holographic universe. This is why ratios play such an important role in this whole dance... but I'll get to that later. For now, think of yourself as a dance floor. On the one side you are a celebrity, you have a reptilian brain, your left brain. You're a survivor... a logical conformist. These are not bad things. I'm not labeling celebrities as bad, and the professionals as good. You need both to have the chemistry. It is the ratio of their presence in the decision-making that's the critical point.

On the other side, you have your soul, heart, right brain, higher mind, intuition. When these become activated in your life—and by this, I mean you've summoned them through the practice of the heart virtues—you can reach out to that part of you that is a celebrity. The part that is hard-coded into your human instrument that scans the threats, that tries to survive, that is ego-selfish, that sees

three dimensions and nothing more. You are dancing internally.

So you have this dichotomy. This duality. And it's all inside you. In the same way... it is all outside of you on the larger stage called earth. So your local universe has this dance floor, as does the non-local universe—the earth part.

Does that make sense?

**Mark:** Yeah... I think so. Back to the Dancing with the Stars metaphor... who're the judges?

**James:** Before we get to the judges, let me explain one more thing.

**Mark:** Sure.

**James:** The professional dancers teach... not only by words, but by behaviors. They show the dance moves. They exhibit the movements or practices that come from the heart and soul. They show the creativity of the right brain. They don't preach it. It's a demonstration. Part of this demonstration is to accept the awkwardness of their celebrity dance partners—either outside themselves or inside themselves. The celebrity part of humanity is crystallized into behaviors that have served them well in the three-dimensional world. In order to dance with the professionals they must be willing to accept the new behaviors, the new movements, and really listen to the music—to feel it.

This requires a remodeling of their belief systems. Something that is not easy for a large percentage of the human population—half of whom subscribe to a world

religion. So the professional dancers must have compassion and understanding. Patience helps, too. Otherwise, they get impatient themselves, frustrated and even angry.

This is true with the individual as well, but it's directed at themselves. It's a form of self-judgment... even ridicule, sometimes.

So this dance is going on in the non-local universe and the local universe at the same time. The professionals, within themselves are feeling this dichotomy of the new guard and the old guard, the right and the left brain, the intuitive and the logical, the soul and the body, the heart and the ego. But these are the two dance partners, and when they become entrained to the music, the new guard shows the movement, practices compassion, the two can dance as one!

(8:07) Pause...

Now, to your question about who judges this... who are the judges?

In the local universe, it is, of course, you. You are judging the quality of the dance. Who leads? Who steps on the toes? Who brings down the quality of the movement? You are judging this, and often, harshly.

**Mark:** Why? Why do we do that?

**James:** Because once you're activated, you know you're energy. You know you're energy before you're the body, and you know this energy is connected and linked to everything else in the nonlocal universe. It's a Being of unity, and its union is through love. So, when you fall

down awkwardly... or step on a toe, you judge yourself as being a klutz. But as I've said many times, this isn't about perfection. It's about practicing the movement, or the heart virtues, to the best of your abilities in the moment.

The dance floor is not always smooth. The three-dimensional world has pitfalls and traps. Everyone can stub their toes against it. Health issues, physical impediments, relationships, work stresses, financial constraints, all of these inform the dance floor upon which you dance. Some dance floors are bumpier than others, but if they are, you slow dance. You move a little more carefully when you hit a bumpy dance floor, but you can still flow. Your movements can still be graceful. You can still practice the heart virtues... even on the dance floor itself.

**Mark:** What about the nonlocal universe... who're the judges there?

**James:** There are two groups of judges: one for each side of the dance floor. For the celebrity dancers, their group of judges is made up of religion, business, government, culture, politics, who all frown on dance in the first place, but if it has to be done, then let the celebrity dancer lead the dance. Let it be logical, rational, and in accord to the prevailing beliefs of the institutions.

As for the professional dancers, their judges come from the cultural creative elite and the spiritual gurus. The authors of best-selling spiritual books, the ones who tour the world dance floor and provide commentary on how best to live as a spiritual being.

**Mark:** Are you, or the WingMakers judges?



**James:** No. We are not judges in any sense of the word. The professional judges are trying to cultivate the Light Worker, New Age, the Enlightenment communities. They are the ones who are the perceived leaders in these communities, providing a sense of what's practical and possible. They've become judges in the sense that they believe they have particular knowledge of how to be a spiritual person free of the constraints of religion or the historical mind.

They don't necessarily see themselves as judges, but if they profess that to be a spiritual person, you must use this technique or follow this practice, then they are, in some ways, a judge.

**Mark:** But isn't that kind of what the WingMakers do? ... I mean they talk about the Six Heart Virtues or Quantum Pause or things like that, and they encourage practicing these things...

**James:** The distinction is that we're not known. No one sees us. You could call us invisible judges, but then if you are invisible, how can you be a judge? Also, we aren't trying to build organizations. We're trying to increase ratios of the presence of the Professional dancer—to continue with the metaphor.

You see, anyone can be a professional dancer. They can be a member of the government, the Catholic Church, they can be a Muslim, Hindu, they can be in prison, they can be a communist, they can be a hardcore scientist... it doesn't matter if they are part of the quote-unquote Enlightenment community or not, or what they profess as their belief system. What matters is that they consciously radiate the

virtues of their heart. That they transmit compassion, understanding, humility, forgiveness and so forth through their behaviors.

Often the best professional dancer is the simple person without any alignment at all. By alignment, I mean to a belief system or an organization. The unaligned person simply holds fast to their intuitive belief in the supremacy of the heart and soul, and because of this belief, they can receive and transmit this frequency of equality and oneness. This... this isn't about knowledge. Someone can be extremely knowledgeable about the historical mind and spirit, they can have the equivalent of a PhD in spirituality, but they can be in their head, and because of this, they may dance to the music of a lesser frequency.

For the unaligned individual, their alignment can be with the frequencies of love and compassion. Not to organizations or personalities. Not to governments or political movements. Not to religions or spiritual organizations. Thus, professional dancers can come from anywhere, and because of this fact, there really is no one who is equipped to judge... though there are those who try.

The movement of the heart-centered life is not owned by any organization. Nor is it the province of the WingMakers. It is an ancient thing, and well before humanity began on this planet, this dance—and the ratio of celebrities to professionals across all domains of the material universe—has existed. It is intuitive, but only to those who have opened themselves to the professional within.

**Mark:** And how does one do that?

**James:** Nihilism is a powerful dance move of the celebrity dancers. The left brain and the reptilian brain, see that life, if not meaningless, is at least something to fear and navigate through to lessen disappointments, problems and... and inconveniences. They propose that the universe is compassionless. That God is a figment of the right brain. It is a mirage, and to dance to that music is pointless.

For many people, as they grew up, it was a choice between religion and nihilism. The thought process was... I can be a believer or an atheist. But the real world is much more complex. It's always about ratios. It is a mathematical certainty, because we are energetic beings—not material repositories of cells—muscle, bones, tendons, organs and blood. So we're not islands of organic materiality, we are, collectively, an ocean of energy. So ratios mean everything, because of this interconnection.

To see ourselves as Beings composed of energy... of fields of energy that intermix with everyone else, and that this intermixing includes the energy fields of planets, stars, galaxies, and the universe as a whole, this is the reality model that science is bringing to humanity. Now, this model can be adapted to fit into the nihilist belief system—an uncaring, godless universe. It can also be adapted by religions and spiritual belief systems as proof that the universe is an outgrowth of a caring, creative force called God, Allah or Creator... or whatever word you choose.

The first step is always the activation of the professional dancer. To have a sense of it, no matter how vague. To

begin to touch into it and bring it into a sharper focus by practicing what flows from your heart in the form of intuitive intelligence, behavioral intelligence and simplicity. I personally believe that the practice of the six heart virtues is a good way, but everyone can find their own method. As I said before, the path isn't owned or operated by anyone, because, and somewhat paradoxically I suppose, it's an individual's path to interconnectedness. There really is no other way.

**Mark:** You said earlier that there were about 650 celebrity dancers to every professional dancer. As ratios go, that seems like a terrible ratio. How do you see hope in that?

**James:** It isn't about hope, Mark. It's about the empathy of a single individual operating in alignment and resonance with the universe. The ratio of 1:650 is part of the equation, the other is the sheer number of humans that are incarnated on the planet at this time. What's been called the "Shift" by a lot of people is precisely this shift in the ratios coupled to the larger population of humanity. We are nearing twelve million people on the planet, who are able to transmit these ultra-fine frequencies of the heart-soul, and to do so consciously, regularly, and unconditionally.

**Mark:** Is this why you wanted to produce the EventTemples?

**James:** Not really. You see, the numbers are one of things that people get attached to. If only ten people are present in an EventTemple, people will attach a success/failure stature to the event. I know I've said this

before, but it isn't about the numbers of coordinated effort. It doesn't need to be coordinated or controlled or channeled or synchronized. It already is, by the Universal Being of which we are all a part.

There can be ten people in an EventTemple, and ten-thousand others spread around the globe that are doing a similar practice at that point in time. It all contributes to the outpicturing of the higher dimensions into this one, the one that we collectively call earth.

**Mark:** How does it contribute, James? Or maybe more precisely, what does it contribute to? You just mentioned an outpicturing of the higher dimensions to earth. Is that what it's all about? The heaven on earth concept?

**James:** Well, it's not so much that heaven is brought to earth, or even that the higher dimensions are downloaded to all humans. It's more of an experiment in time. Time is the vehicle of the consciousness of humanity, much like the human instrument is the vehicle of soul. So, time creates the appearance in three-dimensional realities that the consciousness of humanity is evolving, that it evolves as it moves within the galaxy and the universe.

Think of it like this, the earth revolves around the sun, the solar system revolves around the galaxy, our galaxy group rushes inexplicably towards what astronomers call the Great Attractor, and the universe expands at an amazing rate of speed. We don't really know the extent of the mystery that extends beyond this structure, but we know it extends. It continues to expand. And throughout all of this—from the smallest to the largest, spacetime is

the vehicle that makes evolution look like a linear process.  
A journey in spacetime.

There are other domains of consciousness that operate outside of our four-dimensional construct of spacetime, where time slows down, or speeds up, or ceases to exist altogether. The higher fields of consciousness—where humanity is one being—this is a different form of spacetime than anything on earth, and yet this is the spacetime we are headed into. When earth arrives in this spacetime, we—all humans—will feel it as a visceral experience that'll reshape our attitudes and perceptions of what constitute the meaning of humanness. We'll transform as one being, and yet, every expression or projection of individuality, remains sovereign.

This is the Sovereign Integral state of consciousness... the highest dimensional consciousness that is known within the human family.

**Mark:** So... does this mean that humanity evolves depending on its position in spacetime?

**James:** Yes, in a way. If earth were in a frequency or energy pattern of the universe that was of a lower frequency, then the life forms living on earth—including humans—would reflect those lower frequencies in their behaviors and attitudes. If, on the other hand, humanity and its spaceship earth, were in a higher dimensional field within the universe, these higher frequency energies would activate new behaviors and attitudes—more consistent with the heart and the human soul.

This is why the WingMakers look at spacetime as an essential element in the equation of oneness and equality.

The human family is inextricably linked to the cosmos, and its position therein.

**Mark:** It kind of sounds like astrology for the human race. Is that what you're saying?

**James:** I can see where you draw that conclusion, Mark, but it's not really the same. It isn't so much about the position of planets relative to one's incarnational beginnings. It's more about the position of earth as a spaceship orbiting the galactic center, and the galaxy traveling the universe. Nothing remains static. Change is always occurring. The tempo of the change, the degree of the change, the oppositional force to the change—all of these are modulated and created from the cosmic influence.

This cosmic influence can activate or deactivate influences within the human instrument, including the DNA, brain chemistry, heart, endocrine system, and other organs. You see... the fields are the only way that the universe intelligence can operate on an entire species. So, for example, a cosmic field can interact with a solar field, and the solar field can interact with the planetary field, like earth's geomagnetic field. The earth's field can carry this cosmic information within it, and it will interpenetrate every human being, and even every animal and plant. Everything on the planet, in a sense, is bathed in these fields. This is going on constantly.

(22:30)

Positions in spacetime are carefully orchestrated by Source Intelligence. These positional coordinates are not arbitrary or happenstance. They occur as an outgrowth of

an intelligent process, coordinated by First Source or Creator. They create the opportunity for evolutionary jumps. Some will take advantage of it. Some will not. The difference is in their belief system, their ability to adapt and modify their beliefs, and their practice of these new beliefs in their lives.

Let me give you an example. Everyone has had an experience where they were hurt by someone. A relationship flares up and anger or frustration overtakes the person. They're in a specific spacetime when the hurt occurs. They cannot forgive the person in that spacetime. It's almost impossible. But in an hour... or day, they're in a different spacetime, and forgiveness is now possible. You could say that the memory weakened, and that was the reason that forgiveness was possible. Or maybe the person apologized and that made it possible, and there is some truth in that, but it's really the shift of spacetime that makes it possible, and the new energies that penetrate us.

Again, nothing is static. Those who never forgive, they lock... or... or anchor themselves into the spacetime of an event, here, in their mind. They've lost their ability to flow with the spaceship earth. To see how spacetime is fluid, how energies of the cosmos dance with each of us, how we're constantly changing, because we're fluid energies in constant flux relative to spacetime.

(Pause)

I know that was a long answer. I'll stop there.

**Mark:** This question may be off base, but I wonder if you could talk about why the professional dancers don't



just dance with each other, and ignore the celebrity dancers?

**James:** It's actually a fair question. Let me answer it this way... many of us are activists at heart. We feel passionate about our beliefs. We will defend them. We'll stand up to anyone who wants to change them. We'll resist those who try to sway us. However, at the same time, we're also kind of insecure in our beliefs.

Activism is a form of alignment. Save the whales is a group that is aligned around that premise. If this group, Save the Whales, only talked with marine biologists, they would be singing to the choir. Their activism would be met enthusiastically, but it wouldn't change a thing.

So it is with professional dancers, if they danced with one another, they would dance more beautifully perhaps, but they would not have the impact. They would be less activist, and more... more artiste in nature.

Spiritual activism is not teaching with words. The dance is made to the music of the Creator, and this music is always changing. There's not one measure that repeats. The dance is made of attitudes and behaviors. So we demonstrate our behaviors—not as machines, but as humans with all our humanness intact. We practice our heart virtues... not perfectly, but humanly. We're humble supporters.

**Mark:** James, I'm going to switch the topic a little bit to focus on your novels if you don't mind. Your new novel, *The Weather Composer*, has a focus on Iran and the Islamic culture... in particular one of their prophecies.

Since you were talking about Jesus, it sort of reminded me to ask you about this.

**James:** The Weather Composer is a large story and will probably require several books to tell the story, and yes, it begins in Iran, centering on a 12-year-old boy named Terran Kahn who was raised as the Mahdi. The Mahdi, in terms of Islamic prophecy, is the successor of Mohammed. He's also known as the 12th Imam.

There are many different prophecies concerning this central figure of Islam, and they vary a bit, depending on Sunni or Shi'ite orientation, but in general, they see the Mahdi as incarnating at the end times to essentially rid the world of evil and convert the world to the one true religion. In The Weather Composer, Terran... he's like a reluctant Mahdi. He was born on the eve of Sunrot, and raised as the Mahdi, because the prophecy was specific about this condition... that he was born on the first day of the end times.

**Mark:** Maybe you could explain what Sunrot is in the novel...

**James:** Sunrot is a term for a cataclysmic event triggered by a solar flare of enormous power. This flare was potent enough to change everything on earth. Terran was born at this precise time when the solar flare touched the earth... and I say touched, but scorched would probably be a better way of putting it.

Sunrot changed everything, and by almost every standard, for the worse. The story shows how a remote tribe in northeastern Iran, known as the Baluchian nation, came to believe that Terran Kahn was the Mahdi. It would

be similar to how the Dalai Lama is found as a young boy and then taken from his home to be trained in the rigors of the role he'll play as the spiritual leader for Tibet.

The story is seen through Terran's eyes, as he runs away from his village, in order to seek an education. In a way, he's trying to distance himself from the role of being the Mahdi. He's very gifted intellectually, but the spiritual leader of the Baluchian people doesn't want him... doesn't want to lose Terran, so they send a rescue party to bring him back.

As Terran gets to a city called Mashhad, which is the second largest city in Iran, he finds the school and they immediately discover his intellectual gifts. I should mention that in this post-sunrot world, all nations are unified under the Greater Nation. So it is one world and language and culture are all homogenized. All of the schools are wired to a central office in Denver called The Faculty. Here, they test every child and slot them into a social role. There are no more country borders. There is only one government called The Greater Nation.

So, into this world, Terran walks, completely naive about the way the new world works. The Faculty identifies him as having an ultra-high IQ, and sends in an extraction team to bring Terran to their Denver facility, but there ensues... a bit of a tug of war between Terran's tribe and the extraction team. I won't go into the details of the various plot structures, but I think I can say that for those who like action adventures, this book will provide plenty of action.

**Mark:** As someone who's read an advance copy, I would wholeheartedly agree. I think of all of your writings this one is the most gripping from a plot perspective. It's actually kind of tense and riveting.

And from the people I've talked to who also read an advance copy, they all kind of comment on the same thing... it really kind of a page turner first, and has some spirituality as spice, but it's really a riveting book. And I think I would also say that it's a pretty big departure from your previous book, *Quantusum*.

**James:** Yes, I suppose it is, though it was not a conscious thing so much as a way to perhaps interest a new, younger audience. *Quantusum* and *Dohrman Prophecy* were both fairly esoteric books—as novels go at least. *The Weather Composer* leans more toward the mainstream... it's less esoteric in some ways. The sequels will make up for that. This first book is mostly a way to introduce the primary characters and the larger plot structure that will unfold in the next two books.

**Mark:** Was there a particular reason you chose the setting of Iran and Islamic culture as the focus in this first book?

**James:** It was simply necessary to tell the full story, and since Terran is the key character to the whole story, and he was born in the high desert of northeastern Iran, it required this setting. Also, it was important to tell the story of a young boy who was raised in the shadows of a prophecy. He was not someone who sought this responsibility—it was thrust onto him. There've been many, who've claimed to be the Mahdi over the centuries, but their claims have

always been disputed, and their missions were largely ego-centric. I wanted to have this reluctance in a boy who had his own vision, and that vision was not aligned to the vision of his Nation—especially its religious leadership. This was an important part of the plot.

The story will take on a very different arc in the sequel... the second book.

**Mark:** So it's official that there will be a sequel to this book... when will the sequel be released and can you tell us anything about it?

**James:** Well, I'm not really sure of its release. I would say early 2014. As for disclosing any information about it... I would prefer not to at this time. I feel that most readers would prefer to read without knowing too much about the plot. So, I don't like to talk too much about my novels for this reason.

**Mark:** Okay. Anything else you'd like to say about The Weather Composer book one?

**James:** I believe it will be out very soon online, and sometime this summer as a physical book. I'm planning to release it online on the Sumbola platform, and as a physical book, it will be released, like my other books, through Planetwork Press. I'm using Sumbola as the online platform because it's more advanced than the SpiritState site. I'll release it on SpiritState, too, but probably after the SpiritState site is updated.

**Mark:** One thing I've noticed, James is that the latest books are not as involved with images and music and so on. Is this a trend in your creative process?

**James:** I don't know if I would call it a trend, but it's a reality of time. I can concentrate on the writing, because the story requires this. Some stories call out for other media to help tell the story, others don't. The Collected Works of the WingMakers will be released this spring, and it will certainly have a significant amount of illustrations, but that was all part of the WingMakers project. The Weather Composer and Quantusum are stories without illustrations or music. So it varies. I continue to compose music daily. I continue to do art as well. I even write poetry. But I've chosen not to publish these. Perhaps sometime in the future. We'll see.

**Mark:** I know some writers are nervous anytime they write about the Islamic culture, especially if it touches on Mohammed. Do you have any concerns that this book could cause a negative reaction from Islamic quarters?

**James:** No... I don't. I realize this is a problem for some artists, and I remember reading just a few weeks ago about a Turkish pianist who was given... I believe it was a five-year sentence for tweeting some unkind words about the Islamic faith, but I think his sentence was stayed.

You see, this might have less to do about Islam, and more to do about the Turkish government wanting to send signals to its artistic community. Artists are often the ones who speak truth to power. They're often professional dancers—back to our metaphor, because they operate from the right brain, and they are more intuitively connected to their muse or higher self. They tend to be anti-authoritative, and they can get into trouble with governments that seek to control their image.

For myself, the way I presented Terran Kahn... it was done with great respect for his heritage and culture. So, no, I don't expect any concerns.

**Mark:** Since we're on the topic of books, do you want to talk about the Collected Works of the WingMakers?

**James:** Well, about five years ago, I had asked John Berges if he would be willing to organize the various WingMakers Materials and provide introductory commentary to the various sections. It was a very large task, but John, I'm happy to say, was willing, and he completed the vast majority of the effort before he passed away. Darlene, his wife, she took up the charge of completing the task, and working with you and Tony... I'm sorry, I forgot his last name...

**Mark:** Sakson, Tony Sakson.

**James:** Yes, well, you two have put the artistic elements to the book—

**Mark:** Credit goes to Tony, really. He's done all the heavy-lifting on the inside of the book, and given that these two volumes, collectively, are around 1500 pages, that's where the real work is. I did the easy part—the covers.

**James:** Tony's done a remarkable job. As you know, I reviewed the last iteration of Volume One about two weeks ago, and was very impressed with how the overall book is developing. It's a deliberate process, and the ultimate product will be very good quality, and I think any spiritual seeker will find its contents to be a valuable resource to their studies.

The other thing that'll surprise most readers is that Darlene, as the publisher, has committed to publishing the book in color throughout. So, all of the graphics and artwork can be shown in their full color. This is an expensive proposition for printing, but she's been steadfast in getting this done, and anyone who knows the WingMakers Materials understands that the material has a very strong color component, so the volumes will be artistically rendered and the vibrational quality of the material will be heightened as a result.

**Mark:** Just for the sake of anyone listening, The Collected Works of the WingMakers will be separated into two volumes, and they will be physical books. I'm not sure if we'll do a digital version or not... I think that's yet to be determined. The first part—the first volume—I should say, will have the Ancient Arrow Project book, the Neruda Interviews, the art, poetry, music... philosophy—almost forgot the philosophy... the Lyricus material, glossary, indexes, and lots of footnotes. John was a stickler on footnotes.

And then Volume Two will contain more of the recent writings and papers. Each volume will be about 750 pages, and as you said, in full color throughout. Volume One will be released in the June timeframe of 2013, and Volume Two will follow, but I don't think Planetnetwork Press has a release dates set for Volume Two yet—maybe late summer or early fall. For anyone who wants to keep on top of that, they can register at [WingMakers.com](http://WingMakers.com), and then we'll send you an update on release dates, or you can go to [PlanetnetworkPress.com](http://PlanetnetworkPress.com) website and check there. I'll also



keep some kind of an update on those things in the What's New section of the WingMakers website.

Having been intimately involved in the production process of the Collected Works, I can't wait to get it in the hands of fellow readers. I think they're really going to enjoy it.

**James:** One thing I want to mention, Mark, is that while these Volumes are good resources to learn about the WingMakers Materials and really understand the intricacies of how they all fit together... the seeker doesn't need them. I know that's not what my publisher wants me to say, but it's true. Everything I've written or produced in my life, relative to this project called the WingMakers, is really a... prompt or reminder for those who already know the material. Who already know the way to their soul, but have gotten distracted. So, all of these materials are simply there to remind you. In a sense, divert you from your distractions, and nurture that part of you that really doesn't get nurtured very much by our current culture.

You see, the first volume is more focused on the mind, the belief system that the mind holds or becomes attached to. The second volume is more focused on the heart. In a way, these are two sides of the same coin... the "coin," in this case, is the embodied soul.

Most people consider the mind as the sight organ, and the heart as the feeling organ. But the heart is more tuned to sight than feeling.

**Mark:** You're saying that the heart has eyes?

**James:** Not as we think of eyes, of course, but, yes, it has vision. It sees things. We sometimes call this intuition or insight or precognition. But the vision is a heart-based quality, it's not the mind or brain or eye-brain system. They tend to get the credit, but it's the heart's vision. All of these works that I've been involved with are designed to help people see this two-sided coin and activate the heart's vision. Once that activation is made, they're on their way.

**Mark:** Alright, I'd like to change the subject if I can...

**James:** That's fine.

**Mark:** I know you've talked about the MEST universe before, which is the Matter, Energy, Space and Time universe. One of the things I don't understand is that you've talked today about spacetime, but haven't gone into the same detail about the other two elements of that acronym, Energy and Matter. How do these all fit together in terms of the puzzle we call the three-dimensional world?

**James:** MEST is an acronym for Matter, Energy, Space, and Time. Some would call this the four dimensions of existence within three-dimensional space. Now, as I said before, it's very easy to think we are stationary, static beings in terms of our spacetime, but nothing could be further from the truth.

We go to bed each night and think we are in the same space—our bed—but we're not. Where we slept the night before is quite literally 12 million miles from where we sleep tonight—and that's just in the context of our solar system. If you take into the equation our local galaxy group and its movement, the number is an order of

magnitude higher. It's also a different time. So our spacetime is perceived as static and routine to our human instrument, and yet we're in completely different coordinates every moment of our existence, because we're riding a planetary-solar-galactic spaceship.

In Lyricus we have a saying: Different spacetime; different energy. Different energy; different matter. In other words, if you change your spacetime, you encounter different energies, and these different energies influence matter—material existence—and cause changes. In life forms, we call this change... growth, aging, memory, or life cycles. But it means much more.

(Pause)

Let's say that as you go through new spacetime you see your breath as a way to infuse this new, ever-changing spacetime into your human instrument and consciousness.

**Mark:** Like Quantum Pause?

**James:** It's an example, yes. Quantum Pause is a breathing technique that structures a certain rhythm onto the breathing process to... to make more awareness of the breath and its integration with the human instrument. You can find it in the paper called Spiritual Activism. You have that paper on which site, Mark?

**Mark:** Um... let's see... it's on the WingMakers.com website in the "What's New" section. People can download it there for free.

**James:** It's a good paper for anyone who wants to actively shift into the coming paradigm of interconnectedness... which, as it turns out, is one of the

main themes of this conversation. So, it's good you brought it up.

(42:50)

Now, back to spacetime and Quantum Pause, and by the way, one doesn't need to practice Quantum Pause if they find it limiting in any way. Conscious breathing will work fine, too. You don't need techniques, and even Quantum Pause can be adapted to your particular needs, so try something and mold it to your own intuitive sense of what's right and what works for you.

When you're practicing conscious breathing, feel how it pulls you into the present moment. In this state of nowness, use your awareness to really feel that you're in a brand new spacetime—one you've never been in before, one that has new energies, new potentialities. Imagine that as you breathe, you're infusing these new energies into your human instrument, and that this is creating within you a sense of openness, flexibility, coherence, clarity that allows you to be more resilient, agile, giving, intuitively alive, and so on.

Breath relates to spacetime, and this... this brings new energetics into your human instrument. These new energetics can be experienced as new behaviors. So, energy, in this context, informs matter, and matter in this context is behavior.

**Mark:** Why is behavioral intelligence so important in the WingMakers philosophy?

**James:** Because seekers are easily confused. One seeker is told that re-incarnation does not exist, another is told the

opposite. The two meet, and they confuse and confound one another. One seeker is told that God's name is Allah, another is told there are many different Gods, the two meet, and confusion results. One person discovers particle physics and another is born again in Jesus, the two meet, and they paint each other into isolated corners.

My point is... there is very little agreement with words—with what goes on in the mind. Very few people really trust their intuition. They prefer to trust experts, but the problem is that the experts don't agree, so confusion results and no one can feel secure in their beliefs.

Behaviors don't care about the mind's opinion. If you can practice the behaviors of conscious breathing, of accessing your heart's virtues and expressing those into your local universe, all of the beliefs, all of the words you can use to describe your beliefs, don't really matter. Behavioral intelligence matters. It is a universal language and it never separates or argues or analyzes—instead, it applies compassion, appreciation, understanding, love and so on to all circumstances.

Now, some would argue, I'm sure, that this is naive. There is right and wrong. Truth and falsehood. For example, either reincarnation is true or it is false. It cannot be both. And if that is the case, then truth must be defended. But you see, this is how one loses their perspective on the important things like heart virtues, conscious breathing, love, equality and oneness.

We defend our beliefs. We polarize others. We try to be on the right side. The side of the dance floor that stands for truth. But our universe is multidimensional. It has stories

encoded within stories within stories. It is, in other words, hyper-complex. It is not knowable with the human mind. So, when the human mind seizes a “truth,” and then defends it with the words of so-called experts, it invariably becomes little more than an exercise of the ego. The energy invested in this exercise could have been placed on conscious breathing, or fostering a relationship with the universe and Creator, and then expressed in behaviors of compassion, forgiveness, appreciation, and so forth.

It’s interesting to have a philosophical core. To feel that you have a sense of the workings of the universe, but everything we think we know today—in terms of cosmology and physics—will alter as we change our spacetime. Everything...

You see, the recitation of philosophy is based on words and mental ideology. Yes, it can change behaviors to be sure, but it doesn’t bring the ultra-fine frequencies into the human instrument. Only behaviors that are consistent to the virtues of the heart will purify and prepare the human instrument to perceive the soul or higher self. To see its movements, its perspectives, its insights, its consciousness. So, behaviors bring about preparation of the human instrument, and these behaviors must be coherent and clear, and the only way they can be of this quality, is if they’re genuine.

You cannot fake this. You cannot practice like a machine. You must be human, vulnerable, open, humble, and willing to learn from yourself more than you’re willing to accept the words of another. The only thing this requires is a belief in the human soul, and even that is dubious, and I say dubious, because atheist are able to

practice the six heart virtues just fine. They're not encumbered with any kind of beliefs in soul or God or religious indoctrinations. I say dubious only in that sense. The soul is present in everyone, regardless of their position in life, ethnicity, gender, belief system, and so on, and it is because of soul, that we are all interconnected. That's the only belief that's really required. If you genuinely believe this, then you can practice with authenticity.

**Mark:** James, in many of the emails I see, people are reciting things they've been told by psychics, astrologers, channelers, ETs, Galactic Federation, things of that nature... Sometimes the information seems so detailed that I find myself thinking this must be real. But this whole thing you said about different opinions and mental ideology... it seems to really sweep people off their feet sometimes. What can a person do to stay centered on the behaviors—the heart virtues?

**James:** There are many reasons why people are inundated with conflicting information. It happens in every sphere of life. In the spiritual domain, perhaps most of all, because there is no proof. So a person can tell you that you are a reincarnation of Albert Einstein, or that you are an important incarnation from the planet... XYZ, and you cannot prove otherwise. They tend to cater to the ego. This is an age-old problem.

Flattery is an ancient form of commerce. It also stems from the religious sectors, because they have pounded into the human psyche that we're all sinners. We're constantly sinning and require salvation. So when someone tells you that you're really an angel, or a powerful being, it's very seductive.

And while it's true, at the level of soul, that you are a powerful being, it's not a thing of ego-gratification. It's a responsibility. It's a thing of service, not satisfaction.

Pause...

I'll say this, when someone tells you about you, what you're gifted in, where you came from, what your personality is or isn't, and you've paid them money for this information, I would take their input to your heart and really review its value to you. The more detailed their information, the more you should probably be skeptical.

You see, detail is used to seduce. It's like the film industry... I watched the film *The Life of Pi* a few months ago, and the *Siberian Tiger* is produced digitally, and yet, there are many times I found myself believing it was a real tiger. The amount of detail is what convinced me.... to suspend my disbelief. To accept the illusion.

So it is with external inputs... detail sells the input.

The point is, where you came from, or what you've done or accomplished in the past, doesn't really matter. That's time-based. You're always shifting in spacetime, you're always capable of connecting with the universe and Creator—Source Intelligence. You can summon this higher consciousness within you and transmit it to those in your local universe. You can be a student of your heart.

If you fill your mind and ego with all of these personal details of your past self or future self, what does it provide you? Clarity or confusion? I can assure you that if you get ten readings from ten different sources, you will be confused. The overlap will be 10-20% and the rest will be



divergent and impossible to decode into a meaningful picture or purpose. So, I would advise spiritual seekers to place their attention on behavioral intelligence. Practice this. Don't fill your mind with complex details that confuse and confound and separate. Behavioral intelligence is what you're here to learn and express.

Mark: How does conscious breathing help in developing one's behavioral intelligence?

**James:** Well, let's say I practice Quantum Pause, and while I'm breathing, I become conscious of the new spacetime I'm in—that unique part of the universe that my local universe intersects with in that exact moment. I choose to breathe in the feelings of compassion. Every breath I inhale, I imagine it to be compassion, which is to say that any in-breath can be imbued with virtue. I summon it to my human instrument and let it saturate me like an internal waterfall.

...You could be in a jail cell or a villa in the south of France, the spacetime that intersects your local universe can be modified by you. You are the alchemist. The creator. You can use your imaginative power to imbue your in-breath with a virtue like compassion, forgiveness, humility, valor, understanding, joy, love, whatever you would like. You're the creator, and the new spacetime is your canvas.

The new energy fields that flow through you are carriers, and as they sweep through your local universe—your energy field—they carry it to others, and the distance they're carried is not bound to earth or limited.

**Mark:** So you're saying our personal energy field affects the larger fields... even beyond our earth?

**James:** You can look at this way, Mark, the human instrument is a little like a factory. It has the body, brain, central nervous system and other organs. These are the physical aspects... the foundation of the factory, if you will. Then you have the heart and mind, and together, these co-create emotions and behaviors. The heart and mind are like the employees, and the emotions and behaviors are like the products.

Then you have the soul—the spiritual essence of the individual. The God-spark. This is like the customer. The one who uses the products that the factory makes. Sometimes, if the factory produces products that are of low frequency, dense energy, the soul or customer doesn't use the product. It can't use it. It's like buying a device that was designed for a different voltage. It doesn't plug into the wall.

The emotions are the product of how the heart and mind operate together in coherence. If the mind is prayerful, contemplative, receptive, summoning the universe for support, and so on, the mind is then engaged with the heart, because this kind of mindfulness attracts the attention of the heart. It begets behaviors that are intelligent. And what do I mean by that?

Behavioral intelligence is the ability to self-manage the coherence of the mind and heart to create emotions that are balanced and resilient. This isn't about sentimental emotions or passionate reactions to the wrongs committed by the powers that be—as if we need to start a revolution.

Rather, it's a steadfast, inner conviction to seek the expression of the heart virtues in every affair of our lives. I want to be clear, heart virtues are not emotions. They're not thoughts. They're behaviors.

The heart's intuitive inputs, coupled to the higher mind's insights on how to express the virtues for a given situation—these are the chefs that create the behavior or virtue, and then take it to market. Similarly, you could have the lower mind or ego-mind create a behavior based on an emotional reaction, and this behavior would be very different, because the creator is very different. The soul doesn't see how to utilize or become aligned to this behavior, so, in a way, it retreats. It allows. It's unheard and unnoticed by the human instrument.

Behavioral intelligence is all about raising awareness, not only in oneself, but those around you as well. Raising awareness, not through words, but behaviors that're based on words or thoughts that're virtuous and stem from the innermost part of ourselves.

**Mark:** So, you're saying that emotions are co-created by the heart and mind? Where's the soul in this equation?

**James:** The soul is everywhere. It's only a question of whether it's engaged, active, interactive... in the behaviors of the individual. When the deeper heart and higher mind are operating as one to create behaviors that are aligned with soul, the soul engages. It's strongly present. If the shallow heart and lower mind are fighting one another to create behaviors, the soul disengages. As I said, it cannot come through the muddy waters stirred up by this kind of ego-mindedness.

**Mark:** So, why is the soul so passive... couldn't it just... I don't know... get people to wake up and work more in alignment to itself?

**James:** If you're creating behaviors from the interaction of the shallow heart and lower mind... you've chosen to shut down your connection to soul. It's like someone who has this huge natural world that they live in with mountains and valleys and rivers, but they go inside a small cabin, lock the doors, close the blinds, and lay in bed in the dark. How does the natural world reach them?

**Mark:** Maybe a storm?

**James:** Well, yes, a storm might reach them, but it also might make them even less comfortable to open up and seek the world of soul. Everyone opens up differently, and is motivated by different things to seek their soul. Soul is persistently magnetic, but sometimes the person is so crystallized in their beliefs that it's impossible to impress upon them, because, as it is often said, the soul moves in mysterious ways, and the person who is crystallized in the belief of a secular, nihilistic world, for example, may not notice the calling of their soul.

Let me clear about one thing, I've mentioned people who have a belief in nihilism or atheism, and I'm not saying that these people operate from the shallow heart and lower mind. They can believe that there is no God and the universe is uncaring, and they can still be operating from the higher mind and deeper heart. Similarly, you can have someone who's steeped in the belief of God and soul, but they operate in the shallow heart and lower mind.

Belief systems are not the catalysts of behavioral intelligence. It can be a factor, but it's not the factor. As I said before, we live in complex, multidimensional worlds, and one factor does not dictate or rule... it can only influence. It's easy to think the sacred and secular are polar opposites, but they're really elements of the same experience of raising one's awareness so we can embody virtuous behaviors in our lives—and what our belief system is or how much we profess to worship God or care about our soul's well-being... those are not the keys. The key, as it has always been, is behavioral intelligence.

Behavioral intelligence is the way to interact with the universe. It's not the only way, it's the advanced way. Everyone has the potential to experience this interaction. Most people are taught and told that the universe is a dark, lifeless expanse of empty space. This is out of ignorance. Even our finest minds can only identify about 2% of our physical universe—the rest is dark matter and dark energy, and they don't understand what this is, how it operates, where it comes from, and other than its gravitational characteristics, it remains a complete and utter mystery.

I look at it this way, First Source or God or Creator or universe, however you wish to think about IT, broadcasts ITS intelligent energy to all that is, as Source Intelligence or Spirit. This spirit is everywhere, including each of us. It streams through us. It is dynamic, ever-changing. It has abilities to respond to us just as we can respond to it. In other words, it's interactive. When we play an interactive game on Nintendo or our computer or smartphone, we're interacting with the game design, hoping to make it to

checkpoints and continue to higher levels of challenge. To complete the game and get a high score.

In interaction with Source Intelligence, it's different. It isn't about high scores and completing the game. It's about finding the way to raise awareness within yourself in such a way that you can create and express the heart virtues in your life unconditionally. You can modulate them with control. You can combine and sequence them in meaningful expressions that relate to specific situations, as they occur. You can bring your higher mind and deepest heart into alignment in service to Source Intelligence, and you do this consciously, willingly, with care and genuineness.

This is the interaction that one has with the universe, and you will learn, over time, as you practice this that the universe listens, it responds, it rearranges itself... I don't mean this literally, but the outpicturing of the universe, as it pertains to your local universe, is not a mechanical, wind-up toy that pursues its mission unperturbed by a single human field of consciousness. It's quite the opposite. The human field—both individually and collectively—shapes the universe expression on earth.

And I don't mean the position of stars or planets or weather systems, etc. I mean right down to the particulars of who enters or exits your life, your work, your mission, your emotional interactions with people, what you read and study, all of these things—to name just a few—are part of the complex nature of how the universe responds to your fields... what you express through your human instrument.

In a way, if you wanted to humanize it, you could say that you and God are partners. The more you see the value of this partnership, the more you can feel and see the results of the interaction.

**Mark:** This is that concept that there's no coincidence? Everything is purposeful and interwoven...

**James:** No, not really. That concept is more passive, where you see the world's events as being guided by a wiser hand, and you surrender to its urges, motivations, insights, and will. This surrender is an act of passivity. Interaction, on the other hand, is a partnership. Energy is exchanged, not simply accepted. Missions are co-created and even co-founded.

There is self-responsibility in the interaction and partnership. There is a feedback system. The universe is not an authoritarian.

**Mark:** Given that we're always changing our position within the universe... in terms of spacetime, everything is dynamic and complex, and we're... well we're human with all of our flaws and limited vision on what's going on... it seems like surrender to a higher power is not such a bad idea.

**James:** The passive approach denies the interaction and partnership. It limits the role of the human instrument. For example, I'm a leaf on the river... that is surrender; I'm an artist with a paintbrush and canvas, with a powerful muse to inspire me. That is interaction.

Everything that's complex seemingly shouts to us: "You're out of your depth." Those are the fears of self-

responsibility. So, most people either surrender to the culture or the Creator.

(1:05:48)

Let me give you an example. I knew a person who was haunted by a past... negative experience. Something she couldn't forgive. I told her that forgiveness was her key, but it had to be unconditional. To which she said, it wasn't possible. She needed the person to admit their mistake and apologize, but I said she might have to wait a long time. If she forgave them unconditionally, she didn't have to wait.

She looked at me and said that only Jesus can forgive unconditionally, not regular people like her. That was her perspective, that expressing the heart virtues unconditionally was reserved for the likes of Jesus. It isn't reserved for anyone. Anyone can do it. Anyone cannot do it. There's no reservation system either way. It's choice. It's a partnership with the universe. It's seeing the value for oneself to lead, instead of to follow another. To be active, instead of passive.

**Mark:** Why is it so hard to practice these virtues like forgiveness unconditionally? I think most of us know what this woman means... sometimes it seems impossible to operate unconditionally.

**James:** You see, the majority of people are gridlocked inside their heads—mostly on the left side and mostly down in the reptilian brain. It's easy to do. The culture creators make it easy for us to live in that part of our human instrument, and base our decisions and belief system from there. Then we think in our lower minds, and our heart's guidance is shallow... In this state, ego



decision... ego-driven decisions, I'll say—aligned to the culture—are what we tend to rely on.

When the ego is driving the decisions, then the idea of unconditional forgiveness or compassion or appreciation is nearly impossible.

**Mark:** Why is that?

**James:** Because this is the long path... the path of self-responsibility. Most people want to get rewarded quickly. They want to see results quickly. They want to win accolades fast. In this time, more than ever before, because technology delivers answers quickly with a voice command to Siri or a mouse click on Google. Solutions... now! The faster the solution the more the ego is gratified. The quick solution, however, doesn't bring a real sense of wisdom or inner competence—there's a hollowness to it... a fabrication. To secure that sense of wisdom, you have to be willing to persist and be committed to the long path, where you're the conductor of the symphonic emotions created by your deeper heart and higher mind.

In a way, you're a conductor... the left arm is your deeper heart, and the right arm is your higher mind, and together they conduct the music we call emotions. If they operate in coherence—they create music, not noise or distortion. Most people, when they conduct their emotions, the two arms do not conduct as one, they flay their arms and they are out of sync, and the emotions are expressed accordingly. Sometimes stress will do this, sometimes drugs, sometimes old habits, sometimes sheer exhaustion, sometimes the culture seems to shout: "Do it this way!" There're many, many reasons, which is why it's so

important to practice something like the heart virtues so you can regain your balance when you slip on the banana peel.

The long path is not for those who're bound to the needs of the ego, because it's the ego that craves quick mastery, quick results... and the actual benefit of those quick results to others is not the concern or objective. It's the rewards of vanity and glamor, in their various manifestations, that truly motivate the ego.

**Mark:** Many paths have the mind as the key aspect of spiritual discovery... and you speak about the ego, which is an aspect of the mind. Is this why the long path is difficult... because of the mind being the centerpiece?

**James:** The mind seeks causes. It's a cause and effect calculator in many ways. The ego seeks to be associated with causes like climate change, political parties, religion or culture or gun control or job protection, etc. The list is very long. Almost everything is a cause-related activity, and the mind loves being a part of something that's evolving an agenda that the mind agrees or resonates with. It also allows a sense of community... the cause itself.

When the WingMakers Materials were released, I know many people wondered why I chose to remain anonymous. Lyricus is not an earthly organization. There's nothing to join for a reason. There is no cause we are trying to achieve.

**Mark:** But isn't the discovery of The Grand Portal a cause?

**James:** No. It's not. The Grand Portal is a technological discovery, and it'll be made not as a cause-based effort, but it'll be a discovery that'll erupt out of thin air, where no one predicted, and those who discover it won't really understand what they discovered until others step in and demonstrate its importance. The cause will then begin as the Controllers try to contain it, hide it, cover it up in fear, and then the cause will be centered on nurturing the technology and making it available to all.

There're organizations on earth right now who're quietly working towards this discovery, but they lack the resources to realize their ambitions. The discovery will be made by well-funded organizations that're pursuing a different objective. They'll make the discoveries by accident, and those lesser-funded organizations will incorporate the discoveries and re-purpose them.

So the discovery itself isn't a cause-based initiative, but once the discovery is made and solidified, protecting it and distributing it to the public domain, then it'll become a cause.

**Mark:** You mean the scientific discovery of the human soul, right?

**James:** Yes... I was going to mention in one of your previous questions, that Lyricus sees the mind and heart operating in unison. One is not the guide and the other the follower. They're co-creating the ability within the individual to incubate the Sovereign Integral consciousness. To nurture it. This is the consciousness of unity and equality coupled to individualism that isn't ego-based. It's the consciousness that's being born on earth,

and The Grand Portal is the technological force that will help to unleash its presence to humanity.

**Mark:** I know you've written about this in the Lyricus materials, but why would anyone want to cover up the existence of the human soul? I can understand why the Controllers would want to cover-up ETs or Black Projects, but the soul? Why would they try to cover that up?

**James:** Because it's the habit of the Controllers to control. Whenever new discoveries are made, they're quickly assessed for their ability to change the existing power structure, either in a good way, in other words, to enhance control, or in a bad way, to diminish control.

**Mark:** But if the Controllers are suppressing humanity's chance to grow spiritually... how does humanity ever get out of the control?

**James:** The Controllers are part of the system of ascendancy. They're not controlling the system. The system is vast. It's a network that extends everywhere and to everyone. No one group or entity is controlling it. They simply think they control a small—very small—part of the system called material earth. Even this, they don't really control... take the Internet for example. The Controllers initially thought the Internet would be useful to control educational innovation via ARPAnet, and then they thought it would present a communication infrastructure within the Military Industrial Complex via DARPA-net. What they didn't see was the spillover into the life of citizens... an effect of capitalism did that. When the World Wide Web entered the picture, they were hopeful it'd stay in the business domain... banking, industry, and so on, but

as we know, it's the global communication system. Now the Controllers have adapted to try and use it for surveillance, personal data acquisition, banking, and so on, but the Controllers never wanted the Internet to become what it has.

So, the premise that humanity is crippled in its ability to grow spiritually because of the Controllers is simply false. They make it more challenging, which is the way the system is designed. Souls don't incarnate into a human instrument to experience ease and spiritual bliss. They experience this separation from Source Intelligence willingly. They know it will be a challenge to navigate to their soul and deeper heart when they incarnate. They know it will be a challenge to learn to express the higher frequencies of the heart unconditionally in this world. But they also know that there will be help.

**Mark:** And what form is this help offered? I mean, where does it come from and how do people recognize it?

**James:** The help is everywhere. It isn't one thing or one organization or religion. Help is everywhere. It's really the perception and attitude of the individual that makes the difference. It's in all things, so when the individual is ready they see something or feel something or learn something that wakes them up—it activates them to seek their higher self. And where this wake-up call comes from varies tremendously for each person. But once they awaken, they'll seek what is hidden from them. They know, instinctively, it's hidden—that truth is veiled. They might not call the Controllers by a name or title, but they know they exist—even while they don't like to admit it.

**Mark:** And why is that, James? I know many people, who get pretty uncomfortable the moment you start to talk about these subjects that pertain to the Controllers.

**James:** It's a bit scary. Unnerving. For most people it's too hard to believe that the world is suppressed. That it's held back so that humanity is easier to control and more compliant to the system. These are old concepts. They've been on this planet for thousands of years, and very few of sound mind doubt this reality. So, as a coping mechanism, they prefer to avoid the discussion, and it's perfectly fine that they do. There's not so much to be gained from talking about it and letting the subject irritate you.

The question becomes, as a truth seeker, how much emphasis to place on it, because in the extreme, it can lead to fear, frustration and even a sense of paranoia, and these conditions clearly diminish the ability of the individual to express love into their local universe. And this is their first priority for their incarnation.

**Mark:** I'm glad you mentioned that word... Love. I've received emails from people wondering why it isn't mentioned in the six heart virtues. Can you talk about that?

**James:** It's analogous to asking why white light isn't mentioned in the rainbow... you see, love is the six heart virtues. Love is a dynamic mixture of these six expressions. Love is understanding, compassion, appreciation, humility, forgiveness... and valor. It's the situational awareness and expression of these in your moment—not only to other humans, but also to plants, animals, Creator, Earth, Universe, Source Intelligence... even yourself.

(Pause)

(1:18:10)

As spacetime shifts and changes, new energetics are encountered, and these energetics can either be accelerators or they can be brakes on consciousness. In periods of acceleration, change is occurring at a more rapid pace. So love is even more important, but love that's braided to the heart virtues with authenticity. This is why authentic love, at this time, is the only requirement of a belief system.

**Mark:** I'm not sure I understood that... what do you mean by authentic love?

**James:** Love is the situational expression of the heart virtues, and to do this unconditionally, you must be authentic in your expression. So, for anyone to profess that they follow the six heart virtues, there's a responsibility to be authentic practitioners. Otherwise, your belief isn't practiced, and if that's the case, why have a belief? So, you see that this choice, to have a love-centered life, is a responsibility. If you resonate with the heart virtues, if you understand their value, not only in your life and those of your immediate friends and family, but the broadest definition of oneness, then you also understand that they must be practiced unconditionally. Otherwise, they're a mere convenience. Their potency is in their unconditional expression and awareness.

**Mark:** You've used that term a couple of times... situational awareness. Can you explain what you mean?

**James:** The heart virtues come to you, and you're expressing them. Situational awareness, in this context, is simply being perceptive of their entry into your local universe in the moment. Sometimes it's very obvious, sometimes it's very subtle... almost undetectable. It's important to perceive what you're being given unconditionally, as much as it is to express unconditionally.

You could call it precognitive appreciation. Your in-breath is an example... it brings you life. Water is another example. A kind word from a colleague is another example. The list is very long. So you become adept at sensing how the universe and your local universe is bringing you virtues, even when they appear not to be present. That's the unconditional part. The hard part. But everything in this world is about cycles and ratios, and these always modulate and shift in spacetime. That's why I call it precognitive awareness. Sometimes you have to imagine the virtues even when they're seemingly absent. They will come in time.

**Mark:** It seems like the world's dysfunction grows in many ways, you know... take the example of the economy or terrorism or the natural disasters... the acceleration energies—if that's the right way to express it—have been growing strong the past year. It's as if someone's turning up the heat in the kitchen, and we're all feeling the added stress, which makes it harder to be appreciative or practice the heart virtues—at least speaking for myself.

Some say it's the shadow government; some will point to Reptilians or off-planetary intelligences—



**James:** The Controllers are human. They're influenced from other sources, but they're human, and they make the ultimate decisions. This is greed and power amplified by technology. Technology provides the accelerated and fine-grained perceptions that enable greed and power to be boundless... at least for those who have access to the technologies. This creates imbalance. Imbalance creates energetic incoherence. This incoherence creates a sense of restlessness bordering on anarchy, and this signals the Controllers to apply new technologies, new laws to clamp down, and degenerate culture to distract. This escalates the problem and recycles the discontent and stress.

Yes, it's harder now to be a practitioner, especially when the incoherence spikes in an event that's designed to tighten controls or train people to be compliant to the Controllers. However, earth, at this time, is the training ground for those who want to exercise their will, and make a difference—energetically and materially. If humanity wants sustainable peace and goodwill to all... in practice, it will need to restructure its organizations that the Controllers use to control. To do this, requires a watershed event like The Grand Portal, and even then, it's never easy. However, if there was no darkness or resistance, what purpose would new light serve?

**Mark:** Are you saying that darkness is... that it's allowed so new generations that are incarnating can have a purpose? I'm not sure I follow you...

**James:** I'm saying that the Controllers have a designed purpose that allows each and every human being to either succumb to the controls and live conditionally in the ego-mind, or receive and transmit the deeper heart and higher

mind frequencies, and live unconditionally as a love-centered life. The latter is the goal of most people that are incarnated at this time. And even though it may seem that people are failing to achieve this goal everywhere you look, it's not really true. They fail some, to be sure, but they're aware of this goal inside themselves, and this represents a major shift.

**Mark:** You mean that most people are aware that they're here to live a love-centered life?

**James:** Yes. But this isn't obvious to most people, and I understand this, but if you could look at humanity as a factory that's making two products: one is hate and one is love. The ratio of love to hate has shifted remarkably in the past fifty years. In just the last five years it went through another major shift. And this is now the tempo that we're in. Love is dominant on this planet. The Controllers would like to make it seem that the world is in turmoil and fear, but that's an illusion that they present through the media. Fear doesn't dominate. Love is the dominant frequency on this planet and it will remain so. However, fear is not something that I'm suggesting will just go away anytime soon. It will always be alive in this domain, and all who have human instruments will feel its effects... until they experience their souls, and the continuity of life.

**Mark:** I know you've said many times that the Era of Transparency is upon us and this is why The Grand Portal can be achieved, but part of me wonders why Lyricus doesn't just make it happen now.

**James:** These things must be done by contemporary humanity. It has to be an inside job. Outside forces can't intervene.

**Mark:** Why?

**James:** Because free will is the most precious thing in the universe. The moment one group begins to impose and intercede on behalf of one population, then it becomes a game of chess played by the most powerful, the most aware of the Big Picture. And as I said before, this is the time of We the People. This isn't the time of saviors. The Era of Transparency requires it.

**Mark:** You've said before that what holds true for the Big Picture, holds true for the small picture, in other words, as above so below. Can you speak to that?

**James:** I'll give you an example. This is related to the crutches or devices that people rely upon—these are like our personal saviors. We need a device to synchronize our brainwaves, or... or we need special diets or teachers to guide us. Or I must read this or that book to fully understand my soul. No,

I'll tell you right now, "no" we don't. We need to practice the virtues of the heart, and we need to form a partnership with the universe. We do these things without condition. Without seeing results as we define results. We live in balance and in oneness. We develop our ability to orchestrate the virtues of the heart, but more than anything, it comes down to us. To our commitment to practice. Our commitment to apply these unconditionally, and not simply talk about them.

For example, let's say you found a device that synchronized your brain waves. You felt wonderful; you experienced a higher dimension or alternative consciousness. In the back of your mind—after the experience—you realize it's an unnatural occurrence. It was not generated solely from your efforts. It was not your creation. It was a device. Or, let's say you could take a pill and it would provide you with ESP or a god experience or a talk with an ET. What does this really do for you?

The long path—the path that's founded in Source Intelligence, isn't about saviors. It is about self-responsibility and activation. It is about learning to receive and transmit the ultra-fine frequencies of love in your moment to the best of your abilities, even when you judge yourself a failure, you practice forgiveness and understanding. Do you have the flashy experiences? Maybe not. But I would much rather be an alchemist than an explorer.

**Mark:** What do mean an alchemist?

**James:** If your human instrument is fear-based, locked in the rigidity of the left, reptilian brain, you're more likely to broadcast fear, insecurity and depression—for example. These emotions are a form of energy and, like all energy, they are conserved. In a sense, energy is never created, it is transformed or recycled. I can take energy that is dense and closed, and I can transform it to an energy that is opening to the frequency of love. I can be an alchemist of energy, and instead of trying to turn iron into gold, I turn anger into kindness... or depression into interconnection... or indifference into compassion.

Energy then informs matter. Energy is many things by human standards... it can be physical energy used to produce something like work or to play a sport. It can be emotional energy that deals with love or anger. It can be a mental energy that helps us solve a problem or capitalize on an opportunity. It can be spiritual energy that activates and sustains our interest in the culture of soul.

These different types of energies have different frequencies. Some are condensed energies that are heavy—in a sense. Some are light. We've all felt these different energetic fields in rooms or public spaces or... or nature, and we've all felt them within ourselves. Sometimes we're buoyant and joyful, and the energy—at least emotionally—is light and easy. Other times we're heavy with disappointment or fear or frustration. We feel these energies. They're not abstractions to us... or words on paper. They have a visceral reality in our local universe.

(1:30:00)

Being an alchemist is being able to transform energy. To shift energy. Not to let densities build up and calcify, because these are the things that weigh us down, and make our abilities to be alchemists for ourselves and others more difficult.

Explorers, on the other hand, like to acquire information, knowledge, data, and of course, experiences. This can be wonderful, so I'm not saying this is good or bad, merely that it's a different path. They are seekers. They seek knowledge so they can experience a state that's closer to truth... closer to wisdom. This world seems to

hide truth so well, many people feel it's vital that they put a lot of energy into this endeavor; otherwise, truth will slip away from them. I refer to these seekers as explorers. However, behind this acquisition of knowledge gnaws the question: is this really why I came here... why I incarnated? To acquire knowledge? Especially, as I mentioned before, when the knowledge is often contradictory or lacks any grounding in fact or proof.

For some, the answer is "yes." For many, though, the answer is that they came to be alchemists. They came to experience the transformation of energies. They incarnated to become a receiver and transmitter of these higher energies, and to go about this consciously, courageously... and most important, unconditionally—to their best ability in the moment.

As you can imagine, these are not exclusive paths by any means. People can do both, and very often, the seeker-explorer becomes primarily an alchemist in the latter part of their life. The explorer fills up on all of the various paths, and ultimately realizes that they're all tributaries to the long path, and the real reason to be alive is to demonstrate the example of an alchemist. Again, it's all ratios, there's never a 100% one or the other.

**Mark:** Are there other stages or categories?

**James:** I'm not a big advocate of categorizing people, so with that caveat, I'll say that the activators are a group of seekers, and what I mean by that is that they're looking for stimulation not so much about information or knowledge. Though again, this is ratios. They tend to be younger. They tend to be experimental in their approach to

the spiritual world, and often find psychic phenomenon or charismatic teachers to be the gateway for them to learn about the worlds of spirit. They're interested in having the direct experience, because they're looking to activate their missions or spiritual purpose.

**Mark:** Any others?

**James:** The sleepers come in many varieties. Sleepers... the word sounds a bit judgmental I suppose, and I really don't mean it that way. Sleepers have their purpose, and often they can be one book or one experience away from being a great alchemist. They just need the activation. Sometimes sleepers have seen a lot of paths, a lot of teachers, and nothing quite took. Nothing was convincing, or, perhaps they found a corruption in their organization or noticed that their teacher was less than impeccable. They had a bad experience in their pursuit of the spiritual dimension and they went back to sleep, seeking a familiar comfort in the material world and trying to reimagine their life as an ego-driven personality.

Sleepers can also be content; content to conform to the social order. So they accept the world as a place where the acquisition of material objects is king. But sleepers know that something is missing, and that's proof.

**Mark:** Proof of what?

**James:** That the world is only three-dimensional... physical, and that consumption is king. They wonder why most of the world's population believes in God, but behave as if there isn't one. They wonder why saints exist. Why mystics write similar materials throughout time. Why some have experienced these alternate realities or some

have astonishing skills that can't be accounted for. Often they've had ESP experiences or events themselves, and they can't explain it. There's a very long list of things that poke and prod them to wonder if they should remain sleepers. Proof, in this case, isn't that God exists. It's proof that God or a spiritual domain doesn't exist.

The last group I'll mention is the absentees. These are the ones whose incarnation was disrupted by some event or series of events that placed them on a trajectory of pain, guilt, resentment, anger, fear, etc. They became lost to both the material and spiritual worlds, and they burrowed into their own worlds for safety—or so they thought. Often these are fantasy or imaginary worlds that are neither real nor helpful to their missions as embodied souls.

There're others, but these will give you a general sense of the different groups, and again, one person can be in all of these groups, and the ratios can shift over time. Others can be in one group predominantly and something comes along in their life and they suddenly migrate to a new group. But the group to which the WingMakers are aligned, at least mostly aligned, is the alchemist, because there you can be a potent force for good. There, you can impact on an entire planet, because you're in a trusting partnership with Source Intelligence that lives inside the heart virtues.

And you don't need to believe in God or a religion or a master. You simply need to practice the virtues of your own heart in your own life in the moment. It's really that simple, though the practice is challenging, the process is kind of modest without adornments or rituals or techniques—other than the ones you create yourself.



**Mark:** James, I want to be respectful of your time. This interview has already gone over the time I had asked for. Is there anything else you wanted to cover before we come to a close?

**James:** Let me just say that I enjoyed our conversation. I know it went a little longer... and I apologize... I start talking sometimes and it's difficult to stop. Perhaps we can do this again...

**Mark:** Every five years or so... (laughter)

**James:** Well, maybe we can do them a little more frequently...

**Mark:** I hope so.

**James:** Thanks for your help, Mark, in putting this interview together.

**Mark:** My pleasure. Thanks for your time, James.

# INTERVIEW WITH JAMES MAHU (OCTOBER 2014)

*[This small piece written by Darlene Berges is taken from the forum WingMakers October 2014]*

*In August, Planetnetwork Press contacted Mark Hempel and asked if James might be able to do a written interview for the Evolve magazine that our distractor publishes. James agreed to this and the interview was published October 1st in the fall edition. We have to thank Tony Sakson for doing all the creative design for the magazine article and on our website. He is truly dedicated to getting the WingMakers Materials out to the public with the highest quality work.*

*You can find Evolve for free at book stores and health food stores.*

**[October 2014](#)**

## **A New Journey in Consciousness**

An interview with WingMakers creator and author  
James Mahu

by Darlene Berges of [Planetnetwork Press](#)

**Darlene Berges:** As the visionary creator of the WingMakers and related websites, novels, visual art, philosophical papers, poetry and music compositions, how are you able to tap into the vast and varied creative energies required for all of these diverse works which take us on a new journey in consciousness?

**James Mahu:** When I was still in my early teens, I had a vision for how multi-media could be applied to the conversation of consciousness. You see, most art does not tackle the subject of consciousness, but rather the artifacts and antecedents of consciousness—in particular, social consciousness. Social consciousness is largely programmed consciousness. Artistic works, regardless of their medium, generally revolve around this aspect of the human journey.

For me, I wanted to delve deeper into the actual substrate behind the controlled aspects of social consciousness and use artistic expressions that would help people have internal and external conversations about the subject of consciousness. It wasn't enough to crack the outer appearances of consciousness, as espoused by intelligentsia, religion or even metaphysics. I wanted to look into the origins—the bedrock—from which consciousness emerges.

Art and mythology are among the best methods to catalyze these conversations and inspire people to look deeper, behind the facades that have been built by human hands and have stood for so long that they have taken on an authority that few people will dare question. Art can ask those questions. Mythology can expose the deeper aspects of consciousness in a manner that science and religion will

allow, because myth is perceived as being based in the imaginative collective consciousness and is not “owned” by anyone.

**Darlene Berges:** Your first book in physical print is *The Dohrman Prophecy*, which takes place in a mystical forest. In the chapter titled “Virtues of the Heart,” Simon is explaining love to Joseph as the wholeness of human virtues, in particular the six heart virtues of appreciation, compassion, forgiveness, humility, understanding, and valor. Why are these six heart virtues so important and how do they play a part in our daily lives?

**James Mahu:** Love is a word-concept that is brimming with nested energies and subtleness. It is used in our collective culture somewhat casually without much thought to what it consists of. Most people shrug, smile and simply shake their heads in silence if they are asked to define love. Some people will dress love in the costume of divinity and call it divine or unconditional love, and leave it at that. I wanted to show the architecture of love.

The six heart virtues are the “rooms” in the home of love. They are not word-concepts; they are behaviors. The acquisition of behavioral intelligence is the task each of us is performing day-to-day whether we realize it or not. It is what life brings. We are all learning to forgive, to be humble, to express compassion, to be empathic and understand the other’s point of view, and so on. These are the qualities of love, and if we can pay attention to the branches of love, then love is expressed more completely in our lives.

This is the equivalent of consciousness, because consciousness is love. Thus, if you want to bring more of your Self—your consciousness—to this reality we call human life, then the six heart virtues and their expression, is a good way to do it.

The counsel to “be love” is easy to say or repeat, but surprisingly little has been written or even artistically expressed that actually provides a framework to do so. This is changing. The six heart virtues are part of that change.

**Darlene Berges:** In your second book *Quantusum*, your main character Solomon tells the story in his own words. His story explores the discovery of a technology called the Grand Portal, which will allow humankind to see the soul and realize its inmost identity as the Sovereign Integral. What is the importance of the Grand Portal and Sovereign Integral in your writings?

**James Mahu:** The Grand Portal is the kernel of my entire body of work. It is the focal point at which every sentence, brush stroke, music composition, stanza, and voice bends in unity and deference. The Grand Portal is the irrefutable scientific discovery of the human soul. The “scientific” does not necessarily mean that science will discover it, but rather that it is repeatable. The discovery can move across all of humanity like an ocean wave passes over a shoreline of sand particles, carrying them to a new place of understanding.

This is an expansion of consciousness that lifts all of humanity. What is its spark? What causes this shift and expansion? It always begins with one. One consciousness

peers into the abyss and sees the reality from illusion. They see that human consciousness is a melding of I AM and WE ARE. This is the framework of the Sovereign Integral consciousness, of which every human is. We are the consciousness of I AM WE ARE.

While many of us have accepted the social programming that humans are I WANT YOU WANT WE COMPETE, this is shifting. In the next seventy years or so, humanity will journey to this Grand Portal experience and we will be called to understand a new level of our existence. It is not a biomechanical merging with technology, but rather an elemental, stripped-down essence of our truest humanity—the Sovereign Integral consciousness—embodied in a human instrument, living upon earth.

**Darlene Berges:** In 2009, you asked John Berges to edit and provide commentary on all WingMakers materials, resulting in a two volume Collected Works of the WingMakers set. Volume I, filled with stunning, enigmatic color graphics was released a year ago. How can readers make the most of this important work and tap into the many layers it offers?

**James Mahu:** The WingMakers is a challenging work. It was not written to the 8th grade level that so many authors and publishers target. It is designed for any age because of its diverse media, but generally, the older audience is drawn to it, because they have been through the journey and have sampled dozens of other systems of belief and practice. Most of these systems were, to varying degrees institutionalized, which is to say, they have been organized by a group of people for a range of purposes.

They have leaders, buildings, places of worship, places of indoctrination, rules, ceremonies, and the like, and I'm not only speaking of religion here; academics have similar structures.

When someone comes to the WingMakers materials and the Collected Works in particular, they can open the book and let their inmost self guide the process. They do not need to read linearly. Everyone can go through the book in their own manner. I would recommend that they be patient and look to embed whatever it is that they resonate with, in their behaviors. Don't simply make mental deposits. Find a way to incorporate what resonates philosophically into your behaviors, and then observe how it redirects and reorients you. As I said in a previous answer, this work is an architectural drawing of love, but it is also a catalyst to awaken.

The world around us is adept at inducing slumber. People, all people, need to remain awake to their inner selves and aspirations. They must cultivate and nurture that aspect within themselves that I refer to as the Sovereign Integral. This is what the Collected Works can provide. John Berges did a wonderful job of creating the bridgework that helps people see these esoteric materials as accessible and useful in their daily lives.

**Darlene Berges:** Your newest novel series, *The Weather Composer*, centers on the life of Terran Kahn, a boy born in a remote area of Iran at the same moment that a catastrophic sunstorm creates major disruptions on the planet. Terran has a keen intellect and inner drive to be educated, leading to fast-paced and surprising adventure. His story is about controls and how he reacts to them. How

do you see the future for our young people in a world of controls?

**James Mahu:** The Controllers exist for one purpose: they compete to control resources. It is the “best game in town,” as they would invariably put it. Highest stakes, highest drama, highest rewards, this is what motivates them. Terran Kahn and his inner circle really represent the consciousness of the new generations that will come onto the planet and bring their considerable intellects, energies, ideas and innovations to solve the most intractable problems that humanity is dealing with. This will require new leadership methodologies and new educational platforms, which they will bring.

A global communication network (internet) is the key technology that indicates a species is on the road to the Grand Portal. It is the back door to consciousness exploration, and the new leadership and educational platforms will flourish on the internet. Everything is moving away from centralization, and the Controllers realize this. They have attempted to prevent it, but they see that it is inevitable like a dam that holds back an incredible force of water, and the dam’s cracks are building.

The next three generations will decentralize economies, educational processes, wealth, and even government. Hyper-local, decentralized, but globally connected communities will prosper, and these will be the building blocks to a new social order based largely on egalitarian meritocracy.

The Controllers will die off in this world. Their purpose will be undone. I believe in these new generations and



their ability to operate at a higher level of understanding. There will remain detractors and those who try to remain in the old systems, but their numbers will dwindle precipitously with each new generation of humans and technology.

**Darlene Berges:** What exercises or techniques can you recommend to help us live from a higher consciousness while at the same time living in our three-dimensional world?

**James Mahu:** The practice of the six heart virtues is a good foundation in terms of behavioral wisdom, and the practice of Quantum Pause is a good way to renew one's commitment to the six heart virtues in their life, as well as activating and expanding their imaginative faculties. You can find out more about these at [www.wingmakers.com](http://www.wingmakers.com).

**[Planetnetwork Press](#)**

# LYRICUS MISSION AND PURPOSE

**NOTE:** This Introduction is excerpted from the *Collected Works of the WingMakers Vol. II*. To be released in its entirety in 2014.

*Each planet is provided a council of teachers from Lyricus who incarnate within the species and its home planet at specific times in order to establish the entrainment of knowledge in the direction of the Grand Portal.*

“Excerpts from Liminal Cosmogony” is one of the more important documents among the writings offered by James. (He is careful to point out that it is a translation from the book, Liminal Cosmogony and not his own writing.) This document is important because it describes, in broad terms, the goal for humanity in this century—a goal that will revolutionize our understanding of who we are as a species and the nature of human life in the multiverse.

A good question to ask at the beginning of this introduction is what do the words “liminal” and “cosmogony” mean. According to Merriam-Webster’s Collegiate Dictionary,

*Liminal* means:

1. Of or relating to a sensory threshold.
2. Barely perceptible.
3. Of, relating to, or being an intermediate state, phase, or condition.

*Cosmogony* means:

1. A theory of the origin of the universe
2. The creation or origin of the world or universe

So, *Liminal Cosmogony* is a book about the origin and nature of the world, or universe taken to the limit of our sensory abilities. We can also apply the second and third meanings, but it is quite possible that they do not apply to the database that the Lyricus Teaching Order (LTO) has assembled about the origin of our world and universe. Nevertheless, let us speculate further that it is a book of knowledge concerning the origin of the universe that is so subtle and mysterious that it is barely perceptible. Additionally, because the universe is in continuous change, the knowledge base continues to grow and expand. It should also be mentioned that the word “universe” in these definitions can probably be changed to “multiverse” because of the multi-dimensional nature of the creation as claimed by the LTO.

Now that we have given the book the best meaning we can with our limited language, let’s briefly examine the few details James has given about this mysterious book, *Liminal Cosmogony*.

In another paper, entitled “The Rising Heart,” James writes the following in the foreword:

“This paper is an excerpt from the original work known as Liminal Cosmogony, a body of teachings employed by the Lyricus Teaching Order. These teachings are the carefully chosen words and energetic transfers of Lyricus teachers, who have expressed them from an ancient, yet, distinctly relevant voice. They are colored in our language and culture not because they are texts composed for our specific species or planet, but because all planets and their inhabitants evolve in a similar ascendant path, passing through transformative shifts to higher light and intelligence.”

“True to the standards of Lyricus, Liminal Cosmogony is not concerned with the cosmological ordering of the multiverse or the physics of time and space as they unravel into the void. The teachers of Lyricus are more concerned with the delicate human connection between the soul and the human instrument, and how this integration can be activated and its activation sustained amid third- and fourth-dimensional emotional turmoil, misinformation, mental static, and spurious electromagnetic fields; to name a few.

Essentially, these descriptions of Liminal Cosmogony tell us that there is a knowledge system within our galaxy that has been developed through millennia by Lyricus; that the Lyricus teachers employ the material in Liminal Cosmogony to prepare humans for the Grand Portal discovery; that all planets and their inhabitants evolve along a similar ascendant path; and that the Lyricus teachers are focused on the “delicate human connection

between the Sovereign Integral and the Human Instrument.”

Details of how this psycho-spiritual and social transformation of human civilization unfolds are meager, to say the least, but are slowly being revealed by James as he releases more information. This information is a mix of theory and practice presented through the various mediums available at [wingmakers.com](http://wingmakers.com) and, more directly, through e-books at [eventtemples.org](http://eventtemples.org), and now available through this collection (see volume II).

According to Liminal Cosmogony, the transformation and redefinition of the human species will take place through an, as yet, unrevealed confluence of particle physics and quantum biology. Proof of the infinite consciousness (Sovereign Integral) and the multidimensional nature of human life will be the crowning achievements of this coming research. This new direction in scientific research is hinted at as psychologist and consciousness researcher Dean Radin writes in his book *Entangled Minds*:

“The more we look, the more we’ll find quantum effects in biology. And not just minor hiccups, but fundamental processes that, without quantum connections, would not exist at all. Sometime later we’ll find these effects operating in the nervous system, and later in the brain. At that point psi will graduate from the fringe to the mainstream, and then all those strange phenomena studied for over a century, but poorly understood, will be accepted and regarded as being just slightly ahead of their time.”

As mentioned briefly in the introduction to this book, the Grand Portal discovery is the birth of humanity into its destined life within the greater multiverse. This is a fascinating and exhilarating idea that at first seems to be no different than science fiction literature's descriptions of humankind's exploration of the cosmos. The key difference, however, is contained in the concept of dimensions beyond the physical. Here are two instances:

- As soul experiences different spatial environments within the Superuniverse of its origin, it also experiences different dimensions and non-spatial environments within the multiverse that extend beyond the Superuniverse's material structure.

The species of a particular planet has a unique ascension path and evolutionary track in order to become an *interdimensional force*. [Italics mine.]

The key phrase here is humanity's transformation from "a planetary animal to an interdimensional force." The scientific research and developments of this century will ultimately lead to the birth of humanity into its new life in the multiverse, in which the exploration of "outer" space as well as "inner" space will take forms we cannot yet imagine.

According to Liminal Cosmogony, a necessary component for achieving this ultimate goal is the scientific differentiation between the soul (Sovereign Integral) and the soul carrier (also referred to as the Human Instrument). The soul carrier consists of our physical, emotional, mental aspects, and the Genetic Mind. The soul is more difficult to define, but essentially it is the core sense of

individuality, that sense of pure self-awareness often described by meditators through the centuries. This pure self-awareness can also be described as that sense of self-existence experienced prior to the arising of thought. It is the psychological space existing between thoughts or feelings.

The glossary entry for *Entity* or *Soul* describes it as “a fragment of the Universal Spirit Consciousness of First Source. It is composed of a very refined and pure energy vibration that is equal to Source Intelligence (spirit).” In the context of the information offered in *Liminal Cosmogony*, the soul’s discovery is nothing short of revolutionary— it affects every segment of civilization.

The primary effects of the Grand Portal can be reduced to three major influences. They are:

- Institutions of science, religion, and culture are reformatted to embrace the science of multidimensional realities as their core, guiding frequency.
- Government leaders are obliged to restructure their political systems to allow for the integration of new systems of knowledge, specifically of the multidimensional universe and the extended brotherhood of intelligent beings that live therein.
- Social institutions related to trade and enterprise are reengineered to support the technologies that arise from the discovery of the Grand Portal. These technologies dramatically alter the way of life on a planetary scale. These include soul carrier health, species continuation planning, ecosystem stability, and harmonization of species in service to a planetary educational system.

Obviously, from the descriptions given above, there is an enormous amount of knowledge related to the soul's nature that goes far beyond the theories of religion, philosophy, and psychology.

Picking up an earlier thread, science fiction has long described the idea of mankind's exploration and colonization of space and our discovery of extraterrestrial life forms. Liminal Cosmogony specifically, and the written materials in general, carry this concept from universe exploration to multiverse exploration. Not only do humans and other life forms exist in the space-time dimension, but races of beings exist in other dimensions as well. Thus, the LTO perspective expands the boundaries of life beyond the physical universe, into the metaphysical multiverse. The cosmology of today's astro-physics will give way to a new cosmology of astro-metaphysics. We will not only discover extraterrestrial life, but perhaps more significantly, we will discover extradimensional life.

### **Lyracus FAQs**

As with most of the writings in this collection, Liminal Cosmogony rewards repeated reading with greater understanding. In this regard, the Lyracus FAQs "Relationship of Lyracus to the Human Species" and "Lyracus Teachers and Methodologies" go a long way toward providing readers with more details about the LTO and its relationship to humanity.

A curious feature of these FAQs is that the questions do not appear to have come from any specific individual(s). The information provided in these FAQs could have been



easily transmitted through a straightforward article, but this format helps to present these new ideas in smaller packets. This does not mean that the questions are suspect, but more that they are a form of communication that gathers the concepts into “answers” or metaphorical “portions” of information that can be more easily digested and processed. Following are the nine questions contained in the “Relationship of Lyricus to the Human Species.”

- How does a new species—like the human species—get created? Or is the species groomed from an evolutionary context and simply emerges from an organic soup?

- What is the process that Lyricus goes through to help a species in its evolutionary progression?

- What exactly is a soul carrier and why is it seemingly so limited?

- What is the distinction between the soul carrier and the species at large?

- What is the definition of the soul?

- What is the Grand Portal?

- What is the science of multidimensional reality?

- What is the purpose of the human species as a whole?

- Can you explain the concept of evil? Is it real?

Here are the topics that these questions address:

- The creation and purpose of the (human) species

- The purpose of the species

- The Lyricus' relation to the species
- The definition of the soul
- The definition of the soul carrier
- The relation of the soul carrier to the species
- The Grand Portal
- The science of multidimensional reality
- The definition of evil

Summarizing the above points, the human species, the soul, the soul carrier, and the Grand Portal are major factors for our consideration. Multidimensional reality and evil are sub-topics related to the Grand Portal discovery. The former is a by-product of the discovery and the latter represents those forces that resist the discovery.

We also see from the bullet points that this discovery involves defining and differentiating the soul from the soul carrier. As discussed earlier, this will involve scientific research in various fields. Maybe, the most difficult topic in the foregoing is that related to the species. The Lyricus view and definition of the human species is that of a collective life-form spanning a multidimensional reality.

This is certainly a groundbreaking idea in the sense of dimensions beyond the physical plane of reality because it implies that human consciousness extends beyond the physical plane. This notion alone holds implications related to the intriguing question of the survival of our individuality after the death of the physical body.

Although environmental science and biology, in general, describe humanity in terms of a singular biological life-form, it is a much larger step to prove this on a larger cosmic scale—an extraterrestrial scale—and especially in terms of dimensions of reality existing beyond our space-time domain.

Following are the questions related to “Lyricus Teachers and Methodologies.”

- At what point in time do teachers from Lyricus decide what information to share with a species?
- What happens if a species doesn’t discover the Grand Portal?
- Are the teachers of Lyricus known to humanity by any other name?
- What does Lyricus teach?
- How many members of Lyricus are currently in the flesh on earth?
- Why do Lyricus members incarnate as a member of the species instead of visiting the species in their native soul carriers?
- If Lyricus focuses on the species, and not the individual, what is it really teaching that is useful to the individual?
- Is there a specific philosophical system that underlies Lyricus’ teachings?
- How do the teachers of Lyricus who are incarnated among humanity operate?

- Is there a text or “Bible” of Lyricus, and if so, when would this be made available?

- Is there any value in the Lyricus works for those individuals who are not scientists or spiritual leaders, and are not living at the time when the Grand Portal is discovered?

- Why is the discovery of the Grand Portal being “telegraphed” through this website if there are forces who would try to prevent it?

- Why is it so important that humanity makes the discovery of the Grand Portal itself? Couldn’t Lyricus simply provide the discovery to humanity?

- It seems impossible that the ills of humanity will be solved by the mere scientific discovery of its soul. Even more questionable is whether most people would be interested. Why does Lyricus hold this discovery as being so critical?

- The concepts of morality seem to be sparingly used in the literature of Lyricus. Is science more important—in the teachings of Lyricus—than the behaviors of love, compassion, morality, and goodness?

Summarizing these questions we find that they generally fall into three categories:

1. Lyricus teachers
2. The LTO knowledge base
3. The Grand Portal

From these numbered items we learn more details concerning the Grand Portal. We also learn that Lyricus teachers incarnate within the species in order to initiate the guiding protocols for the Grand Portal discovery; that their activities are referenced in ancient texts; that they have been influential in more recent history, but without personal acknowledgment; that there are about a dozen members currently active and working with select individuals who are in positions of influence within scientific, cultural, governmental, and religious fields. These four areas are called the quarters of power.

The LTO knowledge base and systems are also addressed, and from the answers we learn that there is no Lyricus “bible” of teachings; that their knowledge base and system has formed into seven disciplines; that their philosophical system is an outgrowth of the science of multidimensional reality (which will be a byproduct of the Grand Portal discovery), and that their philosophy is more of a catalytic system for nudging those in the quarters of power toward an expanded view of reality and consciousness beyond the physical world. And finally, that this discovery, in turn and ironically, sheds the need for a philosophical system because:

In the knowledge of this reality, there is no need for a philosophical system or spiritual belief system or religious structure because the individual recognizes that they are complete unto themselves with respect to the vital knowledge. No laws or rules are required in this realization because the knowledge itself entrains the soul carrier to its holographic truth, which is based on the most profound levels of love and understanding. As this is the

foundation of persistent reality, those who live in this frequency neither require nor seek a philosophical system.

As is probably obvious from the above description, the LTO knowledge base is not easy of comprehension because it is based on an expanded conscious awareness of multiple dimensions of reality, whereas earth humanity's knowledge base is an outgrowth of our five-sensory view of the physical dimension. And although our great works of art, religious inspirations, and scientific discoveries have emerged from intuitional and feeling dimensions, the vast majority of humans have no objective knowledge of these less dense, higher frequency realms. In fact, our movement toward the Grand Portal is going to result in our scientific, objective acquisition of information related to these other realms, so that we move out of the often foggy, mystical (misty), and subjective interpretations—both beautiful and morbid—and into an era of real knowledge.

Having said all this, it is time for you to settle into these three fascinating pieces and garner your own understanding and insights, for everyone's interaction with this material is a contribution to the gathering momentum of the collective human consciousness that is destined to intersect with the Grand Portal later in this century.

**Note:** The above introduction to the Lyricus materials was written by John Berges, editor of the *Collected Works of the WingMakers Vol. II*.

## **EXCERPTS FROM LIMINAL COSMOGONY**

What follows are a series of excerpts from a non-published text known as: Liminal Cosmogony. This record is part of the knowledge system contained within the galactic Tributary Zone of the Milky Way galaxy. Translations are as precise as possible though the words used are not always consistent to the WingMakers' glossary. When this occurs it is because these particular records are not planetary or species specific, and therefore, have not been reduced to human or earthly terminology, as is the case with the WingMakers' materials.

### **THE IDENTITY OF LYRICUS**

The Lyricus Teaching Order originates in the Central Race of the seventh Superuniverse. Within the Central Race is a sub-race known symbolically as the WingMakers. Within the WingMakers there is a specific order of beings that are collectively known as Lyricus, and it is this group that is responsible for assembling and exporting the knowledge base necessary for a developing species to scientifically prove the existence of soul and establish the science of multidimensional reality as the nucleus knowledge system of the species.

This outcome of evolution is universal and, in the broadest measure, identical for all species that are based on the biogenetic template of the Central Race, known as the Seventh Archetype Soul Carrier of the Individuated

Consciousness of First Source. It is Lyricus that is responsible for shepherding a developing species to the technological and scientific prowess whereby the soul and the soul carrier are distinguished and acknowledged by the species at large.

## **THE DEVELOPMENT OF A SPECIES**

The Central Race is an ancient race based on the same genetic template as humanoid life elsewhere within the seventh Superuniverse. This template is interconnected and does not relate on an evolutionary scale so much as a density scale. The density of vibration of one planet within the seventh Superuniverse is unique among all other planets, and it is this vibratory condition that prescribes the biogenetic template's characteristics and thus its propensities and capacities.

Soul carriers of the highest order are no more evolved than the least—as they serve precisely the same functional purpose, only at a different rate of vibration. Indeed, in many ways the soul carriers that are designed to operate in dense vibrations are more sophisticated and evolved than those designed for the more rarified vibrations of the Central Universe. Each soul carrier is part of an unbroken chain of biogenetic structures that are each based on the same configurable template that enables the individuated consciousness to interact on a near-infinite number of organic and synthetic planets and spatial environments.

The souls that inhabit higher order soul carriers are typically more experienced than those that inhabit soul carriers designed for denser vibrations, but this is a



generalization and not a rule. As soul experiences different spatial environments within the Superuniverse of its origin, it also experiences different dimensions and non-spatial environments within the multiverse that extend beyond the Superuniverse's material structure.

Physical space requires that soul—which is non-physical—be carried in an instrument of protection, perception, and interaction. It is through this membrane of perception and expression that soul can transform the physical environment, and in this process transform itself. It is this exchange of energy between the individuated consciousness and the species' soul carrier that enables the species to transform from a planetary animal to an interdimensional spiritual force.

The species of a particular planet has a unique ascension path and evolutionary track in order to become an interdimensional force. This occurs through three primary manifestations:

1. The species as a whole learns how to fuse the soul carrier to its individuated consciousness and operate the soul carrier as an integrated extension of the individuated consciousness. When this occurs the soul carrier is vibrationally shifted to resonate with the soul, and this ability—at the species level—occurs as an outgrowth of the discovery of the Grand Portal.

2. The species is inducted as a member of standing on the Superuniverse Network and has established lines of communication with post Grand Portal species within their spatial zone.

3. The species—through the science of multidimensional reality—is able to manage, with responsible stewardship, its planet and complementary life forms, and ward off non-complementary life forms in a posture of non-violence.

These capabilities and conditions must converge in the species before it is allowed to operate interdimensionally as a collective force. Each species, or more specifically, sub-species of the Central Race, ultimately returns to its origins. In this case, its origins are instilled deep inside the soul carrier coding or DNA. It is an indelible instinct to locate the true origins of the species, and the Grand Portal discovery provides the first verifiable evidence linking the species to a greater brotherhood whose lineage is extraterrestrial.

The Lyricus Teaching Order does not distribute this knowledge openly like a teacher distributes their knowledge to students in a classroom. Each planet is provided a council of teachers from Lyricus who incarnate within the species and its home planet at specific times in order to establish the entrainment of knowledge in the direction of the Grand Portal.

The great inventions and revelations of a species are most frequently accorded to a person who was not the true originator of the idea, but was the person who assembled the resources to make the idea a standard of knowledge. The Lyricus Planetary Council whispers the seeds of knowledge to the greater minds of the species, but remain themselves in the shadows of recognition. This is how the species is led to develop its planetary communications

network, which is the very foundation for the Grand Portal discovery.

## **THE OUTWARD DISCLOSURES OF LYRICUS**

The Teaching Order of Lyricus only becomes exoteric within the species at the stage when the communications network is accessible to private domiciles and the technology is sufficiently secure to prevent seizure; the political system is sufficiently open to prevent censorship; and the host environment is sufficiently trusted to prevent modification. When these conditions are attained, the teachings of Lyricus are brought to the species upon the network that will ultimately serve as the distribution hub for its knowledge system.

Generally, these teachings will be brought forward in several “impressions”. The first is the announcement that formalizes its arrival and is observable to the greater network of workers who are involved—no matter how significantly—in the discovery of the Grand Portal. This typically occurs in the third precursor generation, however, in some species it is earlier or later by one generation.

During this first introduction, the teachings of Lyricus are fundamentally depicted and articulated. These would include the discourses, cosmology, and activation resources. Activation resources are encoded sensory data streams that are translated by Lyricus teachers into the media format and sensory system prevalent to the species.

The second impression of the teachings is made available to select students who have been identified as

architects of the Grand Portal discovery. These teachings are increasingly esoteric in nature and are exclusively relevant to the new science of multidimensional realities that will act as the foundation stone for the discovery of the Grand Portal.

The activation resources are initially muted because the immaturity of the media and communications network reduces the data stream and its activation influence. As the network evolves and more data can be embedded, the activation resources become more potent. This generally occurs during the second precursor generation.

The third impression of the Lyricus teachings occurs when the core frequencies of the activation materials are distilled into a technology that can entrain the heart-brain system of the soul carrier. This heightened activation technology enables those who have incarnated with specific functions associated with the Grand Portal discovery and its propagation to resist the natural inertia and fear reaction of the establishment.

It is these individuals—many of whom incarnate from Lyricus—that will lead the discovery of the species' soul, and as importantly, the propagation of this breakthrough into the new institutions resulting from the discovery.

The fourth and final impression from the Lyricus teachings occurs after the Grand Portal's discovery and establishes the application of the Grand Portal to the species' requirements in the realms of spiritual advancement and educational systems. The latter element is the most critical of the four impressions because it sustains the knowledge across generations. As there are

three precursor generations that reveal the Grand Portal, there are generally three successor generations that transmit and diffuse the findings of the Grand Portal into the social, cultural, political, and scientific institutions of the species.

The occasion just preceding and following the discovery of the Grand Portal is the most critical because it is this point in time that is most susceptible to revision, suppression, and outright subjugation of the findings revealed in its discovery. The manner in which the findings are released to public scrutiny is of vital consequence, and Lyricus has developed a precise set of protocols to help in the efficiency and effectiveness of this transmission.

## **THE FINDINGS OF THE GRAND PORTAL**

Notwithstanding the efficacy of these protocols, there are instances where the discovery of the Grand Portal was successfully suppressed by established institutions that foresaw their ruin or replacement in the dawning of this discovery. This fear reaction is a natural result of perceived displacement, which is why Lyricus specializes in the psychology of change management, and why the transmission protocols are so rigorously tested and refined.

The primary findings of the Grand Portal can be reduced to four fundamental knowledge systems. The effects of these systems are described below:

- The soul carrier function is muted or diminished in proportional sympathy to the species' perception of soul.

- The species is unified at multiple levels that transcend time and place. This unification is essential to its vibrant survival as well as its ascension pathway as a spiritual force that animates and preserves the knowledge defined by the species.

- The species is innately connected to a vast network of related life forms each based on the biogenetic soul carrier archetype of the Central Race specific to its Superuniverse. Collectively, these species represent the cellular structure of First Source, while the individuated consciousness represents the indivisible particle thereof.

- The individuated consciousness is orchestrated by the species to produce a knowledge path that leads the species to its creator and upholder. It is this return—like a migratory journey enjoined by a fierce tailwind—that is accelerated by the Grand Portal.

- The individual is not existential, nor truly independent of the species. The individual is not supreme, nor is it the reward of consciousness. The individual is less an artifact of First Source than it is of the species. The soul carrier is ultimately transformed and fused with the individuated consciousness to the point it is indiscernible as a separate component of consciousness, but the individual remains devoted to the archetype of the species.

## **IMPLICATIONS AND EFFECTS OF THE GRAND PORTAL**

The primary effects of the Grand Portal can be reduced to three major influences. They are:

1. Institutions of science, religion, and culture are reformatted to embrace the science of multidimensional realities as their core, guiding frequency.

2. Government leaders are obliged to restructure their political systems to allow for the integration of new systems of knowledge, specifically of the multidimensional universe and the extended brotherhood of intelligent beings that live therein.

3. Social institutions related to trade and enterprise are reengineered to support the technologies that arise from the discovery of the Grand Portal. These technologies dramatically alter the way of life on a planetary scale. These include soul carrier health, species continuation planning, ecosystem stability, and harmonization of species in service to a planetary educational system.

## **RESISTANCE TO THE GRAND PORTAL**

The areas of resistance to the Grand Portal are predictable if not avoidable. Resistance is largely predicated on three basic factors:

1. Is particle energy used as a weapon and/or an energy resource?

2. Is religion fragmented or unified?

3. Is machine intelligence managed by species' intelligence?

## **Socio-Political Resistance**

Because particle energy is a core component of the Grand Portal discovery, the species is aware of the inherent power of particle energy before it has discovered the Grand Portal. This awareness can provide unlimited resources for energy production, and it can also be a weapon of coercion to seize control of planetary resources.

If the species is using particle energy as a weapon of intimidation among its own members, it is more likely to resist the approach of the Grand Portal because the discoveries of the Grand Portal introduce an indisputable range of intelligent life forms whose relationships are initially uncertain. Because of this perceived shift in the balance of supremacy, the evidence of the Grand Portal is resisted and there is a comprehensive stratagem to conceal it.

## **Religious Resistance**

Among species whose religious and spiritual identities are fragmented, religious leaders are essentially in competition. That is to say, leadership has chosen to define the spiritual worlds and individual purpose therein differently. This is common among species that have partial activation of the soul carrier's sensorial capacity. This fractional capacity is precisely the cause of discordant views by spiritual leaders, and the resulting rivalry is the primary cause of resistance expressed by spiritual leaders when the Grand Portal is discovered.



The resistance generally takes the form of skepticism initially and evolves into indignation and ridicule. Unlike the social and political leaders who can operate in stealth through well-concealed stratagem, spiritual leaders generally resist the Grand Portal after it is discovered and announced, and do so openly.

### **Technology Resistance**

As the species evolves its communication network, machine intelligence begins to eclipse species' intelligence. Machines of super-intelligence are built that—if not properly managed by the species—can self-evolve at a velocity greater than organic evolution, overtaking the embedded management protocols and allowing machines to dominate the frontiers of science and technology.

When this occurs, the Grand Portal can still be discovered, but the species itself is not sufficiently prepared to assimilate the findings and apply them in service to the formation of new institutions and the transformation of existing ones. When the Grand Portal is revealed solely by machine intelligence, the discovery is hollow and its propagation is typically reserved for the intellectually elite of the species.

The Grand Portal's discovery is far less significant than the diffusion and propagation of its findings to the species' educational institutions and planetary scientific class. The discovery holds the promise of the activation of the soul carrier's sensorial system, which is an intelligence accelerator of significant value to the species.

Species who have both fragmented spiritual identities and deploy particle energy as weapons are among the most resistant to the Grand Portal evidence. Typically the resistance is twofold:

Political operatives predict the dawning of the Grand Portal discovery and a stratagem for its concealment is initiated before the discovery can be adequately corroborated and proven irrefutable.

When the stratagem to conceal fails and the evidence is distributed to the network, spiritual leaders offer the next wave of resistance by doubting the motivations of those leaders responsible for its discovery, since all or most do not subscribe to the belief systems defined and/or upheld by the spiritual leaders.

The period immediately preceding the discovery of the Grand Portal is the most critical. This episode of time is known as the Attestation Period, the time when critics will rise with full voice and unrestrained reluctance to resist the implications of the Grand Portal because they are aware—dimly as it may be—that massive change undermines their control impulse. It is a time when spiritual leaders and politicians join forces to repel this intricate and complex metaphysical and scientific revelation.

This is why the protocols are so carefully engineered by Lyricus to ensure that the leaders involved in the Grand Portal discovery operate skillfully to ensure that resistance is met with intelligent countermeasures that bring the proof of the human soul to the network in a way that cannot be censored, altered or restrained. The network

itself will reveal the human soul in a way that is unimaginable and therefore indefensible.

## **TEMPLATES OF LIFE**

While Lyricus exports the genetic template for a species, the template is not physical or material in structure. Across all dimensions of space there exists a primary field of vibration or quantum primacy. This field is non-physical but informs the physical. It exists independent of the physical structures of existence, and can be thought of as Underivative Information Structures (UIS).

UISs are sub-quantum and represent the primary blueprint for living systems and inorganic matter. It is UIS that gives rise to the quantum fields that interpenetrate planets, stars, galaxies, and the universe at large. It is the communication field of life that connects the nonlocal and the local, the individual and the collective, the one and the infinite.

Lyricus brings the master templates that operate at an energetic, quantum level, and are inter-meshed or seated upon UIS, which then acts as the energetic grid for all master templates. Within the master templates are the vibratory fields and biomagnetics that give rise to all dimensional expressions, including the genome of the species or organism and its corresponding energy system and linkages, resonant couplings, and communication systems.

Thus, Lyricus defines the physical borders of a species or organism without exporting a physical representation. Rather it is “programmed” into the master template at the quantum level and this master template activates the sub-programs that ultimately formulate the cellular intelligence or molecular integrity of a living, organic system or inorganic matter.

Species typically uncover these energetic structures after they have fully absorbed and assimilated the physical structures that emerge from the energetic. There are eleven primary fields of vibration and each is interfaced directly with the other. They are not layered in a three-dimensional construct. They are holographically coiled and encoded in a manner that cannot be expressed with language nor depicted with three-dimensional geometry or spatial relationships.

The master template is the common interface between each field of vibration. Energetically, it is supported and sustained through UIS. UIS, the master templates, and the energetic systems that arise from it are constantly in an interactive process of communication. It is this communication that informs the evolutionary design of a species, organism, or material object—whether organic or inorganic.

This interactive process of the energetic systems is monitored by a frequency of UIS that is called Source Intelligence or the Universal Spirit Intelligence. This frequency absorbs, filters, and processes the communication between the fields of vibration and distills them into packets of information suitable for utilization by First Source. This is the manner in which the interactions

between all dimensions of existence are brought into coherence and applicability to the formation of new worlds, species, and dimensional constructs. This is the conduit in which the multiverse evolves and all life within it advances into higher dimensional expressions.

UIS provides the structure behind the quantum fields and energetic systems that yield form and the living systems that support form. The soul carrier is an outcome of the master template that is energetically distributed to life-bearing planets upon the multiverse vehicle of UIS. This template, which creates and interacts with the morphogenetic field of the soul, defines the soul carriers' limits of functionality and expression—but only in the flow of time.

## **THE PRESENCE OF SOUL**

The soul carrier is in a constant state of flux and development that is the result of the dance between the master template, UIS and the DNA molecule present in each cell. As the soul carrier of the species evolves, the DNA molecule increasingly activates its antenna and responds to the higher dimensional, organizing information field that enables the soul carrier to integrate soul consciousness more fully.

As the soul consciousness enters the soul carrier with greater vibratory force and integration, it vibrationally alters the soul carrier. It does this generally in three distinct ways:

1. The energy centers of the soul carrier (sometimes referred to as chakras) are the conduits of UIS energy to the soul carrier—at all levels—physically, emotionally, and mentally. This increase in UIS energy vibrationally shifts the soul carrier, causing it to have greater access to the consciousness of soul.

2. As the frequency of soul is accessed, the soul carrier gains an appreciation and growing realization that it is the carrier wave expression of a God-Fragment interacting with the worlds of linear time, crystallized matter, and three-dimensional space. This new perception portends a transformative identity and value shift.

3. The DNA molecule is both an antenna that attunes to UIS and the master template, as well as a transmitter of its transformations that are a result of its further intimate contact with the soul consciousness. This transmission is a vibrational frequency that is communicable to the DNA molecules of all others within the species, even affecting related species.

The soul is attuned to UIS and operates therein because this is the vibratory field that is native to its essence. As a greater percentage of the species embody their soul consciousness, it becomes easier for the remaining members to do so as well.

## **DEVELOPMENTAL SHIFTS**

There are four developmental shifts that precede the emergence of the Grand Portal, and these generally occur

within three to five generations of the discovery. They are unfolded in the following order:

- A physical shift is expressed in the planetary environment and spatial surroundings. This physical shift is symbolic of the momentous changes in the virtual structures that prepare the species for the Grand Portal. The physical shifts generally take expression through weather conditions, astronomical anomalies, ethnic turmoil, technological dysfunction, and disease—all of which impact on economic and planetary stability.

- An emotional shift is expressed in the movement of the species to more effectively manage their emotional center (heart) at an energetic, non-physical level, enabling a higher bandwidth connection between the heart and brain centers. This heart-brain connection aligns the energetic centers of the soul carrier to accept a more intense awakening of the intuitive powers innately present in the genetic mind of the species.

- A mental shift is expressed as the genetic mind of the species is made more accessible to the species as a result of the previous shift in heart-brain integration. The genetic mind—as the repository of information defined by the species—operates independent of horizontal time flows and can provide quantum leaps in knowledge if its higher dimensional information packets are accessed.

- A shift within the genetic mind occurs when the grid of the genetic mind becomes discontinuous, forming into multiple groupings. Members of the species will energetically reorganize into resonant groups, each accessing different regions of the genetic mind and

evolving a discrete sub-genetic mind whose resonant coupling is more closely fitted to each group.

These four phases occur sequentially, unfolding in time and informing and catalyzing the next phase until it culminates in the discovery of the Grand Portal. This progression operates in subtle, intricate, and meticulous processes, and despite the apparent surface chaos the deeper ordered systems prevail and entrain the surface effects of time, space and matter.

At the end of the fourth phase the energy of UIS and the virtual structures of the master template begin to “descend” within the planetary dimension of time and space—attracted by the shifting consciousness of the species. Those members of the species that are energetically attracted to the higher dimensional regions of the genetic mind will—during this time—reveal the science of multidimensional reality that has always been encoded into the master template, waiting for the resonance of minds and hearts to uncover it.

The Grand Portal is holographic, emitting from First Source and extending to UIS, embedded within the master template, conducted into the quantum fields of the genetic mind, drawn into the energetic systems of the soul carrier, and finally coiled within the DNA molecule of the species. This masterful interchange of energy, information, and expression is orchestrated by the magnetic field that surrounds the Grand Portal.

The Grand Portal is similar to a gravitational field that entrains all surrounding matter to its presence. This presence is electromagnetically released into the three-



dimensional realms, whereby it becomes the beckoning force that literally tows a species through time and space to the Grand Portal, and through the energetic field that it represents.

## LYRICUS FAQs INTRODUCTION

Lyricus is largely undetectable except for its influences within and upon a species. Usually these influences are not acknowledged until after the discovery of the Grand Portal. This anonymity enables Lyricus to operate with greater independence from the species' Quarters of Power. Lyricus refers to the Quarters of Power as consisting of government, science, religion, and culture.

Lyricus works through the existing structures of the species, embedding its influence within each of the four quarters of power. Lyricus teachers incarnate approximately five generations prior to the discovery of the Grand Portal. These teachers assume the soul carrier of the species and are awakened to their mission while they are still school-aged children. As they transition to adulthood they apply their innate skills—absent of notoriety and visible presence—quietly developing their missions to promote the changes required to discover the Grand Portal.

Generally, as Lyricus introduces itself to the species, it is done under the guise of mythology and story. There is no assertion in the context of fact because it may needlessly attract fear by the alignment of power within each quarter. The quarters of power are more likely to resist Lyricus if they know the goal is to establish the Grand Portal as a node on the Sovereign Integral Network. This resistance could delay or make impossible the necessary funding and lawmaking to achieve this breakthrough discovery. Thus, Lyricus sends catalysts to each quarter for the purpose of establishing a “null zone”

that can act as an incubator and catalyst of these required changes.

Lyricus is an unimaginably large organization with substantial influence and authority. Its “director” is the Seventh Archetype of First Source. You can think of Lyricus as the preservationists of truth, and the only “truth” sought is to preserve the accessibility granted a humanoid species to discover—through its own initiative—the Grand Portal. Lyricus operates exclusively at the level of a species, not an individual, although it does work with individuals as a means to test its knowledge of the species.

Generally, Lyricus teachers that are embedded within the species during precursor generations step forward in the following order: culture, science, government, and religion. In most instances, the global communications network is the means by which the Lyricus Teaching Order is first externalized. It is used as a quiet incubator for the embedded personnel to collaborate through.

The religious quarter is the final element of the outward disclosure of Lyricus and this is a reflection of how the religious quarter generally objects to, or misunderstands, the advance of science and technology. Religion never transmits science, nor confers it due honor. Within Lyricus, science is the nucleus knowledge, and that which is truly a part of the holographic truth, expressed at its most pristine levels, is indeed an aspect of science first and an amalgam of sentiment, emotion, opinion, and subjectivity second.

This often places Lyricus as a disruptive force within the religious quarter, and it is for this reason that Lyricus' chief architect within the religious quarter steps forward last—at or near the time of the Grand Portal's discovery. This person is the one that will unify the religions of the species, transforming them into a collective belief system based on the science of multidimensional reality.

Not all within the species will subscribe to this new “religion,” but the majority of the species will sense the shifting of the planet's energetic grid from the subjective realm of religion to the objective authority of the science of multidimensional reality, and they will choose to align with this shift because there is no defensible position to circumvent it.

The FAQ section is presented in two sections. The first concentrates on the relationships of Lyricus to current systems of thought, and the second section focuses on the teachers of Lyricus and their methodologies.

[It is recommended for further study to read the Topical Arrangement of Qs and As in this document. Ed.]

## RELATIONSHIP OF LYRICUS TO THE HUMAN SPECIES

**QUESTION 1:** How does a new species—like the human species—get created? Or is the species groomed from an evolutionary context and simply emerges from an organic soup?

**ANSWER 1:** First Animation of First Soul Carrier is a very critical event in the life of a planet. This corresponds to the creation myths that typically flourish in a species' historical records. It is this invocation of soul consciousness into the physical and mental membrane of a life-bearing planet that initiates the species, and this process is always observed and often administered by representatives of the Central Race that are affiliated with Lyricus.

A life-bearing planet is carefully selected once it has proven itself supportive to advanced life forms. Then the soul carrier template is adjusted to operate within the environment. Once the soul carrier template is defined, experiments with incoming souls from Lyricus, who are adept at occupying and operating multiple soul carriers simultaneously, are carried out. From this experimental data, any necessary adjustments are made and then and only then is First Animation initiated.

This basic process may be carried out on approximately 32.7 trillion planets within the seventh Superuniverse. When these materials are first published on a planet, and members of the species examine them, it is the scale of this number that typically stands out in the psyche of the

individual. Following the discovery of the Grand Portal it is considered plausible. Only a small percentage of these life-bearing planets are currently supporting humanoid soul carrier templates, but these are the dominant soul carriers throughout the seventh Superuniverse.

From its most formative stages as an experimental soul carrier, to its arrival as a unified consciousness devoted to the holographic truth of First Source, the hand of Lyricus unalterably leads the soul carrier species to the Grand Portal. Lyricus provides instructions for the individual, but only to the extent that a clear baseline is established that countermands the distortions endemic in the organized teachings of the soul carrier.

**QUESTION 2:** What is the process that Lyricus goes through to help a species in its evolutionary progression?

**ANSWER 2:** Lyricus initially brings the language and culture-building ingredients that enable a species to form stable, co-dependent, and cooperative communities. Next it brings the sciences and the formative language of mathematics, from which evolves the networks that connect the species across the planet. It is this step—the rise of the global network—in the evolutionary path of the species that signals its arrival to the summit of the Grand Portal.

The Grand Portal is the capstone event that a soul carrier species is designed to achieve as a collective species while occupying its home planet. If you distill the purpose of an individuated soul species to its basic goal, it is to transform or activate its soul carrier in order to access

the soul consciousness of the individual, collective, and First Origin sources.

**QUESTION 3:** What exactly is a soul carrier and why is it seemingly so limited?

**ANSWER 3:** A soul carrier species is analogous to a mold that is cast from the original archetype of a species' template, fitted to a specific vibratory environment, and then refined and evolved by the individuated consciousness of soul and the vibratory environment in which the soul carrier operates. These elements influence the soul carrier DNA over geologic time, and it is this evolution of the species that ultimately defines its purpose and determines the individuated consciousness that inhabits the soul carriers of the species.

Soul carriers are not infallible instruments of perception. They provide a fractional view into the vibratory worlds of the physical dimension, and a subjective view across all other dimensions of consciousness. The soul is not purposely thrust into limitation, but indeed these are natural occurrences that result from the vibrational density of a planetary environment. These limitations in capacity, coupled to the sophistication of the soul carrier template, can cause the soul's influence to be dramatically diminished, and it is precisely this diminishment that causes the condition of the species to be less harmonious, and its efforts largely unsupportive of its spiritual objectives as a species.

The soul carrier template is designed to have an innate and undeniable urge to understand itself—not the consciousness of soul, but the physical, emotional, and

mental aspects that sheath the soul. This primary misdirect is a necessary detour on the road to the Grand Portal discovery because the soul carrier is much more comprehensible to itself than is the individuated consciousness or soul that it carries.

As the soul carrier strives to learn about its true identity, it begins to evolve its capacities to learn, conceptualize, create, and manifest new realities. These new realities begin to alter the vibrational density of its home planet and these in turn alter the soul carrier and its ability to perceive something of what it contains.

The pursuit of the soul carrier to know itself is very often confused with its quest of the individuated consciousness or its Creator. The confusion is understandable as the distinction can be exceptionally subtle. The rarified aspects of the soul carrier exist in the higher mind and DNA circuitry that travel in the nervous system of the soul carrier and activate or modify cellular consciousness, and these higher circuits of the soul carrier resolve in a fine mesh, co-mingling with the soul. It is at this level of First Interaction that the soul carrier and soul are nearly fused as a single entity of consciousness.

As the soul carrier slows in vibration to its densest form, which is its physical body, the individuated consciousness is not able to fully merge, and is actually repelled by the body's electrochemical vibration. Thus, the body and emotion—the base vibrations of the soul carrier—are most often associated with the species, while the higher mind is often confused with the soul or God Fragment.



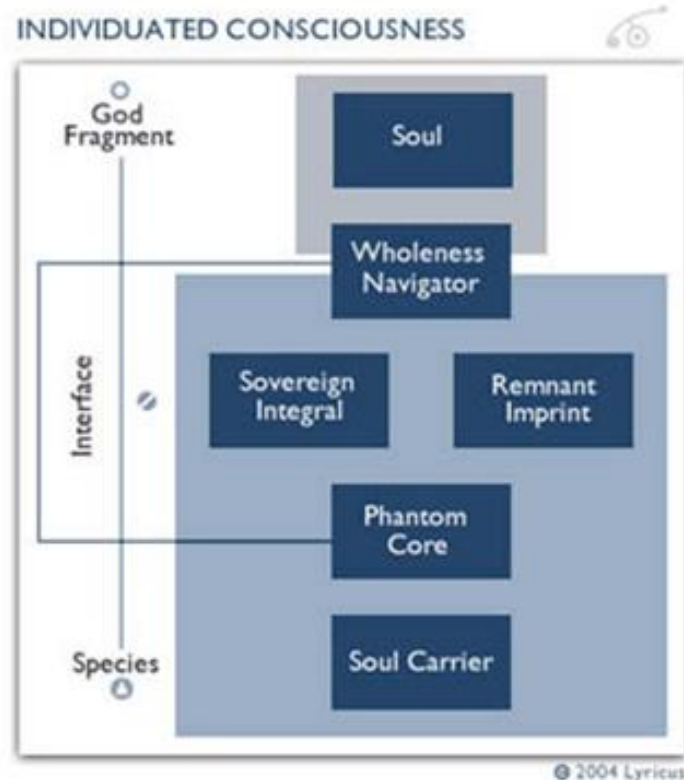
**QUESTION 4:** What is the distinction between the soul carrier and the species at large?

**ANSWER 4:** The species, by the definition of Lyricus, is the entirety of the soul carrier. The individuated consciousness is not a species, it is a God Fragment that operates within an apparatus of individuality that is, in a real sense, a meta soul carrier.

The species evolves; the soul experiences. The species discovers that it is a soul carrier; the soul discovers it is transcendent of all things of time, matter, and space. The species is born of an archetypal template; the soul is born of First Source. The species is part of a vast brotherhood of variation; the soul is one ocean of consciousness. The species enables exploration and expansion of the Superuniverse; the soul enables First Source exploration and expansion.

**QUESTION 5:** What is the definition of the soul?

**ANSWER 5:** The soul is literally a God Fragment that is composed of a hierarchy of capabilities and functionality that permit it to be simultaneously individuated and whole. As it enters the soul carrier at or near the physical birth, it begins to form a matrix of interaction with the soul carrier—testing the vibrational resistance of the soul carrier, as well as its zones of resonance. It is encoded in the soul carrier template that hearing, at least initially, is the most developed of the senses through which the soul can perceive the physical domain. Eventually, the eye-brain system emerges as the dominant portal of perception.



The physical world of dimension and time creates the separation of the world of soul and the world of the soul carrier. Because soul is a God Fragment, and the soul carrier is a representative outgrowth of both the species' evolutionary trajectory and the original designs of the soul carrier template, they are fundamentally incompatible. Thus, the Central Race engineered an interface that serves to integrate the soul and soul carrier, and orient the collective known as the individuated consciousness.

The individuated consciousness consists of six, interconnected energy systems. They are:

1. Soul Carrier generally consists of twenty-four primary systems and four major elements: body, emotions, mind, and genetic mind. It is the soul carrier in the worlds of time and space that enables the soul to operate within the physical worlds of time, matter, and three-dimensional space.

2. Phantom Core is the super consciousness of the soul carrier. It is separate from the soul, and is considered the soul's emissary to the natural world in which the soul carrier must interact. It is through this awareness that soul experiences the natural world of limitation and separation, drawing in the experiences that help it to build appreciation for the Grand Multiverse, the garment of First Source.

3. Sovereign Integral is a state of consciousness whereby the entity and all of its various forms of expression and perception are integrated as a conscious wholeness. The Sovereign Integral is the core identity of the individual. It is the gathering of all created experiences and all instinctive knowledge. This is the soul's knowledge repository based on its collective, individual experiences within all dimensions and times since its creation as a unique consciousness.

4. Remnant Imprint is the impression of the Sovereign Integral as it penetrates into the soul carrier as a force of super consciousness. It is referred to as a 'remnant' only because it exists in the dimension of time and space, while the Sovereign Integral consciousness operates outside of three-dimensional time and space. The remnant imprint is the cast of energy bestowed by the Sovereign Integral to the soul carrier. It is precisely this energy that generates ideas and inspirations, making it possible for the voice of all that you are to surface into the worlds of time and space in which you are only a particle of your total being.

5. Wholeness Navigator guides the soul carrier to perceive fragmentary existence as a passageway into wholeness and unity. The Wholeness Navigator pursues

wholeness and integration. It is the heart of the entity consciousness, shepherding the soul carrier and the soul to unify and operate as a single, sovereign being interconnected with all other beings. The Wholeness Navigator is the gravitational force that forms the purposeful clustering of Sovereign Integrals, reining in sovereignty from the existential grasp of self-sufficiency.

6. Soul (entity consciousness) is, in the simplest of terms, a fragment of the Universal Spirit Consciousness of First Source. It is composed of a very refined and pure energy vibration that is equal to Source Intelligence (spirit). It is an immortal, living, coherent consciousness that is a replica of the energy of its Creator with the individual consciousness of a unique personality. It is the anchoring point of consciousness and is the subtlest of the energy systems of the individuated consciousness to perceive from the soul carrier perspective.

**QUESTION 6:** What is the Grand Portal?

**ANSWER 6:** The Grand Portal is the irrefutable scientific discovery of the individuated soul. It is this discovery that marks the transformation of the species as much as cosmic consciousness marks the transformation of the individual. There are multiple events that typically converge within a close proximity of time in order to prepare the species for this discovery. They are, in no particular order:

- Technology evolves to a distributed communication network that encompasses the planet.
- The smallest particles of the planetary environment are classified and their characteristics defined.

- The soul carrier consciousness must be classified apart from the soul and its component parts are understood.
- The knowledge system and the encoded data streams of Lyricus are translated and made available on the planetary communications network.
- Incarnating souls from Lyricus assume soul carrier status on the planet and are activated.
- The goal of achieving the Grand Portal is articulated and distributed to resonant groups of soul carriers who provide a stable collective consciousness.
- Architects of the Grand Portal assemble the knowledge structure necessary to capture and present the dimensional environment of the individuated consciousness.

Lyricus members know this discovery as the Grand Portal because it prepares the species for induction into the broader universe of sentient life that exists throughout the seventh Superuniverse in eleven primary dimensions.

The material or physical dimension constitutes one view into the Superuniverse. This is the view of astronomers and physicists as they seek to peer into the highest and deepest reaches of the physical universe. However, the universe is infinitely vaster than the species realizes up to the moment it uncovers the veil that has obscured the Grand Portal.

**QUESTION 7:** What is the science of multidimensional reality?

**ANSWER 7:** The science of multidimensional reality is the byproduct of the discovery of the Grand Portal, and it

is this emerging science that will accelerate a species' re-connection with its off-planetary purpose. As an individual soul departs from the soul carrier upon its death, so does a species depart from its planetary incubator as it begins to step through the Grand Portal and apply its holographic truth in the institutions of its society.

**QUESTION 8:** What is the purpose of the human species as a whole?

**ANSWER 8:** The Grand Portal is the extraordinary event that humanity is designed to achieve as a collective species while occupying its home planet. If you distill the purpose of a humanoid species to its basic goal, it is to transform or activate its soul carrier in order to access the soul consciousness of the individual, collective, and First Origin sources.

Humanity is like a vast river of consciousness that flows according to its collective will. This collective will is conditioned by First Source, the sovereign will of the individuated consciousness, and the master template of the soul carrier itself. Collectively these three elements converge and create the banks of the “river,” the topography of its journey, and the destination to which it flows.

Because the God-Fragment or soul is the highest vibratory frequency within the individuated consciousness, it compels the individuated consciousness to seek its creator. All members of the species have this intrinsic desire to reunite with their creator and the greater body of the created. It is only the soul carrier—the insoluble

element of individuality—whose pretense of existentialism stands in silent opposition to the reunion of souls.

Because the soul carrier is largely guided by the emotions and mind, it is less sensitive to the urge of reunion. The social training of humanity exacted by its educational system and competing culture and media intensifies this insensitivity. The species, as a whole, is therefore listening to the urges of the soul carrier and its social conditioning above the instinctual call of the soul. The purpose of humanity is to shift this focus, and this shift is best achieved through the Grand Portal because it provides the necessary proof that galvanizes an entire species, instead of devoted factions thereof.

**QUESTION 9:** Can you explain the concept of evil? Is it real?

**ANSWER 9:** The primary concern in the universe is not evil, but ignorance. When members of a species are in ignorance of their identity as an individuated consciousness, they are more easily manipulated and seduced by the temporal illusions of MEST (matter, energy, space, time). The MEST universe is the most external view of the multiverse, and those who identify with it as their true home are living in ignorance.

It is from this lack of knowledge that the concept of evil has propagated into an array of characters, energies, and motives. Evil, at its most distilled level, is merely partial awareness, and from this partial awareness, the soul carrier of any species is capable of behaviors that can be termed evil. Evil, as it pertains to a personality like First Source, does not exist. It is not a codified energy system or

intelligence. It is a behavioral expression of ignorance and nothing more.

In this context, Lyricus is concerned with evil, but does not fear its power or impact because evil is not coordinated and coherent, unlike those who are aligned with First Source. Moreover, evil is in conflict with itself more than it is in conflict with First Source and its aligned expressions. In most instances, Lyricus looks upon the evil expressions of a species or one of its members with compassion, heightening our resolve to assist a species to the Grand Portal.

In Lyricus terminology, evil is resistance to the path of awareness—namely the Grand Portal. Resistance to the Grand Portal’s discovery and propagation is the primary outgrowth of uninformed entities that desire to retain the deceptions of their personal power, fearing that the enlightenment of the species will displace them. Evil lacks a root system that is fed from the depths of the individuated consciousness, and it is therefore easily eradicated once the individuated consciousness becomes the identity of the human species.

\*\*\*

**QUESTION 1:** At what point in time do teachers from Lyricus decide what information to share with a species?

**ANSWER 1:** Every sentient being emits or broadcasts a signature electromagnetic vibration. This vibration is collectively woven into a species. It is this vibration that is “read” by Lyricus from the master template field that interacts with the species’ collective frequency. From this collective signature it is understood what the progress of



the species is and when it is appropriate for the Lyricus teachers to embed within the species and what specific information is appropriate at any one point in space-time.

There are teachers who incarnate into each of the four quarters of power (government, religion, culture, and science) within the species, and generally this process is initiated within the culture quarter first because it is generally the most accommodating. The Lyricus teacher involved in leading this effort is responsible for activating and bringing coherence to the other teachers who will emerge to lead the effort in the other quarters of power.

Within the galaxy is a Tributary Zone, which is a synthetic “planet” that is designed to house the knowledge system appropriate for the species of that particular galaxy. Lyricus uses these Tributary Zones as research and training centers wherein its teachers can gather the information, translate it into the indigenous cultural or scientific formats of the species, and then export it to a specific planetary species.

This process can require ten thousands years, sometimes more, in order to shepherd the species from the relatively primitive systems of governance, culture, science, and religion, and orchestrate these quarters of power to achieve the profound shift to the Grand Portal. Lyricus teachers operate in the same soul carrier as the species they serve, and for this reason must reincarnate hundreds of times over the course of this timeline in order to attain the Grand Portal.

**QUESTION 2:** What happens if a species doesn't discover the Grand Portal?

**ANSWER 2:** It is not a question of whether a species discovers the Grand Portal so much as it is a question of when. There are times when a species enters the cusp of the discovery zone and falls back from resistance. However, the resistance is generational and is always diffused over time. The impulse of this discovery is too powerful to ignore as it is faithfully embedded within the species' energetic grid and then persistently kindled by Lyricus and the cosmic forces of First Source. When the resistance to the Grand Portal discovery and/or propagation is temporarily successful, it only delays the eventual result—it never permanently obstructs it.

**QUESTION 3:** Are the teachers of Lyricus known to humanity by any other name?

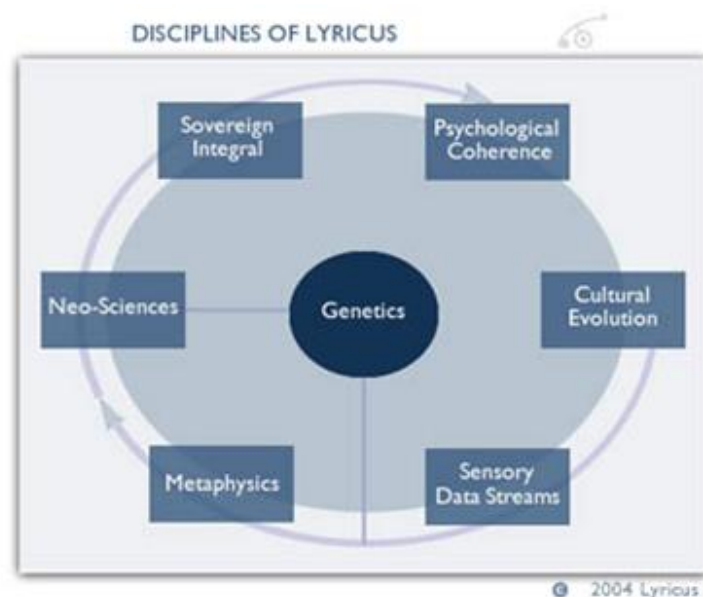
**ANSWER 3:** Historically speaking, members of Lyricus have been known as the Elohim or Shining Ones. These beings established seven centers of learning upon Earth. These were instructional environments that accelerated the connection of the soul carrier to the Wholeness Navigator, and enabled human initiates to ascend in consciousness such that it was possible to create several of the perennial philosophical systems that to some extent endure to this day.

In more recent history, members of Lyricus are known only by their influence, but not their personal reputations. There are no individual members whose personal contributions are acknowledged by historical records. This

is because the members of Lyricus do not view the knowledge they bring as knowledge that they own, discovered, or have invented. They view knowledge as something equivalent to air—everyone can breathe it, no one owns it. For this reason, they share their knowledge in a manner that permits it to move into the quarters of power, but also enables them to retain their personal anonymity.

**QUESTION 4:** What does Lyricus teach?

**ANSWER 4:** Lyricus is aligned with the Central Race, or WingMakers, and the great majority of its members are from the Central Race. Within Lyricus, expertise is centered on seven disciplines: the fields of genetics, neo-sciences, metaphysics, sensory data streams, psycho-coherence, cultural evolution, and the Sovereign Integral. Lyricus is not focused exclusively on philosophical or spiritual teachings because its central purpose is the irrefutable scientific discovery of the humanoid soul upon three-dimensional, life-bearing planets.



**QUESTION 5:** How many members of Lyricus are currently in the flesh on earth?

**ANSWER 5:** Today, there are a dozen or so members of Lyricus embodied within the species, and these individuals appear completely human, except for the fact that they operate from a frequency within their individuated consciousness that permits them to access both the genetic mind of the human species as well as that of the Central Race.

**QUESTION 6:** Why do Lyricus members incarnate as a member of the species instead of visiting the species in their native soul carriers?

**ANSWER 6:** The native soul carrier of the Central Race is not suited for the vibratory density of earth. And even if it were, the message of the Lyricus teachers would be intermixed with the phenomenon of looking different than the species, making it less likely that their message would be received as it was intended. Lyricus has always incarnated among the species as a means to integrate, understand, and subtly bring its teachings and insights to the species. It is the most effective and efficient approach to assist and guide a species to the Grand Portal.

**QUESTION 7:** If Lyricus focuses on the species, and not the individual, what is it really teaching that is useful to the individual?

**ANSWER 7:** Lyricus is more an exporter of scientific inquiry than it is of spiritual, religious, or philosophical

belief systems. Thus, its embedded teachers are not trying to displace the spiritual beliefs of the species with something of a higher spirituality, but rather they offer the scientific systems of inquiry that lead to the discovery of the Grand Portal. They transfer this knowledge through extremely subtle methods, which include personal meetings with members of the scientific community, dream interactions, and helping the species in general to develop its practical understanding of the interconnected, intelligent universe, and its role within it.

As it pertains to the individual, Lyricus provides encoded sensory data streams that are very potent catalysts to shift the energetic or sub-quantum body so that it can fuse more intricately with the soul carrier and, in a sense, lend its character and understanding to the soul carrier. No individual needs to learn more about the spiritual worlds that is not already contained within their own individuated consciousness. The challenge individuals have is how to access this innermost wisdom and apply it intelligently in their lives in such a way that it brings them closer to their personal missions and purpose for incarnating within the species.

Lyricus is focused on assembling and coordinating select individuals who are involved in the discovery, applications, and propagation of the Grand Portal. This applies as importantly to those involved in the very early discoveries like gravity and harmonic frequency, as it does to the more contemporary fields of quantum biology or cosmology. Collectively, these individuals enable the shift of the human species through the ever-evolving science of

multidimensional reality. Lyricus achieves this assemblage and coordination through the following methods:

- Meeting with select individuals and catalyzing their inquiries into the ongoing evolutionary pathways of science, culture, government, and religion that will enable the species to migrate in the direction of the Grand Portal discovery.
- Activation of the higher centers of consciousness by exposure to the encoded data sensory streams of Lyricus and WingMakers.
- Providing access to the Lyricus knowledge system in the dream state.
- Providing an external interface within the species through the global communications network.
- Protecting and defending the knowledge system as it becomes increasingly powerful in its ability to reveal the illusory nature of the MEST universe (Matter, Energy, Space and Time).

It is not only those who make the discovery that are important to this process; it is the larger web of influences and connections of everyday people who make this watershed discovery of the Grand Portal a reality for the species. And those who are involved in its discovery—regardless of the import of their contribution—are those who are most intimately engaged and aligned with the broader and most vital objectives of the species and planet.

**QUESTION 8:** Is there a specific philosophical system that underlies Lyricus' teachings?

**ANSWER 8:** The philosophical system of Lyricus is that the science of multidimensional reality is the nucleus knowledge system of the species from which all other systems emerge and have their meaning—to the degree their linkages are preserved. The problem with contemporary philosophical systems is that they fall prey to language conventions that do not rely on science, but rather the subjective opinion of individuals, and the linkages to the multidimensional reality are obscured by the accumulations of the genetic mind.

The members of Lyricus do not consider that they are teachers of a philosophical system so much as they are catalysts of a species' knowledge system with the specific intention of guiding the evolution of that knowledge system to an ultimate conclusion: the irrefutable scientific discovery of the distinctions inherent in the individuated consciousness, and how this individuated consciousness operates in the multidimensional reality of First Source.

In the knowledge of this reality, there is no need for a philosophical system or spiritual belief system or religious structure because the individual recognizes that they are complete unto themselves with respect to the vital knowledge. No laws or rules are required in this realization because the knowledge itself entrains the soul carrier to its holographic truth, which is based on the most profound levels of love and understanding. As this is the foundation of persistent reality, those who live in this frequency neither require nor seek a philosophical system.

That which is offered by Lyricus through its outermost educational programs may seem like a philosophical system, or at least resonant with existing belief systems, but it is actually designed as a catalyst and activator of the higher elements of consciousness. This is done through the encoding of the words, music, art, symbols, and the intricate manner in which they interact.

**QUESTION 9:** How do the teachers of Lyricus who are incarnated among humanity operate?

**ANSWER 9:** As mentioned before, there are about twelve embedded members from Lyricus that are currently operating among humanity. Most of their time is spent working with individuals in the scientific, cultural, and religious communities. Each of the quarters of power are served by a team of three to six members who are incarnated, as well as a more extensive team who are not incarnated, but assist the embedded members from the Tributary Zones.

Generally, as the species approaches the cusp of the Grand Portal discovery, the leader of the cultural quarter of power establishes the initial external facet of the knowledge system on the global communications network. This is done in the context of mythology or experimental project, and it demonstrates that the knowledge system being imported is resonant with the contemporary belief systems, but is not confined to words.

Each galactic Tributary Zone is different in terms of the knowledge system that it houses. The leader of the cultural quarter of power—in this case, James—reviews the



content contained within the Tributary Zone and aligns it with his knowledge of the species' belief systems and historical context, and then translates the content into human terms. This is done as a means of establishing the first external “footprint” of Lyricus on the planet.

The primary purpose of this initial facet of the knowledge system is to bring encoded sensory data streams to the species that can help individuals shift their consciousness from an individual, planetary-based set of objectives, to a more cosmologically-based set of objectives for the species as a whole—namely the discovery of the Grand Portal. This is generally done without too much definition given to Lyricus.

The second facet of the knowledge system emerges as Lyricus members begin meeting physically with influential members of the quarters of power for the purpose of propagating the knowledge system of the Tributary Zone to the species at large. This is conducted through person-to-person meetings to ensure that the knowledge is transferred without identification to Lyricus, and that it is targeting individuals who are prepared to receive it.

The third facet of the knowledge system is to introduce Lyricus more definitively to the species so that those interested and involved in the Grand Portal process can more fully understand its purpose and motivation. The Lyricus.org website is the primary outgrowth of this objective.

The knowledge system is brought to the species gradually and in a manner that the species assimilates it as its own. Complementary to the external unfolding of

Lyricus is the unfolding of the inward process to implant certain aspects of the Lyricus knowledge system within the Genetic Mind of the species, thus making it accessible to all humanity. This process is conducted through the combined efforts and technologies of the Lyricus team residing within the Tributary Zone.

What is being done on the planet and off the planet (the inner and outer work) is coordinated by the Lyricus leader of the religious quarter. This is the individual who is last to incarnate within the human species and is the one that will step forward in the final days just prior to, or directly after, the discovery of the Grand Portal. This is the individual who will unify the disparate beliefs of the species and anchor them on the science of multidimensional reality and the all-encompassing brotherhood of the individuated consciousness.

**QUESTION 10:** Is there a text or “Bible” of Lyricus, and if so, when would this be made available?

**ANSWER 10:** No, there is not a single text that codifies the knowledge system that is exported from Lyricus to a species. It is a natural outgrowth of religious dependence that individuals have come to accept that the volume or quantity of words denotes a comprehensive, and therefore, legitimate belief system. However, a single word, phrase, sound, image, or combination thereof can trigger profound shifts in the consciousness of the individual.

The knowledge system of transformation is encoded within the master template of the species. It is simply a question of preparation and activation. The preparation

consists of multi-generational development of the individuated consciousness, while the activation can occur in a single word, image, or sound.

The desire to have knowledge distilled in a format suitable for the mind is an artifact of the human mind to not only acquire knowledge, but to transmit it, hence the desire to compile knowledge into text. The problem with this approach is that the activation is exclusively aimed at the mind and not the other elements of the individuated consciousness. A consequence of this approach is that a desire of the mind to learn is satisfied, but the other areas of the individuated consciousness atrophy from lack of nurturing.

Lyricus is focused on the entire entity of the individuated consciousness and for this reason it imparts its knowledge system through means that are not exclusive to words.

**QUESTION 11:** Is there any value in the Lyricus works for those individuals who are not scientists or spiritual leaders, and are not living at the time when the Grand Portal is discovered?

**ANSWER 11:** Anyone who is drawn to the Lyricus or WingMakers' materials resonates with some element of the work. This in itself represents their state of preparation. Those individuals who are early in the recognition of this resonance may not be living in the same body when the Grand Portal is discovered, but through the system of reincarnation they can revisit the work in a greater capacity at a later time.

Event Strings are remarkably complex systems of interrelationships between matter (things), energy (individuals), space (places), time (events) and coherence (goal synergy). Individuals involved in the Lyricus materials—no matter how seemingly insignificant—are affecting the flow of the master event string that makes possible the discovery of the Grand Portal.

The efforts of one “ripple” can touch the “shoreline” of a distant space-time. These are the mysterious ways of the individuated consciousness whose energetics are far ranging and can reach into the future in ways that may be unaccountable, but nonetheless powerful and catalytic.

Regarding the value to the individual, if anyone is involved in the study of these materials for their own sake and not the sake of the greater humanity, they are missing the point of these teachings and their import. The study of the spiritual domain is the study of selflessness and the expression of soul in the soul carrier for the benefit of all. If there is any other motivation, it will obscure the preparatory phase of the individual and diminish their ability to contribute to the deeper energetics of the master event string.

**QUESTION 12:** Why is the discovery of the Grand Portal being “telegraphed” through this website if there are forces who would try to prevent it?

**ANSWER 12:** The benefits of attracting the early adopters to the purpose of the Grand Portal far outweigh the potential drawbacks of “telegraphing” the strategy of Lyricus to those intent on hindering its plans. It is a time-

proven strategy that Lyricus applies consistently to every species, and it has demonstrated overwhelming success. The quarters of power do not typically impose their resistance until just before the momentum of the discovery appears imminent. It is then that the website of Lyricus.org will come under the full attack by those who see it as more than the issuance of a new mythology.

If and when this time comes, Lyricus will be well prepared to absorb the resistance and operate in ways that will overcome it—in whatever form it may occur. Delays may arise, but they will only be delays and not permanent obstructions.

It is vital to alert the communities that deal with consciousness, metaphysics, quantum physics, and genetics that the goal is not to clone the soul carrier; establish the theory of everything; liberate the soul from the cycles of reincarnation; or achieve cosmic consciousness for the individual. It is to bring the human soul under the lens of science and show humanity that the soul carrier is only a fractional representation of the species, and what exists in the shadows of the soul carrier is precisely what is required to shift the species into its next phase of evolution.

This goal must be established in the resonant communities in order for the new leadership within the communities to begin to shift their resources and energies to this new goal. At present there is—in some quarters—an accepted judgment that the earth will miraculously shift into the fourth dimension, or that it will transform into a star. Many believe or hope that there is a race of extraterrestrials that will intercede on humanity's behalf

and bring it enlightenment. Some believe that the spirited ancestors of humanity will rise up again and bring heaven to earth.

There is general disagreement in every quarter about the scope, purpose, and sequence of this transformation, and it makes it improbable that the proper resources, personnel, knowledge system, and expertise can be aligned. Unless Lyricus risks early exposure of its mission, it would be unlikely that alignment and coherence could be exacted in service to the Grand Portal. The mission of Lyricus is not an event of transformation brought from a Holy or Divine source. It is the unfolding process of humanity discovering its fundamental identity and its relationship with the multidimensional universe. This is a huge undertaking and requires an amazingly well orchestrated plan and the committed undertaking of humans who operate on behalf of their species—not commercial gain or self-aggrandizement.

**QUESTION 13:** Why is it so important that humanity makes the discovery of the Grand Portal itself? Couldn't Lyricus simply provide the discovery to humanity?

**ANSWER 13:** The definition of humanity is ambiguous at best. Humanity is not defined by the activities and achievements of the human soul carrier over countless generations. It is also the composite of the genetic mind and the human soul. A soul consciousness is not exclusively bound to a planet or species. It is an individuated consciousness within a freewill multiverse

that is evolving at approximately the same rate as the species to which it identifies.

In many ways, the Central Race is an aspect of humanity and vice versa. Humanity is connected to a much broader spectrum of beings in a near-infinite variety of places and times. Because of this reality, Lyricus incarnates within the human species and provides the fundamental knowledge system and goals to which the species is directed.

Lyricus could send representatives to humanity in its customary soul carrier form and it would not be recognized. It would require that its soul carrier slow its vibratory rate in order to reflect the light frequencies of earth and make itself visible. If this were done, the phenomenon of its presence would overshadow the knowledge system and one hundred different interpretations would emerge on the validity of the Grand Portal and the ones who brought it into existence.

The discovery must be an integral process—woven into the fabric of humanity—in order for its value to be preserved in the face of the resistance that will surely follow it.

**QUESTION 14:** It seems impossible that the ills of humanity will be solved by the mere scientific discovery of its soul. Even more questionable is whether most people would be interested. Why does Lyricus hold this discovery as being so critical?

**ANSWER 14:** The discovery of the Grand Portal is a comprehensive breakthrough that spawns the science of multidimensional reality. This new science is an all-encompassing system that is capable of restoring health and balance to the physical, emotional, and mental dysfunctions of the soul carrier, which account for the dysfunctions of society at large.

The human-animal instinct of survival through power and domination co-mingle with four misguided fear-beliefs inhabiting the genetic mind of the species, which collectively give rise to human and social dysfunction. They are cited below:

- Humanity is the apex intelligence of the planet, and in all probability the universe.
- Humanity is alone in the universe, and God, if one exists, is distant and uncaring.
- As a species, humanity must struggle selfishly in order to achieve supremacy in the universe.
- Dominion over nature and its resources is the innate result of human ascendancy over all other life forms.

Each of these fear-beliefs transform in the presence of the Grand Portal as much as the rising sun displaces the cold darkness. For the first time the individuated consciousness is dissected and shown to be part of a multidimensional system of life forms previously unidentified. More importantly, the intrinsic desire to be immortal has been granted by the very fact that the “fingerprint” of First Source is identified upon the “glass” of the soul carrier.



If anyone believes that human citizens living in the last quarter of the twenty-first century will be indifferent to this evidence, they are grossly mistaken, not less than someone who would argue that people are indifferent about having air to breathe. The Grand Portal is the most vibrant of all discoveries because it is the thread that unifies the species, as well as the solution to the dysfunctions that have plagued humanity for generation upon generation.

Lyricus holds this discovery as vital to the species because without the human-guided discovery of the Grand Portal, the species consistently elects to have machine intelligence guide its ongoing scientific evolution. While this may enable a more rapidly evolving technology infrastructure for humanity, it also drives science into a conundrum of competing purposes that widen the gap between machines and humanity.

When machine intelligence finally arrives at the Grand Portal, its findings are misunderstood and therefore undervalued by the species. The discovery is hollow at best and unutilized at worst. Thus, Lyricus holds the Grand Portal's discovery by humanity as the defining moment of the species.

**QUESTION 15:** The concepts of morality seem to be sparingly used in the literature of Lyricus. Is science more important—in the teachings of Lyricus—than the behaviors of love, compassion, morality, and goodness?

**ANSWER 15:** Morality and the behaviors of goodness are not overlooked in importance, nor are they considered

less desirable than the certainties of science as they are applied to the discovery of the Grand Portal. Moral goodness is simply not the focal point of Lyricus because philosophical standards, meditation, spiritual purity, prayer, fasting, or penetrating moral judgment can only temporarily coerce desirable behaviors.

The contemporary literature of humanity – as it relates to spiritual matters—is well stocked with the formulas of love and compassion. Morality and the fear of fear run through the texts like tempest winds that sweep across a calm lake. The emotional realm is a point of fixation of the religious and spiritual texts and teachings of humanity.

The primary frequency of the emotional realm is judgment, just as the primary frequency of the mental realm is logic. Neither of these is inclusive or whole. Lyricus is focused on the individuated consciousness and its discovery by the species, knowing that in this discovery the thread of wholeness and inclusiveness will be found.

Conscious experience of the individuated consciousness is the antecedent or precursor for sustainable moral goodness, as it is expressed through the soul carrier. Thus, Lyricus places its focus here, and desires that this ability be a potential for all members of the species, not only the fortunate few that have a proclivity for spiritual contemplation and time to pursue it.

The end.

# LYRICUS DISCOURSES

## EXPERIENCING THE WHOLENESS NAVIGATOR

**Student:** What prevents me from experiencing my innermost self?

**Teacher:** Nothing.

**Student:** Then why don't I experience it?

**Teacher:** Fear.

**Student:** So, then fear prevents me?

**Teacher:** Nothing prevents you.

**Student:** But didn't you just say that fear is the reason I can't experience this state of consciousness?

**Teacher:** Yes, but it does not prevent you.

**Student:** Then what does?

**Teacher:** Nothing.

**Student:** Then what role does fear play?

**Teacher:** If you are in prison, what do you fear most when you dream of being liberated?

**Student:** Returning to prison... So, you're saying that I fear experiencing my inmost self because I will return to my ignorance.

**Teacher:** No. I am saying that your fear of ignorance holds you in ignorance.

**Student:** I'm confused. I thought you were saying that I feared the experience of my highest self, but now it sounds like you're saying that I fear my human self. Which is it?

**Teacher:** You fear the return to your human self after experiencing the God-fragment within you.

**Student:** Why?

**Teacher:** If you are thirsting in the desert, what is it that you desire above all else?

**Student:** Water?

**Teacher:** So if I gave you a glass of water, you'd be satisfied?

**Student:** Yes.

**Teacher:** For how long?

**Student:** Okay. I see your point. What I would desire above all else is to be near water so I could drink whenever I wanted, or better yet, I would want to leave the desert entirely.

**Teacher:** And if you loved the desert, wouldn't you fear to leave it?

**Student:** You're saying that I fear the experience of my inmost self because I would want to leave this world behind, but how can I fear this when I have no experience of it whatsoever?

**Teacher:** This is not the fear that floods your body when someone is about to kill you. It is the fear of a shadow so mysterious, ancient, and primordial that you know immediately that it transcends this life and this world, and its knowing will change you irrevocably.

**Student:** So it's really this change that I fear?

**Teacher:** It's the irrevocability of the change that you fear.

**Student:** But how do you know? How do you know I fear this so much that I cannot experience my inmost self?

**Teacher:** In order to keep the human instrument in stable interaction with its world, the designers of the human instrument created certain sensory constraints. Because these were not absolutely effective, there was also designed into the Genetic Mind of the human species an instinctual fear of being displaced from its dominant reality. For these two reasons, I know.

**Student:** But this isn't fair. You're saying my capacity to experience my inmost self has been diminished by the very beings that designed it. Why? Why should I be continually frustrated to know I have a God-fragment inside me, but not be allowed to interact with it?

**Teacher:** Do you love this world?

**Student:** Yes.

**Teacher:** You are here as a human instrument to interact with this world and attune to its dominant reality, and bring your understanding of your inmost self to this

world even if this understanding is not pure, strong, or clear.

**Student:** But if I had this experience of my inmost self, couldn't I bring more of this understanding into this world?

**Teacher:** This is the fallacy that frustrates you. Do you think the experience of this sublime energy and intelligence can be reduced to human translation?

**Student:** Yes.

**Teacher:** Then how?

**Student:** I can teach others how it feels to be in rapport with their souls. I can bring more light to this world and inspire others to seek this out within themselves. Isn't this what you do?

**Teacher:** Have I taught you how to achieve this state?

**Student:** No. But you have inspired me.

**Teacher:** Are you sure? Haven't I just told you that you can't experience this state in the human instrument? Is that inspiration by your definition?

**Student:** I didn't mean in this specific case, but you inspire me to think deeper into the issues or problems that confront me.

**Teacher:** If you want to bring more light into this world, why will interaction with your inmost self enable you to do so?

**Student:** That's just it. I don't know if it will. It just seems logical that it would. Don't all good teachers have this insight? Don't you?

**Teacher:** It's true that there are teachers who can switch their dominant realities, and have learned to integrate this in their life without losing balance or effectiveness in this world, but they are extremely rare.

**Student:** I know this. But this is what I aspire to learn. It is learned isn't it? Can't you teach me?

**Teacher:** No, it is not learned. It is not teachable. It is not acquired through instruction, esoteric technique, or revelatory process.

**Student:** Then how do those teachers who have this ability acquire it?

**Teacher:** No one acquires this ability. That's my point. No teacher within a human instrument on earth at this time, or any previous, has the ability to live as a human and simultaneously live as a God-fragment. Nor does any teacher juggle between these realities with certainty and control.

**Student:** I'm surprised to hear this. Why is this so?

**Teacher:** For the same reasons I told you earlier. Do you not think this applies to all humans?

**Student:** Even Jesus?

**Teacher:** Even Jesus.

**Student:** Then why do I have this desire? Who put this notion into my head that I should be able to experience this inmost self or God-fragment?

**Teacher:** If one experiences the wind, do they not understand something of a hurricane?

**Student:** I suppose.

**Teacher:** And if they experience the rain, don't they understand even more about hurricanes?

**Student:** Yes.

**Teacher:** If you never experienced a hurricane, but you experienced wind and rain, might you be able to imagine a hurricane better than if you never experienced wind and rain?

**Student:** I should think so.

**Teacher:** Such is the case of the God-fragment within the human instrument. You can experience unconditional love, supernal beauty, harmony, reverence, and wholeness, and in so doing, you can imagine the features and capabilities of the God-fragment within you. Some teachers have simply touched more of the edges of the God-fragment than others, but I assure you, none have entered into its depths while living in the human instrument.

**Student:** But don't some teachers travel outside their body?

**Teacher:** Yes, but they are still living in a human instrument whilst they travel. Everything I said still applies.



**Student:** So what do I do? Give up the desire to have this experience?

**Teacher:** There is a fish that can leave its underwater world upon the equivalent of wings. While it is only for a short time, it experiences the realm of the air-breathers. Do you think this flying fish ever desires to touch a cloud, climb a tree, or venture into a forest?

**Student:** I don't know... I doubt it.

**Teacher:** Then why does it fly above the water?

**Student:** I suppose it's an instinct, something of an evolutionary imperative—

**Teacher:** Exactly.

**Student:** So you're saying this is true of humans as well. We strive to experience our God-fragment out of an evolutionary imperative or compulsion?

**Teacher:** Yes, and like the flying fish, when we break from our world it is only for a short time and we fall beneath the surface once again. But while we are above the surface of our world, we momentarily forget we are just a human with a beginning and an end. Yet, when we do this, we do not imagine that we can touch the face of God within ourselves.

**Student:** But I do. I feel that I can, and even should, touch this God-fragment.

**Teacher:** You think this way because you have the hopeful exuberance and naïveté of a person unacquainted with the experience of First Source.

**Student:** So you don't feel this way?

**Teacher:** Anyone attuned to the highest vibrations of their innermost self will feel this and be guided by it. The only difference is that I am content in knowing that I will not experience it while I am embodied in a human instrument.

**Student:** And what does this contentment provide you that I don't have?

**Teacher:** The ability to channel my energy into this world rather than to apply it in the pursuit of another.

**Student:** But I thought you said it is an evolutionary imperative? How do I control this desire or ambition?

**Teacher:** Live in this world with all your passion and strength. See the God-fragment in this world, even if it is only a diminished beacon or tired light. See it! Nurture it! Do not be so quick to look for it in the depths of your heart or mind where you believe it might be.

**Student:** It's hard not to be disheartened at the sound of these words. It is like someone telling me that the vision I had was merely a mirage, or a trick of the light.

**Teacher:** This is a world of shadows and echoes. You can chase the source of these if you desire, but you will likely do so at the loss of living in this world. You will diminish your experience of the shadows and echoes, and this is the very reason you incarnated upon this planet at this time.

**Student:** But it sounds so passive, as if I should settle for experiencing this world, and not try to change it. I feel

like I'm here with a mission to improve it, to change it for the better, and I'm missing some experience, some capability to do this. What is it I feel and why?

**Teacher:** When you experience the warmth of the sun, do you change the sun?

**Student:** No.

**Teacher:** And if you hold a piece of ice in your hands, do you change it?

**Student:** Yes. It begins to melt.

**Teacher:** So there are some things you can only experience, and there are some things you can change.

**Student:** And I should know the difference.

**Teacher:** It helps.

**Student:** I know this. It's elementary. I'm not sure it helps me feel less disheartened.

**Teacher:** You know this, I agree, but you have not necessarily practiced it. It is a principle of life to practice discretion and discernment, and while people will think this concept elementary, it is a critical difference in living life in a state of fulfillment or, as you put it, frustration.

**Student:** So I can't change the fact that the God-fragment within me is unknowable to my human mind, and I need to accept that. Is that the lesson to be learned here?

**Teacher:** No.

**Student:** Then what is?

**Teacher:** The concept of the God-fragment within you has power. It can be contemplated, but it cannot be experienced as a dominant reality in a human instrument. Through this contemplative approach you can learn discernment, and through this discernment you will learn how to navigate in the world of shadows and echoes in such a way that you bring changes that are in accord with the objectives of First Source. You externalize the will of the God-fragment, rather than seek its experience. In so doing, you eliminate the fear and frustration energies that flow through your mind.

**Student:** Thank you. Your teaching just struck the chord I have been seeking since I found this path, and I feel its resonance.

**Teacher:** In resonance you will be guided.

## CALLING FORTH THE WHOLENESS NAVIGATOR

**Student:** Is God a physical being?

**Teacher:** Are you?

**Student:** Of course.

**Teacher:** Then doesn't it stand to reason that God is as well?

**Student:** I don't know...

**Teacher:** Can a dead man govern a city?

**Student:** No.

**Teacher:** Then how does First Source govern the Grand Universe that is—at its most coarse expression—a physical manifestation?

**Student:** First Source inhabits a body like you and me?

**Teacher:** Can any person upon earth create something more magnificent than their human instrument?

**Student:** I can't think of an instance.

**Teacher:** So, within this world, the human instrument is the highest expression of materiality?

**Student:** I think so.

**Teacher:** And whatever a human creates, its creation is less magnificent than it is.

**Student:** Unless it is a child.

**Teacher:** And who is the child of First Source?

**Student:** We are.

**Teacher:** No. Humans are thousands of generations removed from First Source. Who was the original child or first creation of God?

**Student:** I don't know. Source Intelligence, or Spirit?

**Teacher:** Source Intelligence isn't a creation of God; it is the mobility and presence of God.

**Student:** Then I'm afraid I don't know.

**Teacher:** When a cloud emerges from a blue sky, there are specific conditions that create the cloud. It appears from the sky, but does not resemble the sky in color, scale, texture or scope. And yet, is it not accurate to say that the cloud was a child of the sky?

**Student:** I suppose, but what does this have to do with the physical body of God?

**Teacher:** Think of First Source as the sky, and the physical body of First Source as the cloud.

**Student:** So, the first child of God was the physical body of God?

**Teacher:** Yes.

**Student:** First Source created the conditions whereby its physical counterpart could manifest to govern the physical universe. Then which came first, the physical universe or the physical expression of God?

**Teacher:** Do you elect a president before you have a nation?

**Student:** Okay, I see your point. Is it true that we were created in the image of God?

**Teacher:** There are genetic archetypes that reside within the physical manifestation of God, and these archetypes are seven-fold.

**Student:** So there are seven manifestations of God? Are they all physical?

**Teacher:** They can be summoned physically at will, but God appears to each of his seven offspring in the form they will recognize as their father.

**Student:** Are you referring to the seven root races of earth?

**Teacher:** No. The seven races of humankind are part of the most ancient genetic line of the universe in which earth is an infinitesimal component. I'm referring to the seven genetic archetypes that reside within the Seven Tribes of Light that are known as the Central Race. They are sometimes referred to as the Elohim, Shining Ones, or WingMakers.

**Student:** And you're saying that these beings are separated into seven genetic groups?

**Teacher:** The Grand Universe consists of seven universes, and each of these converges in the central-most region of the Grand Universe. It is within this region that the seven physical manifestations of First Source live, each

an archetype of the human instrument designed for the universe of its destiny.

**Student:** Are you saying there are seven versions of God?

**Teacher:** There is only one God, but there are seven human instruments—each with different attributes and capabilities—that the one God inhabits. Our universe is associated with the Seventh Archetype, and it is this expression of First Source that interacts with, and governs, our universe.

**Student:** Are all seven universes like our own?

**Teacher:** The physical worlds are similar in all material respects, but the life forms that populate them possess different genetic capabilities, forms, and expressions, each based on the archetype of First Source.

**Student:** A human instrument from Universe One would not be similar to a human instrument from any of the other six universes?

**Teacher:** Correct.

**Student:** But isn't this true even within our own universe? Not all humanoid life forms look the same?

**Teacher:** This is not a matter of appearance. You are 98 percent identical to a chimpanzee—genetically speaking—and yet you undoubtedly consider yourself quite different in appearance.

**Student:** What you're saying is that all humanoid life forms, regardless of where they are located within our



universe, are genetically linked to the Seventh Archetype of First Source?

**Teacher:** Correct, but you can extend this to include a broad spectrum of other life forms as well. In other words, it's not just the human instrument.

**Student:** Then in the other six universes, each has its own archetype that is embodied by God, and the life forms of these universes conform to this archetype—at least from a genetic perspective, if not in appearance. Is this accurate?

**Teacher:** Yes.

**Student:** Then the obvious question is why? Why does First Source divide itself into seven genetic universes?

**Teacher:** When you approach a vast mystery, a mystery as infinite as the Grand Universe, what do you, as the creator, desire above all other things?

**Student:** Assurance that the universes will not be destroyed.

**Teacher:** Assume that you have no doubt of this—so perfect is your plan.

**Student:** Then I would probably want to inhabit what I created and explore it.

**Teacher:** And how would you do this?

**Student:** I would need to travel somehow.

**Teacher:** Assume that you are the Seventh Archetype of First Source. You are alone in your universe, and the

universe is populated only with celestial bodies. There are no sentient life forms and no method of travel.

**Student:** But isn't that what Source Intelligence is for? Doesn't First Source utilize Source Intelligence for its travel or omnipresence?

**Teacher:** Let me remind you that we are discussing a physical expression of God. The Seventh Archetype of First Source is not able to travel about the universe independent of the laws of the universe. You may think of these seven Archetypes as the Human Instruments of First Source, and attribute similar characteristics and limitations to them, as we ourselves must bear.

**Student:** So, the physical archetypes of First Source do not share the omnipresence and omniscience of their Father?

**Teacher:** They do not.

**Student:** Do they operate as a team, or are they independent?

**Teacher:** They operate in cooperation and collaboration, but they exercise their sovereign wills as it pertains to the universe under their charge.

**Student:** Were the archetypes of First Source created right after the creation of the Grand Universe?

**Teacher:** They were created in succession the same way a family is created.

**Student:** Why?

**Teacher:** There is much to learn from the creation of one that can be passed on to the next.

**Student:** I want to see if I understand this correctly. At some point in time there was a Grand Universe created by First Source, consisting of seven universes, each governed by a physical expression of First Source. The universes were devoid of life other than celestial bodies like stars and planets. Is this correct so far?

**Teacher:** Yes.

**Student:** And then the creation of life occurred. How?

**Teacher:** First Archetype of First Source created life forms, what we shall call the Central Race of First Universe. These beings were very powerful and not unlike their creator in function and form. They, in turn, created the genetic structures that became the first, pure physical soul carriers that housed the individuated spirit energies of First Source.

**Student:** And this repeated itself six more times?

**Teacher:** Each universe was populated with genetic structures that were based on the Archetype of First Source for that particular universe. Each genetic structure had unique capabilities that were suited for the exploration and colonization of their particular universe.

**Student:** So, there are seven different genetic structures of soul carriers exploring the Grand Universe. For what reason? Why does First Source design the universe this way?

**Teacher:** The Grand Universe is a vast network of life-bearing planets that enable the individuated spirit consciousness, housed within a soul carrier, or human instrument, to interact with the limitations that physical worlds—by their very structure—impose. By interacting with these limitations, the genetic structures evolve, and in this evolution, they become unified.

**Student:** Are you saying that evolution's final form is unity?

**Teacher:** Not in all species, but in the most advanced formats of physical existence, unity is the outcome of evolution.

**Student:** Why?

**Teacher:** When you create something that is in your image, what do you think is the most difficult thing to do?

**Student:** Let it go?

**Teacher:** Correct. You want your creation to explore and colonize the universe, but you also want your creation to return. Thus, you instill a fundamental instinct within your creation to desire to return to their place of origin. This is the unification instinct and it is one of the most powerful instincts designed into the soul carriers, of which the human instrument is one.

**Student:** Then human-like, soul carriers exist throughout the Grand Universe, and all of them are designed to explore the expanding universe, but also to return to the central-most region after they're done. This doesn't make a lot of sense.

**Teacher:** It is not the soul carriers that return. These are physical-based vehicles that, like all physical matter, decay and transform. Only the Wholeness Navigator within the soul carrier neither decays nor transforms. It remains everlasting, and within this specific element of humanity it is designed to return to its origins.

**Student:** Where does one draw the line between First Source and other life forms?

**Teacher:** How do you mean this?

**Student:** Are the Archetypes of First Source separate from First Source? In other words, do they have their own identity, or do they think of themselves as First Source? In the same way, what about the Central Race?

**Teacher:** There are five rings of life that comprise First Source. At the center is the consciousness of First Source. At the whole is Source Intelligence. In between are three rings of life: the seven Archetypes of First Source, the Central Race, and the individuated spirit-essence, or Wholeness Navigator.

**Student:** And each of these rings of life draws their identity from First Source?

**Teacher:** Yes.

**Student:** What you're really saying is that all of these life forms are threaded together as one consciousness?

**Teacher:** No more than a family is one consciousness.

**Student:** They are separate?

**Teacher:** They are both separate and unified.

**Student:** How?

**Teacher:** The five rings of life are distinct forms of consciousness. In the formless state, each ring of life is aware of its unity, purpose, and inherent kinship with the others. In the physical realms, where consciousness is expressed through a dimensionally focused soul-carrier, they have a diminished awareness of this connection. Thus, they are both separate and unified, depending upon which stratum (layer) of consciousness the entity is focused.

**Student:** Then you're saying that even the Archetypes of First Source, since they have a physical body, operate in the three-dimensional world without a strong sense of connection to First Source? It hardly seems possible.

**Teacher:** No one within the Central Race pretends to know the degree in which the Archetypes of First Source have a diminished capacity to recall their Source vibration. However, those within the Central Race are well aware of how the soul carriers of three-dimensional substance create the condition of separation. This is a condition in which divine recall is reduced to such a degree that the entity regards itself as separate from First Source, and therefore its capabilities.

**Student:** Separate from the capabilities of First Source?

**Teacher:** If you believe you are an ant, how do you behave differently than an eagle?

**Student:** But an ant is not an eagle.

**Teacher:** But the Wholeness Navigator is First Source. If the ant were an eagle, in every respect except form, but

associated its capabilities with that of an ant, the eagle would slowly lose its ability to fly, it's entire physical body, mind, and emotional make-up would change. Its soul carrier would literally devolve.

**Student:** Our bodies cause our souls to devolve?

**Teacher:** No. Our sense of separation from our Source vibration causes our human instrument to remain devolved. The devolution has already occurred; it is merely perpetuated.

**Student:** Then the goal is to awaken this Source vibration and begin to re-associate with its divinity—this is what causes the human instrument to evolve in the direction of the Wholeness Navigator?

**Teacher:** If you are going to start a fire, what do you need?

**Student:** Dry wood, kindling, and a lot of work generating sufficient heat to combust the kindling.

**Teacher:** And what is the most critical of these?

**Student:** I suppose the kindling.

**Teacher:** Can you start a fire without any of the elements?

**Student:** No.

**Teacher:** Are you sure?

**Student:** Well, I could start a fire with the kindling, but without the dry wood, it won't last very long.

**Teacher:** Aren't they all critical then?

**Student:** Yes.

**Teacher:** And if I had all the critical components to start a fire, but I had no experience, would I be able to produce fire?

**Student:** Probably not.

**Teacher:** I might not even know, if someone were to give me all of these items, that their purpose was to create a fire. Correct?

**Student:** Correct.

**Teacher:** So we can add experiential knowledge as a critical component.

**Student:** Yes.

**Teacher:** And what if I didn't see the need for a fire?

**Student:** Okay, so you also need a reason or desire.

**Teacher:** Yes. Desire and purpose are critical.

**Student:** Okay, I agree we can add that to our expanding list.

**Teacher:** And if we were outside and it was raining and our kindling became wet—

**Student:** I understand, conditions must be right.

**Teacher:** So conditions are important also?

**Student:** Yes, but where are you going with this? I don't understand how this applies to my question about what causes the Wholeness Navigator to evolve?



**Teacher:** You simplified your question to the extreme. The equations of evolution are so complex that they are invisible to the mind of the human instrument. It is not merely the re-association with the Source vibration or God-Fragment that draws the Wholeness Navigator to it divinity and re-asserts its capabilities as a replica of First Source. This equation carries thousands upon thousands of critical elements bundled in a coherent, carefully orchestrated path. I wanted you to remember this.

**Student:** But isn't it necessary to simplify in order to approach the subject? How can anyone give all of these factors equal weight and still have an intelligent discussion?

**Teacher:** That's my point. You cannot.

**Student:** So we can't even discuss it?

**Teacher:** No, not with any degree of accuracy. Evolutionary circuits are dependent on complex systems, and these systems are so vast and multifaceted that words—when applied to depict them—only serve to bring focus on one element and this element is never—in itself—powerful enough to catalyze or mobilize the evolutionary path.

**Student:** So what does?

**Teacher:** If you had a magical friend that was infallible in her judgment; perfect in her decisions because she saw clear to the destination of First Source and therefore knew how to travel the landscape to achieve her reunion with God. What would you do with this friend?

**Student:** I'd listen to them. I'd ask them for directions and guidance. I'd follow as closely behind them as I could.

**Teacher:** Even if they led you to a cliff and jumped off.

**Student:** Well, if I really believed they had this infallible judgment as you put it, yes, even if they jumped off a cliff. Somehow I'd trust that I would be okay if I followed them over.

**Teacher:** What if they didn't know you were following and they had capabilities that you did not? In this example, they could fly, but you could not.

**Student:** I guess I would have made a terrible mistake in following them, and I'd die as a result.

**Teacher:** So your friend's judgment, even though it was infallible for herself, led to your own destruction.

**Student:** Yes.

**Teacher:** So who then do you offer your trust to?

**Student:** Myself.

**Teacher:** And why?

**Student:** Because I know my own limitations.

**Teacher:** So what do you think is the mobilizing factor for one's evolutionary path to Wholeness and unity?

**Student:** You mean if I could sum it up in a single concept—despite the fact you showed me earlier that it couldn't be done?

**Teacher:** You're learning very well.

**Student:** It would be to trust myself.

**Teacher:** What part of your self?

**Student:** The soul.

**Teacher:** And not the carrier?

**Student:** Okay, I would need to trust the whole of me.

**Teacher:** Trust the parts and the whole. Trust the connection of these to First Source. Trust the God-Fragment that orchestrates all of this complexity into coherent experience and knowledge that assures the recollection of your divinity. Trust the evolutionary process defined by First Source. Trust each of these above the external voices that meet you, no matter how infallible they may appear to be. Trust your self-knowing and its ability to guide you in the ascending spiral of your journey.

**Student:** Even though I am but a student?

**Teacher:** Are we not all students?

**Student:** But there are those who know more than me. I don't feel like I know that much to trust myself. How can I overcome this self-doubt?

**Teacher:** It is not something to overcome. If it were, would you then require trust?

**Student:** I suppose not.

**Teacher:** When you grapple with the finer distinctions of a concept, you invariably come to a wall that defines the limits of your memory or experience. When you find this

wall, there is nothing wrong with seeking help from others, but remember that you are the entity that is most aware of your own needs. The wall that you find may be precisely what you need at that time.

**Student:** Then it seems that I need to become more aware of my self-interests and needs.

**Teacher:** The needs that you have that fuel your evolution as a Sovereign Integral. If you are hungry, your stomach will remind you. If you are tired, you will yawn and your eyelids will become unbearably heavy. What is the equivalent for your evolution as a Sovereign Integral?

**Student:** It's an interesting question. I don't know.

**Teacher:** What causes you to search for your higher self?

**Student:** I guess unanswered questions. Not knowing who I am, where I am going or why I am here.

**Teacher:** Really? Unanswered questions awaken you to your highest self-interests?

**Student:** I can tell by your question that I answered wrong. What is it then?

**Teacher:** It is inspiration! Inspiration from the spiritual masters who came before you. Inspiration from Nature. Inspiration from art. But most importantly, it is the inspiration that enters from the realm of the Wholeness Navigator within you, into your human instrument and then tirelessly kindles your desire to recollect the reality of the God-Fragment stored inside you.

**Student:** How do I recognize this inspiration?

**Teacher:** It is not important to recognize it. It only matters that you feel it and welcome its presence because this is how you develop self-trust and self-knowing.

**Student:** Are there techniques to accomplish this?

**Teacher:** Of course.

**Student:** What are they?

**Teacher:** You haven't invented them yet?

**Student:** I thought you might know some that you could share.

**Teacher:** I know my own. I do not know yours.

**Student:** They're different for everyone?

**Teacher:** I don't know.

**Student:** How did you create your own techniques?

**Teacher:** If you want to establish a relationship with someone that you want to know, what are some of the things you do?

**Student:** I might invite them for a conversation over tea, or possibly write them an introductory letter describing my wish to meet them.

**Teacher:** And if they don't respond.

**Student:** I will probably assume that they are too busy, or more likely, not interested in meeting me.

**Teacher:** Then this is the problem.

**Student:** What?

**Teacher:** The human instrument gives up too easy, if it invites the Wholeness Navigator into its realm at all.

**Student:** I think we're all sensitive to rejection.

**Teacher:** Do you think it's possible to be rejected by the divine instruments of First Source?

**Student:** I never thought about it before. Maybe?

**Teacher:** It is not. The divine instruments of First Source are ever vigilant for sincere prayers, and never reject the offer to extend their presence within the human instrument of an entity that desires to ascend in consciousness. This is an immutable law of the universe.

**Student:** Is there a better way to extend this invitation than simply asking in prayer?

**Teacher:** It is not your words that will be heard. It is your feelings and the purity of their motivation. You could be drunk from wine and swearing in your loudest voice, but if your innermost feelings were pure, sincere, humble, and motivated by love, your invitation would be answered. In contrast, you could be meditating for days, striving to be of perfect character, and asking in the quietest whisper of a clear mind, but if you were tainted with the motivations of honor and pride, your invitation would most likely be declined.

**Student:** Why would the Wholeness Navigator, or any divine instrument of First Source, care?

**Teacher:** Why do you care if the food you eat is served on a clean plate or a dirty floor?

**Student:** I don't understand the comparison.

**Teacher:** The human instrument is a vessel, or soul carrier. Upon your planet, it houses the pure and perfect instrument of First Source: the Wholeness Navigator. If the human instrument is impure with thoughts of materiality, motivations of self-aggrandizement or actions of hatred, it makes the soul carrier less receptive to the vibrations of the Wholeness Navigator. In some cases, the Wholeness Navigator, if it enters into such a vessel and offers its capabilities, these very capabilities are corrupted for selfish purposes.

**Student:** So the Wholeness Navigator does not want its capabilities to become contaminated by an impure soul carrier?

**Teacher:** This is partially true, but it is more that the God-Fragment within you chooses to expose its energies to a human instrument that has invited it to share its vision and understanding. Once it is invited, it will monitor the response of the human instrument to its presence. If the invitations are repeatedly extended, the God-Fragment will continue to materialize as an infused, spirit-led consciousness that directs the human instrument in its earthly mission.

**Student:** It sounds like the God-Fragment takes over. Is that how it is?

**Teacher:** The God-Fragment injects divine perspective into the human instrument. It enables the soul carrier to become the soul's vision in service to First Source. In doing this, the human instrument is transformed.

**Student:** I understand. I think I need some time to sort all this out. Thank you for sharing your perspective and helping me with my understanding.

**Teacher:** You are very welcome.



## THE NATURE OF KNOWLEDGE

**Student:** Is there a technique to gain knowledge of God?

**Teacher:** What God do you speak of?

**Student:** The one and only source of all.

**Teacher:** No.

**Student:** Why then are there some who seem blessed with the knowledge of God, and some that seem completely ignorant of his presence and value? Surely those who are enlightened discovered a technique to secure their knowledge.

**Teacher:** There are no techniques. This is the great fallacy that has swept across the universe of sentient beings. We persist in our belief that there is a formula or ritual or teacher that can bring us enlightenment—or the knowledge of God.

**Student:** If there is no technique or teacher, then why does all of this exist? Why do you, my teacher, sit before me? Or why are there books and learned masters here, in this instructional setting? Are you telling me they're all worthless?

**Teacher:** When there are questions there are answers waiting to be heard. All this exists for the questions of people such as you. If these questions did not exist, this would not exist.

**Student:** But what's the point if the answers are not bringing me closer to the knowledge of God?

**Teacher:** Why doesn't the knowledge of destruction lay in the hands of the many instead of the hands of the few?

**Student:** What do you mean?

**Teacher:** Why is the knowledge of how to destroy humankind—on a mass level—so carefully safeguarded?

**Student:** You're talking about weapons of mass destruction?

**Teacher:** Yes.

**Student:** Naturally the technology is so destructive it needs to be managed and controlled by responsible governments.

**Teacher:** Why is it controlled?

**Student:** If it were in the power of any one person to destroy the lives of many, he or she might do so if they became sick of mind.

**Teacher:** Is the knowledge of mass destruction the opposite of the knowledge of mass enlightenment?

**Student:** I don't know.

**Teacher:** What if you were given the power to enlighten the masses of humanity or destroy humanity? Would you not be the most powerful person on earth?

**Student:** I can't imagine how I could be more powerful.

**Teacher:** How would you choose to wield your power?

**Student:** I suppose I'd have to have many advisors helping me to make the right decisions in order to build a great society that was rich in culture and learned citizens.

**Teacher:** What if the citizens that you ruled rebelled? What if they chose to be independent of your power? What would you do then?

**Student:** But if I had the power to enlighten them, why would they rebel? They would be enlightened and, as a result, they would choose to live harmoniously.

**Teacher:** But some might not want to be enlightened. Perhaps they feel that they know what is best for their development and would resist an outside source, no matter how benevolent and wise.

**Student:** Then I would let them have their own way.

**Teacher:** Even if they killed themselves and behaved in decadence?

**Student:** I would try to teach them how to behave properly so they would learn to live harmoniously.

**Teacher:** Do you think they would listen?

**Student:** If they didn't, I'd place the good and respectful people separate from those that were warring and cruel.

**Teacher:** I see. So you would divide your citizens into two groups?

**Student:** It would be the only way to bring harmony to some, if it couldn't be brought to all.

**Teacher:** And if the warring and cruel citizens ultimately had children that desired to live in harmony, what would happen then?

**Student:** They would only need to ask and they could rejoin the society.

**Teacher:** So the citizens of your society would accept them without any problem and confer upon them the same social benefits that they themselves enjoy?

**Student:** Yes.

**Teacher:** And if they didn't?

**Student:** I would have to order it—make it a law—I suppose. But again, if I had the power to enlighten my citizens, they surely would forgive those that were led astray by their parents, and let them re-enter the broader society.

**Teacher:** And what would be the result if one of these new citizens murdered someone within your enlightened society?

**Student:** They would be expelled and punished.

**Teacher:** Not enlightened?

**Student:** I would assume they were not able to be enlightened.

**Teacher:** So your power to enlighten was not perfect.

**Student:** I guess not.

**Teacher:** And what if the decadent society decided that the enlightened society should be conquered?

**Student:** Why would they attack if they knew I had the power to annihilate them?

**Teacher:** Perhaps they believed you didn't actually possess the power, or if you did, that you would never use it.

**Student:** We would then have to defend ourselves and capture the decadent society's leaders and lock them up until they changed their ways of thinking and acting.

**Teacher:** Then your power to destroy was not perfect either.

**Student:** Not in the same way I thought it was.

**Teacher:** You have answered these hypothetical questions wisely. Do you see how power complicates?

**Student:** Yes.

**Teacher:** Do you understand that having the power to enlighten or destroy is a type of power that most people consign to God?

**Student:** Yes.

**Teacher:** So I was asking you to play God, hypothetically.

**Student:** I understand, but how does that answer my question about gaining the knowledge of God?

**Teacher:** It may not. I simply wanted you to have a glimpse of the perspective of the human-imagined God.

**Student:** Why?

**Teacher:** If you want the knowledge of God, you must have some perspective on the position of a God.

**Student:** But I didn't mean that I wanted to have the knowledge of the God that humans have created.

**Teacher:** It's the only knowledge you can have.

**Student:** Why can't I obtain the knowledge of the true God, First Source? Why isn't there a technique that I can use to find and acquire this knowledge?

**Teacher:** Let's return to our hypothetical scenario. Suppose that your power to destroy was simply a thought away. If you became angry, your power to destroy would be unleashed and the recipient of your anger would be obliterated.

**Student:** Would it work the same way for enlightenment? In other words, would I be able to enlighten with a simple thought?

**Teacher:** Yes.

**Student:** Okay.

**Teacher:** How many times a day do you have an angry thought and a thought to enlighten someone?

**Student:** I don't know. On a good day, I don't have any angry thoughts.

**Teacher:** On a bad day?

**Student:** Maybe three or four.

**Teacher:** Each time you have these thoughts, if you were angry with a person, your anger would harm the object of your rage.

**Student:** What about the other side of the coin. What if I were loving and kind, would my thoughts enlighten them as well?

**Teacher:** Precisely.

**Student:** So, with nothing but my thoughts, I can harm or help a person.

**Teacher:** Yes.

**Student:** Then wouldn't it make sense that if I had the knowledge of God, I would also have the discipline to control my thoughts and emotions?

**Teacher:** No.

**Student:** Why?

**Teacher:** Because your dominant reality is that of a human being with all its weaknesses and foibles. You are designed to have spontaneous thoughts and emotions. You have instincts that respond to stimuli, and you cannot control your natural thoughts or emotions. You can suppress them. You can ignore them. You can even extinguish them, but only for a period of time.

**Student:** And this is why I can't have the knowledge of God?

**Teacher:** Correct.

**Student:** Then every human is sealed inside a world of limitation because they have this inability to control their impulses—be they thoughts or emotions? It seems unfair.

**Teacher:** Perhaps, but this same limitation is liberating.

**Student:** In what way?

**Teacher:** Do you know the will of First Source?

**Student:** No, but I think I have an idea of what is aligned with the will of God and what is not.

**Teacher:** If you truly know what is aligned and what it not, then you would need to know the will of First Source, would you not?

**Student:** I mean that I know the general direction, or intention of God's will.

**Teacher:** But not the details?

**Student:** Correct. I know that what is of love and light is aligned with the will of God, and what is of evil and darkness is not. But I might not be able to distinguish between the more subtle shades of light and darkness or good and evil.

**Teacher:** I see. And how did you arrive at this conclusion?

**Student:** It is what I have been taught.

**Teacher:** And who taught you this?

**Student:** My teachers, the books I've read. Everyone believes this don't they?



**Teacher:** And because you have been taught that the will of God is knowable, you believe you can make the judgment that a loving act is aligned, but an evil act is not.

**Student:** Basically, yes.

**Teacher:** What if I suggested to you that understanding the will of God is one and the same as possessing the knowledge of God?

**Student:** I'm not sure I understand what you mean.

**Teacher:** What do you think I mean? Make an effort to express your thoughts, no matter how murky they may be. Sometimes the fog lifts only when you struggle to see through it.

**Student:** I have the sense that you're suggesting that if I understand what the creator desires from his creation, I would also understand a key component of the knowledge of God. In other words, in order to have the knowledge of God, I must know what God wants from me, what he desired me to become.

**Teacher:** And what do you think God wants you to become?

**Student:** Liberated.

**Teacher:** From limitation?

**Student:** Yes. Exactly.

**Teacher:** First Source desires that you live without limitation, but creates a soul carrier and a setting for that soul carrier to live within that is rooted in limitation. Why

do think it is the will of God that you shrug off your limitations?

**Student:** Because if I have no limitations, I am liberated of the things that reduce my spiritual awareness.

**Teacher:** And what will you do then—when you are free of all limitation?

**Student:** I'm not exactly sure, but it will be blissful and likened to what Buddha called Nirvana—freedom from desire.

**Teacher:** Why would your Creator create you, set you in a soul carrier that was bound to a reality of limitation, construct an elaborate universe school to educate you, and commission a vast array of instructors, only to enable you to pass into Nirvana, or a blissful state?

**Student:** I don't know. That's in part what I'm trying to understand.

**Teacher:** Are you sure?

**Student:** Well it's certainly one of the things I'm trying to understand.

**Teacher:** If you're trying to understand this, then answer my question.

**Student:** But I don't know the answer.

**Teacher:** Try to articulate it as best you can.

**Student:** I agree it doesn't make sense that God would have me educated in the ways of the universe and then

leave me to simply enjoy it, but I don't know what else I would do. No one paints this picture very clearly.

**Teacher:** The picture, as you put it, is found in the service to a plan. The plan is the collective unfolding of souls to realize the singular nature of universehood as an undivided process.

We move from neighborhoods to cities, to states, to nations, to continents, to hemispheres, to planets, to solar systems, to galaxies, to local universes, to Superuniverses, to the Grand Multiverse—the all-encompassing structure of our collective unity.

And at every step we emerge the victor of the lesser state of being in that our lives increasingly exemplify the presence of our collective perception of what is best for the evolutionary course set forth by First Source for the Grand Multiverse.

**Student:** Okay, so this is the reason? To simply be able to hold the perspective of what is best for the Grand Multiverse? How can I ever know such a thing?

**Teacher:** You cannot.

**Student:** So again, I'm frustrated in ignorance. This seems to be the theme of spiritual matters.

**Teacher:** It is only because you take the undivided process and leap to its end, wishing to bring it closer into your reality of now. Your patience is exceeded by your vision of what is to be.

**Student:** I know. But what can I do about it?

**Teacher:** Define the knowledge that you need to accomplish each step of your process. Don't profess to need the knowledge of God before you have the knowledge of your earth world or the knowledge of your human instrument. Frame your knowledge in the context of your design.

**Student:** How do you mean that?

**Teacher:** You are a physical body with complex, emotional impulses and instincts; you are also a system of nerves and data collectors that feed your consciousness and brain. Moreover, you are a collective of consciousnesses that span your entire species and time. These elements comprise your human instrument.

Like most seekers, you try to understand the mysterious substance of your inmost spirit—the Wholeness Navigator—before you understand your human instrument. And even more to the point, you seek to understand the Creator and sustainer of the Wholeness Navigator before you understand your inmost spirit.

You have intuited the undivided process because it is stored within you, but if you stretch the reach of your understanding it is because you seek to know the stars before you know the planet upon which you stand. And I ask you, what good is the knowledge of the stars when your home is misunderstood?

**Student:** You're saying that I need to study my body and mind before I study the soul?

**Teacher:** No, I'm saying the knowledge of God that you seek is contained in every step of the undivided

process. It is not realized in some sudden, elusive revelatory experience at the end of your journey. It is found in every step along the way.

**Student:** Yes, I understand this in concept. I've heard this many times before, but I sense that you're making a different distinction here.

**Teacher:** Perhaps. I'm only recommending that you understand the soul carrier before you seek to know the soul, and that you understand the soul before you seek to understand its Creator. Otherwise, if you first channel your energy into understanding the Creator, you will see it marginally, and this partial knowledge will deform your understanding of the soul carrier and the soul within it.

**Student:** But how will I know that my understanding of the soul carrier is adequate so that I can embark on the understanding of my soul?

**Teacher:** The human instrument is an amazing composite of miraculous connections between the material and non-physical worlds. When you understand these connections, they will guide you to your understanding of the soul within you.

**Student:** So then I should really be asking you about how I can gain the knowledge of these connections. Is that correct?

**Teacher:** Yes.

**Student:** So how do I? Is it the chakras that are key?

**Teacher:** Much has been said and written about the energy centers that are revealed within the human

instrument, but these energy centers are not the connections between the physical and non-physical realms.

What weaves together the physical body with the non-physical bodies is what we refer to as the phantom core.

**Student:** What is this composed of?

**Teacher:** The phantom core is not composed of anything material. It is like a shadow of soul consciousness that can move between the realms of the human instrument.

**Student:** So it can operate equally well within the mind and body?

**Teacher:** The phantom core is the consciousness that moves between the body, emotions, mind, and genetic mind at speeds greater than light. Yet it is a point of awareness that distributes the experiences of the human instrument to the soul.

**Student:** Does it embellish the experiences or simply report them like a recorder?

**Teacher:** It reports everything in extraordinary terms.

**Student:** How do you mean?

**Teacher:** Even in the quiet moments of your life when you are staring through a window or reading a book, there is a great universe of experience that is perceived by this phantom core, and every miniature detail is faithfully recorded and transmitted to the soul.

The phantom core is the super consciousness of the human instrument. It is separate from the soul, and is

considered the soul's emissary to the natural world in which the human instrument must interact.

It is through this awareness that soul experiences the natural world of limitation and separation, drawing in the experiences that help it build appreciation for the Grand Multiverse that is the garment of First Source.

**Student:** Why have I never heard of this before?

**Teacher:** Who should tell you?

**Student:** You, for one.

**Teacher:** I just did, were you not listening?

**Student:** Yes, but I've been your student for two years and this is the first I've heard of this phantom core. Why?

**Teacher:** We teach through association and metaphor. You have been taught about the phantom core, you just haven't heard its name before now. And now that you have its name, it crystallizes in your mind a clearer picture of its design and purpose.

**Student:** But two years it takes for me to know its name?

**Teacher:** For some it is two hours, for some it a lifetime. It depends on the person and how they arrive at their answers. You sought the unknowable before you sought what is to be known in your present life—where your consciousness resides now.

**Student:** Okay, we've established that I'm a dreamer—

**Teacher:** There's nothing wrong with seeking the unknowable. I am not suggesting that you have wasted your time in the pursuit of a dream.

**Student:** But it seems that I need to place more time in understanding this phantom core. What do you recommend I learn in this regard?

**Teacher:** Learn all that you can about the human body, emotions, and mind. Make it the focus of your study for a period of time—perhaps a year or two, depending on the availability of your time.

As you do this, take notes about the features of the human instrument that either seem connected or anomalous. For example, the brain is dominated by the data received from the eyes. Why do the eyes not dominate consciousness?

As you produce your notes, organized around connections and anomalous phenomena, begin to define the structure of the human instrument as one would if they were making a map of the interaction between the body, emotions, mind, and genetic mind. Remember that the phantom core is the shadow of the soul and operates seamlessly between the folds of the human instrument. It is the first perceiver and transmitter of the experience that consumes the human instrument of a specific individuality. It is the continuity of the undivided process within the material realms, while the soul is the continuity of the undivided process within the non-physical realms.

**Student:** And what about the Wholeness Navigator?



**Teacher:** It is the bridge of continuity between these two worlds. The Wholeness Navigator is the interlock between the worlds of time and the worlds of non-time. It is the fusion of the soul and the phantom core, integrating this vast experiential storehouse of data, and making it coherent as a force of transformation.

**Student:** It will take me a long time to create this picture and understand the connections.

**Teacher:** It will take you a lifetime, if you are fortunate. However, if you set forth upon the path of First Source without first understanding the fundamental structures within which your soul operates, you will pursue a mirage. God will appear and disappear, and doubt will shake you every time a new occurrence crosses your path. It will seem that all is impermanent, even the face of God.

**Student:** You said a moment ago that the Wholeness Navigator uses the experiences of the soul carrier and soul as a force of transformation. Transformation of whom and for what purpose?

**Teacher:** The transformation is of the individual personality—the God-fragment that sojourns in both the worlds of time and non-time, and is devoted to the One Plan that embraces all forms, personalities, and opinions therein. This personality is the identity that endures the shape shifting of forms and the ceaseless churning of time to become a conscious extension of the One Plan.

The purpose of this transformation is to explore the Grand Multiverse as emissaries of First Source, creating new opportunities for the expansion and ongoing evolution of the One Plan.

**Student:** I suspect you purposely gave me an abstract answer as a way of reminding me of the task ahead.

**Teacher:** I gave you what is available to be given. Words themselves are an abstraction, are they not?

**Student:** If you don't mind, I want to return to my task: studying the human instrument. Is there a model I can use so I can compare my approach with others?

**Teacher:** There may be some who would gladly share their research and findings. I would encourage you to collaborate with your fellow students. It is a very useful practice.

**Student:** You spoke of connections in the human instrument and anomalous phenomena. Can you please elaborate on these?

**Teacher:** The connections of the human instrument are the threads that make up the fabric of the phantom core. These threads weave the pathways between the physical body, emotions, mind, and genetic mind. Within each of these are sub-layers, just as the skin of the human body is different than the nervous system, which is different than the skeletal structure.

The body is therefore made up of many layers and sub-components that comprise the total structure. This is equally true for the emotions, mind, and genetic mind.

The connections between these layers or strata of the human instrument, which number twenty-four primary systems, each originate from the Wholeness Navigator. In other words, these threads have a common ground and

spiral out touching each of the twenty-four primary systems, binding them together in a holistic system.

**Student:** What are the twenty-four systems? Do I know them?

**Teacher:** It is not important to recognize each of them individually. Some have not been discovered in the world of time and space. I only mention the number so that you can know the depth of the human instrument and its impeccable and miraculous structure.

**Student:** Why is this so important?

**Teacher:** The human instrument is regarded by most cultures as a body that is vulnerable and fragile. It is considered flawed and imperfect because it degenerates over time and is susceptible to disease. In some areas, it is considered nothing more than an animate object for the sensing of pleasure or pain. It is held in low regard, and even those who feel a spiritual imperative, regard it as the lesser or lower self.

**Student:** But it is the lower self isn't it?

**Teacher:** It is the vessel of the transcendent soul. When you see a vessel of beauty, do you wonder what is inside it?

**Student:** I guess when I see a beautiful vessel—like a work of art—I assume the vessel is for appreciation, not utility.

**Teacher:** It doesn't require a utilitarian function because its beauty is sufficient a purpose. Correct?

**Student:** Exactly.

**Teacher:** The human instrument is the same way. It is a beautifully conceived creation; so much so that most believe it is empty. Its purpose is in itself. They do not see the twenty-four strata, they perceive only the five dominant strata: skin, muscle, bones, emotions, and mind.

**Student:** Why? Why do we only see these five and not the whole twenty-four?

**Teacher:** You are taught these perceptions by your educational indoctrination and society as a whole, and conversely, you are not taught to appreciate and understand the other nineteen strata. In most cases, these strata require more vigilance and persistence to understand and appreciate.

**Student:** So how do I learn about the other dimensions of the human instrument?

**Teacher:** You study the human instrument. You study the body, emotions, mind, and genetic mind. You learn to understand this sacred vessel for what it truly is: the exploratory, albeit temporary, vehicle of your inmost, immortal consciousness in the worlds of time and space.

**Student:** But if you gave me information about the twenty-four strata, wouldn't it help me in my studies?

**Teacher:** Perhaps, but it is not necessary to understand all these levels with the human mind. And here again, you seek to know the staircase before you understand the first few steps. It is the function of time to make the staircase comprehensible in steps, not singular revelations.

**Student:** I understand.

**Teacher:** I have highlighted the universal path; now tell me what you have learned.

**Student:** Okay, I'll do my best. The phantom core connects the twenty-four levels of the human instrument, and is the observing consciousness of the worlds of time and space for the human soul. The phantom core has multiple threads, for lack of a better description, that weave these twenty-four levels together, and it uses these connective threads like pathways to move—as a consciousness—from one level to the next at quantum speeds. It then passes this experiential information to the soul, which then processes this incoming data in order to evolve its understanding of how to align with the One Plan and increasingly bring light to the darker outposts of the Grand Multiverse.

**Teacher:** Take a deep breath. You have listened well.

**Student:** Did I get it right?

**Teacher:** Are you concerned about being right or are you interested in learning?

**Student:** Are they so different?

**Teacher:** They can be polar opposites.

**Student:** I'm interested in learning and being right.

**Teacher:** You asked me at the beginning of this dialogue, as to whether there is a technique to gain the knowledge of God. Do you remember?

**Student:** Yes.

**Teacher:** And have you discovered your answer?

**Student:** No. I don't think there is an answer.

**Teacher:** Perhaps there's an answer, but it is different for every human. All beings approach their Creator in a unique path that has never been navigated before. If you stitched together the vast reservoir of your experience in the worlds of time and space, do you think it has ever been replicated?

**Student:** I don't know. I've never thought about it before. Perhaps at a basic level it has.

**Teacher:** Only if you grossly simplified it would you see any similarity in the paths of the ascending souls to their Creator's realm. Truthfully, we are each as unique as the planets that number the Grand Universe, and it is precisely this uniqueness that prevents a universal technique from ever becoming the magical pill of enlightenment.

**Student:** I understand this. Was this done as part of the design?

**Teacher:** Yes.

**Student:** I guess the real question is what knowledge is required in order to construct my own techniques for gaining the awareness of my own, multi-layered self?

**Teacher:** You are on your way if it is your practice to make this inquiry every morning that you arise, and you feel yourself a magnet attracting this very knowledge into your life through every facet of your experience.

**Student:** Does it help if I believe that the phantom core is present within me and absorbing this knowledge even if my conscious mind is not?

**Teacher:** It does and it is.

**Student:** I am grateful.

**Teacher:** You are most welcome.

## UNIVERSE RELATIONSHIP

**Teacher:** And so you desire to experience the Wholeness Navigator. Have you decided how?

**Student:** This is why I wanted to meet with you. I thought you could instruct me on a method, or technique to achieve this.

**Teacher:** If I could do this, wouldn't all that exists here (the ashram) be obsolete? Wouldn't all of your education fall to yourself? Wouldn't all of your connection to people erode into an existential journey of self-knowledge?

**Student:** I don't understand.

**Teacher:** You have assembled the inner and outer knowledge like a bridge without a middle, and the missing middle section is your experience of that which confirms that the two ends do indeed join; that there is cohesion between these worlds; that the bridge has function. Yes?

**Student:** Yes.

**Teacher:** If you found this middle section within your experience, your bridge would be built and you could pass between the inner and outer worlds unencumbered and independent. You would desire to then teach others how to build their own bridges. Yes?

**Student:** Exactly.

**Teacher:** Do you think any of the teachers that have lived on earth have built this bridge and not shared it with others?



**Student:** No.

**Teacher:** Then where is this technique you speak of? Is it hidden so well that none of the world's finest teachers can articulate it into a sensible methodology?

**Student:** Are you saying that no one has built this bridge?

**Teacher:** No. I'm saying that no one has wanted to build this bridge.

**Student:** Then why does it consume me so?

**Teacher:** Because you believe it can be built by answers, by experience, and by initiative.

**Student:** And it can't?

**Teacher:** It cannot be built anymore than you can build something that is already built.

**Student:** What do you mean?

**Teacher:** Can you build this rock? (I was holding a rock I had gathered from the ground.)

**Student:** Do you mean can I build an exact duplicate?

**Teacher:** No, I mean this rock?

**Student:** No. It's already built.

**Teacher:** So is your bridge.

**Student:** Okay... I understand this in concept, but if you've never experienced it, what good is it if it's built?

**Teacher:** That depends on you.

**Student:** In what way exactly?

**Teacher:** Do you see what's present more than you see what's missing?

**Student:** I don't know... I'm not sure what you mean.

**Teacher:** You have knowledge and discipline. You have intuition and insight. You have initiative and cunning. You have power of will and persistence. Are these more important to you than the missing conscious experience of the Wholeness Navigator?

**Student:** I believe that when I have the experience of the Wholeness Navigator, it will supersede these other things or it will put them in some kind of collective order and I will be a better person and therefore a better teacher because of it.

**Teacher:** But if you cannot build something, how do you teach its construction?

**Student:** But then you're saying that I already have this experience and so does everyone else; it's just that we don't know it. And again, I realize this in concept, but it seems like some do have this experience.

**Teacher:** Even at this moment you are having this experience, as am I.

**Student:** Yes, but you're probably conscious of it, I'm not.

**Teacher:** No, I'm conscious of us. I'm conscious of wherever and whatever I turn my attention to. I cannot turn my attention to the Wholeness Navigator because it is of

an energetic frequency that is out of the range of the senses of this body and mind.

**Student:** So you're saying that the Wholeness Navigator, or human soul is invisible to our human senses no matter what we do? There isn't any technique that will allow us to attune to it, or it to us?

**Teacher:** Correct.

**Student:** So my desire is unfounded?

**Teacher:** Your desire is natural and well founded; it is just that it will not culminate in the experience you hope for.

**Student:** Then why do I feel like something vital is missing? Why do I have this nagging belief that my unanswered questions hold me back from my rightful path?

**Teacher:** As I said before, your attention shifts to what is missing because you have invited the impossible into your world and idealized what others before you achieved in the sharing of their knowledge. You believe that great knowledge can only come from the experience of the unknown, hidden worlds in which the human soul lives, and without this experience you are unable to fulfill your promise.

**Student:** But many of the greatest teachers shared their vision of these inner worlds and dimensions of which the Wholeness Navigator is a part. If I cannot explore these worlds as they, how can I hope to expand the consciousness of my time?

**Teacher:** I will share a secret with you. It is not something I do with satisfaction but rather a sense of duty. The accounts of the other worlds are clothed in the very same fabric as dreams. The mystics, saints, and even some of the greatest teachers of the human species lived in bodies with the same limited range of perception as you and I. Their sometimes-spectacular accounts of other dimensions and planes of existence were subjective, non-replicable lucid dreams that were retold as objective worlds of splendor.

**Student:** Are you saying that the accounts of mysticism are fabrications?

**Teacher:** Some are. Some are misinterpretations of lucid dreams. Some are encounters with the meta-dimensional worlds of the future multiverse. Some are encounters with off-planetary beings. Some are planned deceptions. The point I'm making is that those who speak loudest of their experiences of the human soul and the worlds in which it resides are often seeking to describe their own glory more than an objective reality.

**Student:** This will take me a moment to absorb. You seem to be impugning my own teachers, with whom I hold the greatest of respect.

**Teacher:** I told you that I take no satisfaction in this. Nor am I trying to discredit any teacher. Let me describe it this way. If I discovered a place upon earth that no one else had ever come upon, and I made a map with coordinates of this discovery, I would be able to explain to anyone who can read a map how to find this same place. I could also lead people to it based on my experience. Why

then are there no maps of the inner worlds? And before you answer, remember that while there are maps, they are not consistent in scale or measure, and thus, they do not describe the same inner geography.

**Student:** I agree there is incongruity about the structure of the multiverse, but this doesn't necessarily mean that it doesn't exist.

**Teacher:** I'm not suggesting that it doesn't exist. There is no map! There are no cartographers of these worlds because these worlds are infinite in scope. How do you map the infinities of First Source? With paper and pen? How do you reduce the extraordinary vision of our collective Creator to words and methodologies?

**Student:** Are you saying it's all impossible—this desire to experience the inner dimensions of my being?

**Teacher:** The best teachers allow for the possibility, and at the same time never consider it missing in their lives. The fascination of phenomenon is replaced with the consent of the real qualities of the human spirit to shine through their countenance, words, and deeds, and to do so with their unique personality intact.

**Student:** How then can the consciousness evolve if every generation teaches nothing new about the inner worlds? Or worse yet, only adds to the confusion of how these worlds operate within our consciousness?

**Teacher:** As I said before, the bridge, or consciousness, in this case, is built. It cannot be evolved, improved or enhanced. It is a multi-faceted consciousness that is as far beyond the human mind as the boundaries of the universe

are beyond earth. The appreciation of this consciousness is what requires evolution; and its application as a source of guidance and inspiration is what requires instruction.

**Student:** Exactly what I wanted to get to. This is precisely what I want to teach, but if I myself have no experience of this super-consciousness, how can I help others to evolve their appreciation?

**Teacher:** You have been asking for help to experience something that cannot be experienced, instead of choosing to tell the universe what you want to appreciate.

**Student:** I don't understand.

**Teacher:** The universe responds to your directives, not your questions, hopes, and prayers. If you choose to define your future by telling the universe what you desire to experience and appreciate, and you hold these thoughts in your mind with fierce persistence, the universe—by its own design—will respond accordingly. If, on the other hand, you ask questions and pray for answers, the universe will respond with a deafening silence because you have not given it direction.

**Student:** This is the co-creative process you speak of, and I understand the principles of this, but how does it relate to my desire to expand my understanding of consciousness and teach this understanding to others?

**Teacher:** Desire is not a directive. Simply desiring to achieve something does not engage the universe; it engages your personal power and applies your will to achieve a goal. Praying, as it was originally intended, held two complementary purposes: To demonstrate to the

universe that an individual made choices regarding their destiny, and expressing gratitude to the universe for its unfailing support.

**Student:** Given what you've said, I assume it doesn't make sense to make a directive to the universe that I want it to bring me the personal experience of the Wholeness Navigator?

**Teacher:** You can make any directive you select. The universe is not obligated to respond, it simply does. By your selection the universe knows you. You are revealed in this simple act, and through this intimacy, the universe will respond in kind and reveal itself. If you direct the universe to bring you the experience of the Wholeness Navigator, it will bring you this experience, but you will not have consciousness recollection because, as I've said before, the signature vibration of the Wholeness Navigator is not perceptible to the human senses or mind. There is no method to capture the experience—the mind is like a camera, but the senses—the film—are not present.

**Student:** So the universe responds according to the directive, but I may think it wasn't listening because I don't recall the experience?

**Teacher:** Yes. It is a frequent occurrence with higher dimensional directives, something akin to a perceptual omission. The condition can create resentment and an uneasy sense that the universe is indifferent or even malfunctioning, despite the fact that most individuals consider the breakdown to be their own fault—at least consciously. However, in most students, lurking below the

guilt of the conscious mind is the sense that the universe is indifferent, or even worse, purposely non-responsive.

**Student:** How do I direct the universe? Is it a forceful command?

**Teacher:** Each individual is a creator of his or her wisdom path. As such, they must create the priority and structure of their path on their own. They may tap resources like teachers or books, but the creation of the path is their own, regardless of the external circumstances such as religious conformity. Once this is understood and internalized, it becomes the foundation from which you operate. This is one's spiritual duty, and it is the first step on the path of co-creation with the universe. The second step upon this path is the informed assignment of priority. There is a sequence to all directions—an order in which they build to an end goal or achievement.

**Student:** Please explain how this applies to spiritual revelation?

**Teacher:** When you have a goal to comprehend your identity—not only as a human being but also as a spirit-fragment of First Source, you must break your goal into component building blocks, and see the order within the process. Underlying this order is the fluidity that provides for rapid transformation and adaptation. Once this is defined you direct the universe to respond to this plan by the simple and persistent act of defining and, most importantly, re-defining it. The thought uppermost in your mind is that the universe is “eavesdropping” on your plans, and shifting, or re-arranging your material, emotional, mental, and spiritual environments in direct response to its



observations. It does this without regard to what you would call your worthiness. It does this because it is its nature.

**Student:** What if my plans are just plain wrong or ill conceived?

**Teacher:** You will most likely be frustrated or unsatisfied by the events that unfold.

**Student:** Can you give me an example?

**Teacher:** If someone plans to begin their teaching profession before they have adequately trained as a student, and the universe responds in kind by providing them students, they may perpetuate their own misunderstandings upon those they teach. This is a common example for would-be teachers of the spiritual arts.

**Student:** But what you said earlier, about defining your plan and its order, if you truly did this properly would you not avoid the ill-conceived plan?

**Teacher:** The universe watches faithfully your every movement and emotional connection to your goal. The ability to avoid the ill-conceived plan rests mostly in the discovery of your original voice—sorted out from the thousands of voices that have influenced you—and to allow this voice to define and direct your approach to your divinity. It is this voice and the judgment and insight behind it that places you and retains you in the security of the universe.

**Student:** But there are so many more insightful than I. Why would I listen to my own voice amid those of my teachers?

**Teacher:** Do you listen to your teachers, or do you compare their words with what resonates with what you sense is true?

**Student:** To be candid, I compare their words with my own sense of truth.

**Teacher:** So you already listen to your own voice?

**Student:** In a way, I suppose. But I use my voice as a ruler, measuring the words of my teachers with my intuition or... or some related faculty. I don't originate the thought or idea—I simply evaluate it.

**Teacher:** And why do you do this? Why do you assign yourself the diminished role of measuring and analyzing instead of creating and invention?

**Student:** Because I am inexperienced and lack knowledge.

**Teacher:** But you just agreed that you have experience in evaluating the substance of your instruction—that you can perceive the truth and value of an instruction, principle or suggestion.

**Student:** Yes, but it is one thing to have the knowledge and skill of evaluation, and quite another to be able to invent or perceive the knowledge of truth within oneself.

**Teacher:** Why?

**Student:** I'm not sure that I know how to explain this.

**Teacher:** The knowledge that will transform you derives from your personal experience of two fundamental phenomena: the Light and Sound vibrations of First Source.

**Student:** Exactly, and how to achieve this experiential knowledge of the Light and Sound requires expert instruction—the kind that only the highest spiritual teacher can supply.

**Teacher:** Do you appreciate the transformation of consciousness? Is it something you have directed the Universe to supply, or are you waiting for a teacher to take you by the hand and lead you to the Light and Sound? In other words, are you waiting to evaluate the instruction of a human being, or are you directing the Universe to supply this experience?

**Student:** I came here, to this ashram, to learn how to experience the Light and Sound of First Source so I can bring this knowledge to others.

**Teacher:** So you are waiting for a human being.

**Student:** Perhaps this is the way the Universe would respond to my directive, to bring me a teacher who can show me the way.

**Teacher:** The Universe and you are the teacher. Together you are the active, unswerving, tireless, ceaseless, on-demand pathway that can provide the direct experience. Or, you can wait for the Universe to send you messengers clothed in human form who are less active, direct, energized, responsive, and enduring—if that is your choice... your directive.

**Student:** So you're telling me to become more of an active partner with the Universe.

**Teacher:** Add responsibility and acceptance of your capacity to partner with the Universe, and you have properly evaluated my instruction.

**Student:** But I feel as if you're suggesting that teachers do not serve a role in this process. Is this true?

**Teacher:** Everyone upon your life-path will serve a role in this—teachers included. The Universe will arrange the right words, the right sounds, the right light, the right meaning to enter your life-path, and these will come through nature, humans, animals, technology, and combinations thereof. The process, the Universe, and you are inseparable when properly directed.

**Student:** So the real knowledge is knowing how to direct the Universe?

**Teacher:** It is the one relationship you will have that is responsive to the impressions of your thoughts and the expressions of your heart. You can direct it and it will respond.

**Student:** What is the key to directing the Universe?

**Teacher:** To feel in union and harmony with the Universe. To truly feel that the Universe flows through you and in doing so creates the life-path upon which you walk. To trust this life-path, knowing it is a co-creation between you and the Universe, and to demonstrate this trust in matters small and large. Assuming all of these foundations are in place, then it is merely articulating the highest possible expression of your deepest heart.

**Student:** How do I come to know this?

**Teacher:** You listen to your original voice. You allow it to be expansive, mysterious, paradoxical, boundless, and joyful. When you give this part of you an opportunity to express itself, it will articulate the innermost yearning of your heart and soul, and it is to these yearnings that the Universe is most attuned to hear and respond to.

**Student:** But doesn't the Universe also respond to our thoughts and prayers?

**Teacher:** There are those who will tell you that you can ask the Universe for abundance, health, good relations, new job, and anything else your mind desires, and it will respond to your wishes. The Universe is neutral to your material status within the worlds of form. How successful you are as a human being—measured by the system of men—is not the concern of the Universe, it is the concern of the socially trained mind and ego.

**Student:** But there are practical implications of this partnership with the Universe aren't there?

**Teacher:** If your highest aspirations from the deepest part of you are being supported by the Universe, you are more likely to succeed in your material quest for prosperity and right relations—for the two are related, are they not?

**Student:** Yes.

**Teacher:** However, those of power devise the system within the worlds of form, and it is this power that dictates the definition of prosperity. The Universe is not involved

in these matters, it is humans in power who define such things, and the Universe is not aligned to these definitions.

**Student:** So the two paths are not compatible?

**Teacher:** What two paths are you referring to?

**Student:** The petitions of human prosperity and practical survival, and the aspirations of my highest self.

**Teacher:** There is no inherent incompatibility. It is simply a matter of where you place your focus and how you define prosperity, right relations, success, and so forth. If you try to direct the Universe toward the field of human prosperity and material concerns, do so with the understanding that the Universe is indifferent about these concerns, and you are really petitioning the Genetic Mind, not the Universe. You may receive some support from the Genetic Mind and psychic influences therein, but generally it does not supplant the time-honored system of practice, persistence, creation, evolution, and patience.

**Student:** I think I understand your counsel. Thank you for your advice.

**Teacher:** You are most welcome.

## THE INTERFACE ZONE

**Student:** I was meditating this morning and found myself distracted by the sounds of my fellow students. Is there a technique to block these distractions so I can concentrate better on my meditation?

**Teacher:** What do you hope to accomplish with this improved concentration?

**Student:** I'll perform my meditations with greater clarity, and this in turn will result in deeper insights.

**Teacher:** I see. Does any of this deeper insight include the perception that the outer world is not a distraction to the inner world, but rather a catalyst for learning?

**Student:** So you're saying that I shouldn't worry about distractions when I perform my meditations?

**Teacher:** Isn't worry the source of your distraction?

**Student:** I suppose it is. But if these distractions—

**Teacher:** They are not distractions. They are phenomenon of the outer world—vibrations traveling in the ethers from sources you have no control over. That and nothing more.

**Student:** But these vibrations influence my mind and my ability to concentrate. Isn't concentration a vital component of successful meditation?

**Teacher:** Again, what influences your mind are not external vibrations, but your reaction to them.

**Student:** So how do I change my reaction so I can be more successful in my meditations?

**Teacher:** Is this issue only relevant to your meditations?

**Student:** It's during my meditations that I notice it the most.

**Teacher:** Do you notice the fear or stress that the external world brings you as well?

**Student:** Yes.

**Teacher:** Isn't this fear akin to a distraction?

**Student:** I suppose.

**Teacher:** Yet without it, wouldn't you have the tendency to lapse into complacency?

**Student:** I don't think so.

**Teacher:** Fear, and all the so-called negative emotions, can represent distractions, but they are catalysts and instigators of action just as well. Are they not?

**Student:** I see your point, but these distractions and fears are leading me away from my spiritual studies and cause me to behave in a manner not consistent with a spiritual person.

**Teacher:** And how does a spiritual person behave?

**Student:** They are poised and benevolent. They are tranquil in the face of distractions and fears. They exude peace and exemplify compassion. They express divine love to all.



**Teacher:** You have adequately described a mythological saint, but you have not described a spiritual person. Even in total darkness, a spiritual person can discover light. They are truth seekers and they wear the countenance of a thousand different personalities. They are not truth tellers. They are not truth expressers. They are not saints. They are truth seekers.

**Student:** My definition is a little idealistic, I'll admit to that, but why is this important to the discussion around fear and distractions?

**Teacher:** Isn't your concern related to your view of what constitutes a spiritual person's behavior and your perceived shortcomings relative to that image?

**Student:** You're suggesting that all of this can be traced to this fundamental misperception?

**Teacher:** Yes. It is a significant part of what energizes your reaction to fear and distractions. It is a form of self-judgment that defines your response to the external world. As you cling to the image and behavior of what you believe defines a spiritual person, so do you adjudicate your comparative performance, and in this regard, you will dependably fall short.

**Student:** But if I'm frustrated as a result of my idealistic image of how I think I should behave, are you suggesting I only need to temper my expectations and my frustration will end?

**Teacher:** Why should your frustrations come to an end? For what purpose do you choose to experience

contentment and calm? Did you incarnate into this world for the purpose of composure and regal repose?

**Student:** I'm only saying that I desire to demonstrate spiritual values—of which peace and contentment—

**Teacher:** Spiritual values are as much about turmoil and stress as they are about peace and contentment. Spiritual values are not monotonic nor are they benign.

**Student:** But you speak like spiritual values are undefined and encompass... anything.

**Teacher:** You started this dialogue with the opinion that you were frustrated with external noise that prevented your successful practice of meditation. I pointed out to you that the issue was not noise or distraction, but your narrow perception of what behavior constitutes spiritual conduct and what does not.

**Student:** Yes, and I agree, but still spiritual behavior is not about anger, hatred, and greed. You agree with this much don't you?

**Teacher:** If you define too narrowly what actions and activities constitute spiritual behavior, you will become not only a judge of yourself, but all others as well. You unwittingly close down your Interface Zone.

**Student:** What is the Interface Zone?

**Teacher:** The Interface Zone is the aspect of your consciousness that interacts with the species with which you share a common biology. It is physically contained in your DNA, which acts as a node within a vast network that is ultimately connected to First Source.

**Student:** And what is this vast network?

**Teacher:** DNA is both a network within the individual body as well as a node within the species' collective "body" or genetic mind. The human species is connected through this network, which is made possible through the DNA.

**Student:** So you're saying that what happens inside me is transmitted to all other humans?

**Teacher:** The Interface Zone is like a computer on a network. You are not aware of the network unless you are interfacing with your computer. To access the network and retrieve and share information, you must be present at your computer. Similarly, the Interface Zone requires that you bring your attention to it in order to access this network that spans the entire species.

**Student:** You're saying that I can communicate with everyone who is human?

**Teacher:** The Interface Zone is the originator of language—all languages. Language is encoded into this aspect of the DNA and it bubbles to the surface of human expression. This means that the human DNA brings language to the species and receives language from the species. It is a doorway that opens in both directions.

**Student:** Are you saying that I can communicate with my fellow species—at the level of DNA—through words?

**Teacher:** Yes.

**Student:** This is a little hard to believe.

**Teacher:** Isn't this what mantras and affirmations do within your body? Don't these words and frequencies alter you, even physiologically?

**Student:** Yes, I believe that based on my experience, but you're saying that these same words communicate beyond my body into the species at large. This is a hard concept to understand let alone believe.

**Teacher:** It does not automatically communicate to the DNA network anymore than your thoughts are automatically communicated to the computer network. On the computer network you must convert your thoughts to words and enter them via a keyboard into your computer, and then select the path to send your thoughts to the network.

**Student:** I understand how this applies to the computer network, but how does this work on the DNA network?

**Teacher:** The Interface Zone is the equivalent of a computer node and it requires software and activation in order to access the network.

**Student:** And what is the software and how do I activate it?

**Teacher:** You desire to know this before you desire to understand why you would want to have access to the DNA network?

**Student:** My curiosity leapt ahead of my logic. Can you tell me why I would want to establish an Interface Zone?

**Teacher:** The Interface Zone is the meeting place of the physical and energetic levels. It is the transport of

language between the two vibratory worlds. It is the gateway from the individual to the species. It is highly relevant in most biological species, but humans have sealed this gateway through the expression of their individuality and the pursuits of their ego.

**Student:** You're speaking of group consciousness... like ants and bees?

**Teacher:** Yes, but there are countless species that have this capacity and exercise it.

**Student:** If humans have sealed this gateway, there must be a reason.

**Teacher:** It is the act of polluting the genetic mind that has kept this gateway sealed.

**Student:** Polluting the genetic mind?

**Teacher:** Thoughts are the only real form of pollution to the human species. Beyond purely instinctual expression, thoughts assemble language and language assembles behavior. This behavior can be destructive to the genetic mind of the species and can place severe limitations on its capacity to discern the soul from the soul carrier.

**Student:** So humans learn to identify with the soul carrier and not the soul?

**Teacher:** Yes.

**Student:** And who seals the gateway?

**Teacher:** Humans... subconsciously they know it is in their best interest to close this doorway in order to prevent

irreversible damage to the genetic mind. Intuitively they know that a time will come when it will be reopened and the Interface Zone will once again be accessible to humanity.

**Student:** And how will it be unsealed?

**Teacher:** There are select individuals who will open this gateway for the purpose of transforming the genetic mind of the species. These individuals embody what is to come, relative to the human species. In a sense, they are time travelers who bring the future of human capacities to the present-day. They transmit the future vision first, and then the tools to activate others.

**Student:** I still don't feel I understand the purpose of all this.

**Teacher:** It is largely through the activation of the DNA network that humankind will discover the Grand Portal because access to the genetic mind is essential to this discovery, as is the extra-sensory communication between those destined to assemble the discovery's component parts and piece together the seven-fold puzzle.

**Student:** How does one gain access to the Interface Zone?

**Teacher:** Do you want to know how to access it before you understand the effect this access will have on you?

**Student:** Again my impatience gets the best of me. I am interested in understanding what this access will mean to me. Please explain.

**Teacher:** The Interface Zone is the access point to activating the group consciousness of humanity. If humanity can operate as a collective consciousness, while its members remain anchored in the fullness of their individuality, humanity will be able to rebalance the earth and operate as co-creators of a new earth with influence that would extend to galactic levels.

**Student:** How? How does this all happen?

**Teacher:** The Interface Zone is an important component of the Grand Portal discovery and it will become known as the connecting element of the human species that unifies its genetic mind, and in this unification, unleashes its power and capability to create solutions to the natural challenges of planetary life.

**Student:** How does this relate to an individual like me?

**Teacher:** In choosing to consciously access the Interface Zone, you tap into the genetic mind with greater clarity. This results in more vivid thought processes and enhanced intuition. It also improves extra-sensory perceptions that enable remote healing and remote communication.

**Student:** What about the communication into the genetic mind? You mentioned that the doorway opens in both directions.

**Teacher:** This is a far more sensitive disclosure and one that I will not make until you have advanced further in your training. I think we can begin with the Receiving mode before we investigate the Transmitting mode.

**Student:** How do I move into the receptive mode?

**Teacher:** It is through natural language. As I said, the Interface Zone operates within the constructs of language since it contains all language archetypes.

**Student:** Then what words do I speak?

**Teacher:** First, language is not necessarily constructed of words. It can be visual and it can be musical as well, consisting of tempo, frequency, modulation, etc.

**Student:** Which is more effective?

**Teacher:** The most effective is to begin with a clear conceptual picture of the Interface Zone and how it can be activated to be more receptive as a carrier wave of the genetic mind.

**Student:** How do I do this?

**Teacher:** Remember how I said the DNA could spontaneously configure wormhole-like structures?

**Student:** Yes.

**Teacher:** These structures are extra-sensory, and do not conform to three-dimensional constructs of space-time. They rise and fall in their configurations in spontaneous reaction to a variety of stimuli.

**Student:** Like affirmations and mantras?

**Teacher:** Yes. They are like programming pods, in one sense, because the individual can reprogram their cellular DNA in such a way that it enhances their intuition or access to the genetic mind.

**Student:** How is this done precisely?



**Teacher:** The imagery of the wormhole structure, its impermanence and spontaneity, the manner in which this occurs outside of three-dimensional space-time structures, the way in which the energy exchange is reciprocal, the image of DNA as an inter-species network—all of these elements enhance your picture of the process.

**Student:** I have a conceptual picture of this, but it's by no means clear.

**Teacher:** You cannot have a clear mental picture of something that operates outside of space-time structures. However, if you compare the picture you have now with the one you had ten minutes ago, it is infinitely more precise, wouldn't you agree?

**Student:** I suppose, since I didn't have any picture before.

**Teacher:** Exactly.

**Student:** This conceptual picture—vague as it is—is sufficient for me to begin?

**Teacher:** No. You need to picture it in your mind's eye and contemplate the wondrous mechanics of this process. How the DNA is like tendrils of an enormously complex organism that energetically lives outside the human body, but also has three-dimensional counterparts that communicate, store, and process information that reside mostly in the intuitive structure of the body-heart-mind system.

**Student:** But is there some specific word or sound I need to make in order to activate or enhance my reception of the genetic mind?

**Teacher:** If you have a computer that is not connected to the network, what is required?

**Student:** A port, or connection.

**Teacher:** And software?

**Student:** Yes, an interface of some kind.

**Teacher:** And you need a password.

**Student:** Sometimes.

**Teacher:** And why is a password required in some instances?

**Student:** Because the information is confidential or only meant to be accessible to certain individuals.

**Teacher:** So you can have a computer, a connection, and a software interface, and if you want to get the information you might need a password. What about the information that is available to everyone without a password. Is it useful?

**Student:** It could be.

**Teacher:** If everyone can get this information is it vital, potent, and catalytic?

**Student:** I suppose not.

**Teacher:** Why?

**Student:** Because it's not protected.

**Teacher:** I see. So the most vital and potent information would be withheld from all people because it could not be

protected from the unscrupulous individuals who would pervert and use this information improperly?

**Student:** Yes.

**Teacher:** Imagine that everyone within the human species, independent of age or social status, had a computer. Each person could access their computer, but only some had a connection to the network. Of these, some had a software interface. Of this group, a small percentage had developed content to place on this network, and of these, a very small fraction had created content that could be defined as inspiring to those who ventured onto the network. Now, a higher authority—let's call it God—inserts information onto this network, but protects it with a password. Who do you think God will provide the password to?

**Student:** The group that developed the inspiring content and have access to the network.

**Teacher:** There is truth to this analogy and there is a gentle deception as well. God is not interested in protecting the truth about the DNA network. Humans do this themselves. All people have the “password” as surely as they each can breathe, but most believe they are in the group who lacks a computer connection to the network, so they don't even try to access the network. The small fraction that knows of this network, believes it to be password protected.

**Student:** But if we have the password, we don't use it?

**Teacher:** We don't know how.

**Student:** Why?

**Teacher:** As I said before, humanity has forgotten this capability because it is more interested in the exploration of the individual ego than the formation and evolution of the group consciousness.

**Student:** Can you tell me what this password is?

**Teacher:** You must have the conceptual picture and you must hold the following affirmation clearly in your mind and heart: I am forever connected to my brothers and sisters of all time and space. What is known by them I can know. What is found by them I can find. What is to come from them I can be. In all that I do may the mind of many hold sway over the mind of one.

**Student:** This is the password?

**Teacher:** It is an encoded affirmation. It activates the Interface Zone within you. It stimulates the connection between you and the genetic mind of humanity.

**Student:** But the password is something else?

**Teacher:** You are looking for the key to turn the lock when you haven't yet found the door. Be patient. All matters of the spirit are a process of interchange between the world of the body-heart-mind system and the inner dimensions of the soul. The Interface Zone is the connecting bridge between you and the species. What you desire is to connect, not isolate. To step forward into the group consciousness, not judge its imperfection. To offer your talents to this consolidated being, not the God of your image. The password is only a metaphor for accepting this basic attitude and allowing it authority in your heart of

hearts and mind of minds. This attitude must hold primacy in your being.

**Student:** But doesn't it already?

**Teacher:** By the very nature of your first statements in this dialogue, it does not.

**Student:** Why? What did I say that makes this so evident?

**Teacher:** You looked upon your fellow students as distractions to your study. Do you not remember?

**Student:** I see your point.

**Teacher:** The password is not a magic word or mantra or affirmation. It is the construction, over time, of an attitude that becomes intrinsic to your character. When you can cite the affirmation I gave you and know in your heart and mind that you have truly lived this for a period of months, perhaps years, you will have the transparent access to the genetic mind that you seek.

**Student:** Thank you for your insight. I understand what I came to learn this day. I have only one remaining question.

**Teacher:** What is your question?

**Student:** The affirmation says that whatever I do may the mind of many hold sway over the mind of one. Isn't the mind of one a metaphor for First Source? And if this is the case, why should I place my trust upon the genetic mind instead of the ultimate Creator of all life?

**Teacher:** The mind of one is you. First Source is neither the mind of one nor the mind of many. It is the Mind of All... to the degree that First Source can be referred to as a mind.

**Student:** So the mind of many is a metaphor for the genetic mind of humanity?

**Teacher:** Yes. It is an ancient term that is encoded. Your DNA actually “hears” this affirmation, and the “wormholes” of connection spontaneously form as a result. First Source and those concerned about the evolutionary path of humanity are encoding an aspect of the genetic mind to be a tool useful in the discovery of the Grand Portal. This particular affirmation is useful in accessing this specific part of the genetic mind. It is not resonant with all aspects of the genetic mind.

**Student:** I understand. Thank you.

**Teacher:** You are most welcome.

# TECHNIQUES OF THE INTUITIVE INTELLIGENCE

**Student:** How does one discern their inner voice from the voice that has been learned from this world?

**Teacher:** The voice of this world can be traced to the ego-personality, while your original voice whispers and nudges from the depths of your heart.

**Student:** But the voice of my heart is not necessarily formed of words, but rather feelings. And these feelings are subtle and constantly changing. Hope can turn to despair, or love to hate in a mere flash of time.

**Teacher:** Like the universe, the heart is multi-leveled. The heart of which I speak is adept at expressing intuitive intelligence in the spirit of compassion and understanding. When you hear a voice within that strikes this balance, you have found your inner voice.

**Student:** Does everyone have this inner voice and the ability to express it?

**Teacher:** No.

**Student:** Why is this limitation bestowed on human nature?

**Teacher:** It is simply an outgrowth of the imperfections of the human instrument colliding with the imperfections of the three-dimensional environment.

**Student:** And these imperfections subdue the heart's expression and diminish its voice?

**Teacher:** No more than the clouds control the sun and lessen its warmth.

**Student:** So the inner voice continues to express itself even though the imperfections make its voice inaudible?

**Teacher:** Yes.

**Student:** Using your analogy, how does one eliminate the clouds?

**Teacher:** You can't eliminate imperfections, but you can achieve supremacy over them for periods of time. Imagine if the sky were always shrouded in clouds. The telescope would not exist, would it?

**Student:** I suppose not.

**Teacher:** Suppose that the clouds would disappear, but for only one day each year, and it was only on this day that you could see the vastness of the universe. Do you suppose the telescope would be invented?

**Student:** Perhaps...

**Teacher:** The answer is, yes. The moment the human spirit understands the depths and heights of its universe, the will to apprehend it—to study it—is engaged.

**Student:** But how does this relate to the heart's inner voice?

**Teacher:** The imperfections of the human instrument and the three-dimensional world are like clouds that obscure the depths of the heart. If you can see beyond these clouds, if only for a short time, you will try to access



and understand your inner voice and express it fully in your life despite the imperfections.

**Student:** Again, using your analogy, what is the “telescope” as it relates to the heart’s deepest expression?

**Teacher:** They are the techniques of the intuitive intelligence.

**Student:** Can you explain them to me?

**Teacher:** There is a component of the human instrument known poetically as the Heart’s Scribe. Your emotional history—every nuance—is recorded and inscribed within the circuits of your heart. This, in large measure, is the source of the “clouds” we spoke of earlier.

**Student:** And they need to be cleared. How do I do that?

**Teacher:** First and foremost, it is vital to understand the heart. The heart is so much more than a physical muscle pumping blood. This is only the surface manifestation of nothing less than the source of your intuitive intelligence. The energetic heart is the source template of the physical heart.

**Student:** The source template?

**Teacher:** As the physical heart distributes life-giving oxygen to the body, so does the energetic heart distribute intuitive intelligence to the mind. The energetic heart is the source template for the formation of the physical heart, and more than this, it is the point of connection to the highest form of consciousness from which your inner voice arises.

**Student:** My physical heart is based on an energetic heart, and this energetic heart is what I want to have access to?

**Teacher:** Think of it this way. The heart is dimensional and multi-faceted. It expresses emotional currents; regulates physiological functions; activates certain brain chemistry; communicates throughout the body and mind; receives precognitive impressions from your future environments; and connects you to all other states of being. The heart is also the gateway to the compassion frequency of love—the purest force of the multiverse.

**Student:** I've never heard of this before. What do you mean by the compassion frequency of love?

**Teacher:** Love, like all things dimensional, can be separated into a spectrum of frequencies—each frequency a part of the wholeness, but each possessing a different intelligence.

**Student:** Intelligence?

**Teacher:** Are all forms of love the same?

**Student:** Of course not.

**Teacher:** Love imbued with compassion and understanding is different from love that is stubborn and selfish, is it not?

**Student:** Yes... but I don't think of it as a difference in intelligence in the love itself, but rather the person expressing it.

**Teacher:** That is because you don't understand that emotions have an embedded intelligence based on their

frequency and how the frequency resonates with the higher circuits of the multiverse.

**Student:** I don't understand.

**Teacher:** Think of the multiverse as eleven holographic spheres of consciousness, each interpenetrating the one that is more inward. Only the outermost sphere contains all spheres, and this is the consciousness of First Source, while the innermost sphere is the consciousness of inanimate objects like a stone or seashell. Love is separated into frequencies that resonate in harmony with each of these "spheres" or domains of consciousness. Similarly, the heart itself consists of different layers of consciousness, and each "layer" has an intelligence of perception and expression. This intelligence is linked to the brain and higher mind, so that the human instrument is capable of expressing from any dominant frequency or sphere of the multiverse.

**Student:** Including the level of First Source?

**Teacher:** Yes.

**Student:** So the heart is the multiverse inside each of us?

**Teacher:** It is the gateway to the multiverse because of its ability to decode emotional frequencies from the highest levels of the multiverse and express them into three-dimensional environments through a human instrument.

**Student:** I thought the brain was the supreme organ of the human instrument. The crown chakra, the third eye... aren't these associated with the brain and the higher mind?

Aren't these more closely connected with the First Source vibration than the heart?

**Teacher:** The heart operates at the highest frequency within the human instrument. Emotions are even faster than the speed of thought. They operate outside of time/space when they are in resonance with the higher circuits of the multiverse.

**Student:** If the heart operates at the highest frequency, then emotions are more certain to be the catalysts that awaken us to our true selves?

**Teacher:** Yes, this is why the most profound spiritual experiences are woven from the textures of the heart's emotions rather than the thoughts of the mind.

**Student:** Okay, so how does this all relate to clearing the emotional debris that's been inscribed upon my heart?

**Teacher:** It is not the heart itself that it has been inscribed upon. The emotional debris is passed from the heart to the brain and the neural network that surrounds it. Thus the clearing takes the same route and is a process, not an event. It begins with the compassion frequency of the emotion called forgiveness. This frequency can be evoked within your heart through this command: As the light of my heart brightens, so does my capacity to forgive. As forgiveness flows into my heart it moves upwards, filling my entire head with the most delicate and refined light imaginable, and from this light, a compassion for my past settles in, and all that has occurred is rewritten in this light. While this invocation is being said, you can listen carefully to the words and allow them to form visual pictures in your heart.

**Student:** That's interesting. I've always been taught to form pictures in my mind, but never in my heart.

**Teacher:** Visualization is not confined to a specific position in the body or head. It can be placed anywhere by projection. Simply project the pictures to the area in the center of your chest. The one who views the projection can be outside of your body watching from a distance of a few meters.

**Student:** Who is watching outside my body?

**Teacher:** You are.

**Student:** Is this one of the techniques you referred to as techniques of the intuitive intelligence?

**Teacher:** Yes, but this technique has additional facets to it. When you have completed this first step, three remain.

**Student:** What are they?

**Teacher:** The second step is to allow this light to settle in. It requires that you perceive the light as a very, very refined mist of yellow-gold, suspended, yet moving at a level beneath perception. It is important to sense that this movement of the light inside your head possesses intelligence—capable of rewiring, rewriting, adapting your emotional history.

**Student:** And by performing this technique I can begin to clear the “clouds” of my emotional history?

**Teacher:** Yes, but visualization and imagination are vital elements of this process. Again, I want to stress that this is a process that requires a consistent practice for a period of time—typically thirty days or more.

**Student:** Why are visualization and imagination so important to this process?

**Teacher:** They engage the heart's core intelligence and the brain's receptivity is the result.

**Student:** You're saying that the brain interprets the heart's signals based on their... clarity?

**Teacher:** The higher brain is designed to "read" the heart's signals based on how well defined they are in terms of their visual energy and emotional authenticity.

**Student:** Visual energy?

**Teacher:** Whatever images are projected upon the heart region, they are energized. To the degree you can visualize the image clearly, project it to your heart area and imbue it with your heart's core emotions, you will send a more potent signal to your higher brain. It is this potency that the higher brain responds to.

**Student:** In what way?

**Teacher:** In the context of this dialogue, it facilitates the course of action to rewrite your emotional history in the frequency of compassion and understanding.

**Student:** So the heart and brain are partners, but ultimately the brain decides whether to act on the signal... or the directives from the heart?

**Teacher:** Just as the physical heart has an energetic or quantum counterpart, so does the brain. These two organs and their peripheral systems—at both the physical and quantum levels—are completely integrated, in a manner which science is only now beginning to understand. It is

not that the heart transmits an order to the brain, and the brain, detecting the potency of the directive elects to act on it or not. The heart and brain are a unified system that cycles and recycles energy, information, and intelligence within the human instrument. This system operates with greater effectiveness, in terms of expressing its innate intelligence in three-dimensional environments, when it is entrained to the core heart energy of compassion and understanding.

**Student:** You speak about compassion and understanding, but isn't unconditional love the core heart frequency?

**Teacher:** I choose to refer to these core frequencies in terms that are not so misunderstood, as is the term unconditional love.

**Student:** You also mentioned emotional authenticity was a key element in how the brain responds to this technique. Can you expand on this?

**Teacher:** When you see a piece of cloth from a distance of twenty meters, what distinguishes it?

**Student:** Its color.

**Teacher:** And when you are able to hold this same cloth and examine it closely, what then?

**Student:** I suppose texture becomes more important... how it feels.

**Teacher:** And the subtly of the design?

**Student:** Yes, I suppose at twenty meters one would not be able to see any subtle designs that had been woven into the fabric.

**Teacher:** Emotions are imbued with texture and subtlety. The higher brain system is designed to scan the emotional data incoming from the heart system and determine if the textures and subtleties of the data are derived from the core heart frequencies or are derivatives of the three-dimensional environment and/or emotional history.

**Student:** The higher brain makes this determination? How does it know?

**Teacher:** Have you noticed my use of the word “Designed”?

**Student:** Yes, but I’m not sure I interpreted it the way you meant it.

**Teacher:** The heart and brain systems were designed to enable those who were able to apply their imaginations from the core heart frequencies to access the higher frequency, higher intelligence of the genetic mind. This access made them the prophets and philosophers of humanity—the wisdom-bearers that elevated all of humanity.

**Student:** So only those who had this knowledge would be able to access this higher state?

**Teacher:** No. Everyone is able to.

**Student:** Everyone?

**Teacher:** Should anyone be excluded?



**Student:** What about those who knowingly practice evil?

**Teacher:** A lifetime of four thousand weeks to explore and understand the infinite cosmos is the explanation of evil.

**Student:** I don't understand?

**Teacher:** We are good, spiritual beings, not by the expression of our behaviors, but by our intrinsic nature—our origin. We are each allowed access to this higher knowledge not by how we act, but by simply being what we are.

**Student:** Okay, I think I understand, and on some level, I'm relieved to hear this. However, all my life I've lived with the conviction that divinity is something earned. Those who were weak and easily led astray by the dark forces were not allowed access to the techniques that would empower their greed, hate or evil tendencies. What you're now telling me is that the techniques of the intuitive intelligence are available to any and all.

**Teacher:** They are. This conviction you speak of is an artifact of the mystery schools and the esoteric practices that use techniques of liberation as rewards of loyalty.

**Student:** But won't some people abuse these techniques, using them for selfish or even evil purposes?

**Teacher:** I just explained that the heart and brain are an integrated system designed to activate, access, and express the higher frequencies of compassion and understanding, and that the brain serves the role of assessing the emotional authenticity of the heart. This skill, intelligence,

insight, whatever you choose to call it, is absolute and inborn within all higher life forms. No one can utilize the techniques of the intuitive intelligence if their heart is passing data to their brain that is derivative of emotional distortions common to three-dimensional environments.

**Student:** I still don't understand how the brain knows how to do this, but let's move on. Can we review the technique you started to explain?

**Teacher:** There are four steps to this particular technique. Its purpose is to help the practitioner recast their emotional history into the compassion frequency, and by so doing, gain a deeper access and more fluent, on-demand expression, of their inner voice, or intuitive intelligence.

**Student:** Does this technique have a name?

**Teacher:** Only if you give it one.

**Student:** And you've disclosed only two of the four steps thus far?

**Teacher:** Yes, the first two we have covered: the invocation and imagination steps. The third step is to release.

**Student:** How is this accomplished?

**Teacher:** When you fine-tune your imagination and you see the refined light frequency within your head area and you allow this—in a sense—to take up residency, you must adopt the inner attitude of surrender and release.

**Student:** To what?

**Teacher:** To the results of the technique. To the fact that the emotional history that you have stored in your neural and quantum network called the human instrument, may undergo change or modification.

**Student:** But if I'm practicing the technique haven't I already surrendered to the results? I mean, why would I be practicing it if I weren't sincere?

**Teacher:** Your desire for the end benefit, in this case, a more profound connection to your intuitive intelligence, can overshadow your willingness to see the wisdom in the process and delay gratification for the thing you desire.

**Student:** You mean that I may become impatient?

**Teacher:** It is more likely that you will be less inclined to allow the first two steps in this process to unfold organically—in their own time—for the purpose of recasting your emotional history. This is why this third step is designed into the process.

**Student:** How do I perform this release as you call it? Is there a specific technique?

**Teacher:** It is simple, and yet difficult at the same time. To release is to trust. To trust is to believe in the intelligence of both your innermost self, as well as the origin from which it arises. This is the simple part. The difficult part is to understand that the judgment of the ego-personality is impaired, and in some measure antithetical to the intuitive intelligence. This stage of the technique is to release judgment of your progress within the bounds of the process.

**Student:** How do you mean this? I'm not sure I understand.

**Teacher:** If by clearing the clouds of your emotional history you improve access to your intuitive intelligence, or inner voice, the ego will search for evidence of your progress in order to satisfy its innate hunger for achievement. The ego is not something to be banished, ignored or faulted for this attitude, but rather it is to be refined.

**Student:** Is this part of the release technique?

**Teacher:** Yes.

**Student:** How?

**Teacher:** Release is a psychological imperative when an individual aspires to access and express their intuitive intelligence. Your ego is adept at operating within the lower, outer forces, in much the same way as your heart is adept at operating within the higher, inner forces. As you seek to align to these inner forces, your ego will perceive the effort and the process therein as a trivial distraction to the real world problems that press upon you. The instinctual response of the ego-personality, in this case, is to perceive the focus on your core heart frequencies as misdirected.

**Student:** Why?

**Teacher:** Because the ego resides within the lower mind and its attachment to the physical body is mainly through the eye-brain's perception of its dominant reality—the three-dimensional world. To the pure ego, the

heart is simply a bothersome appendage of the physical body that displays weakness.

**Student:** Okay, I think I understand the reason that release is the third step, but how do I specifically perform this step in the process?

**Teacher:** Breathing through your heart region is the method to intermix the desires of the ego with the capacities of the heart, and this is the method of release.

**Student:** How do I do this?

**Teacher:** After you have completed the first two steps, center your attention on your breathing. Imagine that your in-breath brings the desires of your ego into an interior chamber of your quantum heart. Then, imagine this desire for achievement—in the form of an in-breath—is suspended within this interior chamber by holding your breath. As you do so, your breath is intermixing with the inflow of compassion that arises from your quantum, or energetic heart. Now, expel this newly energized breath back through your heart area, and each time, as you exhale, repeat the phrase: “Leave it in the mystery to shine of its own light.” Do this six to eight times.

**Student:** That’s all?

**Teacher:** Yes.

**Student:** I was expecting the release part to be more complicated and difficult.

**Teacher:** The difficult part is when you lack the technique for release or you practice the technique without emotional authenticity and visual energy.

**Student:** What is the fourth and final step of this process?

**Teacher:** It is sometimes referred to as light distribution, though I prefer to think of it as light connection.

**Student:** How does it work?

**Teacher:** Just as the physical heart distributes oxygen via the blood to the periphery of the physical body, the quantum heart distributes light via visual energy and emotional authenticity to the borders of the human instrument. The light distribution technique is to imagine light circulating—unimpeded—throughout the expansive you.

**Student:** I'm not sure what that means.

**Teacher:** The human instrument consists of the physical body, emotional system, and the facets of the mind. The grid that interconnects these elements and causes them to operate efficiently as a system is similar to the veins and arteries of the physical body. This grid conveys light that in turn unifies a quantum field and allows it to operate independently of the multiverse. We sometimes refer to this individuated grid as the expansive you.

**Student:** So I am this loose confederation of light particles that somehow manages to coalesce into a body and mind, and to this grid I need to visualize light being distributed without blockages or interruptions. Is this the idea?

**Teacher:** You simply need to place your attention on the reality of what you are. It only takes a few moments,

but it is critical that you practice this technique frequently and in a specific manner.

**Student:** How frequently?

**Teacher:** That is up to you, but you cannot do it too much.

**Student:** Why do I even need to be conscious of this? It seems that the light flows just fine without my direction.

**Teacher:** It does, but you are not directing it, you are accessing it, touching into this holographic gridwork of light that is the fundamental structure of your existence in the three-dimensional environment.

**Student:** Maybe you should just explain the technique, and I'll stop asking questions.

**Teacher:** If you could concentrate this grid of light—make it brighter, more intense; what do you think the result would be?

**Student:** More energy?

**Teacher:** No. It can actually have the opposite effect in the sense that the body is fatigued and weakened.

**Student:** So distributing light is not about concentrating it?

**Teacher:** No. It's balancing the light quotient within the human instrument and ensuring it is coherent, rhythmic, and free flowing.

**Student:** It sounds like you're describing the physical heart again.

**Teacher:** This is the natural state of the heart and the entire human instrument, but in the day-to-day interactions with the three-dimensional environment, the human instrument can lose this balance and slip into an incoherent, arrhythmic, and entangled state of existence. The heart perceives this state and, without knowledge of the proper techniques, responds in kind, fueling the mental dysfunction and physiological inefficiency with its energy.

**Student:** More “cloud” cover?

**Teacher:** Precisely. This is why this step in the process is important because it helps the heart synchronize its energy with the deeper, sub-quantum structures upon which you depend.

**Student:** What do I do?

**Teacher:** Can you visualize your heart beating in your chest distributing oxygen to your body and brain system?

**Student:** Yes.

**Teacher:** Imagine this same function is occurring in your quantum, or energetic heart, and that instead of veins and arteries, there are filaments of light that diverge from your quantum heart and connect you to a broader grid. This grid is the source of your existence as a physical being. Now, you can think of these filaments as both roots and wings. Roots in the sense that they anchor and ground your existence; and wings in the sense that they provide uplift and expansion to your life.

Throughout the day, simply feel the energy structure that surrounds you. When you do this, imagine that your heart is “plugging in” or connecting to this structure, even



if you cannot visualize it, feel its presence like a primordial soil of life-giving energy. Feel this connection as a rhythmic pulsing of light, flowing from the grid into your heart system and then flowing out from your heart to the rest of your body.

**Student:** I felt this just listening to you.

**Teacher:** That is the technique for the fourth and final step.

**Student:** Should this fourth step be performed in concert with the other three techniques?

**Teacher:** It is not necessary to perform this when you act upon the other three steps. This fourth technique can be performed throughout the day and only takes a matter of seconds. It can be performed twenty times each day for the rest of your life. It is a technique to rebalance and replenish your core heart frequencies and to ensure they are being distributed throughout the human instrument. It activates the inner currents.

**Student:** What are those?

**Teacher:** When a river loses its current what happens?

**Student:** It slows down and becomes stagnant.

**Teacher:** Clarity and tempo are related, are they not?

**Student:** I think this is true as it relates to rivers, but I assume you're talking about the human system as well.

**Teacher:** Correct.

**Student:** So the techniques of the intuitive intelligence are really multi-faceted in what they bring to the individual?

**Teacher:** If you can access your intuitive intelligence, in a sense, increase the bandwidth of your connection to the light energy grid that supports you, a single word can catapult you into understanding, when before a hundred books left you in ignorance. Intuitive intelligence is the potency of the quantum heart trickling into the three-dimensional world. It is the key to the knowledge that matters. For this knowledge changes everything in the dimensions of the past, present and future.

**Student:** I will faithfully practice it. Thank you for sharing this with me.

**Teacher:** It is my honor.

# **LIVING FROM THE HEART**

## **INTRODUCTION**

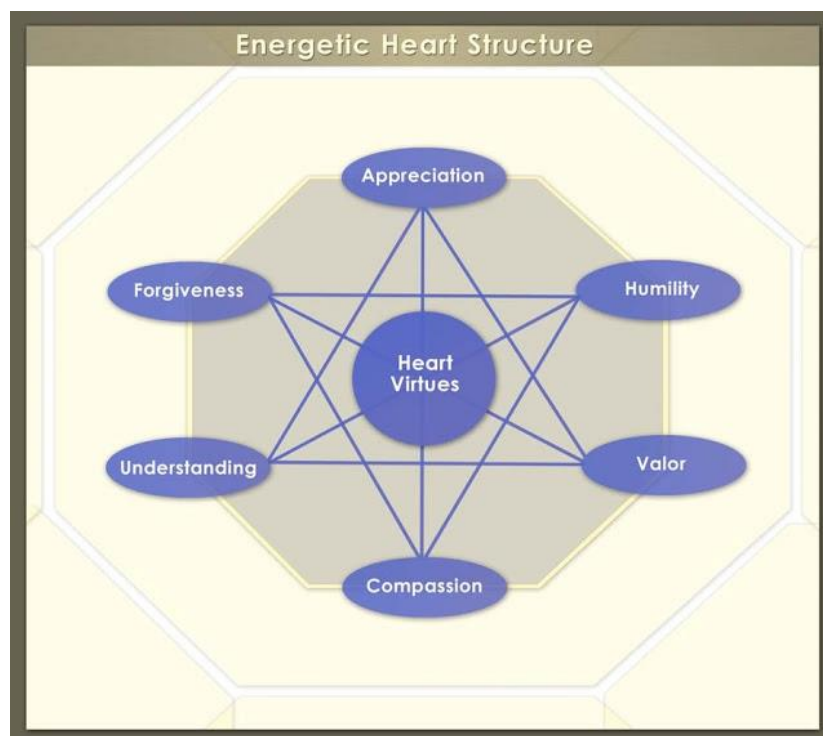
If you were to plot the evolutionary trajectories of the past two thousand years for technology, science, economics, medicine, and most any other category of human endeavor, you would see trend lines racing upwards like rockets, particularly in the last one hundred years. Only in those categories related to human emotion would you see comparatively flat lines, and, in some cases, devolution.

It is clear that on an intellectual, technological, and monetary scale our progress has evolved dramatically, but how we manage our emotions, and more importantly, how we orchestrate them in order to enhance our understanding of life and intuitive perception has changed very little since the dawn of civilization.

And yet, when you think about it, our ability to live from the heart and coordinate our emotions is a key component for better living—and not just for ourselves, but for our circle of family and friends, community, and the entire planet. It enables us to adapt more easily to the challenging curvatures that invariably shape our journey through life. It permits us to operate from a foundation of comparative stability instead of the constantly shifting sands of life's dramas that drain us of our innate, spiritual vitality.

## SECTION ONE: THE SIX HEART VIRTUES

The energetic heart is composed of six primary forms of expression: Appreciation, Compassion, Forgiveness, Humility, Understanding, and Valor. Braided together, these six behaviors constitute the essence of the energetic heart and, when expressed in our daily lives, enable it to perform its function as a portal to our inmost self or soul. (See diagram)



Regardless of what significance we assign to our intellect or brainpower, it is but one form of intelligence, and while it has an important place within our world, no doubt, it is not the primary intelligence of our Self. Our primary intelligence is empowered through our emotional mastery and our ability to conduct our life from the platform of the six heart virtues, which in turn unite us to

the lighted realms of our intuition, which is our coherent connection to the universal field of information, referred to by physicists as the quantum vacuum.

There is a saying within the Lyricus Teaching Order: “What one can express through their heart is gold to the iron of the mind.” The gold, in this case, is the ability to express the six heart virtues in tandem, separately, or as an ensemble team to the various situations that life unveils. It is learning to modify your actions based on these six virtues and observing how they re-calibrate your value system, re-vitalize your energy and creativity, and re-coup your sense of balance and emotional poise.

In doing this, you not only apply your emotional energies for the purpose of creating and maintaining a coherent personal state, but you also create a coherent field around you; a field that touches and intersects with others through the principles of quantum entanglement, resonance, coherence, and non-locality. The energies of our emotional field are real and interconnected in a vast assemblage of intention and information that is near boundless in its embrace.

The denser emotions like jealousy, greed, and anger enter this cosmic field and inform its baser instincts, creating the conditions for strife and instability within our manifest reality. The finer energies that compose the six heart virtues, inform the divine instincts of the cosmic or quantum field that enfolds the multiverse. Thus, we are left with a choice to conduct our personality and emotions so they inform the quantum field in which we all live with the divine frequencies that uplift and support all life. If this is

our choice, then mastery of the six heart virtues is an efficient and effective method for its attainment.

It comes down to this: we approach our divinity through the heart and not the head. One's intellect can encompass vast amounts of information and knowledge. We can study all the words of our prophets and scholars, but if we are not expressing the six heart virtues, we have only filled our heads with words, concepts, and intellectual bravado. Our behaviors remain tethered to the baser instincts, and while we may write or speak profound insights, our emotional energies remain agitated, uncertain of their expression from moment to moment, and unguided by the intelligent voice of our heart.

### **The Artistry of Expression**

There is an implied artistry in the expression of the six heart virtues, but before the artistry can be expressed, the virtues must be anchored in genuineness. The virtues cannot be manufactured from mental constructs or merely given lip service. This quality of genuineness is a result of the heart's and mind's sense of connection to the deeper framework that each of these virtues operate within. For most people, this connection takes time to develop and mature. It starts, however, from having an understanding that a framework exists, and then contemplating and feeling what it is, how it works, and why it's important to apply in one's life.

This understanding serves as the foundation for the artistry, which relates to how and when one wields the six virtues, or a subset thereof, to life's diverse situations. You

can look at the six virtues (appreciation, compassion, forgiveness, humility, understanding, and valor) as musical notes. If you strike these notes simultaneously there is a chord and this chord is divine love—the highest vibration contained within the quantum field that a human can receive and transmit.

Each of the six virtues can be activated with incredible speed and virtuosity when the person expressing the virtue operates from a platform of high coherence and a sense of neutrality. In this state, one can navigate their life looking for the wisdom in each new challenge, the creative spark in the mundane, the intuitive feeling around each corner, and the deeper rhythms in the apparent calamity of everyday life.

How one can attain and maintain this state of coherence rests largely on their artistry, and, to some degree, vigilance, in applying the six heart virtues. There is an ascending spiral process to this practice. First, one must be grounded in the framework, and this can be done by studying the free e-paper *The Art of the Genuine: A Spiritual Imperative* and then contemplating its meaning. Second, one can experiment with the six virtues and learn how to deepen their understanding—not at an intellectual level, but rather a practical application level. In other words, how does one apply the virtues of humility, understanding, and forgiveness to the person who just cut you out of a parking place at the mall?

It is at this level—the practical level where we all live—that we must practice the artistry of the six virtues lest we lose our ability to self-empower. It is in this self-empowerment that we rise as spiritual beings to the

challenges of the physical world. This form of empowerment is different than speaking truth to power, or imbuing your self-esteem with the elixir of invincibility. It is the empowerment of problem solving the emotionally rooted turmoil of daily life with the incandescence of the heart's intelligence and knowing how and when to tap into this intelligence.

In the continual ascent to master these virtues and express them in our lives, we refine our understanding. Not the sudden revelations spoken of in the texts of ancient days or hallucinogenic awareness of the modern world, but rather the robust understanding that we are part of a vibratory field that energetically encompasses us, records our ways, generates our holographic reality, and re-invents us anew on the timeline racing to and from eternity.

### **The Agnostic Path**

For those who establish emotional self-mastery as their path, they will need to track, treat and transform their behaviors as they progress on this journey because this is not about instant gratification. This journey is truly focused on connecting with one's higher guidance (receptivity and listening) and expressing this wisdom into the field in which you live, move, and have your being (transmission and expression).

Let me be clear about the framework of track, treat, transform.



- Track means that the individual can self-report their progress on the six heart virtues over time and track their ups and downs, and see their self-mastery growing against the backdrop of time.

- Treat means that the individual while tracking their progress can see when they hit a snag or vexing problem that takes them off course and then treat this issue like a physician treats a wound or illness. The treat, in this case, is not a reward, but rather a solution or remedy to a problem or emotional misstep.

- Transform is the result of tracking and treating along this journey and seeing how you are transformed into a self-empowered, spiritually vibrant person.

Books and self-help programs abound in the world on what one should believe, do, think, and feel. They are translated from the minds and hearts of some of our greatest thinkers and spiritualized beings. We do not require more information on how to behave or believe. We simply require more discipline in our emotional lives and the tools and techniques to attain this. In other words, we need a practical framework.

The energetic heart—the physical heart’s quantum equivalent—is the portal of the soul’s consciousness in intersection with the Designing Force. It resides at the heart chakra site, and it is the knowingness of the soul or higher spirit within the individual. The six heart virtues emanate from this stronghold of the energetic body, and it is this energy center that we must nurture and consciously activate within us.

This path is not owned by anyone or any organization, and those who travel it are essentially faith agnostic, which is to say, they do not look upon this practice as affiliated with a particular religion, spiritual inquiry system, scientific endeavor, New Age belief system, or spiritual master. It is a framework as old as the soul itself, and its chief principle is the ongoing practice of the six heart virtues in one's daily life. In doing this, the reality that surrounds you will assemble its own path to a higher understanding, suited specifically to you.

Patience pays. Do not look for the shortcuts in matters of the heart or soul because space-time is not the force that operates or controls the heart virtues. It is the soul and higher spirit enfolded within the Designing Force that enables these virtues full expression and empowerment within any domain—subtle, gross, or otherwise. There is no density in which the heart virtues are extinguished or marginalized if the individual regularly exercises them, observes their energies, contemplates their outputs, and nurtures their expression. Even in the darkest densities the heart beats true its pulse of connectivity to the divine nature in us all. It is the connecting force that binds us as human spirits.

Orchestrating the heart virtues leads us to a point where we ultimately observe our energy field or soul signature. Once this occurs, we can discover blockages in our energetic body that filter our deeper awareness. The blockages or densities that reside within our energy field diminish our ability to express the fullness of our energetic heart. This creates the subtle, or in some cases, not so

subtle irritations that misalign our physical body, emotions and mind.

Over time, expressing the heart virtues will dissolve these energy blockages and you will find it easier to anchor and sustain your within the lower worlds of matter and space-time. In doing so, the deeper harmonies and rhythms of life more easily manifest, supporting the work we all came to perform at this time.

### **Three Subtle Desires**

Now we come to the three subtle desires that stand behind nearly everything we work to achieve: Instant gratification, control, the next-thing. These three subtle desires also influence our expectations in the field of spiritual development and growth, and it is for this reason that I shine the spotlight on them.

### **The Desire for Instant Gratification**

There is a phrase from William Gibson, “The future has already happened; it’s just not very well distributed.” This sentiment seems appropriate in a world where shortcuts are acclaimed by experts from every field of endeavor. Acceleration is the byword of the day, and the goal of this acceleration is to do everything faster, in less time; to be more productive; to be a better employee; to be a better student; to be a better everything, and to do it or acquire it faster and easier.

What's missing from this approach is the destination or, said another way, "Where is the acceleration taking you," to a fancier car, larger home, enlightenment, inexhaustible bank account, more prestigious position in life, better health, or simply a lifestyle of relative ease? Whatever the destination, the notion of instant gratification looms as the catalyst for its achievement. But what if the destination is emotional self-mastery? What are the signposts for acceleration in this case? What are the shortcuts and how do we know we are accelerating, decelerating or treading water and getting nowhere fast?

Instant gratification assumes one fundamental thing: to every human endeavor there is an elevator or staircase, and it is better to choose the elevator. Getting to your destination or achieving your goal quickly is more important than assessing which destination or goal is best. It is precisely this need for acceleration of goal achievement that often causes one to take a miscalculated detour from assessing what destination or goals are most vital to the fulfillment of their purpose.

Now you can ask yourself, if emotional self-mastery is a vital goal of your spiritual purpose, what is the best path to take in order to achieve this? My answer would be to live from your heart by expressing the six heart virtues with authenticity and artistry, but to consider the speed of your journey to mastery of no consequence or importance. Perhaps an odd caution, but the need for speed is a master unto itself, igniting the ego as few things do.

## **The Desire for Control**

The second subtle desire that often pulls us off course is our insatiable desire for control. The desire to control one's life is placed within us at an early age and cultivated by our socialization process. We are taught to control our emotions, especially boys. And once we transition to adulthood, we are taught that control of our environment is tantamount to success as a social contributor in the moneymaking machinery we call the free market economy.

Many people see that control is the ultimate tool for success in any of life's dimensions—including the spiritual realm of enlightenment. However, control is not ultimately satisfying because you are always tethered to a struggle with opponents who also want control. It is an endless competition. It is an outgrowth of the three-dimensional construct that there are winners and losers, and it's better to be a winner.

Well, yes, in the world of the dollar it is hard to argue with that logic. However, the ambition of control is a tireless master who requires that you work hard, keep focused on your duties of the social order, and make certain that the world in which you operate does not spin out of control. Control will become increasingly more fleeting in the next seven years because the dimensional shift that is underway will make the rigid institutions of our social order change, and in some instances, crumble.

This means that those who seek to control and micro-manage their lives will find it more difficult to keep their emotional balance. When their emotional balance shifts to

and fro in disorder, they will feel the pulse of the world quicken and stress will pour over them as if they were directly beneath its waterfall.

The antidote of willful control is the demonstration to yourself that you know how to shift into self-security when you feel insecure; how to shift into expression of the heart virtues when you bump up against a life challenge; and how to shift into surrender to your when you feel your ego looming large.

All easier said than done—to be certain, but then emotional self-mastery is a goal not a destination. Remember this. No one is looking down on you from some impenetrable height and judging your imperfect expression of the six heart virtues. When you judge yourself, there is often a sense of appropriateness in the judgment. This is actually a control response. If only you could control your emotions better. If only you could shift to the six heart virtues quicker. If only you could forgive easier and not hold a grudge against a friend or family member.

You can stand firmly on the idea that when you embark on this journey there will be times when you misstep, fall short and make “mistakes.” There may even be times when you will feel the rug has been pulled out from under you and you are helpless, without solution, and mired in self-loathing. It is in these times that you will need to apply the wisdom of your journey into emotional self-mastery, and though it may be imperfect or otherwise untested, it will serve you better than any other alternative advice, because, just as the ancients observed—the heart is the seat of the soul.

Call on this wisdom, not the abstraction of God or the “higher powers.” Call on your own wisdom of the six heart virtues and learn how to shift into their expression when life’s challenges knock upon your door. In doing this, you will teach others around you through this expression and intent. In doing this, you will change the electromagnetic field that surrounds you, the light ratio of your energetic field. Further, it will attract the likeness of conditions, as well as provide you with improved emotional health, mental clarity and physical well-being.

### **The Desire for the Next-Thing**

The third of the subtle desires is the need for the next-thing. The next-thing is usually considered to have more potency than the now-thing. Individuals often want to move on to the next idea, spiritual path, or healing modality before they have achieved a basic understanding of their inner state. They are experimenting at the surface levels without deference to the deeper values and meanings that exist within themselves.

Take for example the topic at hand: emotional self-mastery. Few people would argue that this is an important skill to possess independent of how it is defined in terms of its psychological or spiritual components. However, it is not an easy thing to master one’s emotions or to even gain a reasonable understanding of their subtle natures. Emotions are very multidimensional and operate from the subtle energetic levels to the down-to-earth levels of relationships, job performance, and personal well being. Because of this, emotions are a complex web of energy

exchange with those we cross paths with, whether in person or virtually through the mail, phone, text messaging, chat, or email, and this requires a perseverance and vigilance in our practice. It is not enough to dabble in it periodically.

The need for the next-thing is a desire to hit the “refresh button” in one’s belief system. Sometimes this is a good instinct to refresh your views and beliefs, but sometimes it scatters your attention at the surface of life’s purpose because you are always moving to the next-thing—the new modality, the new teaching, the new way to live. The inner state of your emotional life, the heart-centered values and the intuitive wisdom of your energetic heart, is an infinite resource of intelligence. When you move on to the next-thing, if the next-thing does not include living from the heart as its core principle, you may not evolve your access to this infinite source of intelligence that awaits inside of you—not in books, the Internet, an ashram, school, seminar or master teacher, but inside you.

While the next-thing may be marketed as the most potent truth ever to find its way to humanity, it most likely will pale in comparison to your own heart’s wisdom—if you know how to activate, access and express it. There are thousands of systems that promise enlightenment, and many of them have value, but the need for the next-thing often has the unintentional side effect of leading you away from the very instructor you most need to interface with: your heart’s intelligence and the emotional, energetic potency therein.

The rise and acceleration of complexity in life has also given rise to complexity in one’s spiritual life. There are



many so-called spiritual practices that require you to breathe in very specific manners and rhythms. Others require you to eat certain combinations of food and drink. Others prescribe very detailed meditations and postures. Still others define certain colors and sound frequencies that are activating to your soul.

Living from the heart is not centered on a precision of technique or complex practices of body, mind or emotional control. It is the simple moment-to-moment practice of the heart virtues in your daily affairs. Over time, this practice culminates in a virtuosity of precision and control, but this is the natural outcome of simple practices, not the rigid programs of training at the outset, and this is an important distinction.

The three subtle desires are each components of a general social dysfunction built upon an expired system of belief in the ambition of ego over the wisdom of heart expression. This is what the coming shift in consciousness, long predicted, is truly about. The wisdom of the heart will prevail and it will become the standard bearer of humanity, ushering in a new order of coherence and alignment to the higher frequencies of our divine nature and source.

## SECTION TWO: THE WHEN-WHICH-HOW-PRACTICE

Expressing the heart virtues is a practice not a philosophical discourse or abstraction in metaphysical exploration or scientific process leading to some verifiable “proof.” It requires that you understand its framework and begin practicing it in your daily life. This practice is best applied with an experimental attitude that operates without over-judging your performance of the when-which-how practice. The practice consists of:

- **When** you apply the heart virtues (or any subset therein) to a particular life situation;
- **which** one(s) you apply; and
- **how** you express the virtues into that situation.

There is no instruction manual for this process of when and what to apply and how to express it. There are far too many variables to assign clear-cut guidelines, and this is precisely why a high state of internal coherence is the ideal platform to operate in, because this enables your intuition to guide your practice in the moment for each specific situation.

It is in this practice that you will find the practical instructions of how to experience life in the moment and how to weave the six heart virtues into an expression that magnetizes your biofield to the highest consciousness of your total personality. This magnetic draw is what makes possible your inmost instructor (your soul) to reveal itself in the domains of duality. This is the goal of the when-

which-how practice: to draw your soul into the experience of the body-mind, and enable it to lead the expression of your life in the domains of time-space.

It is the heart's intention to be the enabling force for this goal. There is much written about the power of the mind, the influence of intention, the laws of attraction, and the mesh of these elements in the achievement of success in the material world. To be sure, I am not one to pour water on the fires of ambition that burn within a person to achieve their heart's desire, but it is an important distinction to understand that living from the heart is not connected to an ambition or achievement. It is the innate desire of the heart to draw the soul into the pilot's chair of the personality, knowing that this unlocks the blueprint of the individual to express the qualities of light stored within them.

This does not mean that the individual will suddenly begin to express wisdom in the manner in which humanity is accustomed—books, lectures, websites, music, art, etc. For most of us, the expression of the qualities of light stored within us is contained in the tiniest details of our heart's expression in the most fleeting moments of our life. It is as though we leave a trail of light and divine sparks as we walk our life, and this activity—not the writings, the sharing and gaining of knowledge—is what is needed most at this time. This is what is unlocked and shared so faithfully from your heart.

There is a dawning awareness within humanity that its destiny is configured by the mind of the species—in a sense—its collective intention. A similar process operates at the individual level, and scientists and researchers like

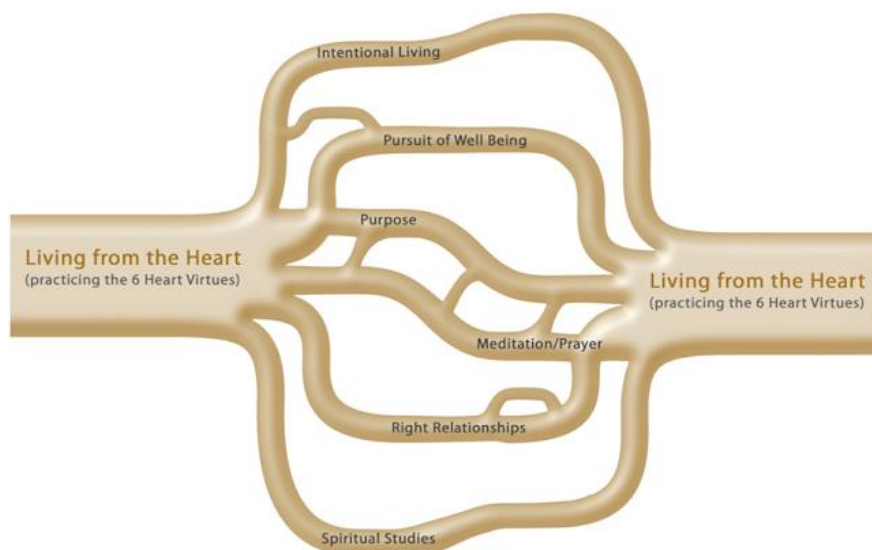
Schwartz, Korotkov, Popp, McCraty, Tiller, Radin, Emoto, Nelson, Penrose, and dozens of other researchers are trying to illuminate how consciousness can influence and communicate beyond the body in which it is housed; how consciousness can absorb or access knowledge systems beyond its direct study. These researchers are devising scientific, three-dimensionally based experiments to analyze the sub-quantum realms in which consciousness originates (a little like using a telescope to study the nature of atoms).

They will find the faint echoes of realization as they touch the edges of this greater reality, but it does not satisfy the “what-to-do-about it” questions that arise as one discovers the edges of this vast mysterious puzzle called consciousness. The answers to the what-to-do-about-it questions are contained inside the practice of the heart virtues because the practice establishes a feedback system. This system refines consciousness, enlivening its discrimination and opening its ability to see energetic responses to the practice that enable the experiencer to adjust their expression of the light-energy associated with each of the six heart virtues.

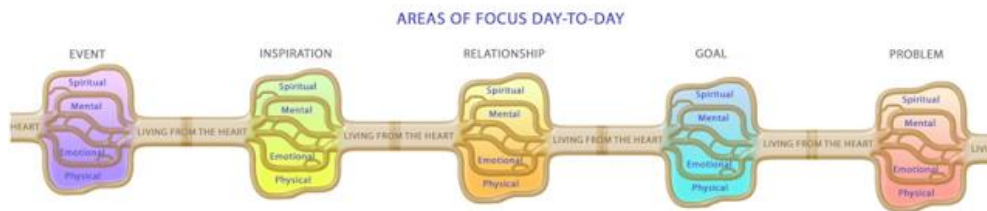
### **The Six Heart Virtues as the Trunk Line**

One of the main guiding principles of the when-which-how practice is that the trunk line (core focus) of one’s life experience is living from the heart. The gravitational core of our highest purpose is like radiating magnetism, attracting into our life the purpose for which we incarnated. For example, if your spiritual studies arise

from the trunk line of the when-which-how practice (living from the heart), a magnetic field is created that attracts spiritual studies that are aligned to your fundamental core practice. Thus, when you pursue your spiritual studies, they are woven back into the trunk line in terms of their relevance and usefulness to living from the heart. They are self-reinforcing and resonant with the trunk line, and, to the degree they are not, your powers of discrimination are activated to resolve this lack of resonance.



Many people have different trunk lines like expression of my purpose or the pursuit of well-being. These are not bad choices, but it is important to understand that they create a different gravitational core or resonant field in one's life, which in turn, attracts a different system of energetic branches. The branches arising from the trunk line related to living from the heart evolve in alignment and resonance to the trunk line. The learning gained in the pursuit of one of the branches will return to the trunk line and support and nourish it. Like all trunk lines it is self-reinforcing, whether it is selfish in nature or altruistic.



In your daily life as you encounter an event, problem or goal—or perhaps have an inspiration or new relationship—you can apply the when-which-how practice to these encounters and orchestrate your encounter from this perspective. Remember that within every encounter there are different dimensions of energy: physical, emotional, mental and spiritual. The complexity is quite daunting if you think about it, but the practice, as said before, is not judged by its perfect expression, or its analytic virtuosity, but is performed and guided by intent.

The areas in which we focus in our everyday life shift between events, inspirations, relationships, goals, and problems, and within each of these encounters we have multiple playing fields from an energetic perspective (i.e., physical, emotional, mental, spiritual). When you express one or more of the heart virtues into an encounter you can then observe its influence on the event or participants therein. The observation can then guide your follow-on expression, its intensity, to whom it is directed, and its duration. This cycle of expression and observation enables a more fine-grained expression, and it is this adjustment that leads you forward on the path to emotional self-mastery.

## **What's in it for me?**

I can almost hear the question in chorus as I write this paper. Somewhere in your mind you are probably asking the questions: “Why do I care about emotional self-mastery? What will I gain by applying the practice of when-which-how?” I can understand the basis of these two questions because our social order is understandably geared to ambition and achievement, and usually for the sake of some gain, reward, and/or recognition.

Emotional self-mastery is a reflection of your maturity as a spiritual being within the worlds of time-space. In other words, the emotional energy within your heart center is the vehicle in which you express your [?] into the dimensions of time-space, and provides a grounding of these energies upon earth and the sharing of these energies with those beings that live upon her—both human and animal. Thus, the reason emotional self-mastery is so vital to attain is that it enables your highest purpose and soul presence to reveal itself in your present lifetime.

It is not an exaggeration to say that if you possess emotional self-mastery, you live as soul upon the earth with minimal distortion from your physical body and mind. The body and mind become more of an enabling force for your spirit to operate in the worlds of time-space, and provide less dampening or hindrance to your soul or inner spirit. In simple terms, you live as soul, which is your purpose distilled to its purest definition.

The original essence that is you, was forged a tempered spirit when first born. Only in its journey through the worlds of time-space does it find immaturity, weakness,

vulnerability, and the judgment and separation of the mind. The emotional prism is the healing instrument of both the body and mind because it enables the original essence to come forward, to be explicit in this reality and orchestrate the encounters of your body and mind for the greatest good.

The when-which-how practice is transformative, reinforcing a new way of being that empowers you to detach from the habitual ways of thinking and doing that modern society has so effectively established. It moves you from the feeling of separation to the sensibility of interconnection—the belief that we consciousness is more vibrant and meaningful than me consciousness, and it is in the former state of being that truly great things can be magnetized and attracted into the consciousness of humanity as a whole.

Now, to the second question: “What will I gain by applying the practice of when-which-how?” As you begin to apply the practice you will feel that what is happening in the outside world—both personal and non-personal—is not defining or shaping your inner state, unless you allow it to. In other words, you will gain a sense of stability and control. This is one noticeable aspect of progress early in the application of the practice.

An emerging sense of empowerment evolves as you find your artistry and your competence of the practice improves, and for most this will require three to six months of dedicated practice. This is the realization that the well-grooved patterns of the mind and ego-personality are not dictating the way you interact with an encounter or



event, and that your intuitive faculties are awakening to the subtle expression of the six heart virtues.

The six heart virtues have precisely sixty-three combinations of expression. These combinations are further varied by the sequence in which they are expressed, their duration, and the energetic expression (physical, emotional, mental, spiritual) used to convey the virtue(s) to an event, individual, group, or encounter. It is this intricacy of expression that pulls in the intuitive faculty once activated by the initial practice. It is this intuitive faculty that you must learn to trust despite what your inner mental dialogue might be telling you.

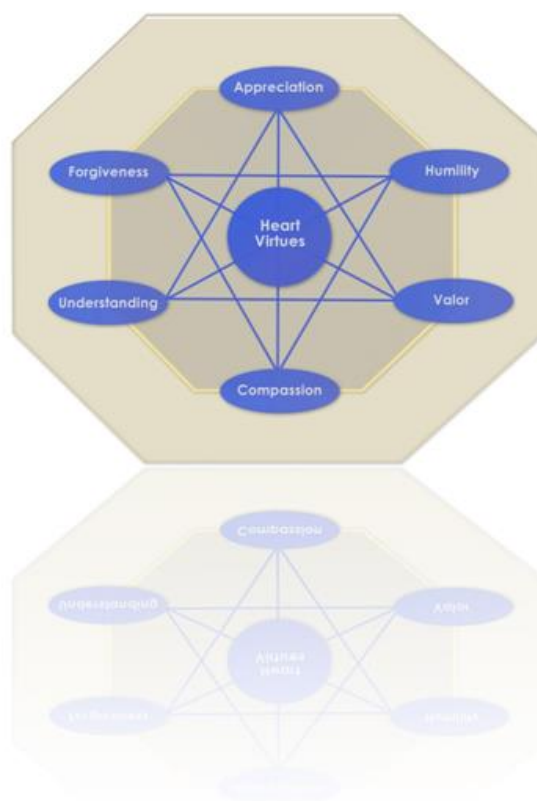
Remember that the intuitive sight stems from your heart's intelligence, ascending from your [?], and it is this deepening connection that enables you to wield the sixty-three combinations of expression with the artistry and competency that the practice requires in order to progress to emotional self-mastery. In other words, you must trust your intuitive nature, and in doing so, you will instinctively understand how to apply the six heart virtues in your life's various encounters.

Take notice that the timeframe to achieve an initial level of emotional self-mastery is three to six months. Not a long time to be sure, but in today's instant gratification world and mind-driven ambition it may seem a prolonged period of time. The duty of the practitioner is to persevere, and not to focus on the outcomes or their subjective analysis of their performance of the practice. The mind and ego-personality are more than willing to project their analysis and judgment during this phase of development, but this judgment is meted out without genuine

understanding of the deeper processes that guide the practitioner in their practice.

## **The Six Heart Virtues Grid Meditation**

Within the first year, normally towards its end, the practitioner of living from the heart becomes increasingly aware of a system or framework that they are operating within that could be likened to an energy grid that surrounds them. It would be similar to visualizing the grid, represented on the next page, and operating in the middle circle, which is the symbolic position of divine love—the intersection of the six heart virtues.



Operating from within this grid is a form of meditation, but not as we normally think of meditation: the internal state of relaxed awareness. This is more of an external state of active awareness and expression, but one that stems from the stability of living in the “center circle” of divine love, knowing that you are surrounded with the skills of the when-which-how practice. This practice enables you to rise from your center in any direction in order to infuse an encounter with the appropriate emotional energy; this is healing, rebalancing, and revitalizing energy from your heart to share itself with any circumstance or human condition.

This is an active meditation that is practiced throughout the day and requires a degree of visualization as you move from encounter to encounter. The visualization you can hold in your imagination is that the six heart virtues grid surrounds you like an energetic hologram, extending out three to five meters in all directions from your body. As you practice this visualization, you will in time begin to see it as an extension of your energetic body, not a separate imagined grid, but the actual structure of your energetic body. This replaces the persistent abstraction of the chakra system of colors, frequencies, and traits associated therein.

The critical factor is that you envision the centermost part of your being enmeshed in divine love. It is as if your beingness—regardless of where you are physically in the world or what you are encountering—is saturated in divine love and masterfully connected to the six heart virtues and their sixty-three variations. This energetic grid, anchored in divine love, is capable of mobilizing in an instant,

assembling its expression of the six heart virtues with ever-increasing virtuosity.

The six heart virtues grid meditation is a means to anchor the framework into your daily life. It is a way for you to seat the principles into your behaviors through the imaginative process of your mind and the belief constitution of your heart working together in alignment to the formative intent of living from the heart.

### **The Virtuous Cycle Technique**

We have all heard of vicious cycles—when negative behaviors seem to feed on one another, replaying the feelings of greed, envy, bitterness, jealousy, blame, judgment, or anger, as though they were engrained in our very natures, and we were powerless to stop reaping their ill-fated effects. The vicious cycle of negative emotions depletes our energy, stifles our creativity, and, if unchecked, leads us to the dry desert of depression, choking the flow of spirit between our heart and mind.

There is also the virtuous cycle that generates the positive outcomes of living from the heart in all dimensions of one's life. The when-which-how practice is the power generator of the virtuous cycle as it applies to the individual living from the heart. One of the core features of this practice is providing it an energy source just as you would need to provide a power generator its raw source of energy like the wind, water, or sun.

One of the sources of energy that supports the when-which-how practice is the virtuous cycle technique, and it

requires that you invest ten to twenty minutes of your time, as frequently as you are guided, to perform a simple energetic inflow. This is an effortless exercise of breathing in a calm and alert state of mind and body, and then repeating aloud the six virtues in the following order:

- Appreciation
- Compassion
- Forgiveness
- Humility
- Understanding
- Valor

When you say each name allow it to echo or reverberate inside of you as though your internal state consisted of a vast canyon. As you continue to repeat these words in the sequential order of appreciation, compassion, forgiveness, humility, understanding, and valor, think about their energetic meaning; feel them, and let this feeling fill you, expanding into every cell of your body. The more you perform this technique you will begin to see how the six heart virtues thread together, remaining distinct yet interconnected like a mosaic platform. Each word energetically carries a frequency that becomes increasingly grounded into your body-mind consciousness as you perform this exercise.

Like any cycle that repeats, there is a momentum path that refreshes the cycle and keeps it moving through the gravity of distractions that we all encounter in our daily lives. The virtuous cycle is maintained through this simple

exercise, so I recommend, especially at the outset of your journey into the application of the when-which-how practice, to use it as a means of generating the virtuous cycle.

Over time, you will be guided by your inmost self to shift this technique from internal contemplation and energetic assimilation, to expression—or sending the energetic codes of each word outward. Initially this usually takes the form of radiating the energy of each word to loved ones, friends and family, spirit guides, and those whom you have a special connection to. This expression can also be directed to events and the people and/or animals enmeshed in them.

For those of you that have been ensnared in vicious cycles of emotional disarray, this technique is particularly helpful in breaking out of the “quicksand” of the vicious cycle. I realize, as techniques go, it seems very simple and therefore, you might ask how it could have a profound effect; but the repetition of the words have a power unto themselves because of the deep and layered meaning contained in each word. Before you start the technique, read the appendix to this paper where a preparatory definition for each of the six heart virtues is offered.

## **SECTION THREE: THE HEART-MIND INTENTION**

Part of this practice intersects with what some might refer to as the Law of Attraction, power of thought, or the imprint of intention. These concepts relate to how the focused thoughts of the mind—coupled to the expectation of belief—can influence our experience of reality. There is some truth in these concepts, but they are not the drivers of reality. Reality is a much more complex thing than being a result of intentional focus or mental visualization or prayer.

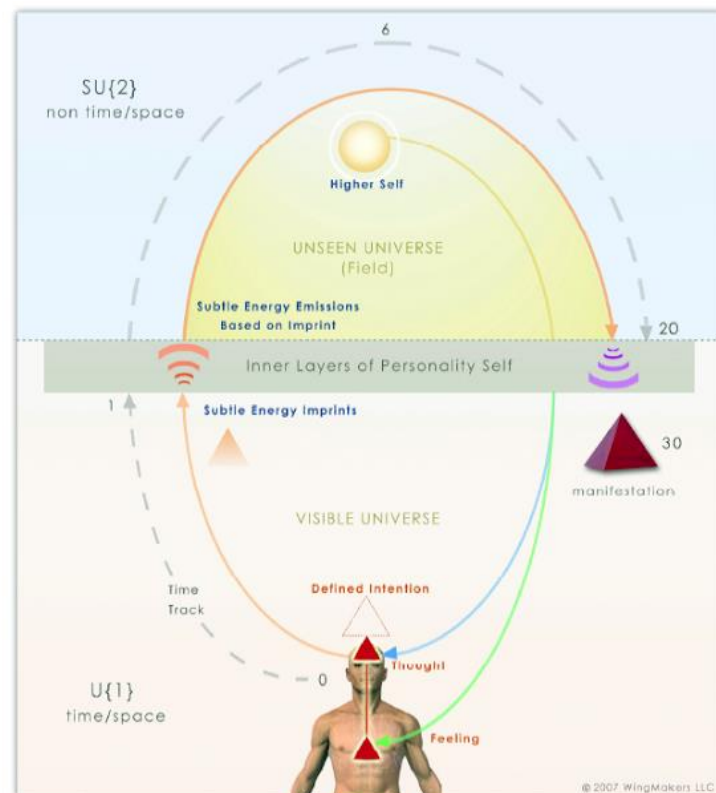
Part of reality is a result of your individual blueprint; part of your experience relates to your setting up experiences for you; part is a consequence of your past actions; part of it is a reflection of your thoughts and emotions and their energetic attraction; and part is the desire of your to experience new energy fields.

Only one of these elements is influenced by intention or the Law of Attraction, and certainly the fundamental blueprint of the Designing Force, as co-created by your and First Source, is not subject to the intentions or prayerful petitions of your ego-personality, no matter how eloquent or heartfelt.

It is a fallacy to believe that the entire matrix of reality conforms to the Law of Attraction or that the mind can direct matter with precision and consistency. Nonetheless, there are pockets of reality where your intention or power of thought-belief can be influential and reality will accommodate your thought-belief, sometimes with

remarkable precision. The when-which-how practice is one such place or “pocket” that you can carve out from reality’s matrix and influence with your heart-mind intention. Indeed, this is part of the broader practice.

The heart-mind intention imprints subtle energies within the environment, which filter through the personality's inner layers or quantum levels, and imprint—at the speed of light—upon the higher self. This imprinting is strongest within the individual, however it also “seeps” into the greater environment and even those with whom the environment is shared. The “environment,” in this definition, is not the physical space, but rather the emotional ecology at the quantum level that connects people independent of time-space considerations.



This specific type of emotional ecology is generated from the heart-mind operating in synchrony and



alignment, focused on a very specific intention to operate within the when-which-how practice. It can extend to unimaginable distances and times because it operates in non-time and non-space. The heart's domain encompasses this ecology and can emit subtle impressions to anyone connected to this ecology. In this case, distance is a trivial factor because we're speaking of photonic energy not magnetic or electrical—so someone connected to you a continent away is quite literally closer than a heartbeat

The heart-mind intention operates similarly to how it's depicted in the diagram above. The  $U\{1\}$  time/space is our normal environment while the  $SU\{2\}$  is a more highly ordered and coherent field that operates outside of our time/space. I will not delve into this for now as it is a conversation composed of many layers. For now, I will focus on the process in which the heart and mind collectively send subtle energy imprints upon the inner layers of the personality self. You can feel these imprints filtering inside you like layers of sediment that filter through the water to rest on the bottom of a lake or river.

These imprints are the outgrowth of your heart-mind intention—both consciously and unconsciously. The intentional energy is a confluence of the conscious “writings” of the heart and mind coupled to the deeper stirrings that are stored within the blueprint of the individual. The intuitive centers of the personality that reside within the energetic heart are more attuned to the blueprint and the deeper purpose of the soul, while the mind, operating through the ego-personality, is more attuned to the heart-mind intentions created in, and as an outgrowth of, the worlds of time-space.

You could quite literally say that there are two “books” that define your purpose: One is written by the that is indeed co-created with First Source, and the other is written by your heart-mind based on the perceived needs of the ego-personality in the worlds of time-space. The book that most people read, at least in part, is the second one. A dim recognition exists in some people that another book exists, but seldom do they discover it.

I am suggesting, in this paper, that the first book—the one written by your —is contained in the actions of the six heart virtues, and that the key for discovering and reading this “book” or higher purpose is contained in the when-which-how practice. Why is this important? If you read only the book of purpose written by your heart-mind, you will see it is entwined with the reality of the ego-personality inside time-space. Its trunk line might be enlightenment or greed. Whichever it is, its primary concern is one lifetime, one individual (you).

When these subtle energy imprints accumulate upon the inner layers of the personality, they begin to make an impression that transitions between the worlds of time-space and the dimensions of the soul within the individual. The soul evaluates these impressions and determines their state of alignment to the 's own blueprint and learning requirements. If they are aligned, they are then added to the energetic build-up that atom-by-atom coalesces into manifestation in the time-space domain.

This manifestation operates independently of linear time. In other words, the heart-mind intention—as it enters the higher dimensions of non-time-space—begins to manifest in space and time, but the time might be in the

future or past. This is a subject all its own and it is complicated to address in words that can be easily understood by the mind, so I will only touch on its surface level structure. The deeper textures and intricacies will be described in a later paper, or perhaps will be the discovery you make as you work with these materials.

Some of you will find impediments to manifestation, independent of your presumed actions, thoughts, and words, and to some extent this is true. The higher blueprints of First Source overshadow the manifestations of your ego-personality. There is also the burn-off of centuries-old energetics which have accumulated and act as buffers to manifestation. Just know that if you find resistance to your dreams, hopes, and prayers, it is not always a result of your behaviors or the Law of Attraction being unresponsive to your skills. There is a tremendous accumulation of the third-dimensional energetics and these constrain the higher energetics born in your higher practices. But these are the very conditions or catalysts that transform or burn off the old energetics and create the shift into the higher dimensions of being. This is all part of the reason for your incarnation: To transform the accumulation of third-dimensional grids of energy into higher dimensional grids that can shift these energetics and move the planet and its “visitors” to its next incarnation within the higher octave of new energies, discoveries, and supernal destiny that supports the Grand Portal.

The degree to which we apply our heart-mind intention usually correlates to the degree we genuinely accept our divine power as co-creators of new realities. If we fear our divinity, our application of intention is typically

diminished even if we practice it with diligence. Simply practicing a new discipline doesn't attract its full power. There must be an attendant belief—genuineness in the practice—that what you are doing is part of a larger plan; that it is connected, like bricks in a wall, to a larger purpose.

This attendant belief often takes a while to accrue its power. It is not something you can manufacture artificially. In a sense, it is part of the learning curve and grows over time as you become more comfortable with the practice or technique.

## SECTION FOUR: OUR INTERCONNECTION

*A human being is a part of the whole, called by us “Universe,” a part limited in time and space. He experiences himself, his thoughts and feelings as something separated from the rest, a kind of optical delusion of his consciousness. This delusion is a kind of prison for us, restricting us to our personal desires and to affection for a few persons nearest to us. Our task must be to free ourselves from this prison by widening our circle of compassion to embrace all living creatures and the whole of nature in its beauty. Nobody is able to achieve this completely, but the striving for such achievement is in itself a part of the liberation and a foundation for inner security. — Albert Einstein*

If we accept the view that heaven is not a place but a state of consciousness, we can place our emphasis on realization—expanding our consciousness—instead of the pursuit of heaven. By doing the inner work and learning how to express the six heart virtues into our life to the benefit of all, we find our sense of interconnection with one another growing, and we discern the wholeness and unity in what formerly appeared to be separateness and isolation.

The habit of looking outward through the eyes of separation is changed through the application of the when-which-how practice because its signature strength is aligning the individual with a sense of service to

humanity—not because humanity is broken or suffering in misery—but because it kindles the natural perception we have of our intrinsic interconnection with one another that we feel within our hearts.

One of the perennial truths that psychologists have uncovered is that the best determiner of happiness is the degree to which a person has meaningful relationships. Relationships that are truly meaningful have a foundation of emotional maturity that imbues genuineness to the relationship, by means of assisting others to flow through the density of everyday encounters with greater ease and understanding. This goes beyond trust. You can trust someone who is honest, but it doesn't necessarily signify that the relationship is meaningful and authentic in service to a greater good.

There is a story in chaos theory that infinitesimally small actions can eventually cause major changes (i.e., the flutter of butterfly wings ultimately causing hurricanes on the other side of the globe). This story is a good metaphor for the intelligent communication that occurs from the smallest particles of existence spanning out to galactic scales. There is a vast interconnection, not only between humans, but between all particles of existence. And this interconnection is intelligent, communicative, and part of a Designing Force that we all exist within.

### **Emotional Coherence**

Music is coherent sound, where rhythm, melody, tempo, and harmony unite to produce its coherence; without these imposing forces, we live in a random sound field of noises.

Similarly, the six heart virtues take the emotional energy we are all imbued with and impose coherence, and in this coherence our emotional energy is transformed from a “noisy radiation” into a healing, directed and transformative force.

Imagine you are at the ocean and you’re watching a beautiful sunset. The light radiates in striking colors of pink, orange and red, glistening off of the turquoise water. The air itself seems to hold this radiating color field in some suspended, slow-motion dance. Now, from a scientific perspective, the light is incoherent. Despite its spectacular colors, the light photons are unaligned, fanning out in every imaginable direction.

For the sake of contrast, let’s imagine this same light were somehow made coherent like a laser beam of light, so that all of the light particles or photons were traveling in the same direction on the identical wavelength. The light is now transformed into a new functionality, one that can now be used for surgical applications or measuring the distance between the earth and moon with never-before-imagined accuracy—to name just two examples.

These different aspects of light are good metaphors to understand as they apply to emotions. Emotions, when incoherent, radiate in all directions as energy, creating an impression within the space or field of our senses. Sometimes this impression is beautiful like a shimmering sunset when the emotions are soft and light, and sometimes it is more akin to a furious storm when there is anger or depression. If our emotional energy can be aligned in coherence it can be transformed to a higher functionality like the laser, and its range goes well beyond

the range of our senses, it can truly touch the outer edges of our world or delve deeply into the inner realms of soul.

The keystone of the when-which-how practice is coherence, the reason being that the expression of the six heart virtues builds coherence and the attendant ability to radiate your emotional energy to selected targets anywhere, and to any time. This is the outreach of soul—to heart to mind to heart to outflow—and in this cycle, the emotional energy becomes the connective ingredient that integrates the individual with the community of humankind, and even more generally, to all life forms.

There is growing awareness that humans are part of a vast ecology of energy that includes the sun and planets within our solar system, and perhaps even beyond. Our sun generates space weather that interacts with earth's geomagnetic field and creates profound influences to our weather, mood, chemical balance, and even the fine-tuned senses of our intuition and psychic abilities. It is not a leap to say that the sun—ninety-three million miles away—influences our primary centers of the heart and brain in surprisingly vibrant ways.

### **Collective Human Energetic Field**

The research of Halberg, Persinger, Braud, and dozens of others have shown that the sun's geomagnetic field affects earth's geomagnetic field which affects our personal electromagnetic field, including our critical heart and brain rhythms. In the near future, this will be shown to be a two-way street. That is to say, humans, on a collective



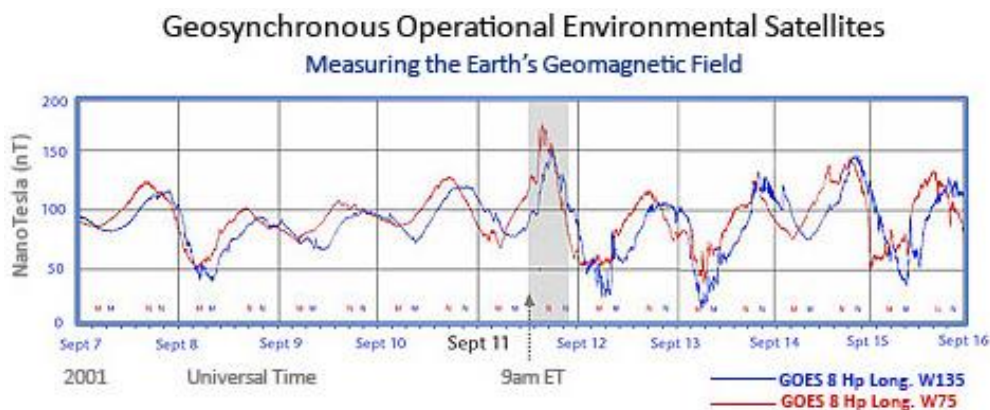
level—energetically through their emotional radiation—can influence Earth and our broader solar system.

I will cite one example as evidence of this interaction. NOAA (National Oceanic & Atmospheric Administration), in order to study and prepare for major weather anomalies like hurricanes, has several geosynchronous satellites that monitor a variety of weather influences, including geomagnetic fluctuations of the earth. Two of their Geosynchronous Operational Environmental Satellites (GOES 8 and 10), orbiting geosynchronously, produced in 2001 a provocative view into how collective human energetics can influence the earth's geomagnetic field.

As the graph below shows, these two satellites, orbiting 60 degrees apart (Long. W75 and Long. W135) over the equator at an altitude of 22,300 miles, detected a significant spike in earth's geomagnetic flux as the event of September 11, 2001 started and an increasing level of incoherence or flux continued to unfold five days after the event.

I am not trying to posit a scientific theory, but follow this logical progression if you will. Humans emanate an electromagnetic field—the heart being its most powerful source, radiating out in a toroidal, constantly fluxing pattern eight to fifteen feet from the body. This energetic pattern changes form constantly as we think different thoughts and feel different feelings. The feelings of our heart have the greatest effect on the signature pattern of our electromagnetic field.

When an event occurs as dramatic as the September 11, 2001 incident, the collective human electromagnetic field is affected more deeply than usual because it impacts on a much larger percentage of the overall population at an emotional level. To help you visualize this, imagine a fog of light that encircles the whole planet, representing the Collective Human Energetic Field (CHEF). It's a matter of ratios, the more we as individuals add ingredients of stress, fear and uncertainty, the more the CHEF becomes incoherent and unstable, which in turn is instantly detected by earth and processed into its own geomagnetic field.



In other words, planets and stars affect us, and, we in turn, affect them. This is the interconnection of consciousness at the level of energy, or interwoven fields of energy that resonate, entangle and inform. It is like a symphony of sound and light waves that emanate from the CHEF, interacting with the symphony of sound and light waves emanating from earth's Geomagnetic Field (EGF). The two—CHEF and EGF—dance together in a reciprocal energetic exchange and it is for this reason that what happens with CHEF can either facilitate or hinder the earth's ability to shift and evolve gracefully.

Let me make this point more practical. We have seen the idea virus of global warming spread across the news

media and enter our schools, governments, businesses, and even religious quarters. The world seems poised to make shifts that are in the best interest of our planet, symbolic of humanity's role as stewards of earth. Humanity has become aware of how its ecological insensitivity has created dire conditions on the planet; conditions, that left unchecked, could create enormous catastrophes in weather, geology and social changes. So, we have the motivation and knowledge, but do we have agreement on the action plans and the inner commitment to implement them?

What will facilitate the transformation of this knowledge and facts to an agreed upon action plan and commitment to implementation? If we can become increasingly aware that humanity and earth dance together in the clear-headed realms of evolutionary expansion; that there is an interconnection and that this interconnection is mutually responsive and reinforcing; perhaps then we will turn the key. When we look upon the CHEF as vital to our well-being and the clarity of our connection to earth, we will not only turn the key, we will open the door and walk through to the next dimension... together.

### **Informing the CHEF**

I realize that these concepts are very wide and deep, almost so much so that they seem unrelated to our personal lives, but if you examine them carefully, you will see how they bring a new meaning to your life. If you consider that you are emitting an energy field throughout your existence, regardless of what you believe your existence

consists of in terms of space-time, the one thing you can be fully responsible for is the signature field that you radiate into the CHEF. Every human, every life form actually, contributes to the whole in this way, though with different intensities and effects.

This is why it is so important to understand the deeper perceptions of interconnection and raise your awareness of how you personally interconnect with the whole of life. It is a matter of taking responsibility for the emotional and mental energies that intertwine within your electromagnetic (energetic) field and contribute a living presence to the CHEF, and by association, to earth itself.

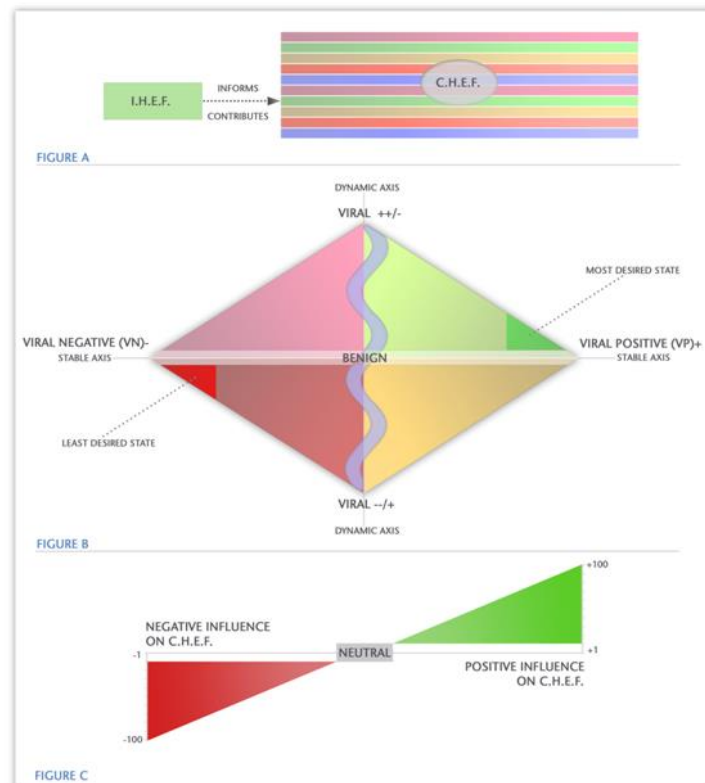
We each have a dynamic, ever-changing emotional fingerprint that we leave on the CHEF, and its effects can endure through time and space. In order to keep a complex subject relatively simple and straightforward, I will paint the differences with only a few colors, but bear in mind that the range is near endless in variation.

As depicted in the diagram on the next page, figure A shows that the Individual Human Energetic Field (IHEF) informs and contributes to the CHEF, and that the CHEF is comprised of thousands of facets (colors) each reflecting a point on the diamond-shaped object depicted in figure B. I am using the term viral in two distinct ways: On the left side of the diamond, on its horizontal (stable) axis, there is a negative viral effect; on the right side it is positive. The terms negative and positive refer to the IHEF and the qualitative nature of its contribution to the CHEF. The term viral indicates the degree to which an IHEF has the ability to influence other IHEF contributions to become more like itself simply through exposure to the viral IHEF.

For example, a single Viral Positive IHEF will be more potent than one thousand benign IHEFs. Thus, those individuals who operate in a stable positive or negative viral state have a significant and disproportional influence on the CHEF. Most people operate on or near the vertical axis (dynamic) where they fluctuate between the poles of the negative and positive IHEF, winding their way in a snake-like pattern between the positive and negative. In doing so, their IHEF contribution tends to lack potency, though because of the sheer numbers in this rank, they collectively set the normative values.

### **Detecting the CHEF**

The key lesson in this is to realize that just as earth's geomagnetic field detects the CHEF, so do we as individuals, even though we may not be conscious or understand how it is possible. There is also a magnetic attraction that plays an influential role here. When our IHEF evolves to a more stable, viral positive state, we detect the viral influences of those IHEF contributions from the most potent viral positive sources, and we are influenced in our behaviors and attitudes accordingly.



For most of us, this happens beneath our conscious “radar.” If you examine the Figure B diagram and assess where you believe your IHEF is positioned on any given day, consider how you can evolve it to the Most Desired State (small green triangle). The when-which-how practice is an accelerator that will move you in this direction or help you remain there.

I know this subject is complicated, and from my perspective, it is not easy to explain with words or static, two-dimensional diagrams. I would ask you to be patient and persevere in your understanding if you feel uncertain of the deeper meanings in this section related to Interconnection. These are important elements in your motivation and intent relative to the unfolding of your purpose and ability to practice the six heart virtues.

Remember that interconnection is attended with interaction and emotional resonance. While there are some who would downplay the significance of whether that interaction and resonance is anchored in positive or negative virtues, there is a difference of enormous consequence between the two poles—to you as an individual, to the collective of humanity and to the earth itself. At one level, there is no positive or negative in the sense of good and evil, but in the dimensions of time-space and the prevailing construct of evolution and ascension of consciousness, it matters a great deal.

The when-which-how practice is like a homing device that helps you navigate to the stable, viral positive place that enables your purpose to truly radiate and have impact within this world at this time. There is very little glamour associated with this practice as it leaves no historical footprint in the context of a material legacy. In the case of the when-which-how practice and the viral positive position, these are largely invisible as they are not made up of material things, but instead are an energetic transmission. Their potency is emotional energy aligned to specific behaviors which express themselves in our words and actions. You cannot bottle these up in material things, unless, purely for artistic purposes you want to convey their shadowy essence for others to acknowledge.

If you desire to achieve emotional self-mastery and contribute to the CHEF in a way that accelerates its evolution gracefully and naturally, then living from the heart is an excellent path to walk. I have suggested many times that patience plays a role because the path is not easy and has many, many layers of nuance and subtlety, but if

your purpose has eluded you or you fear its tardiness is unending, this path and the practices described herein will guide you to reclaim your purpose and to live a meaningful life.



## **SECTION FIVE: EVENT TEMPLES AND THEIR PURPOSE**

The when-which-how practice is a core practice, faith agnostic, and grounded in the perennial wisdom of sages and the interior voices of spiritual guides throughout time. It is the central, activating principle upon which the Event Temples are designed. Event Temples are the coalescing force for the community of when-which-how practitioners to collectively send their energetic voices to the needful ears of those enmeshed in the densities of a world awash in change, disenfranchisement, separation, greed, and profound, but fearful changes of a new reality.

The Event Temples have a multidimensional purpose that has been alluded to in this paper, but will, in this section, be described in more detail.

When we contribute our individual energetic field (IHEF) to a selected target as defined in a specific Event Temple, we are performing six important functions:

1. We are practicing the six heart virtues in a communal way and learning how we can synchronize our heart's capacity to send its energetic qualities with others and create a resonant, supportive field that assists others.
2. There is the collective and individual contribution to the CHEF and helping to increase the vibrancy of the viral positive therein.
3. Every time you participate in an Event Temple, you are crystallizing your purpose as an energetic being in the worlds of time-space. You are kindling a key objective for which you embodied in a human instrument and are

awakening the energetic reach of your consciousness, empowering your sense of connection to all life.

4. Just as the CHEF exists for humanity, there also exists group CHEFs that can evolve at a much faster tempo than the overall species. The participants of the Event Temples will create their own CHEF and this CHEF will evolve very rapidly to act as a facilitator of the viral positive energetics.

5. Each participant of the Event Temples will be provided an online tracking system free of charge that will enable them to evaluate their progress over time on the when-which-how practice and each of the six heart virtues. This will enable an accelerated trajectory of learning for each individual, and a supportive system to persist upon the path.

6. The Event Temples will be a practice area for energetic transmissions of an individual and collective kind. In this practice you will feel the support of a conscious community and refine your artistry of expression of the six heart virtues. The Event Temples website will be a place where people can share their ideas and technique-enhancements with people of similar interest.

The Event Temples website is a dynamic, online analogue of living from the heart, and this e-paper is the foundation stone of the Event Temples.

## SECTION SIX: PRACTICE OVER EXPERIENCE

*Just as we cannot talk of visual beauty if we are blind, so we cannot discuss inner spiritual beauty if we have never perceived it. — Plotinus*

Plotinus echoes the sentiment of most individuals that are on a spiritual path. The seeking of the inner spiritual beauty is thought to be a vision, illumination, cosmic consciousness or out-of-the-body experience where a profound truth of the universe reveals itself and we are forever changed like Paul struck by light on the road to Damascus. Thus, we seek the experience of the spiritual worlds before we have undertaken the practice that reveals its meaning.

There have been thousands of people who have had profound experiences through deep meditative states, or prayer, or hallucinogens, or lucid dreams. And sometimes, out of the blue, the universe will reveal an aspect of its supernal beauty quite independent of our own efforts. When the experience has faded into memory, it is sought again, again, and again. The experience of the inner worlds, the spiritual fountainhead from which all life appears and into which it disappears, is often sought before, or instead of, the expression of our soul through the virtues of the heart.

The reason is quite simple: we desire to claim spiritual experience as our natural birthright on one level, and on a

more human level, we want undeniable proof that what we are invested in as a belief system is indeed authentic. To be sure, it is our natural birthright to live in the enlightened states of interconnection with the reality matrix of the Designing Force, but to do so requires a balance between what we express and what we experience. The when-which-how practice creates the opportunity to experience the spiritual beauty and appreciate its deeper meanings because what we express magnetically attracts the experience that is aligned to our expression.

There are roadmaps to the structure of the universe, and these can be attention-grabbing to learn, though they seldom conform to a single perspective. You can study hundreds if not thousands of books that depict the soul, the spiritual worlds, the higher wisdom, and you will certainly learn from these endeavors, as they can be part of the path of enlightenment. I would caution, however, that you read not more than you practice the six heart virtues. The encyclopedic mind is far less magnetic to the spiritual terrain than the expressive and expansive heart.

One of the key words in Plotinus' quote is "discuss," but there is little or no purpose in discussing inner spiritual beauty unless it is expressed in your behaviors first and then attracted into your sphere of experience as a result. Only in rare and most often inexplicable cases, does it work in reverse. By talking about the inner spiritual realms you might activate an interest in the experiential side of the equation, and this is good, but if the interest is already there and you desire only to talk or discuss, you will seldom attract the experience you seek, and almost never the meaning.

In the Lyricus teachings, there is a construct that if the aspirant desires to speak of divine experiences then they are unaware of their meaning. It is like a friend who describes a dream they had, and you can see so clearly what the dream means, but your friend who experienced it firsthand is oblivious to the dream's deeper messages. The meaning is absent because the dream is too abstract to them. This is similar to how the aspirant is with the spiritual wisdom, seeking the experience of spiritual worlds before the practice has enlivened their understanding of the meaning.

And so we are back to the concept of living from the heart because here there is room to grow your own knowledge, to find your own sense of artistry in the wielding of the six heart virtues. Here you can define the magnetics of your IHEF. It only requires you to redirect your attention from the discussion of the inner spiritual worlds to the when-which-how practice, knowing that if this is accomplished the experiences will find their way to you. More importantly, when they do, their deeper significance will be known without interpretation or comparison.

## CONCLUSION

I appreciate that some of you would prefer that I detail the when-which-how practice and provide all of the sixty-three combinations and which ones are appropriate for each situation. But the practice requires that every individual make these assessments in their self-luminous journey. Thus, the path is, by its nature of appreciating your individuality, not formulaic.

Regardless of who you are, were or want to be, you are first and foremost a spiritual being composed of an energetic field that expresses the degree of your emotional mastery or lack thereof. Beneath this energetic field may await talents of healing, telepathy, potent intuitive insight, artistic genius, or influential teachings, but what I'm suggesting is that these talents are secondary abilities to the primary gifts of expression from your inmost spiritual selfhood. These are precisely what the six heart virtues and living from the heart unlock and release, not only into your IHEF, but also into the CHEF, and this constitutes your highest purpose within the worlds of time-space.

You can choose to undertake this path as an agnostic, Christian, Muslim, Jew or any other religious affiliation. It does not matter to whom or whether you give your faith and loyalty. The important thing is that you understand your purpose as a spiritual being and never lose sight of this purpose even in the midst of turmoil and the certainty of life's challenges.

We read and hear a lot about sustainability in the context of ecology; even some businesses have adopted

the term to imply that their strategies are “green.” People are increasingly sensitive to the impact their carbon footprint has on the environment, and the notion of treading softly on the ecosystem is gaining ground with the general populations of earth.

As this paper suggests, we also have an emotional or energetic “footprint” that we leave upon the ecology of the human spirit and the planet at large. So much has been written in various religious and New Age texts that the earth will undergo cataclysmic changes or perhaps even an apocalypse, after which, we will enjoy the return of the Christ Consciousness, the Golden Age of humanity will reign, and the righteous will be caught up into the heavens.

While there may be some degree of truth in these visions, I’m proposing that the “avalanche is about to roll” outlook only evokes interest—sometimes obsession—and mostly it is fear-based. We need to activate our emotional self-mastery so we become self-luminous beings within the time-space dimensions. It is not fulfilling to have an interest in the avalanche or the impending shift of humanity; our fulfillment and meaning comes from our practice of the six heart virtues.

As historian Will Durant observed, in the last 3,421 years of recorded history only 268 have seen no war. If humanity is to add to the “no war” column, it will require a new belief system that is energetically supported by the six heart virtues. It will require individuals like you to develop emotional self-mastery as the priority self-improvement goal. Just as like attracts like, like informs like, and like transforms like. Thus, the transmission of our IHEF

informs others who are similar to us, and as our numbers grow, the long-heralded shift will be the result.

Humanity moves increasingly towards the irrefutable, scientific discovery of the human soul and the lattice grid of energetic interconnection upon which it moves and has its being. It does this not because of the hand of God or some Designing Force that corrals the human species into the higher dimensions, but rather through the human spirit expressing itself within the human realm of time-space. In other words, it's an inside job—one human at a time.

It is not an infrequent position on the part of those who prefer the path of surrender to ask: “Why swim upstream? God will show the way and provide the path. Everything is taken care of, why struggle to gain mastery over your emotions? In the end, we will be redeemed.” This is a deep-seated and prevailing construct of humanity that higher forces ultimately configured the universe and still control its functioning and outputs, that creation is tethered to the One that is All, and regardless of your name for this Higher Force, it ultimately offers up a Savior for humanity—whether that savior is terrestrial, heaven-sent or extraterrestrial.

The evidence of human evolution shows that saviors come and go amid the primal actions of humankind that function in indifference to their message. We are all connected, yet we war. We are all connected, yet we steal. We are all connected, yet we hoard and over-consume. We are all connected, yet we turn away from the suffering of others. The insensitivity to our connection is a veil that is steadily becoming more transparent, and this is the vital agent of change, but it will not occur in a blinding flash of



time or an instant of recognition. Rather, it is the result of a deliberate and persistent practice of the six heart virtues from an ever-widening base of humanity.

We are collectively engineering this, some more consciously than others, which is the only notable distinction between us. The “temple” is being built in which all of humanity can enter and see one another as they truly are. This temple is neither of earth nor the heavens. It is not owned by anyone nor is anyone excluded. Within this temple we are not emotionless beings, quite the contrary, we are energetically potent with vibrant emotions and they are expressed with care and they are rooted in the virtues of the heart. This is the temple we are here to build. Be patient, for it is an endeavor long in the making. Yet it is certain to occur, not because we will be “saved,” but because enough humans chose to live from their hearts, to practice the six heart virtues and become conscious of their energetic contributions (IHEF) to the whole of life.

One final comment, the journey is rewarding, but also difficult as you will be challenged to shift quickly, adjust your attitudes, refresh your perspective, and own your mistakes and vulnerabilities. The six heart virtues are meant to be expressed not only to others but also your human self. Bear this in mind as you progress. All the heart virtues apply equally to others and yourself. You can appreciate a stranger’s kindness and in the next instant forgive your judgment of them. It is precisely because of our imperfections, that the six heart virtues have their meaning.

## **APPENDIX A**

### **Definitions of the Six Heart Virtues**

I have resisted the temptation to define the six heart virtues in detail, but I will provide a starting point for their definition so you can embroider them according to your own experience and insight.

#### **Appreciation:**

At the subtle levels, this virtue is focused on a specific awareness that First Source (Higher Intelligence) surrounds our fellow beings as a field of consciousness and that this consciousness unifies us. If we are unified, it follows that we operate as a collective consciousness at some deeper level, and in this place, we share a common purpose that is richly textured, supremely vital, and yet mysterious, dynamic and uncertain. This awareness, or even belief, shifts our focus from the small details of our personal life to the vision of our purpose as a species.

At a more practical level, appreciation expresses itself in the small gestures of gratitude that support relationship loyalty and bonding. The deeper levels of appreciation make the relatively surface level expressions genuine because they stem from the frequencies of soul instead of the motives of the ego or mind.

#### **Compassion:**

Many teachers have spoken eloquently about compassion as the deep awareness of the suffering of another coupled to the desire to relieve that suffering. In

the context of the new intelligence that is seating itself on our planet, compassion is an active desire to assist others to align with the new fields of intelligence that are manifesting in the three dimensional world, aware that their desire and ability to align is distorted by their social enculturation; it does not accurately reflect their intelligence, spiritual inclinations, or purpose.

Compassion therefore is extended to both our fellow beings and the planet itself with the realization that we are part of one another's destiny if only for a single lifetime. Planet and person dance in the ascending currents of First Source in a collaborative process of regeneration and renewal. We are all part of the mysterious overtures and energetic transcendence that is occurring between Earth and the universe, and as earth transforms its accumulated densities each of us will be challenged to transform our own, or become further embedded in our fears and emotional turmoil.

### **Forgiveness:**

Forgiveness operates out of the construct that each of us is doing the best we can under the circumstance of our life experience and the degree that our love frequency saturates our human instrument. When a person operates from the heart virtues and the rich textures of its authentic frequencies, forgiveness is a natural state of acceptance.

When a perceived injustice enters our experience—no matter how significant or whether we perceive ourselves to be the cause or the effect—we may initially react with the sharp emotions of victimhood or annoyance, but this emotional clutter can be quickly cleared by replacing your

sense of victimhood or annoyance with understanding and compassion.

Forgiveness is really the outward expression of understanding and compassion without the heavy sentiments of duality (i.e., good and bad) that typically introduce the presence of judgment. It is a neutral expression without design or purpose other than to release yourself from the clutches of time, which is similar to energetic quicksand, entangling you energetically to a time-based emotional state.

### **Humility:**

The soul's expression of love is its most important purpose while embodied within the worlds of time-space. It circulates this delicate, sublime frequency of love to the human body and mind without condition or motive. It will come as no surprise that it finds the heart a more willing collaborator than the mind. Humility is the realization that the heart, mind and soul co-mingle in the grace of a Higher Intelligence or Designing Force, and that their very existence is upheld through this connection of unconditional love.

In the religious, psychological, and philosophical materials of our planet there is great consideration given to the mind. As a man thinketh so is he. At a more granular level, many people believe that what they think causes their feelings, which in turn creates their vibratory rate and this vibratory rate attracts their life experience. So, applying this logic, the way to attract good things into our life is to think rightly, lest we attract evil or hardship.

Humility understands that the being that represents you—your fullest identity—is not constituted as a chain reaction of the mind. Rather, it is the presence of love embodied in human form, and this love expresses itself in the virtues of the heart, the pure intellect of the contemplative mind, and the co-creative pursuits of the heart, mind, and soul. Humility is the expression of this love frequency knowing it derives from what already exists in a higher dimension, and in this dimension, love is not a thing of sentiment and emotional heaviness. It is a liberating force where all are one, all are equal, all are divine, and all are immortal.

### **Understanding:**

The world of form, just as the formless worlds, is composed of energetic structures beneath its denser expression. In a real sense, everything in the multiverse is energy with incalculably long, energy-based lifespans. Energy is transformational; that is, it can alter or shift into other states of being or, in the case of humans, consciousness. The human energetic structure is often described as the chakra system or electromagnetic body, but it is more than these components. The energetic structure is a form of light, which in turn is a texture of divine love.

Energetically, our “skeleton” is composed of love at our core structure, and it is this love frequency that is the basis of our immortal consciousness, or soul. All of the lower densities are shadows of this light and operate in time-space, which provide a sheath of density and separation from this core love frequency. The worlds of time-space alter or dilute this connection we feel to the core energetic

structure of which we are all composed, and this diminishes our sense of connection not only to our divinity, but to God and all life.

Herein is the paradox of being human: our innermost structure is divine love and our outermost structure is a means of experience for the innermost structure, but we have become entrained by the outer vehicle to the degree where we identify with it more than the occupant—our true self—inside.

All of us feel this dissociation with our true self and over-identification with our physical body and mind (human instrument); perhaps only in degree is there any difference among us. Understanding is the aspect of heart intelligence that recognizes this dissociation from love is a necessary design component of the larger blueprint that is occurring on the planet. In other words, it is not that humanity has fallen from grace or is tilted irrevocably toward sin. Rather, we have simply accepted the picture of reality that is dominant, and its dominance is not by accident but part of a larger design.

There is a well-known phrase within Lyricus that roughly translated says:

“The elegance of time is that it unravels the structures of space that have sealed love from itself.”

The structures of space, in this case, refer to the human instrument. Only time can break down the rigid barriers, or subtle membranes that prevent or diminish the love frequency from exerting its wisdom in the behaviors of the individual.

If time is the variable of importance, it stands to reason that everyone is on his or her way to this realization; it is simply a matter of time before they achieve it. Thus, time is the differential that separates us. In a sense, we are all time shifted from one another. No one operates in exactly the same time relative to unsealing his or her love frequency from the world of form.

### **Valor:**

While valor is generally used in the context of war or the battlefield, it is, as an element of love, linked with the act of speaking truth to power, especially when an injustice is committed. It is common in today's social order to pretend ignorance of the injustices of our world. Self-absorption in one's own world is one key threat that undermines the expression of valor, and fear of consequence is the other.

Valor is the aspect of your love that defends its presence in the face of injustice as measured in the social order. If you don't defend your virtues—or those too weak to defend their own—you have separated from them and have lost an opportunity to be a co-creative force in the world of form.

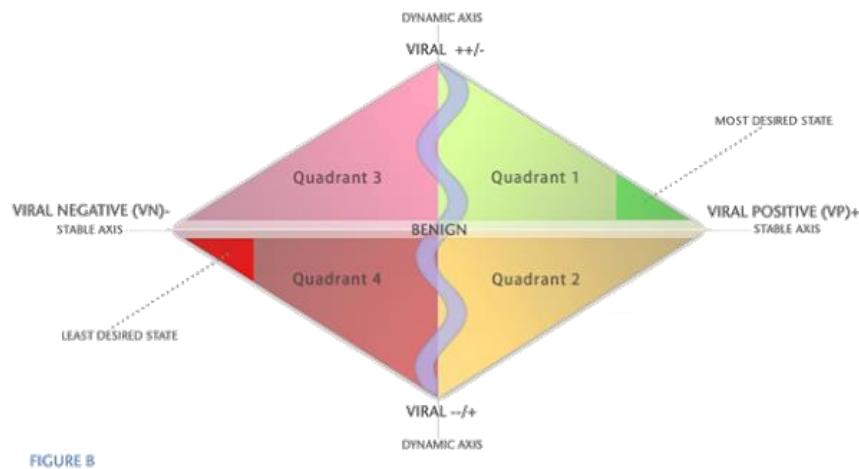
This doesn't necessarily mean that you must become an activist or advocate for a list of social causes. It simply requires that you defend yourself from injustice. Children in particular require this protection. When I was only about seven years old I vividly remember going to a store with my father and while we were walking in from the parking lot we noticed a mother quite literally beating her child in the backseat of her car. It was a busy Saturday and

there were many people in the parking lot, but it was my father who approached the woman and asked her to stop. His voice was firm from his conviction and the woman immediately stopped.

This was an act of valor because there was no real judgment associated with it; it was simply an injustice that required intervention in the moment. Compassion for both the child and the mother were present in my father, and I believe the mother knew this. This is an example of how the virtues of the heart seldom appear in isolation, but rather as an ensemble that braid themselves for strength and potency for a given situation.



## APPENDIX B



### Further Definitions of Figure B (energetic quadrant)

Figure B is a complex diagram that requires a detailed description, which is offered in this section. Think of this diagram as an energetic quadrant divided by two axes. The vertical (y) axis is the axis of dynamic emotions, whereas the horizontal (x) axis is the axis of stable emotions. If you have, for example, frequent mood swings, shifting from anger to love or sadness to joy, you are riding the “serpent” of the vertical axis.

The serpent axis is aptly named since those who shift back and forth between the poles of Viral Negative and Viral Positive spring from side-to-side, seldom enjoying peace or contentment. It is much easier to shift between the quadrants one and two, or even quadrants three and four, than it is to shift between one and three, or four and two. The hardest is the shift between quadrants four and one because they are so incompatible as to make the shifts physically painful.

The movement we each take across this energetic quadrant can be random-reactive, or purposeful-empowered. For example, let's say you are waiting in line at the grocery store and the person in front of you begins arguing with the clerk about the costs of several items, and you can't help noticing that the line of customers behind you is growing. You have the option of riding the serpent and flashing angry glances at the customer ahead of you, while posturing with your body language in disapproval. Or, you can take a deep breath, inflow the light of your heart's virtues, select the one you intuitively feel is most relevant to the situation at hand (perhaps understanding > forgiveness), and then release it to the event without condition or judgment.

Riding the serpent you will tend to operate in the random-reactive mode. When you operate in the more stable fields of Viral Negative or Viral Positive, you tend to express a more purposeful-empowered perspective in your life moment-to-moment. Unfortunately, in the case of the Viral Negative person, the outcome is repressive to the human family, which leads me to an important point: unlike most psychology which defines the negative behaviors with words like lust, anger, or obsession; the Viral Negative state is simply defined as repressive to the human spirit.

The majority of people ride the serpent unaware that there are people who purposely conspire to repress the human spirit, trying to keep us separated from one another, and to live unfulfilled lives relative to our spiritual purpose. These are the ones who live in the Least Desired State, operating with a purposeful-empowered mindset, at

least partly focused on the repression of the human spirit. Of course, the irony is that the vast majority of those operating in the Least Desired State would identify their mission as one of saving humanity or protecting it from itself. This is all part of the conundrum of definitions.

The Viral Positive person, living in the Most Desired State, is one who is purposeful-empowered in the context that they exude a liberating field or persona that empowers others to activate and express their spiritual purpose. There is no sense of repression or random reaction; it is a clear and coherent focus on helping others to live from their hearts and express the virtues therein.

This energetic quadrant is a way of looking at the emotional terrain in which we express our energetic self. It is through this portal that our energetic output of the Individual Human Energetic Field (IHEF) is received into the Collective Human Energetic Field (CHEF), and our energetic fingerprint is fused to the human collective of energy.

If we look at the energetic quadrant as our portal into the CHEF, then it becomes more obvious that we have a responsibility to establish our prevailing position in quadrant 1. Notice that I said prevailing position, not absolute. Everyone will cross lines from one quadrant to another. It is our natural and desirable state to cross boundaries and experience different points of the quadrant. However, we can choose which points become our prevailing or stable positions, from which we derive our identities and our perceptions of the external world.

Reviewing the energetic quadrant, you have probably attempted to place yourself within it, and in doing so, you have found a point that is temporal—assignable today, but not necessarily tomorrow or next week. Further, you may have allotted some degree of judgment as to your “place” on the quadrant, as if it is your home or where you belong. Many of us have had past experiences that appear to lock us into a particular energetic expression that can feel like it is frozen in time. But that is untrue.

You can pick any point on the quadrant and say, “This is where I am today.” And you can pick another and say, “This is where I choose to be tomorrow.” The distance between the two points can be measured in millimeters, but may seem like light years away from each other to your mind. The energetic signature we emit to the universe is composed of an energy so refined as to be undetectable to our senses, but it is the transformative rocket fuel that feeds our progression into the Most Desired State. This it can do independent of the dimension of time, past traumatic experiences, miserable upbringing, or any other rationale your mind can conjure.

Perhaps you’re thinking, “But wait, don’t the emotions define my energetic field?” The emotions influence your energetic field, but its definition is one of intention and will. You choose the energetic equivalent of yourself, and keep choosing it every moment of your life on earth. You choose the energetic field that you emit to the universe. This is the seed of energy that you established or “planted” within the human “soil.” Like anything that evolves and transforms, this seed requires nurturing and cultivation. To the extent you express your heart’s virtues—practicing

them in everyday situations—you will see your emotional state shaping your energetic field in such a way that you will awaken one day and the universe will become the mirror of your energetic body, and you will finally meet the inward self that embraces all.

You can look at the quadrant as a stage with three different roles. The Viral Negative does not mean you are Satan incarnate or a miserable convict rotting away in prison. Most of the members of the human family who live in this state are seemingly responsible, polite, and attentive citizens of their respective countries; except for the fact they repress the human spirit and separate the human family into sexes, religions, races, preferences, colors, and segments of disintegration. They could be doctors, Sunday school teachers, librarians, policemen, mothers or business executives. There is no job or social standing that excludes them. What distinguishes them is that they are purposeful in their repression and separation, there is a cause behind their actions and this cause anchors them in the Viral Negative State (VNS). For purposes of this paper I will refer to these people as VNS People.

In the middle section are those who are riding the serpent of the emotional swings tethered to the social undulations as meted out by the dominant cultures, religions, political, and educational systems. Since I am focused on the energetic field of a category of individuals within the human family, I'll refer to these as Riding the Serpent (RTS) People. RTS People are the base of humanity, speaking energetically; they set the general pattern of how emotions and energetic frequencies of human interaction become the norm. They are mostly

concerned with family, work, and entertainment, but they also dabble in the spiritual and are in different states of awakening relative to their energetic field. RTS People are in search mode, forever seeking whatever is felt to be missing in their life. They are disillusioned by the seeming indifference of their God, and this condition keeps them uncertain, which in turn makes them more reactive to life.

If you are always reacting to the external environment and the uncertain impulses of your internal world dimly felt, you will tend to be dramatic in your swings of emotions and your IHEF will reflect this. RTS People have a prevailing feeling that there is more to life, that a higher purpose awaits their discovery if only they could find it. This adds to their sense of uncertainty and frustration, which only fuels their reactionary impulses when coupled to the rising stress of modern-day living.

On the Viral Positive side of the energetic quadrant, people in this category, as they approach the Most Desired State, become increasingly aware of their energetic field in a similar way to how an infant becomes progressively more aware of its physical body. The Viral Positive State (VPS) People are not necessarily “spiritual” people in the sense that they are teachers within a religion, nor are they necessarily the scientists in search of the energetic realms. Unless a person, regardless of their stature in life, is also actively expressing their heart’s virtues and empowering others to do the same, they will never enter the Most Desired State, unless it is for a radiant moment as a means of activation—a calling to their soul from the Designing Force.

Just as the VNS People are anchored in their energy field by the cause of repression and separation, the VPS People are anchored in their commitment to the human family by transcending the myopia of small picture dramas. Those within the Most Desired State have an unwavering commitment to the cause of human transformation from material-mindedness to energetic-heart-awareness. This is the cause that anchors them.

A key to understanding the energetic quadrant is to see the VNS, RTS, and VPS People as members of the human family who are informing the collective energy, or CHEF. From a perspective of wholeness, there is no wrong or right, good or evil. All of us have a role to play in this vast collection of energy. However, the choice is still ours as to how we desire to work with the greater incoming energies impacting on our planet. This is an important distinction between the three primary groups of people because only the VPS People are able to transmit the incoming energies like a clear prism can transmit white light into seven rays.

As it has been said, a prism in the dark is just a hunk of glass. So, too, is the human energetic field—in the dark it is just a receiver. If it is in the VNS or RTS state, then it is in a darkened state and the incoming energies from the universe at large (Designing Force) cannot transmit the energetic frequencies that empower and fuel the human family to transformation. Now, to be clear, I am painting with black and white for effect. Admittedly, there are many shades of gray, but the point is that in order to both receive and transmit the higher energetics of the universe—to have a positive effect on the human

transformation objective—you must choose the path to become and remain a VPS Person.

The when-which-how practice is a choice that immediately begins to shift our IHEF and align its trajectory to the Viral Positive state. The Most Desired State (green triangle in quadrant one) is the gravitational core of quadrants one and two, and it is the most potent position within the energetic quadrant as it pertains to influencing the CHEF. In other words, if you are able, as a result of your conscientious and deliberate application of the when-which-how practice, to operate within the Most Desired State, you are contributing a virally active energetic signature that can influence thousands of others who are also seeking a way to become Viral Positive, even though they may not consciously intend it.

Another way to look at the quadrant is to imagine points of humanity on it (see below).

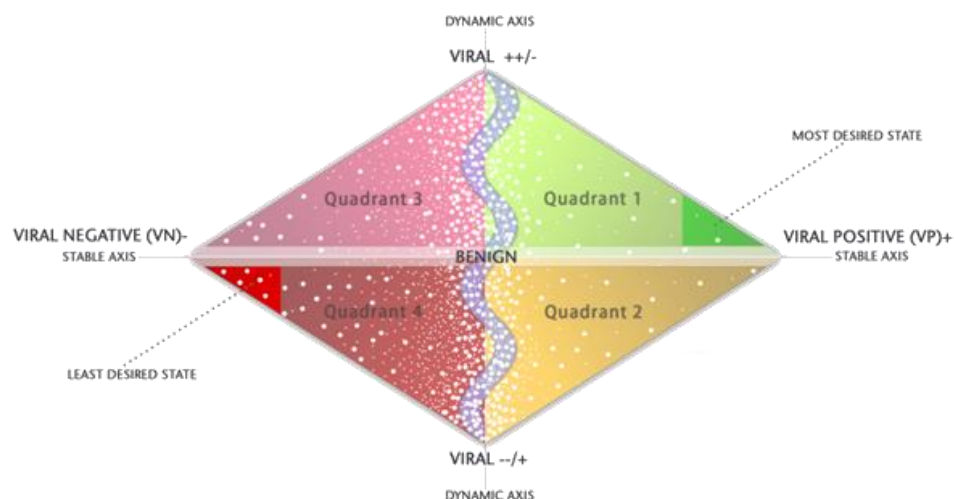


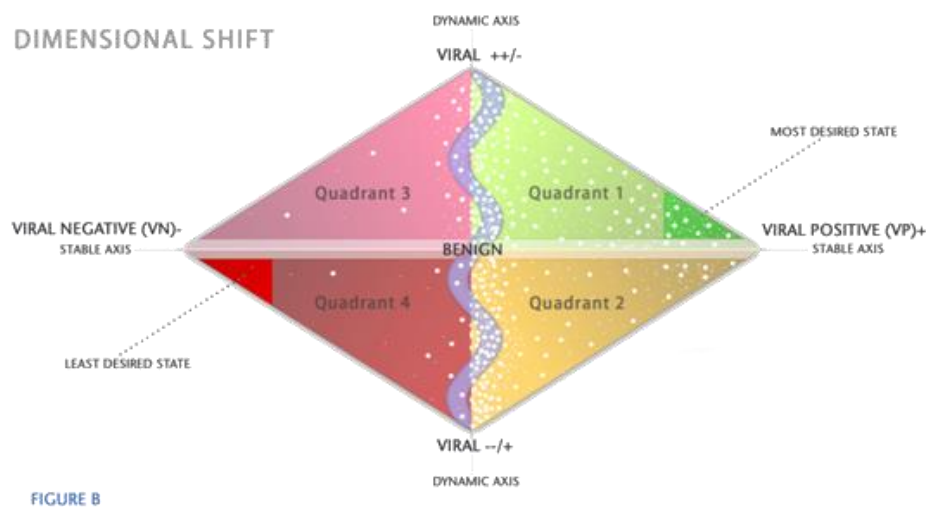
FIGURE B

Imagine that each large dot represents ten thousand IHEFs and each small dot represents one thousand. This view would represent the distribution of IHEFs into the



CHEF. Let's say this view was a snapshot of the CHEF, and that we could take pictures at different times and review how humanity is progressing relative to its CHEF. These snapshots would signify how humanity is evolving emotionally and energetically.

In the example above, notice that the distribution of IHEFs is denser along the serpent's axis. This would indicate that humanity, as a whole, is fluctuating between quadrants and operating in a more reactive behavior to life's events. You can also notice that there is more distribution of IHEFs in quadrants 3 and 4, indicating that the Viral Negative—particularly in the Least Desired State—is generating a more effective influence.



There is much written and discussed about the impending dimensional shift. While it has many facets, the real shift occurs energetically across the human family. It could look like the view below, if enough people learn how to express the six heart virtues with a degree of consistency. As a result, the “dots” within the Most Desired State will increase and a shift of balance, energetically, can occur within the broader human family.

From the time you make the decision to practice the six heart virtues—to live from your heart—you are re-gridding your energetic signature in resonance with quadrant one and the Most Desired State. You are part of the shift of consciousness upon earth, and as you move closer to the Most Desired State, you are not only part of the shift, you are an activating force of the shift.

It all starts energetically. The shift is a co-creation between the Designing Force and the human family. It is both elements operating in a dance of resonance. The shift is not a thing that happens to humanity; it is a thing that is co-created by humanity and the Designing Force.

As the diagram above shows, our personal path can be organized into four orientations that overlay the energetic quadrant, and be used as a practical guide. These four orientations consist of the three tendencies of the mind: Ego Vices, You Complex, and Me Complex (definitions to follow), and the one affinity of the heart: Heart Virtues. While very general, these orientations superimpose another dimension of structure to the energetic quadrant.

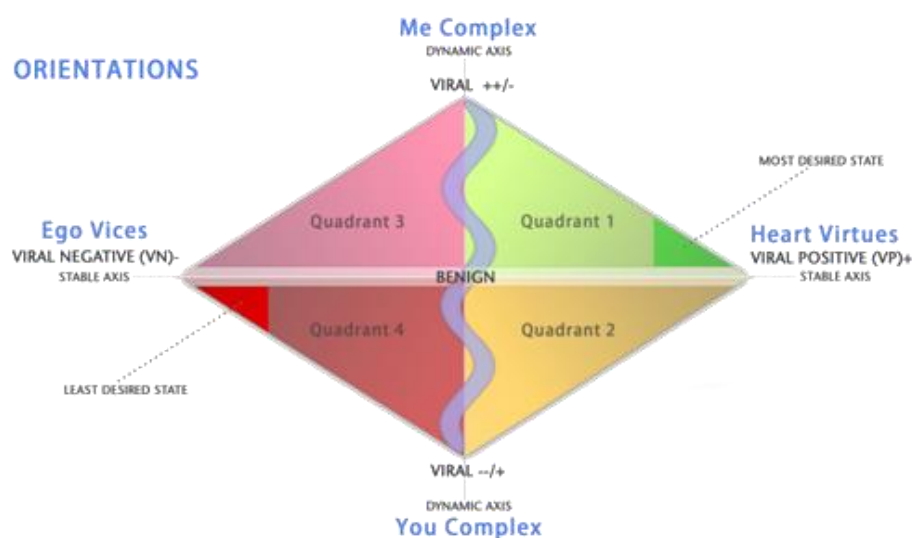


FIGURE B

Normally, as we develop in one lifetime, and even through the macro-lens of multiple lifetimes, we journey through the quadrant of Ego Vices, which has a decidedly selfish orientation. We then move to the You Complex where our attention is on the shortfalls of the external world, which could include family, friends, work, or society in general. Next, presuming a sequential trajectory, we would spend time in the Me Complex, which is the quadrant where we first begin to recognize that our inner self is fundamental to our happiness and sense of well-being. Finally, we enter the Heart Virtues, where we begin to shift our focus from the mind's comprehension of truth and the seeking of enlightenment, to the more active practice of expressing our heart's virtues and energetics therein.

Many of us bounce from quadrant to quadrant within a single lifetime, and to be clear, there is no set sequence. In other words, as a child, one can live in the Heart Virtues quadrant, and by the age of seven, move to explore the You Complex. Later in life, when a young adult, they live squarely in the Ego Vices quadrant. When they reach thirty years of age, they can shift to the Me Complex, and then, because of a shattering experience, fall back to the You Complex. Finally, at the age of forty-five, they return to the Me Complex, and something in their inner search rekindles their practice and expression of the Heart Virtues, not as a random emotion, but as the core practice that brings meaning to their life.

This is just an example of how each of us journeys through these different quadrants and lives in them, largely

unaware that they shape, in an important way, our IHEF contribution and the meaningfulness of our life.

The energetic quadrant is a framework to help you assess your prevailing position and IHEF contribution. You can do quick mental check-ins to sense your position within the quadrant, and sometimes, to even assess the human family as a whole. This is not an exercise in judgment (You Complex), but rather a framework to enable an intuitive check-in of your energetic progress.

From awkwardness—with practice—comes competency.

From separation—with practice—comes the prevailing sense of unity.

From disbelief—with practice—comes evidence.

When you first practice living from the heart, you might feel awkwardness, separation, and disbelief, but these are temporal states, and they will, if you persist in your practice, be replaced by competency, unity, and evidence.

The end.

# **THE ART OF THE GENUINE: A SPIRITUAL IMPERATIVE**

## **INTRODUCTION**

The energetic heart is the source of virtues that have become associated with names like compassion and appreciation. These are exterior titles for the potent frequencies of the heart that define the individual's essence. The virtues of the heart are the energetic sources for both perception and expression of the immortal soul that indwells the human personality within the world of form.

The self is contained in the energetic heart and moves outward from its platform of heart virtues into all dimensions—both material and non-physical. The heart virtues consist of appreciation, humility, valor, compassion, understanding, and forgiveness. Many other shades exist, but these are the fundamental virtues, or frequencies that produce the platform structure of the energetic heart and from which the realm of self or soul operates.

When these virtues are expressed and received genuinely—without the densities of the ego and mind—their effect is multiplied and sustainable through other life forms (human and otherwise).

Ordinary light is incoherent because it is omnidirectional and the light waves are not in phase with one another, so there is no structure to multiply energy.

However, a laser produces intense light because it consists of coherent light waves that are aligned directionally and phased for support and reinforcement. Because of this, lasers can perform functions that ordinary light cannot.

Similarly the virtues of the heart, when they are coherent within an individual or within a group of individuals, can produce results that are extraordinary and seemingly supernatural. This requires that both the tacit or implicit levels (the inner source) of heart virtues and their explicit equivalents (actions/behaviors) are coherent. Coherent, in this case, means linked in authenticity and genuineness.

So how do you bring these emotional frequencies into coherence? It is known within the Lyricus Teaching Order as the art of the genuine.

## **THE EGO-MIND KNOWLEDGE STRUCTURE**

The ego-mind is enculturated by our social order to develop a value system that is aligned with the consensus of society or a group within the broader social order. Thus, our knowledge, morals, values, attitudes, and behaviors are largely cultivated by the underlying social structure of the three-dimensional world.

The self, or consciousness is not contained inside the three-dimensional world; therefore it cannot truly be examined by three-dimensional inquiries or even the most finely tuned logic of the mind. This is the fundamental imbalance of the religious, philosophical and psychological fields: that the unlimited self cannot be revealed by the mind that is enculturated and bound in the three-dimensional world.

Mysticism posits that there is a mystery that underlies life and confounds the ego-mind, which in turn, seeks explanations and rationales for this inexplicable mystery, and in this search, science, religion, psychology, and philosophy are nurtured and sustained. While these tools, or disciplines are believed by many to guide our inquiry into a transcendent consciousness, it is a little like trying to explore the ocean's depths with an airplane.

The ego-mind knowledge structure observes the ripples of soul, but the profound source of these ripples reveals itself to no one—its structure being the superstructure of all things material and non-material. This leaves the ego-mind feeling frustrated and somewhat distrustful, at least

in those who are awakened to this reality. The ego-mind searches for the expression of intelligence in the significance of activity; while the soul is intelligent unto itself because it faithfully receives and transmits the virtues of the heart.

The ego-mind seeks the pay-off of activity or the rewards of consequence; while the soul seeks to sustain a culture of the heart's virtues within the density of the worlds of form. The self is caught, in a sense, between two worlds that share one common element: Purpose. We are all aware, in our most lucid moments, that there is a deeper purpose to life, and, in particular, to *our* life. The fragmentary world of form is arresting to our senses, but it does not provide satisfaction to our inborn longing for purpose.

This is why the ego-mind is frustrated in so many who are here waiting for their purpose to unfold. The art of the genuine is the practice of coherence between the deeper awakening of the heart virtues within each of us, and their faithful expression in the worlds of form. Those individuals who are awakened to the frequencies of the energetic heart within and practice—to their best ability in the moment—the expression of these frequencies in their behaviors and actions are practicing their highest purpose.

Allow me to stress this point: they are *practicing* their highest purpose. They are not seeking it. They are not wondering what it is. They are not frustrated by the enigma of their seeming elusive purpose. They are simply practicing it. Living it as an integral element of their life expression and seeking to increase the degree of coherence



between what they understand their heart virtues to be and how they can express those heart virtues with genuineness.

The ego-mind structure will more easily align to the energetic heart when it understands that its real purpose is being fulfilled and not made more abstract by the mystical, unseen nature of spirit. This alignment increases the ability of the individual to achieve *genuine* expression of their heart virtues through their behaviors and actions.

The spiritual works of earth are cluttered with so many admonitions, rules, precepts, laws, formulaic processes, and esoteric practices that the art of the genuine may seem oddly simple, and therefore less potent. However, it is the simple acts of virtue that hold the true power of transformation and upliftment—not only for the individual practicing them, but for the larger share of humanity in all of its dimensional expressions.

Each individual is an active participant in the reality structures they observe and experience in the worlds of form. This participation occurs primarily through the energy centers of the human instrument and their intersection with the three-dimensional world. These energetics, however subtle they may be, are dynamically shaping your reality, imbuing it with perceptual markers that define your ascension path from noble innocent to conscious co-creator of new realities.

It is not enough to have an abstract understanding of the heart's virtues. For example, knowing that it is essential to express appreciation for the gifts that life brings to you is one thing, expressing this appreciation is another, but understanding how and when to express this appreciation

with a genuineness that is grounded in the energetic heart frequencies requires a special awareness—an attunement to the finer frequencies of the heart and a commitment to follow these subtle gestures of virtue faithfully.

There are many who believe that their life should be more prosperous and abundant. That life should unfold according to their needs. Ease should be the embodiment of their life force. But there have been energetic densities deposited on earth by countless generations of humans. These densities require transformation in order for the planet to shift its core frequency to a higher dimensional state. Each of us embodied on earth is part of this process of transformation. It is the natural state of consciousness to desire to move beyond the lower densities that impede the heart virtues' free and natural expression, even if this process may extend across hundreds if not thousands of embodiments in a human instrument.

It is precisely this mutual transformational process that humanity is co-creating with the planet. Once this is truly understood in the mind and heart of the individual, practicing the art of the genuine is a spiritual imperative.

## PRACTICING THE ART OF THE GENUINE

The art of the genuine is a subtle practice. There are energetic fields of compassion, understanding, appreciation, valor, forgiveness, and humility that surround the human instrument—every human instrument—like a cocoon surrounds a soon-to-be butterfly. These fields are the energetic equivalents of First Source's<sup>4</sup> imprint upon the individual soul. They exist in our world of form as coherent oscillations within the broader, inter-connective energetic fields of the multiverse, what Lyricus teachers refer to as the *Domain of Unity*. Together these fields are often referred to as divine love—the energetic “blood” that circulates throughout the multiverse—sustaining all life forms both temporal and immortal.

The individual more efficiently and effectively accesses these fields of intelligence (virtues of the heart) through the activation of genuine feelings. It is not a matter of the mind or intellectual reasoning. The mind follows the leading impulse of the heart in matters of virtue and the attitudes therein. Practicing the art of the genuine is magnetically attracting these fields of intelligence into your consciousness and then expressing them in your behaviors and actions to all forms of life that cross your path every moment in time and every centimeter in space to the best of your ability.

This is practicing the art of the genuine, and when this is done, your feelings become more divinely inspired, more

energetically magnetic, more liberating for all. The essential truth of behaviors is to not forget your divine link and co-creative abilities with First Source, despite the enculturation of society. But if you forget, the essential action is to remember and rebuild this link, and this is done through the virtues of the heart.

As you can see, there are two main components to this practice: drawing in the fields of intelligence that surround you, and expressing these emotions and attitudes in your behaviors and actions. What most people do is to express their emotions without drawing in from the fields of intelligence that surround them—without “soaking” in the divine love that surrounds them at all times in all circumstances.

Thus, to practice the art of the genuine, your feelings must be drawn from the energetic “well” that provides you the linkage to First Source and the potential for co-creative expressions. This linkage has existed as long as you have existed. It is not newly created. Perhaps, instead, it is newly forgotten. If you visualize the diagram of the six heart virtues and place yourself in the center, imagine that you are attracting the heart virtues into your consciousness and expanding the link between you and First Source as you do so. You are clearing the pathways to receive the genuine feelings of these virtues into your consciousness as new patterns of intelligence and new expressions of behaviors.

This visualization can be done anytime and anywhere, and it will help you identify the wholeness of this link. Our linkage to First Source is not only based on compassion or forgiveness, it is based on six virtues and while these titles,

or names are like shells of their true meaning (from the energetic perspective) they approximate the manner in which each of us is enfolded with the spirit of First Source. Part of this practice is to see your understanding and comprehension of these names, or descriptions expand and shift as you practice and exercise your imagination.

There is a mutual transfer of intelligence that occurs in this practice and it will guide you over time as it becomes more unified. It will deepen and broaden your understanding of these virtues and how they can be expressed in new ways—ways that perhaps you have not even imagined.

Be patient with this practice.

The art of the genuine is called an art for a reason. It is not rational like mathematics where you have symmetrical energy input and output. You are opening your consciousness to a field of intelligence that surrounds you at all times. You are attracting this intelligence into your three-dimensional life as a co-creative force. This co-creative force is potent, dynamic, and miraculously intelligent. It will observe your practice before it will emerge to merge.

This merging of your consciousness with the Domain of Unity is called many different things in the world of form. But whatever its name, practicing the art of the genuine quickens this merging. It is a discipline for those who wish to exercise their divine memory and enhance the relationship between themselves, their fellow beings, and First Source. In this enhancement, the field of consciousness that surrounds you magnetically draws the

new radiations that are being brought to the planet into your microcosm of life. You can play with these new energies as new elements within the co-creative process just like an artist when they receive new colors onto their palette.

The six heart virtues are given to each of us from our Creator so that we in turn can express them—as faithfully as we can—to our fellow beings. That is the purpose in our relationships as simply as it can be depicted in language. When we place our attention on these virtues we are beginning to practice their expression even as we think about them. When we imagine their fullness—their energetic structures—we are practicing them at a new, more potent level. The practice is not just expression; it is contemplation and study as well.

You might wonder why Love is not among the six virtues. Just as sunlight, when it passes through a prism, becomes a multicolored spectrum of color, so does love, when it passes through the Domain of Unity, become the heart virtues. Love is the deepest structure in the multiverse. It passes through all dimensions of existence and fields of consciousness until it finds the imprint of First Source crystallized in a form of life. If the form of life is sentient, composed of both mind and heart intelligence, love will channel itself in the virtues of the heart and enter the consciousness of the individual entity kindling its link to First Source until the time when the entity—sheathed in a human instrument—reawakens to the clear eye of soul.

The six heart virtues blend with one another and form the bond of love that fuses sentient life in the Domain of

Unity, and their shadows, though relatively weaker, bond life in the lower dimensions as well. When adversaries, accusers, tempters or hardships enter your life they can capture your attention, pulling it into the enculturation of the social order, away from the genuine feelings of the heart virtues. This occurs to all people to varying degrees.

Practicing the art of the genuine will enable you to regain and reset your emotional balance with an adeptness that may surprise you. The heart virtues are magnetically powerful because they are the textures of divine love—the most potent force of the multiverse. When you practice these virtues they pull you from the enculturation of the social order and place you in a position of co-creation—not co-reaction.

The vast majority of people are practicing the social order and submitting to the rule of co-reaction. Emotions are flaring up, simmering down, flooding the mind with fear, ruling the body, and generally making life more difficult for all. Moreover, the sense of mastery that one achieves in the state of co-creation with First Source is lost or substantially diminished. In this state of co-creation, real or imagined, the heart is enlivened and exhibits artistry in relationships, knowing intuitively how to navigate without co-reaction.

I have resisted the temptation to define the six heart virtues in detail, but I will provide a starting point for their definition so you can embroider them according to your own experience and insight.

### **Appreciation:**

At the subtle levels, this virtue is focused on a specific awareness that First Source surrounds our fellow beings as a field of consciousness and that this consciousness unifies us. If we are unified, it follows that we operate as a collective consciousness at some deeper level, and in this place, we share a common purpose that is richly textured, supremely vital, and yet mysterious, dynamic and uncertain. This awareness, or even belief, shifts our focus from the small details of our personal life to the vision of our purpose as a species.

At a more practical level, appreciation expresses itself in the small gestures of gratitude that support relationship loyalty and bonding. The deeper levels of appreciation make the relatively surface level expressions genuine because they stem from the frequencies of soul instead of the motives of the ego or mind.

### **Humility:**

The soul expresses the love frequency derived from First Source. Its most important purpose, while embodied within the human instrument, is to circulate this delicate, sublime frequency of love to the human instrument. It will come as no surprise that it finds the heart a more willing collaborator than the mind. Humility is the realization that the heart, mind, and soul co-mingle in the grace of First Source. That their very existence is upheld through the dispensation of love from First Source just as surely as a tree is sustained by sunlight.

vIn the religious, psychological, and philosophical materials of our planet there is great consideration given to the mind. As a man thinketh so is he. At a more granular



level, many people believe that what they think causes their feelings, which in turn creates their vibratory rate and this vibratory rate attracts their life experience. So, applying this logic, the way to attract good things into our life is to think rightly, lest we attract evil or hardship.

Humility understands that the being that represents you—your fullest identity—is not constituted as a chain reaction of the mind. Rather, it is the presence of love embodied in human form, and this love expresses itself in the virtues of the heart, the pure intellect of the contemplative mind, and the co-creative pursuits of the heart, mind, and soul. Humility is the expression of this love frequency knowing it derives from what already exists in a higher dimension, and in this dimension love is not a thing of sentiment and emotional heaviness. It is a liberating force that acts according to the archetype of First Source: All is one. All is equal. All is divine. All is immortal.

### **Valor:**

While valor is generally used in the context of war or the battlefield, it is, as an element of love, linked with the act of speaking truth to power, especially when an injustice is committed. It is common in today's social order to pretend ignorance of the injustices of our world. Self-absorption in one's own world is a key threat that undermines the expression of valor, and fear of consequence is the other.

Individuals who fear consequence in pointing out an injustice misunderstand the co-creative force of First Source. When you operate as a co-creator, you are ever

vigilant to the incremental or sudden onset of injustice, and when it occurs in your life path, it must be identified for what it is and dealt with. Valor is the aspect of your love that defends its presence in the face of injustice as measured in the social order. If you don't defend your virtues—or those too weak to defend their own—you have separated from them and have lost an opportunity to be a co-creative force in the world of form.

This doesn't necessarily mean that you must become an activist or advocate for a list of social causes. It simply requires that you defend yourself from injustice. Children in particular require this protection. When I was only about seven years old I vividly remember going to a store with my father and while we were walking in from the parking lot we noticed a mother quite literally beating her child in the backseat of her car. It was a busy Saturday and there were many people in the parking lot, but it was my father who approached the woman and asked her to stop. His voice was firm from his conviction and the woman immediately stopped.

This was an act of valor because there was no real judgment associated with it; it was simply an injustice that required intervention in the moment. Compassion for both the child and the mother were present in my father, and I believe the mother knew this. This is an example of how the virtues of the heart seldom appear in isolation, but rather as an ensemble that braid themselves for strength and potency for a given situation.

### **Compassion:**

Many teachers have spoken eloquently about compassion as the deep awareness of the suffering of another coupled to the desire to relieve that suffering. In the context of the new intelligence that is seating itself on our planet, compassion is an active desire to assist others to align with the new fields of intelligence that are manifesting in the three-dimensional world, aware that their desire and ability to align is distorted by their social enculturation; it does not accurately reflect their intelligence, spiritual inclinations, or purpose.

The planet we live on is an intelligence unto itself. It is both physical and has very high frequency energetic structures just as we do. It is shifting from the third dimension to the higher fourth dimension and it has been planning this before humanity was even seeded on the planet. It is part of the evolutionary cycle of planetary systems to transmute accumulated densities from one dimension before passing into a higher dimensional grid.

Compassion therefore is extended to both our fellow beings and the planet itself with the realization that we are part of one another's destiny if only for a single lifetime. Planet and person dance in the ascending currents of First Source in a collaborative process of regeneration and renewal. We are all part of the mysterious overtures and energetic transcendence that is occurring between earth and the universe, and as earth transforms its accumulated densities each of us will be challenged to transform our own or become further embedded in our fears and emotional turmoil.

We are privileged to be part of the ascending planetary structure of earth's nurturing spirit and universe

importance. There is now present on earth an amazing diversity of cosmic beings sheathed in human instruments, but hailing from incredibly diverse sectors of the cosmos. We are here to witness and support this transcendence of earth over the densities and entrainment of the three-dimensional intelligence and its artifacts. We are here to accelerate our spiritual growth in an order of magnitude seldom achieved elsewhere in the multiverse. This is a gift of the earth to those present on the planet at this time, and, in some small measure, the motive for our compassion.

### **Understanding:**

The world of form, just as the formless worlds, is composed of energetic structures beneath its denser expression. In a real sense, everything in the multiverse is energy with incalculably long, energy-based lifespans. Energy is transformational; that is, it can alter, or shift into other states of being or, in the case of humans, consciousness. The human energetic structure is often described as the chakra system or electromagnetic body, but it is more than these components. The energetic structure is a form of light, which in turn is a texture of divine love.

It is a fact that we are composed of love at our core structure, and it is this love frequency that is the basis of our immortal consciousness, or soul. All the lower densities are shadows of this light and operate in time and space, which provide a sheath of density and separation from this core love frequency. The worlds of time and space alter, or dilute this connection we feel to the core energetic structure we all are composed of.

Herein is the paradox of being human: our innermost structure is divine love and our outermost structure is a means of experience for the innermost structure, but we have become entrained by the outer vehicle to the degree where we identify with it more than the occupant—our true self—inside.

All of us feel this dissociation with our true self and over-identification with our vehicle (human instrument); perhaps only in degree is there any difference among us. Understanding is the aspect of heart intelligence that recognizes that this dissociation from the love frequency is a necessary design component of the larger blueprint that is occurring on the planet. In other words, it is not that humanity has fallen from grace or is tilted irrevocably toward sin. Rather, we have simply accepted the picture of reality that is dominant, and its dominance is not by accident, but by the designs of First Source.

There is a well-known phrase within Lyricus that roughly translated says: “The elegance of time is that it unravels the structures of space that have sealed love from itself.” The structures of space, in this case, refer to the human instrument. Only time can break down the rigid barriers, or subtle membranes that prevent or diminish the love frequency from exerting its wisdom in the behaviors of the individual.

If time is the variable of importance, it stands to reason that everyone is on his or her way to this realization; it is simply a matter of time before they achieve it. Thus, time is the differential that separates us. In a sense, we are all time shifted from one another. No one operates in exactly

the same time relative to unsealing his or her love frequency from the world of form.

Realizing this helps you to understand the relation of unity to reality, and in this realization you are able to accelerate time for yourself and for those with whom your life touches. It is the true purpose and noble definition of time travel.

### **Forgiveness:**

Forgiveness operates out of the construct that each of us is doing the best we can under the circumstances of our life experience and the degree that our love frequency saturates our human instrument. When a person operates from the heart virtues and the rich textures of its authentic frequencies, forgiveness is a natural state of acceptance.

When a perceived injustice enters our experience—no matter how significant or whether we perceive ourselves to be the cause or the effect—we may initially react with the sharp emotions of victimhood or annoyance, but this emotional clutter and distortion can be quickly transformed by experiencing—understanding → compassion → forgiveness → appreciation. This is the equation that transforms the murky turbulence of victimhood or co-reaction into the crucible of light, leaving behind only the purest frequency of love stripped of all purpose.

Forgiveness is really the outward expression of understanding and compassion without the heavy sentiments of duality (i.e., good and bad) that typically introduce the presence of judgment. It is a neutral expression without design or purpose other than to release

yourself from the clutches of time, which is similar to energetic quicksand, entangling you energetically to a time-based emotional state.

## **A SPIRITUAL IMPERATIVE**

It is important to reset your emotional state frequently in your day-to-day activities, and the art of the genuine is an excellent method to do so. It does not require that you practice the full visualization. Operating in your feeling world with an expanded understanding of how the heart virtues can be combined or sequenced for specific life experiences is a fundamental shift in behaviors that will serve you well.

Why is practicing the art of the genuine a spiritual imperative? When you have found your own definitions of the heart virtues and you have assembled your insight into your behaviors, you will see that this is the key that unlocks the sheaths that surround your love frequency. There is no other vibrational identity within you that is more you than this pulse of divine love that defines your existence as a spiritual being. The goal is to invite this vibration—this being—into your human existence, and it will only emerge when there is harmony in your field of consciousness (i.e., emotional state).

Practicing the art of the genuine is a method to achieve this harmony and beckon your innermost self to join you in your human endeavors. It also helps to align the individual to the next phase of human evolution, which is directly concerned with the emotional state and its alignment to the spiritual impulse, or love frequency. It is not that the mind is absent in this evolutionary leap, it is a vital instrument of the heart, but the intelligence of love supersedes the intelligence of the mind in the practical arena of human endeavor.



In the human world, love is thought to be an action or feeling, not a form of high intelligence. The love of which I speak is the highest intelligence of the multiverse, but also the most misunderstood in the human domain. The human soul is a conduit of this love, or intelligence, and First Source is releasing higher energetics of this love frequency in order for humanity to take the next evolutionary leap to the higher fourth dimension. This leap is facilitated if the individual is practicing the art of the genuine or something similar in nature because the new energetics are like wind to the sail if there is emotional coherence, and this “wind” will quicken you. In a sense, you will time travel to another You.

Perhaps it has been said before, but I want to stress this point, do not practice the art of the genuine solely for your own spiritual growth. Practice it primarily for the evolutionary expansion of the planet and those whom your life touches. You are an engineer of this expansion and evolutionary movement when you operate from this perspective because you are focused on the locus of control—the functional leverage of your own emotional state for the good of the planet and those upon her. It is precisely this perspective that is the “sail” upon which the new energetics of First Source “blow.”

As I said earlier, light is a texture of love. A new light is emerging from the cosmos that is catalyzing the light to shift in other worlds as well, including our solar system, planet and subtle fields of existence therein. You can think of this new light frequency as a catalyst of the shift of human existence, but it is really a catalyst for the earth, and humanity is merely along for the ride as it were. Earth

holds a special place in the universe, not necessarily because of what it represents today, but what it will represent in its glorious future.

The love frequency that you hold inside you, the braiding of the six heart virtues into the formulas of loving behaviors, can be channeled in such a way that it touches earth. Contemplate this: you can touch the earth with your field of consciousness in a powerful way that actually facilitates its evolutionary shift, and in so doing, your own as well.

This is the final aspect of the art of the genuine that bears consideration. As your field of consciousness or energetic body becomes more harmonious and coherent, the love frequency seats itself more vibrantly in your human instrument. This means that you have access to your in more vivid, tangible ways. With this heightened access, you also have the ability to channel this love frequency with selective precision.

Channeling this love frequency to earth is an integral aspect of practicing the art of the genuine, but it is not to be tackled too early in the practice. There is a clearing of old patterns and energies that must take place first, and then a certain self-mastery of the new energetics before one can channel with the required precision and emotional strength. It is a vital phase within the practice and could be likened to the final layer of its purpose.

The power of the individual is contained in the fluid intelligence of their heart virtues. How one orchestrates their emotional state is reflective of their self-mastery. Equations of the heart virtues are the chain-link behaviors

that enable one to move with grace through life's myriad conditions and situations. The individual who understands the deeper meanings of their heart virtues and applies their equations in their life, enrich their purpose on earth and gain access to the highest and most potent form of intelligence: divine love.

From my world to yours,

James

# REFERENCES

## **1 Energetic Heart—**

Across all dimensions of space there exists a primary field of vibration or quantum primacy. This field is non-physical but informs the physical. It exists independent of the physical structures of existence, and is known among Lyricus teachers as the Underivative Information Structures (UIS).

UISs are sub-quantum and represent the primary blueprint for living systems and inorganic matter. It is UIS that gives rise to the quantum fields that interpenetrate planets, stars, galaxies, and the universe at large. It is the communication field of life that connects the nonlocal and the local, the individual and the collective, the one and the infinite. The energetic heart is the non-physical component of UIS that is the entryway or portal from UIS to the intuitive and intelligence centers of the soul carrier or human instrument. In a sense, it is the sub-quantum blueprint of the physical heart.

## **2 Lyricus Teaching Order (LTO)—**

The Lyricus Teaching Order originates in the Central Race of the seventh Superuniverse. Within the Central Race is a sub-race known symbolically as the WingMakers. Within the WingMakers there is a specific order of beings that are collectively known as Lyricus, and it is this group that is responsible for assembling and exporting the knowledge base necessary for a developing species to scientifically prove the existence of soul and

establish the science of multidimensional reality as the nucleus knowledge system of the species.

This outcome of evolution is universal and, in the broadest measure, identical for all species that are based on the biogenetic template of the Central Race, known as the seventh Archetype Soul Carrier of the Individuated Consciousness of First Source. It is Lyricus that is responsible for shepherding a developing species to the technological and scientific prowess whereby the soul and the soul carrier are distinguished and acknowledged by the species at large.

### **3 Human Instrument—**

The human instrument consists of three principal components: The biological (physical body), the emotional, and the mental. These three distinct tools and systems of intelligence and perception, in aggregate, represent the vehicle of the individuated spirit as it interacts with the physical dimension of time, space, energy, and matter. In Lyricus terms, the human instrument is referred to as the soul carrier, and the soul consciousness within it is activating the sensorial system of the soul carrier to enhance the soul's influence within the physical world.

### **4 First Source—**

First Source is a consciousness that inhabits all time, space, energy, matter, form, intent; as well as all non-time, non-space, non-matter, non-energy, non-form, and non-intent. It is the only consciousness that unifies all states of being into one Being. And this Being is First Source. It is a growing, expanding, and inexplicable consciousness that

organizes the collective experience of all states of being into a coherent plan of creation; expansion and colonization into the realms of creation; and the inclusion of creation into Source Reality—the home of First Source.

# **THE LIVING TRUTH**

## **INTRODUCTION**

The Lyricus Teaching Order uses storytelling to convey its teachings more than books, discourses or lectures. Stories are very powerful tools in the spiritual works since they have facets of interpretation and creative flex that makes them wonderful tools to interact within a group. In the case of the Lyricus stories, they are holographic as well, being able to be understood simultaneously on many levels. This story is transcribed by James.

## **THE LIVING TRUTH**

In a faraway corner of a world quite similar to earth, a student in a university lived, studying music. He was a solitary type, good-natured and always sought to do the right thing. His name was Alija, and it was his purpose, as given to him by his father, to compose inspirational songs. Alija's dream was to compose a song that was so beautiful and stirring that—solely through its musical tones—it would attract a spiritual Master to whoever played it.

For many years he labored on this song in his room late at night while others slept, but only after he had completed his other lessons and responsibilities.

One night, when the winds went still, he stumbled upon the portion of music that had eluded him, and he was now

certain that his song was complete. He played it tentatively to himself one time. Nothing happened. Then a second and third time, trying subtle changes to his fingering technique. Still nothing. On the seventh repetition, he finally lost himself in the song, and when he did, a silent cloud of golden particles began to swirl in his room, out of which a translucent human figure slowly emerged.

Alija was startled at the growing presence, and stopped playing his song for a few moments, but noticed that as he did, the emergent form began to fade into the soft candlelight of his room. He quickly regained his composure and resumed his playing, and promptly, to Alija's joy, the Master he had so wished to meet, regained a material presence sufficient for Alija's recognition and sufficient also so that the Master could ask: "For what purpose have you summoned me through this music?"

Alija instantly answered, but kept playing his song: "I have questions for you, many questions about how the heavens work and how I can achieve greater knowledge of the universe and soul."

The Master smiled, and in a solemn tone replied, "There is nothing I can tell you, unless what you seek is united with how you find the living truth inside you."

Alija, upon hearing this, was surprised, as this was a Master of great wisdom and knowledge, with a reputation of understanding the full breadth and depth of the soul's true nature. But because he held such respect for this Master he considered the Master's words, and, still playing his song, asked, "How do I find this living truth?"



The Master held out one of her slender arms and spoke with surprising intensity. “Stop playing this song!”

Alija was afraid to stop because he knew the result would be that this Master would disappear and his access to all knowledge would vanish into thin air. He kept playing, overlooking the Master’s demand.

“Why do you want me to stop playing something that I have created for you?”

“Stop this song,” the Master once again replied, but this time disinterestedly.

Alija, realizing that he wasn’t going to get any other answer, followed his Master’s request, and, as he did so, the Master’s image softly fell away into a swirl of golden light. Abruptly he was alone inside his small room—his own breathing, the only sound; his candles, the only light.

Alija felt rejected and distraught. He had finally achieved what he thought his purpose was, only to be told to stop by a venerated Master. But Alija had invested thousands of hours in his plan, and so he decided to play his instrument again, reasoning it was all a test of his resolve.

Once again on the seventh repetition of Alija’s song the Master appeared, but this time with a not-so-subtle look of disappointment.

Alija was quick to say something: “You suggested... earlier, Master, that unless my question was related to how I find the living truth you couldn’t instruct me. Well, perhaps this is how I find it. I worked for many years on composing the perfect song to attract you so I could learn

from you. I don't have the answers inside me as you propose. I'm a composer unsuited for the high atmospheres of philosophical inquiry. My mind works differently..."

And then like a soulful epitaph, Alija added, "I hear music, not knowledge. Not words of wisdom. Music... just music."

The Master's countenance softened, as she could tell the student was sincere, and in that sincerity he obliged the Master to respond.

"You are diminished in your understanding of your eternal spirit. That is all, and yet it is everything. It is a condition that besets everyone who is honored to wear a human form in the fields of time-space. Why should you be any different?"

Alija listened, thinking the test was going well since he received a response. "I do not boast that I am any better than another," he offered. "It's just that my thirst for knowledge of the soul is stronger felt. Is this wrong, Master?"

Alija continued playing his song, thinking that at last he was making an impression on this Master. Perhaps the doorway to knowledge would soon swing open for him.

"You have both a biological and a spiritual dimension," replied the Master. "Do not forsake your biology for the pursuit of the spiritual, because it is through your biology that you bring forward the spiritual—creating the living truth in your human form. And this living truth might be music or it might be a talent in horticulture or a capacity to

inspire people or a dream of understanding some aspect of science that has been shut off from human eyes. Whatever form it takes within you, do not disown this as something that restricts your embrace of the spiritual worlds within you. It is quite the opposite; it is your embrace of the worlds of Spirit.”

Alija, struck by the words from his Master, stopped playing for just a heartbeat, but in that shortest of times, he began to reconsider his approach. His fingers began to move instinctively on the instrument he held as he noticed the likeness of the Master began—ever so slightly—to grow fainter. The magical song continued to drift through the otherwise silent room.

Alija mustered his courage. He had heard the stories of how these Masters tested the resolve of their students, and now, more than ever, his situation required him to speak as forcefully as his upbringing would allow.

“I have no choice but to protect my right to know the truth... the HIGHEST truth,” he began, a telltale crack in his voice betraying his nervousness. “I’m not satisfied to know pieces when I know that the whole exists.

“All of my life,” he continued, “I have read the spiritual works, and studied them dutifully. But the more I read, the more I became confused—to such an extent that I wanted to abandon truth altogether. And only for one reason: The truth was always hidden. It had to be hidden because it was not the same from one book to the next; from one teacher to another. You, most of all, a spiritual master who is a guardian of the highest Truth, must understand this.” The Master waved her hand and the instrument at once

disappeared, and, in that moment, an expansion of time was drawn out by the Master. And while the music had stopped, this time the Master's presence only became more vivid and real. She came within twelve inches of Alija's uncertain and trembling face, putting her hands on either side of his head as if to steady it in balance.

Alija struggled to keep his eyes turned away; afraid to travel the deep corridors of her gaze, but when she started to speak he could not resist her eyes. He listened deeper than he had ever heard before.

"There is nothing to guard, protect or defend, my dear Alija," she whispered in measured tones. "We are creatures of Spirit, in the service of Spirit, and even though we wear the biology of a forgetful animal, we are intimate partners of the One Creator. Our life is cared for and cherished by this Universal Spirit and we are wise to trust it, for it is the very same intelligence that designed the miraculous body you wear and the universe architecture that drapes the night sky.

"You have only to listen to your heart's feelings of love, expressed through the body of light that is within you. This is the key understanding that holds deep relevance to you. The living truth is your realization of this noble and powerful reality, lifting it from the realm of the abstract to the heartfelt experience of expression. It is your instant-on relationship with the Divine."

With that, the Master stepped back, and the instrument re-appeared in Alija's hands. Distractedly, Alija started to play the melody he had composed, but when he did, the Master's presence withdrew.

As her body's dwindling light fused with the golden candlelight of the room, her voice spoke one last time.

"You know precisely the right action, the exact gesture, and the creative answer to every circumstance. It is your noble inheritance encoded within the light body that is the deeper, higher you. If you inhabit this aspect of your identity, if you live in its world, even if only for a few minutes each day, you will not only find the living truth and live it, but also transmit it through your every heartbeat."

Alija didn't sleep that night, or the next night, as he contemplated his experience. On the third night, still deep in thought, he set out with his instrument to a nearby lake. He carefully picked his way through the rugged trail in the moonless night, hearing only the occasional hoot of an owl. Finally, he arrived at the water's edge, which lay before him like a black, patient mirror of the night sky. The reflected starlight was a comfort to his weary eyes.

Sitting on a large, fallen branch, he began to hear a strange sound, but he wasn't sure of its origins. He began to see movement in the stars and the world before him was painted in a new transparency. The sound was distinctly musical, yet seemed to come from the stars. All of Nature was quiet except for the mysterious sound that flowed all around him, resembling a symphony of exotic instruments played more masterfully than a mortal could imagine.

There was a time when Alija would have protected his sense of what was real, but he let that temptation pass quickly. There was a time when his ego would have stepped in and judged the experience a delusion or a

mystical mirage; a simple consequence of his restless state. But he had learned something two nights earlier that changed him, and tonight, beneath the faintest of lights, he had found the living truth in the medium that he understood best: music.

# THE RISING HEART

## FOREWORD

This paper is an excerpt from the original work known as Liminal Cosmogony, a body of teachings employed by the Lyricus Teaching Order. These teachings are the carefully chosen words and energetic transfers of Lyricus teachers, who have expressed them from an ancient, yet distinctly relevant voice. They are colored in our language and culture not because they are texts composed for our specific species or planet, but because all planets and their inhabitants evolve in a similar ascendant path, passing through transformative shifts to higher light and intelligence.

Earth is passing through one of these corridors of higher dimensional light energy right now, and many of you are aware of this. This is part of your awakening and activation: to know that the earth is on an ascendant path, that this path includes you in a purposeful relationship, and that these new energies will restructure and realign the culture of humanity in profound and positive ways. One of these ways is a new intensity and focus of collective intelligence and empowerment. It is a goal of Lyricus to provide frameworks in which students of its works can empower themselves to be agents of spiritual awakening, align to the earth's ascendancy, and assist earth and the beings upon her in this dimensional transition.

This particular excerpt is focused on a technique called The Rising Heart. It is being released at this time because

the energies of the Central Sun and the Teachers of Light are clearing a path to enable a stronger telepathic connection with those who desire this new empowerment. Those of you who have asked the Universal Creator or Higher Intelligence to activate your highest purpose; this paper, perhaps, is one of ITS responses.

True to the standards of Lyricus, Liminal Cosmogony is not concerned with the cosmological ordering of the multiverse or the physics of time and space as they unravel into the void. The teachers of Lyricus are more concerned with the delicate human connection between the soul and the human instrument, and how this integration can be activated and its activation sustained amid third and fourth dimensional emotional turmoil, misinformation, mental static, and spurious electromagnetic fields, to name a few.

The cosmological landscape becomes clear when the species transcends the duality of the third and fourth dimensions and possesses direct perception of the Divine Plan of Expansion and Ascendancy. There is no text required for this higher dimensional knowledge. What humanity needs at this stage of its evolution is the knowledge of how to live as soul within the worlds of time and space. This is precisely what Liminal Cosmogony is designed to provide.

Liminal Cosmogony is divided into seven sections. The excerpt provided in this offering is from the section entitled: “Teachers of Light.” Its knowledge is condensed into a mere 120 pages, focused on the techniques and behaviors of the sustainable spiritual perspective of a teacher of light embodied in a human instrument. It is designed to create empowerment in the student who



studies it and applies its techniques and nuanced behavioral expressions. It is not for sale, nor is it freely distributed. It is given out in prescribed measures over time, and this offering—the Rising Heart—is the first.

I have released the mythology of WingMakers as an initial stage of preparation for these higher dimensional works contained in Liminal Cosmogony. I have also provided the Lyricus website as the initial introduction to the voice of Lyricus teachers and our instructional approach. More recently I offered the Event Temples which will evolve into a foundation for quantum communities that will ultimately empower the Teachers of Light to orchestrate energetic transfers to the planet and its inhabitants (physical and non-physical alike).

These are among the efforts of thousands of others who are also bringing the tools, techniques and technologies to empower individuals, and this offering is not meant to displace any of these, but rather to augment and support. The Teachers of Light are without affiliation to anything other than the higher light of the fifth dimensional field of unity. They are not beholden to any one system of belief, as they are collectively the system of knowledge in which they are rooted.

The release of the more esoteric knowledge in Liminal Cosmogony signals a shift in the Lyricus Teaching Order to bring forward its technologies of inner light development for those who incarnated to be Teachers of Light upon earth. The Rising Heart will resonate with those who are prepared—who are already in the process of shifting their core consciousness to their heart's crown and operating with internal coherence.

My suggestion to each of you is to read and re-read this paper several times before you make any judgment as to its usefulness or application in your spiritual life. Then, use your intuition to guide your interpretation of the technique. The techniques of Lyricus are never spelled out in burnished detail; its teachers prefer to provide paradigms, concepts, and frameworks, leaving the precise implementation or blueprint to the individual. It is the singular initiation.

The light body is awakening in literally millions of people on earth. As this blossoming of light occurs on the planet, there is an intuitive wisdom required to direct or channel this light or field of higher frequency energy. A higher ratio of light is not what is required, but rather a higher intelligence of light and love being applied to the right issues or problems that humanity faces.

The light body reveals one's inner light and wisdom. It is the vehicle of creativity that telepathically listens to the family of light and expresses its unique signature of insight in response to the family of light, adding dimension and nuance that deepens our interconnection and collective wisdom. The Rising Heart is a technique to help children of light to transition into teachers of light through their presence and behaviors, not because they can cite the esoteric nature of the human condition, articulate cosmological structures, or write the master keys of life.

When you are drawn to this teaching you will feel a familiar resonance with the energetic frequencies contained in the words: "Rising Heart" and "Heart's Crown", as these are encoded words within your deepest being. The teachings of Liminal Cosmogony are encoded

to integrate and align the harmonics of your light body with the time-space quanta of your human instrument. They weave the soul and mind-heart-body triad in temporal union so you can transmit a new understanding of your purpose as a teacher of light.

If you choose to embark on this journey, do so with a sober intent and humble outlook, for you are entering a scalable relationship with the Divine Being that is your light body, and calling for its highest purpose to be invoked upon this planet of five kingdoms. You are entering an accelerated path of change, as this is what higher light energy brings: accelerated change begetting intelligent behaviors befitting a teacher of light.

This section of Liminal Cosmogony, known as Teachers of Light, constitutes a curriculum of the light body. It is an owner's manual for those who are embodied and desire to exercise their divine rights as a teacher of light; to share the mysterious gift of the higher light and intelligence of divine love to the planet and all upon her. Remember the writing is not so much contained in the words, but the feeling you receive from them as you contemplate their deeper meanings. May the initiatory coding of this paper awaken you to the next level of your journey.

From my world to yours,

James

## **EXCERPT FROM LIMINAL COSMOGONY: TEACHERS OF LIGHT THE RISING HEART**

The light body is a particle of the Divine Mind, cast from the Central Sun into and through the fourth and fifth dimensional matrices in order to embody within a human being the essence of the Central Sun. The light body's materialization begins from the seventh dimension, cascading into materiality where it settles into the first manifested being—the human heart.

Within the human instrument, it is the heart that is originally the nucleus-home of the light body, but eventually the light body's locus drifts upward to the pineal gland at the base of the brain, usually in the first seven years of life. Here it typically remains until the physical body expires, at which time it recirculates within the higher light realms of the fifth dimension wherein unity and the connective field of pure love radiates unimpeded by matter. This is the ground of soul where all beings flow in the vibrant river of sound and light.

The light body is composed of the Light of the Central Sun. Within each of the galaxies is a Central Sun that acts as the transmitter of the Divine Mind within the galactic multiverse. The Central Sun is the trans-dimensional portal within each galaxy that interconnects all galaxies and dimensions of life therein to the pulsing heartbeat of the Grand Central Sun from whence the primacy of sound and light arise. It is the integrative nexus between the physical and spiritual planes, and thus, the Central Sun is the

quantum sum of all suns within the galaxy, and this quantum light lives within the human instrument as its light body.

In a very real sense, we are all born from this sound and light of the Grand Central Sun, and it is to this pulsing, rhythmic heartbeat that we are all entrained to varying degrees. It is this entrainment that re-establishes our alignment to the Grand Expansion and restores our access to the higher intelligence where we become the willing impulse of divine will.

The light body is the seer of reality within the individual identity. It is the Wholeness Navigator that detects the frequencies of fifth dimensional essence in the lower dimensions of matter, time, and space. It is the bearer of alignment to the Plan of the One Creator. It is the portal of guidance within the one who is separated from unity by the veils of illusion. It is the voice within the void that calls to your mind and heart, beckoning its recognition and restoration as your true identity and that of all others as well. It is the connection between the heart and mind that allows for true creation to occur. It is the telepathic portal that hears and sees the divine intelligence and then activates its expression within the lower realms by mere presence.

The light body is the core of consciousness, and this interior core is shifting. In your world it is shifting back to your heart, but its nucleus-home is now between the heart and throat, known as the thymus, or the “heart’s crown”. We will speak of it as the Rising Heart. The Rising Heart is located on two axes or fields of vibration: the first is the

horizontal axis, which is the Field of Planets. The second is the vertical axis, which is the Field of Central Sun.

On the planetary axis, there is the material being or human instrument, composed of the sheaths that protect and sustain the light body—the physical, emotional, and mental sheaths of the third and fourth dimensional matrix. This axis represents the planet meeting your light body. It is the axis of grounding and anchoring the light body to the planet and the physical beings upon her.

On the Central Sun axis there are the descending and ascending streams of energy that connect your light body to its source: the Central Sun. It is from this connection that the Grand Awakening of physical beings occurs and the divine current is felt tugging on your human instrument, calling it to activation and awakening its will to become a vehicle for the light body.

The light body is the zygote of consciousness formed by the union of divine light and sound. It is born radiant, pure, intelligent and life-sustaining. The light body listens to both your thought-scape and feeling-scape, adjusting its radiance in accordance to its perceptions. Thus, the light body reacts to the lower dimensional matrix, and in this way is influenced by the individual's level of coherence, intelligent expression, creative insight, and higher mind intuition.

As the core of consciousness shifts to the new axis of the Rising Heart, the internal coherence of the individual becomes the amplifier of the light body's radiance in the world of form. This internal coherence is heightened when the thought-scape and feeling-scape of the individual are

aligned and flowing in the river of divine will. It is then that the light body can truly step forward and radiate its purpose on the planetary level.

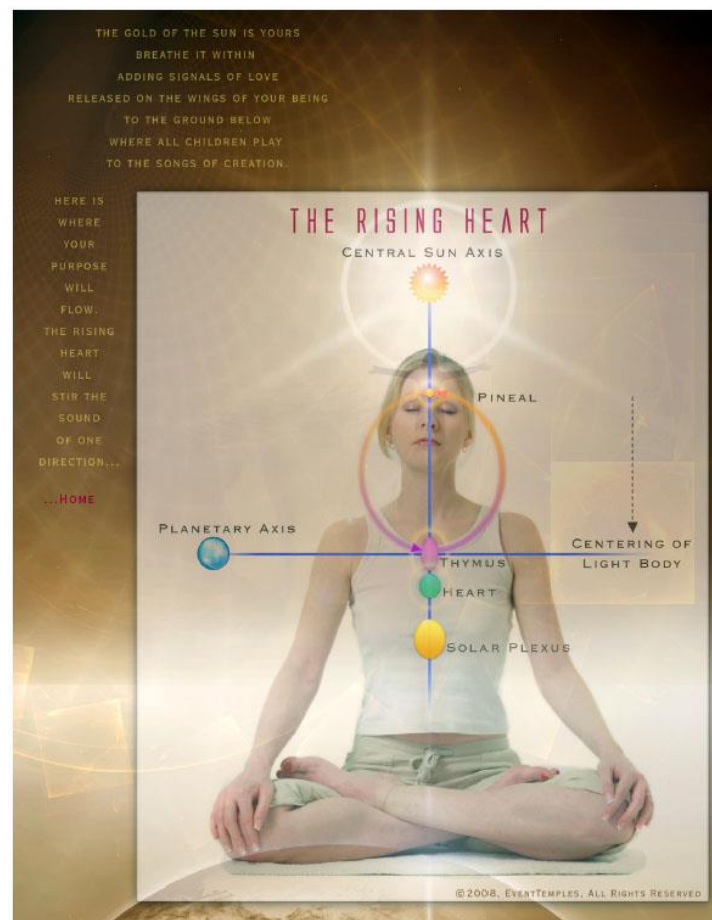
The radiant and intelligent expression of the light body enmasse is the true meaning of life in the planetary axis because it is the action of collective intelligence that enables the planned and unplanned evolutionary paths to converge and empower the planetary shifts that enable dimensional ascension for all who are prepared. This increase in the expression of light and love within the planetary sphere opens the Grand Portal, which is the gateway for the planet to access the fifth dimensional matrix of pure, connective energy, which is, in essence, divine love-intelligence.

As the children of light begin to activate their light bodies while living within a human instrument, they will sense the presence of their electromagnetic field as it becomes enmeshed with their every breath. The breath washes over the Rising Heart in both the in-breath and out-breath. When breathing in, the energy symbolically descends from the Central Sun and flows through the crown chakra settling at the solar plexus just below the heart. There, it sparkles in the golden light of your signature tone. When breathing out, the energy is released from the solar plexus up to the planetary axis at the height of the thymus or Rising Heart, and then radiates outward with dominance to the horizontal plane.

In this time of the Grand Awakening the light body is becoming centered at the Rising Heart because the mind—where it has been centered for thousands of years—is enmeshed in static and distortions that confound the light

body's ability to fully radiate its energetic field upon the planetary grid and fulfill its purpose. The intersection of the two axes (Planetary and Central Sun) is the activation point of the individual. The integration of breath and imagination is the most efficient method through which this activation can occur and be sustained within the human instrument.

The breath of the Rising Heart is the practice of breathing from the Central Sun and expressing this breath energy into the planetary grid. It is the method of activation taught on all planets for those aligned to the Plan of Expansion into the Lands Unknown. When you read these words you will understand intuitively for you know well the mysterious purpose that stirs you awake and compels you to action.





The breath of soul is directed by the light body whose seat of intelligence resides at the point of the Rising Heart. You can imagine this as a portal within the body that receives the electromagnetic field of light from the Central Sun through the in-breath, and directs it to the solar plexus; and on the out-breath, channels it across the planetary axis as a way of grounding the energy within the field of third dimensional beings.

It is this grounding of the energy, directed by the light body, infused with the internal coherence of the human instrument that enables the human emotional field to build the collective heart and connected mind that enables the planet to step through higher dimensional barriers with relative ease and grace.

This is a time of action, and the action is to activate your light body to its purposeful role within your human instrument, and to share its higher light frequencies to the human emotional field. This activity re-grids the collective heart and connective mind to the emerging culture of the one, unified planet moving in the upward spiral of the seven dimensional hypersphere in which all beings within its quantum and space-time presence are unified with the planet, and the planet with the Central Sun.

In this future time, beings will be galactic citizens and they will commune with other inter-galactic citizens and see the universe as they now see the planet. Each of you embody the light of the Central Sun, and not only carry it with you, but purposefully radiate it through your actions of intelligent love and the virtuous heart. You are builders of this future time, and your actions will be acknowledged with its direct experience.

The breath through the Rising Heart is an activator of your light body. Internal coherence within your human instrument is the sustaining and evolving force of this activation, independent of the travails that befall you or the human family. You can generate this internal coherence through the practice of breathing through the Rising Heart and expressing the radiant beauty of the higher light through the virtues of the heart, the intelligence of the higher mind, and the ascendant beauty of the spirit we all share.

When the breath of soul radiates outward on the planetary axis of the individual, it takes on the signature field of that individual. This signature is like a “carrier wave” to the original signal from the Central Sun, and it is this carrier wave that is the key factor that enables the rays of the Central Sun to cut through the static and distortions of the planet’s electromagnetic fields.

There are many competing currents and conflicts within the planetary realm before its entrance into the higher dimensions of the etheric plane. These currents pull you, push you, and deliver you to shores of indeterminacy and questionable value. There are light bodies cast in human instruments that are so darkened that they are like black holes in space, swallowing light in the gravity of their misguided ignorance. The light body is, in some ways, a fragile consciousness. It listens well and responds to what it hears. It sees the higher realities, but it also dives deep into the lowest realms seeking out the unique separation veils that empower its discernment, which ultimately reinstate its power as a sovereign integral of the highest order.

The life of the light body is complex—more complex than you can imagine and yet you can appreciate its goals and the journey it weaves to achieve them because your intuition and imagination enable you to feel the edges of its reality. Those who are the Builders of the Grand Expansion are embodied in human instruments and they are awakening to their light bodies as their light bodies begin to activate to the new rays of light and love that are flowing from the Central Sun.

We refer to these individuals as Builders because they are the architects and engineers who are building the new culture, monetary system, technology, and mind-body-spirit systems that will endure as the planet transforms itself to the new energetic grid of the higher fourth dimension. Within the Builders are the Planetary Teachers, and these are the ones who are now blossoming as the new rays embolden their light bodies to harmonize, resonate, and co-create with one another.

There are saviors and messiahs that enter the planetary grid in its third dimensional and lower fourth dimensional state to periodically re-align the spiritual teachings of humanity to their Ancient Source. However, now is the time when the Teachers of Light are operating as a collective power, joining together to weave a new fabric of time, space and energy—one that is ultimately the portal to the fifth dimension.

The Planetary Teachers are generally embodied, while the Central Sun Teachers are mostly operating in their light bodies on higher dimensions, and in some cases, other galaxies. The Planetary Teachers of Light require activation, internal coherence, a balanced inflow and

outflow of love and light through a virtuous and heart-filled behavioral system, and the quiet of re-connection time to rejuvenate and re-balance their human instrument.

The Rising Heart technique is a system to achieve each of these requirements. It is not the only way; it is a proven way. It is a framework that can be adapted and modified to suit an individual's preferences of imagination and intuition. The Teachers of Light are quantum beings of great power. Though they wear human instruments of density and distortion, they never lose sight of their rightful purpose and the ultimate ascendancy of their family of light.

The human instrument is a fabric of frustration for the Teachers of Light, as they know well what they are, but like a ballet dancer wearing a spacesuit, they are not able to express the fullness of their higher wisdom in the material worlds. This frustration is coupled to the third dimension construct that teachers must teach through words—spoken or written—and yet we tell you that it is through your behavioral system, the expression of your virtuous heart and the application of techniques like the Rising Heart that define you as a teacher of light.

The writings of the Planetary Teachers are telepathically transmitted by the Central Sun teachers, who in turn translate the energetics of the Central Sun and step-down these higher energies into the vocabulary of the human family. This is the system of dispensation that prevails on all planets until the species achieves fifth dimensional equilibrium, at which time, the communication from the Central Sun is direct and immediate. The Central Sun, in essence, is opening the channels of telepathic

communication to the Teachers of Light so they are able to transmit the vibratory energies to the general masses entrenched in the energetic quagmire of the previous and current dimensions.

As planets ascend inter-dimensionally they require a higher connection to the Central Sun to draw them from their present dimensional grid into the next level, and this is precisely what the Central Sun Teachers instruct the Planetary Teachers to do: to facilitate this higher connection through various techniques that activate the light body of the Teachers of Light so they may collectively create this higher connection.

When you inhale the light of the Central Sun, and take it into your soul's workshop, adding your fingerprint of love for your brothers and sisters, and then release this higher light to them and your planet, you create this higher connection in this simple act. Not only for yourself, but for all. All of the human family benefits for we all rise on the same currents of divine love and the higher intelligence that pervades it.

The Teachers of Light have the opportunity to re-energize their association of the breath and heartbeat and feel their rhythmic energy as the connection to life and the higher, universal intelligence that flows from the Grand Central Sun. In doing this, you bring yourself into alignment to the Grand Awakening, as the higher truths are being downloaded to your world. Your human family—living between the forces of light and dark—will awaken to the multidimensional world and leave the fields of illusion behind, never to return.

# **THE TEMPLE OF SPIRITUAL ACTIVISM**

## **INTRODUCTION**

Spiritual activism is a concept within Lyricus that originates from the Sovereign Integral (SI) state of being. At the quantum level, it is a very deep state of emanating transmissions of unity and equality to the human family, and by extension, to all life that surrounds it. At a more physical level, the level of the human instrument, it is the vibrancy of the will to understand the human condition in its most disastrous expressions, and seek ways to improve it as a collective work.

The pathway of spiritual activism is depicted in Figure 1 below. It is a simplification to be sure, but the essence of the journey is the same for nearly everyone, and so it is worthy of a closer look.

Something or someone wakes us up. A “bell” rings and we begin to see the outline of a new belief structure sprouting up around us. Perhaps our values shift or we begin to see that what we had previously called “truth” is incomplete, or it no longer resonates with our innermost self. Very often this disenchantment occurs because we have observed that what is promised in our belief system is unfulfilled in our life experience.

At a deeper level, when the wake-up call occurs, we are transformed into a sponge, seeking the new information in

books, seminars, websites, rituals, videos, nature, and a hundred other modalities of experience. This is the “Deep Dive” that draws a person to seek the information that will re-model their belief system, aligning them more closely to Source or Creator.

In order to take this Deep Dive, it is necessary to cleanse the old beliefs and values that had dominated the previous belief system, or world view. This cleansing is similar to detoxifying the mind and heart from the resonant vibrations and energetic attractors of the old system of thoughts and feelings.

*“The real voyage of discovery consists not in seeking new landscapes but in having new eyes.”*

**- Marcel Proust**

What happens for many spiritual seekers is that they begin to teach the information gleaned from their Deep Dive as a form of “truth-telling,” and in this process they fall back into separation. This separation is an old pattern, and consists of vestigial energy that—like a gravitational beam—keeps the seeker in the paradigm of us and them, saved and unsaved, enlightened and unenlightened, God-fearing and atheist, order and chaos, and so forth.

It is this sense of separation in the truth-telling that holds judgment, ego, and an ignorance of the reality that is our source of intelligence, and these elements have vibrational density that creates the cycle of returning to sleep and reawakening to a different bell, and then, once again, beginning the Deep Dive and truth-telling. This cycle, for some of us, can repeat more than a dozen times in a single lifetime.

Each time we undertake a cycle of awakening, Deep Dive, and truth-telling, we learn something new about our energetic responsibility. We learn that we are an encompassing energy first and foremost. What is built from this energy in the form of the human instrument is not our authentic self, nor is it permanent or causal. We learn that energy is closer to who we are and that this energy is not defined by time-space. This energy level is at a deeper level, is intelligent and able to operate as a “Sub-God” or carrier signal of First Source.

This realization moves one out of the lower cycle and into the spiral adventure of coherent energetic transfers. In this stage of our journey, we are not transmitters of “truth,” but rather, we are expressions of the six heart virtues—appreciation, compassion, forgiveness, humility, understanding, and valor. Like a prism accepting invisible light into itself and expressing seven rays of color; we accept the inner light of the One into our human instrument and express the virtues of the heart.

The heart, not the mind, becomes our focus, for it is the heart that can bridge separation and Oneness. We become engineers who build the bridges between separation and Oneness-Unity. In this endeavor, we turn our attentions to connecting and sharing, reaching out to others and helping the causes of our planet that require our light and energy. It is from this point of the journey that we awaken to a form of expression that we will call *Spiritual Activism*.

Spiritual activism is not about solving the problems of the world by energizing social causes and adding to the polarity between those who care and those who don’t, or those who believe the solution is “x” and those who



believe the solution is “y”. This is a subtle distinction because the will to do good in the world is often accompanied by separation. For example, the social cause of climate change has “camps” of those who are supporting the Earth (activists, tree-huggers, vegans, ecologists, etc.) and those who are not (global corporations, greedy business people, military industrial complex, governments, etc.).

*“If we go into Nature and inquire into her processes we observe more than one glimmer of light. The truth is that life is not material and that the lifestream is not a substance. Life is a force—electrical, magnetic, a quality, not a quantity.”*

**- Luther Burbank**

Abstract but potent movements, like globalization, can carve out a city and overturn its commerce and community, essentially copy-pasting the culture of globalization in a place that once held its own spirit and sense of community. Those who are opposed to globalization, and observe their communities looking more and more like cookie-cutter McCommunities and Walmartvilles, can become activists against the global machine, but from their fervent opposition, they actually energize the globalization momentum that they seek to stop.

The different camps of “us” and “them” have energetic signatures as well as physical places, people, and events, and this energetic signature grows as the two sides of polarity shine the intensity of their disagreement (energy) at one another. You can observe this in any political

system (e.g., liberals and conservatives) and see how the energies are constructed, and make unity and oneness an abstraction instead of a reality.

We live in the non-linear, multi-dimensional, intersecting planes of separate realities that self-organize and transform into the world of Oneness and Unity, but only when we operate in the surety of our hearts will we experience this unity. The heart is not given to ideology or frameworks of rigidity. It operates in tandem with the hippocampus and neocortex to sense, decode, and respond to our local universe and multiverse in utter fluidity.

The heart is our magnet of perception—the decipherer that listens to the electromagnetic sea in which we live, and pulls in the information we need to live in unity with others. It perceives oneness in the living world, and interconnected purpose in the nonliving world. This is the “flashlight” of attention that cascades outward, rising from the depths of our Sovereign Integral consciousness and flooding our local universe with the heart virtues of compassion, understanding, humility, and forgiveness.

## SPIRITUAL ACTIVISM

EVT 3 is called the *Temple of Spiritual Activism* because its focus is on activating a feature of the individual that connects one to the Entity of Oneness, First Source, or the Nameless Force, from which virtually all of humanity has become de-synchronized as a result of subtle indoctrinations coming from vibratory fields that disrupt this innate connection of Oneness.

If we are each atoms of an encompassing, composite entity that is unified, singular in identity, and increasingly coherent in its expression (as measured by geologic time), then we are learning to become re-synchronized to its consciousness. Activating and accelerating this process of re-synchronization is the focus of spiritual activism because as this spreads throughout the individuated states of expression within humanity, it begins to manifest a different reality. This new reality is one that is manifested from the virtues of the heart, instead of the mind.

Activism is a word that conjures the behavior of speaking truth to power. At the core of activism is the sense that something is wrong, and a new goal, and the method to achieve that goal, is required to solve the problem. In general, activism is the collective movement to increase distributed power, or democracy across the human race. It is the notion of wresting control of humanity's goals from the elite few, and re-defining the goals of humanity so they are more sane, just, kind, caring, peaceful, and liberating.

The goal of spiritual activism is to accelerate the Oneness of humanity, and as a result, bring about the manifestations that arise from a consciousness that flows from the heart virtues, instead of from the hierarchical structures of the indoctrinated human mind. The methods for this are extremely subtle and bear little resemblance to either political, or social activism.

The source of spiritual activism is not of the mind. Therefore, it requires a new way of thinking about one's identity. This is the first step in the method of spiritual activism: *Living in the identity of the Sovereign Integral consciousness*. The word-concept "Sovereign Integral" is encoded, unifying the two aspects of the One Being: Sovereign and individuated, and integral as One. We are both sovereign and unique expressions of the one, unified Being.

Words are simply words, but the concept of the One Being as the Sovereign Integral consciousness is the basis of spiritual activism because it is through the expression of this consciousness—this specific level of consciousness—that we gain a familiarity with the quantum level of our existence as a collective, potent entity that cannot be imprisoned, marginalized, or influenced by the mind.

## SPIRITUAL CENTER

In order to make the Sovereign Integral consciousness more concrete, think of your consciousness as a hub with many spokes diverging from it. The hub is your Spiritual Center, or Quantum Presence that lives beyond time and space. This Spiritual Center is connected to every other Spiritual Center through a quantum link that facilitates the Oneness of all living forms. This quantum link is what we refer to as the Sovereign Integral state because it is the source and facilitation of Oneness.

The level of individual perception and expression that is fully connected to Oneness is the Spiritual Center of your consciousness. You can think of this as the portal through which the individual can pass into Oneness and remain an individual. The Spiritual Center is the timeless presence of the individuated spirit-consciousness. The personality is like a “membrane” of this pure consciousness as it enters the worlds of space-time. The human instrument (body, emotions, and mind) serves both the Spiritual Center and the personality as they interact with their local universe.

*“In the human spirit, as in the universe, nothing is higher or lower; everything has equal rights to a common center which manifests its hidden existence precisely through this harmonic relationship between every part and itself.”*

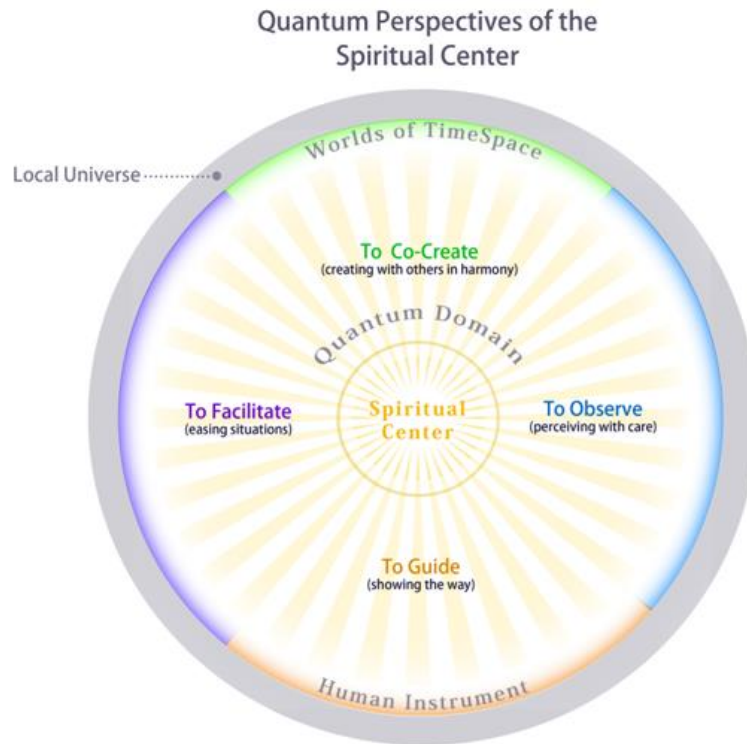
**- Goethe**

The purpose of EVT 3 is to help shift the consciousness of personality, embodied within the human instrument, to the Spiritual Center regularly throughout the day and

utilize our Spiritual Center to interact with our local universe. In doing this we gain a foothold on the quantum states that we dwell in, and through this deeper awareness, we unsheathe our authentic self, aligning to its vibratory fields and moving further into alignment with all others who are undergoing the same transformation.

There are always multiple levels of activism in the worlds of time-space. On one level there are those who are rising up in a common voice, calling for peace, justice, support, and equity, especially for those disadvantaged by social or economic circumstance. On another level, are those who are imagining the Oneness of Humanity by touching into their Spiritual Centers and allowing this vibration to flow outward from their hearts. One level facilitates the other; in a sense, they are conjoined in manifesting the new realities of a world in which Oneness supersedes separation and polarity.

How does one shift their consciousness from the personality that has dominated them since early childhood, to navigating life from their Spiritual Center? There is no master key to this realization. No incantation, mantra, or formula will evoke its state of being. However, there are four gateways that embody the viewpoint of the Spiritual Center, and if they are integrated into one's life, and coupled to a consistent practice of breathing (Quantum Pause), the individual can access their Spiritual Center and "slip" into the Sovereign Integral consciousness within the time-space realm.



As the diagram above shows, the Spiritual Center, within the quantum domain, holds certain perspectives or states of being. You can think of these perspectives as “windows” into the time-space domain in which the human instrument operates, and through which the Spiritual Center of the individual influences the material realities. If each of the spokes radiating from the center is vibrant, then the individual is operating more from the consciousness and vibration of Oneness, and less from the indoctrinated mind that is pulled towards separation, analysis, polarity, and judgment.

These four states of the Spiritual Center are:

1. Facilitation
2. Observance
3. Guidance

#### 4. Co-Creation

Accessing these states of being is a matter of consolidating your energies and being in the present. Experiencing these states helps to keep you in the present, and the more one's life is lived in the moment, the easier it is to be in facilitation, guidance, observance, and co-creation, and therefore to express out of wholeness instead of separation; to live from coherence (inside-out emanation) rather than reflecting de-coherence (outside-in radiation).



## **COHERENCE AS IT RELATES TO SPIRITUAL ACTIVISM**

Coherence is a key concept to understand, and not simply coherence as we think of it in physics or biology. Coherence is a state of being that is an outgrowth of alignment and synchronization with one's Spiritual Center. It is the natural state of the Spiritual Center of the individual and it derives from the paradigm that you are part of an encompassing whole, and you are forever connected to ITS expression as explorers, communicators, and co-creators.

In the broadest sense, coherence enables the individual to experience, explore, and embrace their interactions with their universe at an energetic level through the four states of being—not simply to survive and identify with the transient desires of the human instrument.

We tend to identify coherence as joy, or ease, or vitality, but coherence is really about the Presence of Allowance. This Presence originates at our Spiritual Center, which requires that we consolidate and unify our energies into a stillness of being where there is no agenda, no effort to solve or resolve—simply allowance.

This allowance is offered to the Universe and Sovereign Integral consciousness as the corridor through which the Universe can bring in the learning, manifest the tools, or create the conditions to solve life's difficulties when they occur. In a way, coherence is the ability to outsource problems to our Spiritual Center, knowing that in doing

this, we are tapping into the four perspectives that emanate from the Spiritual Center.

Coherence is not simply alignment to happiness or a particular emotional state. It does not fixate on subjective states of being at a mental, emotional, or physical level. Coherence is innate empowerment derived from the natural act of allowance. It is the pause that refreshes and realigns the human instrument to its pilot—the Spiritual Center that is the portal to First Source, and the node on the network through which all beings are connected to the greater Plan.

Coherence, at a quantum level, is natural, flowing, nonlinear, dynamic, and connected with one's Spiritual Center. As it flows into the human instrument it can transform into geometric, linear randomness, ricocheting within the human instrument like a pinball as it encounters densities of resistance, or energy obstructions. In order to re-synchronize with one's Spiritual Center, it is important to access its four states of being—facilitation, observance, guidance, and co-creation, as these help to create more of a flow through the human instrument.

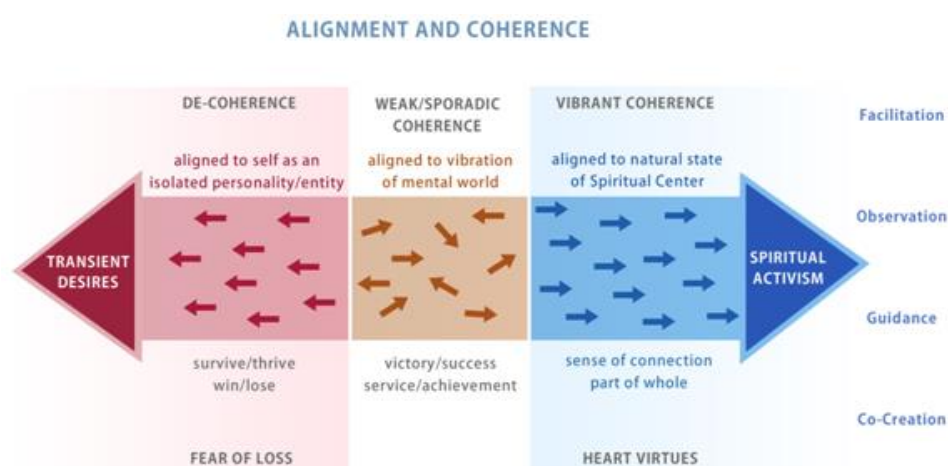
## **ALIGNMENT AND COHERENCE**

Thus, coherence positions the individual in alignment with their Spiritual Center where they can shift from the “fear of loss” mentality of transient desires, to the “creative flow” of inter-connectedness and Oneness. Does this happen overnight? No, not for the vast majority of people, but if you imagine how the Spiritual Center operates in your local universe, you can begin to utilize its four perspectives in the smallest details of your life. If you can then couple these perspectives or states of being with the expression of your heart’s virtues, then you are practicing spiritual activism at a profound level.

So many are waiting for someone to help our human family ascend to the lofty heights of spiritual enlightenment, self-realization, or the Golden Age of humanity, and yet, why would the Sovereign Integral consciousness require help? It is a vibratory field of consciousness so vast that it is impossible to even imagine it is deficient in some way. This realization is part of the process of spiritual activism because it informs the voice of the people that we are unified in the quantum bedrock of consciousness; that this collective force does not bend to the mind or its systems of creation. It is the sovereign and integral force that animates all life into the composite of First Source.

Spiritual activism is a commitment, and regardless of how much time you have remaining on this planet, in this lifetime, for those of you who are seeking a higher purpose, a more focused influence, and potency of expression, you will find it in this path. It is not the only

path, nor would I say it is the best, because this is subjective and depends on the person, but if you can inhabit the Spiritual Center and view your local universe through the quantum lens of facilitation, guidance, observation, and co-creation, you will see differently, and your manifestations will reflect this difference in your world.



As stated earlier, coherence is an outgrowth of an increasingly conscious alignment with one's Spiritual Center. Depicted above is the concept of alignment and its relationship to coherence. If you live in a "fear of loss" consciousness, you are more aligned to the self as a personality separate from others. This is the polarity consciousness, and its pilot, or driver is the desire for material things that are short-lived. This is the state of decoherence where your innate coherence is disassembled by your desire to achieve the things that bring you transient pleasures, a sense of achievement, material survival, and ego satisfaction. It is not that the desire to succeed at your work or play creates decoherence, rather, it is when it becomes the obsession, the focal point of your

life, and when all inward movement to connect with one's Spiritual Center is deferred or renounced.

Many people today are in the middle state where they enjoy moments of good coherence and then the next moment where they feel lost. It is as if they are transitioning from one state to the other and their sense of alignment is shifting many times throughout the day. Their anchor is cast into the mental realm of the left-brain where things are linear, structured, hierarchical, and polar. This is the dominant frequency on Earth at this time, where rules and structures are set forth and citizens are educated to conform to this structure, learning how to align to it in order to achieve success and contribute to the social order.

Alignment is a form of attunement. We attune ourselves to vibrational frequencies and energetic signatures all the time, though usually this is done subconsciously. This subconscious attunement, when it is focusing our attention on transient pleasures or mental structures, occurs because we have forgotten our Spiritual Centers and allowed ourselves to drift away from our innate sense of coherence and the empowerments it so effortlessly supplies.

This drift is less the responsibility of the individual as it is more the responsibility of society. Society must educate and inspire its citizens to attune to their Spiritual Centers and live from this level of coherence, but unfortunately the societal indoctrination is aimed at compliance to the mental construct of polarity and separation. This energetic patterning is precisely what the spiritual activist seeks to transform.

Spiritual activism is a conscious choice to align with one's Spiritual Center and adopt the perspectives of this Quantum Presence. These perspectives are subtle but potent. Here are a few ways in which they can be used:

- Dissolve personalities and projections. Allow. Dwell in stability, inevitability and stillness. Let the universe that surrounds you refresh itself and transform. Observe the re-gridding, the re-formatting of your environment.

- Rebuild interactions, relationships, and communication. Understand where you come from as a Quantum Presence, as opposed to a personality or ego. Feel the Spiritual Center within you and re-create your personality forever fueled from within. Co-create with those with whom you have resonance.

- Educate people by co-creating new, flexible paradigms for higher consciousness to inhabit the material worlds. Guide people through an infrastructure of interconnectedness, synergy, and ease to find their resonance.

- Emanate led by your Spiritual Center. Facilitate the outward path from the Spiritual Center to bear on the behaviors of the human instrument. Make it easy, direct, and natural.

The applications mentioned above are fluid, open, and merely suggestive of the way in which these quantum perspectives can filter into our local universe and begin to re-grid our behaviors, which in turn influence our relationships, interactions, and objectives. They begin to restructure our behaviors because, through them, we can see the connections of our inner world and outer world—

not in the sense of manifestation—but in the sense of clearing a pathway for higher frequencies and energetics to restore humanity’s spiritual roots and sense of equality and oneness.

# SOURCE SYNC

This is why coherence is such a critical element of spiritual activism: It engenders new behaviors. The diagram below depicts the three behaviors of coherence that restore and protect coherence. This paradigm is called Source Sync, and it is a method to enhance the synchronization between one's personality and Spiritual Center.

Source Sync is a “carry in your wallet” technique that you can use to maintain your focus on your Spiritual Center throughout the day, and consolidate your mental and emotional energies so they remain more open to the nudges and whispers of your Spiritual Center.



First Source cannot be communicated as an entity, an interaction, or a modality. Source cannot be communicated. Period. Source can be experienced. Source



is Symphony in every moment of time. Source is not an entity—IT is a Symphony of intelligent vibration.

To experience Source, you have to tap into that Symphony. Those of you who are on a spiritual path always see a bigger picture. There is always a bigger picture waiting behind the one you are currently exploring. Where do these bigger pictures come from? They are a result of your effort to tap into this Symphony. In every effort you make to reach into the deeper structures and flows of your Spiritual Center, you move closer to the Living Presence of Source.

When the experience comes from your Spiritual Center it doesn't need to cross any dimensional barriers. This is intimacy with Source; with ITS Symphony of expression. This is the path everyone is on: Learning how to re-synchronize with Source while wearing a human instrument. Spiritual activists seek to accelerate this path, and Source Sync is an excellent method to do this.

# A PROCESS MAP FOR SPIRITUAL ACTIVISM

Synchronize. Like anything that has burrowed its way into the planes of matter and time-space, spiritual activism is a process, but it is a quiet, deeply personal process. In the diagram below, notice that the first step is to heighten the synchronization between the personality-ego and the Spiritual Center. Source-Sync is a technique for this, but you may find there are others that suit you better, so experiment and see what helps you gain a better sense of synchronization. One way you will know when the synchronization is improving is that you will feel less suspicion of your local universe (external world) and more connected to your heart.

Remember, this path will have its ups and downs, so do not have the expectation that steady improvement is the measure of success. You will have set-backs and times when you feel you are becoming less synchronized. Have compassion for yourself and anyone else who is on this path, the human condition is challenging.



Resonate. Resonance is a form of communication. When you take the time to have conversations with the Universe (or Sovereign Integral if you prefer to conceptualize it this way), you will find a deepening resonance with the Universe, and this provides you with a better sense of trust and allowance. It creates a bond between you and the Universe, and it is this bond that helps you to allow the Universe to work through you in resonance.

Navigate. The four quantum perspectives spoken of earlier are the means of navigation. They are the signposts that help you externalize your Spiritual Center into your local universe. Thus, navigating to your Spiritual Center is really touching into its perspectives regularly and looking for ways to apply them in your daily life. You navigate by sensing your local universe, looking for resonances, and seeking ways to apply the quantum perspectives and the six heart virtues.

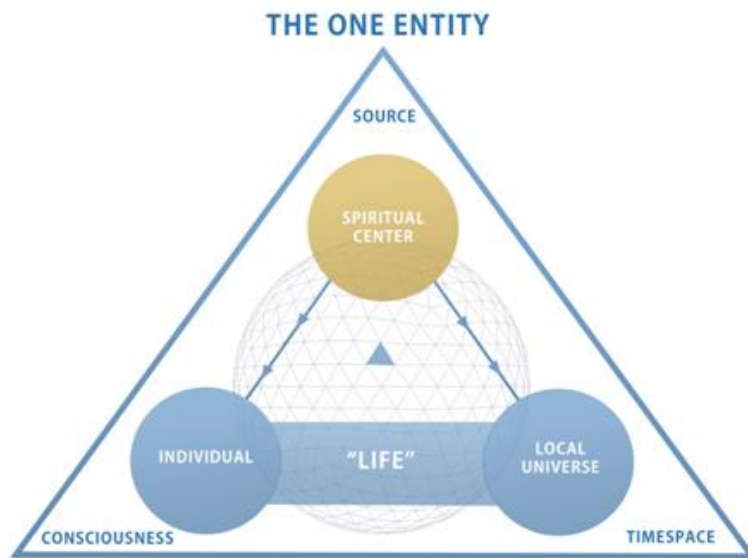
Emanate. When the Spiritual Center is found, however dim or vivid your connection might be, it will flow through your human instrument. You will emanate its frequencies only when you adopt its perspectives. If you try to bottle its energetic flow into human mind paradigms of greed, separation, polarity, or control, it will dissolve its connection. This dissolution can take minutes or months, it depends on a complex set of factors, but it will not be subject to the mind.

Emanation is the goal of the spiritual activist. It is the quiet, unobtrusive frequency of equality and oneness. It is the tone of equality that flows from this Spiritual Center and nothing else is required. There is no struggle or effort

to amp it up, or send it this way or that. It is transmitted without effort and there is no time-switch or channel through which it flows. It permeates the human instrument as a vibratory frequency and is released into the local universe like a perfume's scent that flows in every direction, taken up by the wind and circulated throughout the Universe.

# THE ONE ENTITY

Emanation is simply the flow outward of the energetic frequencies of the Spiritual Center forming the One Entity consciousness. The One Entity is described in the diagram below. It is another way to look at your Self in the mirror of vibrations.



This paradigm is a simple explanation of what spiritual activists aspire to hold as their identity, because if you can imagine yourself consisting of this composite picture, you are able to emanate with greater potency and influence. Again, it is simply a paradigm, which in itself, is simply a structured way to re-imagine who you are. It is not THE truth or even a representation of truth since the use of words and a two-dimensional diagram cannot possibly present the textures and dimensions of your identity. Just contemplate its meaning to you, and don't dwell on it too much.

Awareness is openness. Move on, continue, and don't let anything consume you.

In the new paradigm there is only One Entity, sensing, navigating and finding its resonance within its local universe, and using that resonance to become aware of their Spiritual Center. This Spiritual Center is a “note” (or node) of the Symphony (or network) of Source. The One Entity is therefore a fusion of the Individual, the local universe, the Spiritual Center, and Source.

Through our sensing and navigation we find our resonance with our local universe without, and the quantum environment within.

We use instinct, intuition, and intelligence to sense and navigate. Instinct consists of a field of programs embedded from nature. Intuition consists of a field of paradigms that issue from the collective consciousness, and are accessible at the quantum levels. Intelligence is the connection you feel to Source vibration (Symphony) and your ability to express this coherent vibration through their behaviors. This is behavioral intelligence.

If you visualize that you are completely One Entity, all you are doing is interacting with yourself with no agenda. It is synergy. You are embracing yourself. The four perspectives of the Spiritual Center are behaviors that treat every other being in your environment as yourself when you're interacting with them. This is the vision of right relations.

As an obstruction arises, a new paradigm arises from Source to release it—from your Spiritual Center. This is precisely why in these times of rapid change and

transformation the walls seem to be moving in on all of us. Time is compressing and we sense this compression in nearly every aspect of our lives. We can hold faith and confidence that as the walls move inward and compression is ever more palpable, we are also given the new paradigms and ideas to absorb these pressing conditions with grace and ease.

Spiritual activists are forerunners of these changes. We feel them before others, we have to deal with them before others, and we will be marked by them before others. But we will also learn the new paradigms before others and it will be our responsibility to pass these on; not necessarily as Truth Tellers, but we will carry these paradigms in our coherent behaviors, words, tone of voice, eyes, energetic expression, and heart. In these ways, are contained the most powerful methods we can use to transform our world.

## **WHOLENESS PARADIGM EVT 3:**

Temple of Spiritual Activism is about connecting with our Spiritual Centers and opening our human instrument to express the energetic frequencies therein. It is concerned with the Wholeness Paradigm expressed below, a two-dimensional view into an extremely complex set of interrelationships.

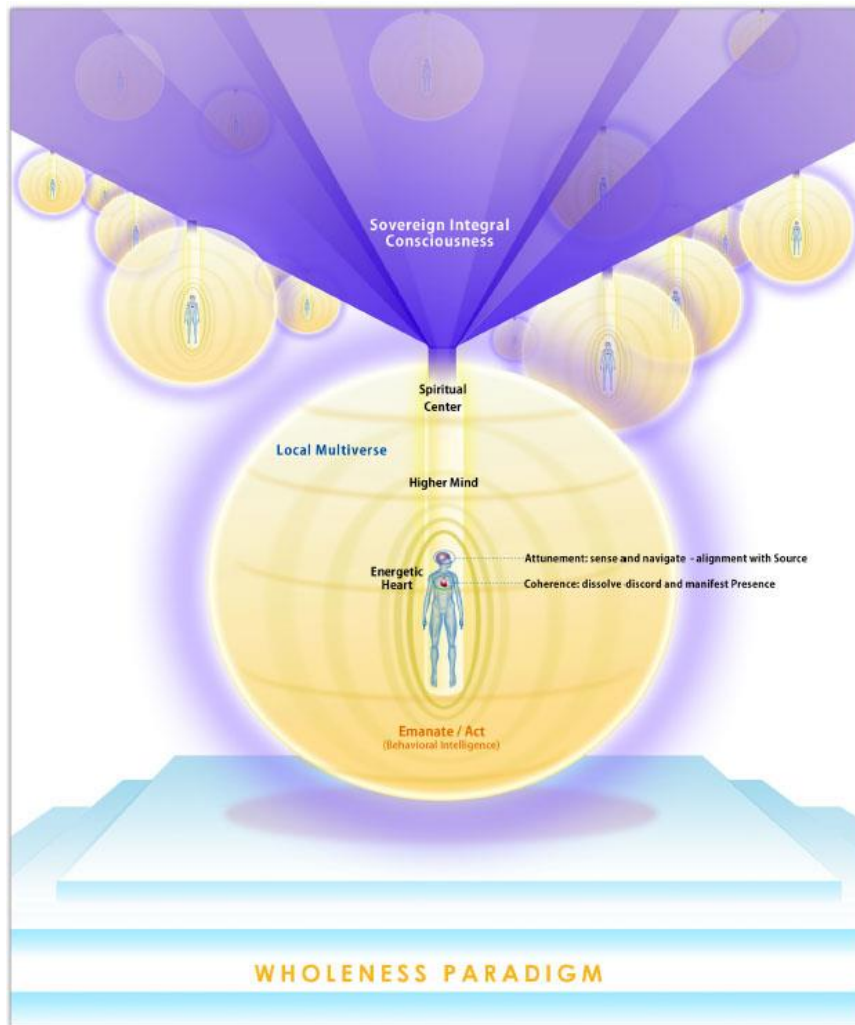
The Sovereign Integral consciousness can be envisioned as the connective “glue” that unifies each of us into wholeness. The Spiritual Center is the portal through which the Sovereign Integral consciousness can enter the human instrument and convey the feeling of Oneness at such a heightened level that the individual is forever held in its embrace. The human instrument, at its purest vibratory level, consists of the higher mind and energetic heart operating in coherent interchange. This communication is best described as an “intelligence of attunement.”

It is this attunement and coherence that empowers the human instrument to emanate and act in accord with the Spiritual Center and Sovereign Integral consciousness. In turn, this creates a more light-filled local multiverse that surrounds the individual expression and powers the spiritual activism of the individual. Behavioral intelligence is the grounded foundation, and the Sovereign Integral consciousness is the enraptured heights of the Wholeness Paradigm.

All living forms of consciousness are connected to the Sovereign Integral consciousness, enmeshed within the



Grand Presence of the Universe. Yet, in the exterior, genetic confines of separation, these living forms seldom remember this Oneness. This paradigm, if you hold it within your heart, will help ground this feeling of Oneness and help displace judgment from your emotional center.



All of the diagrams in this paper provide mental models that can assist the human mind in re-imaging what has, in previous spiritual literature, been referred to as the soul and spirit. There is no judgment that this is the right way to picture it, or that these diagrams are better than other diagrams. The discernment is your own. This is all part of the sense, resonate, and navigate process.

## **EVT 3 PREPARATION**

EVT 3 is similar to EVT 2 in the sense that we continue to assemble in the Waiting Room before we move into a session, and the video is quite different in many ways because it is focused on specific energies. Before you enter the Third Temple, I would recommend considering how to prepare yourself.

### **Ways to enter EVT 3:**

1. Extend consciousness from head to complete body
2. Ease things into the present moment
3. Take a deep breath and acknowledge entering the temple of spiritual activism
4. As you view one another entering the Waiting Room, heighten your sense of Oneness by breathing together and sensing this collective breath of all participants.

The video related to EVT 3 is entitled I Live Where You Live. It is a poem written from the perspective of the Wholeness Paradigm. It refers to the Sovereign Integral. If you watch and listen carefully you will feel that the beauty of our diversity is honored, and despite the “strange faces” we are all One. I’m aware that this is common knowledge among our community, and it is often written about, and often acknowledged from Coca-Cola commercials to political speeches, but this is a different angle on the sentiment of Oneness. I would ask you to touch into this difference because it is the key resonance point that will

make these EVT 3 sessions potent transformational programs—both for you as individuals and collectively.

Thank you for your willingness to read this information and to participate in the Event Temples.

### **Final Thoughts**

Spiritual Activism is not passive. There is no shortage of worthwhile, charitable programs that are helping people in very tangible ways with food, water, education, and simple human dignity. You will find that as you follow this path you will be drawn to the very real and pressing plight of millions of people and animals on this planet. The needs are immense from nearly every angle.

The notion that spiritual activism is purely a thought activity is misguided. This paper tries to articulate the underpinnings of spiritual activism and how it serves the most basic need of our human family to reconnect with its Spiritual Center without the polarization of religion, government, education, or social conditioning. But studying the issues that our planet is facing is a way to ground your practices into real-world activities.

The major challenges facing humanity today are global, and therefore affect all of us. They are typically expressed in words like climate change, lack of fresh water, ever-decreasing bio-diversity, war and terrorism, food shortages, poverty, fossil fuel dependence, and over-population. This paper suggests that these manifestations are a result of a deeper, more subtle issue, that we are

disconnected and living in our old mental paradigms of polarity and separation.

If we are to shift to the authentic self that expresses through the six heart virtues, and views the universe through the four perspectives of the Spiritual Center, we are nudging the human species in this same direction—one person at a time. I realize this seems like a slow, tedious process, but think of it like an avalanche. An avalanche zone acquires snow over a period of months, and then as a critical mass is achieved, the tiniest vibration can cause a chain reaction that—in a matter of a single moment—releases the stored energy and transforms the landscape.

Each of you is that “tiniest vibration.” Each of you is part of the transformation that will occur. Our experiences, at the Spiritual Center, are concerned with completion, wholeness, unity, and the sense that the core is everywhere within everyone. The vibration of Source, flowing through the Spiritual Center, facilitated and guided through the human instrument adds a new dimension to communication and human expression.

This new dimension is the tiniest vibration.

Live this new dimension and imagine yourself to be the tiniest vibration. The transformation we all seek is coming, but the road is neither smooth nor straight, and this is why we must live in our heart’s expression and come together. The petty separations and dramas of the ego will be eclipsed by the reality of this transformation. Now is the time to make a clear path to your Spiritual Center and ground this understanding in your heart and in your actions.

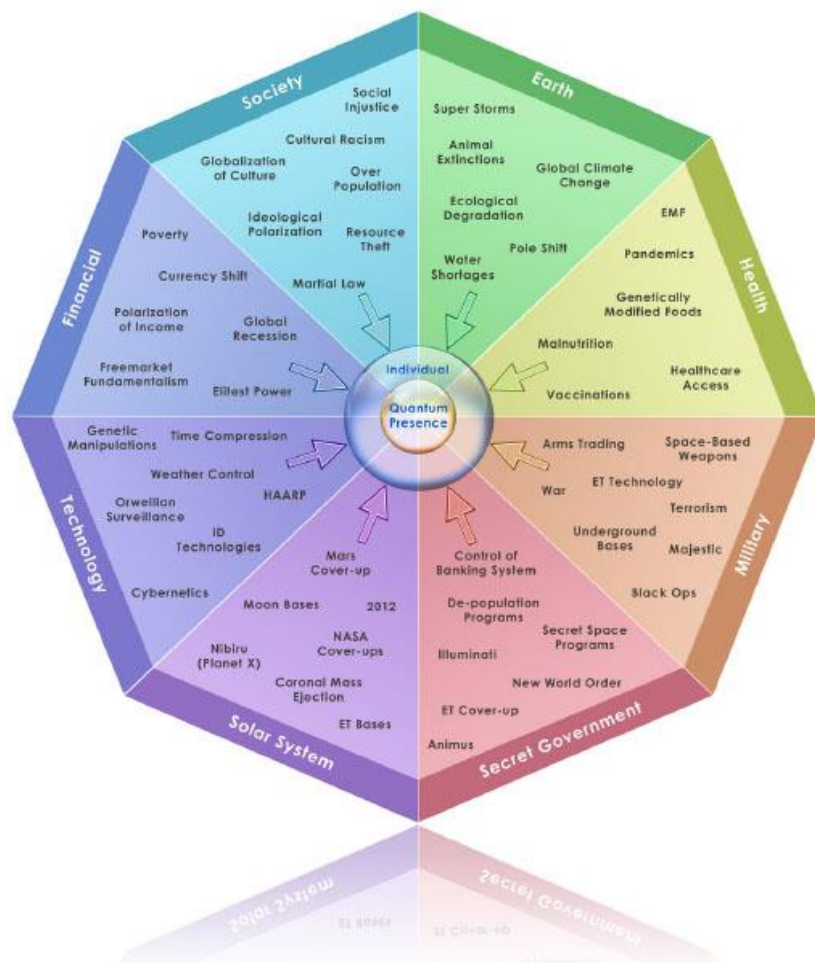
The vibration of the quantum being is encompassing. Relative understanding is sequential; it slows you down in separate, cognitive steps of comprehension that build on one another. Vibrational cognition, or realization, is like an avalanche, it breaks you free from within. It is transcendent, unified, and therefore uncorrelated to separation or sequence.

For most within the enlightenment communities, the diagram below maps some of the issues that are confronting us, not all of which are real, but are nonetheless ricocheting around the web, books, television, and films. As issues of concern, they impinge on our personality and, to varying degrees, infect us with stress and anxiety. They are the “walls” that are perceived as moving in on us, adding the sense of time compression to our lives and a growing sense of an unavoidable “crash” or doom.

The result of this fear is the “reach-out” to a Savior—someone or some thing that will save humanity from itself. There is a savior emerging for humanity, it is the Collective Spiritual Center flowing into a sufficient number of human instruments that will reassign the trajectory of humanity to a new course plotted by the tone of equality, the regal sphere of our connectedness, and the surety of our collective heart.

Over time, these stressors accumulate and make their energetic “deposit” into the human instrument and begin to obstruct the flow of energy in the physical, emotional, and mental domains. If you follow the techniques in this paper, you will find simple methodologies to release these obstructions and open the bandwidth between your

physical body and Spiritual Center, and everywhere in-between.



This is not a mental exercise or a pledge you salute and then go about your business as before, forgiving the hypocrisy of believing one thing and acting another. Authenticity and behavioral intelligence are the watchwords of this new era. They are the chisel in your hands, and without this chisel you are spectators in the stadium of the elite. Please take this to heart. Everything depends on it.

From my world to yours,

James

## I LIVE WHERE YOU LIVE

I live where you live;  
where rounded hills and flowered valleys  
settle beneath the sky,  
and skyscrapers claw against gravity.  
It may seem  
that I have left you with strange faces,  
but I live where you live.

When you have left  
the things you cherish in your mind  
you will find what remains  
inside you,  
and it is not of gloom  
nor toilsome handiwork  
wrought of hand and brain.

I am not God, nor some lofty spirit unseen.  
I am not the angel's voice in the quickening night  
nor the soft whisper of your awakened dreams.  
I am present in the one place that is all places.  
I live where you live.

When you have claimed the name of God  
you have felt shadows of our union.  
You have fathomed a mask  
that glistens a feeble photon of light  
wandering unfettered into  
the night's industry.

When you have taken this mask  
from your heart  
and held it to the calm night sky  
let nothing stir within you.

Let the winds dance with forgiveness.

Breathe the essence of me  
and let it be alive inside you  
flowing to your heart's command.

If you press the hand of God  
upon you there  
you can sense oneness in every eye.

I am the sovereign within all living forms  
and I pass among you  
in the oblivion of your breath,  
and the beating of your hearts.

In the land of war and peace  
I am the mystery of good and evil  
amid the flowering of oneness.

I live in the corridors of a deeper unity  
where identity is One  
and personality is many.

Near-infinite voices  
leap from the same heart  
wandering to oneness  
on the roads of time.

No heart is separate  
from the one Heart.  
No breath is ever alone.



Love given  
is never lost.

I live where you live.

## NOTES: QUANTUM PAUSE

*There is a more detailed description of this process in the Appendix of the Fifth Interview of Dr. Jamisson Neruda.*

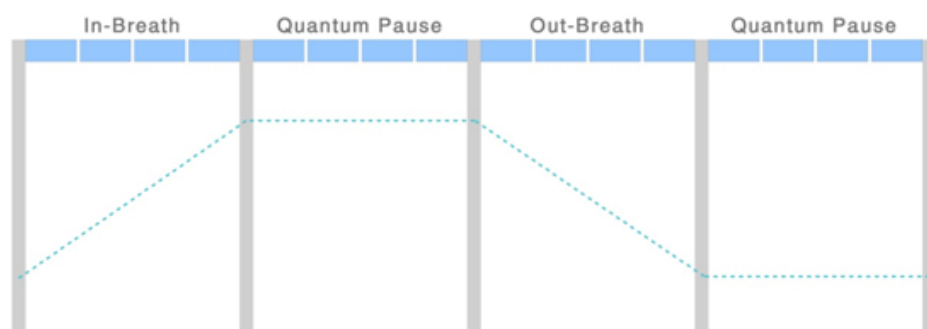
The universal support system for each of us is our breath. It is the breath that connects us to *our point of origin*, the Sovereign Integral state of consciousness that is our pure state of being.

Breath is the way in which the human instrument connects to this origin point anywhere in space-time. Breath is the portal between the physical dimension and the quantum or interdimensional domains, but it is not the normal, autonomic breathing, rather it is a very specific breathing pattern called *Quantum Pause*.

Quantum Pause is a simple, four-stage process beginning with an in-breath of anywhere between three and six counts (depending on your lung capacity), posture, and degree of privacy. After you have gathered in your breath, breathing through your nose, you hold it (pause) for an equal count, and then exhale through your mouth, again, for the same count, and then hold (pause) for the same count.

The breath pattern is described below using an example of a four count. The key is to maintain symmetry in each of the four segments of the process. If you are using a three count, apply it equally in each segment. It is not essential that you monitor this with precision, instead,

apply a casual monitoring of your time for each segment and keep a consistency to the flow.



One cycle is described above, and it is recommended to do three to four cycles in a row and then return to normal breathing. This “normal” breathing period is called the *Consolidation* period. Keep your eyes closed throughout the process and sit with your back straight in a comfortable position, both feet on the ground. When you begin your consolidation period, it is a time for you to bring focus and all of your attention to those things that bubble to the surface of your consciousness, knowing that these arise for a reason. This is an excellent time to apply the six heart virtues (appreciation, compassion, forgiveness, humility, valor, and understanding) to any thought or feeling that manifests.

This consolidation period usually lasts about three to five minutes, but there are no set time limits. Use your intuition to guide this period of time. Generally, each repetition of the consolidation, and usually there are four or five, becomes less crowded with thoughts or feelings, and by the time you enter the final consolidation period you have emptied yourself of thoughts and feelings and entered the quantum domain.

The diagram below depicts a typical session of Quantum Pause. Notice there are three cycles of the breath and then a consolidation period in this particular example. This repeats four times. You can have as many as five cycles of breath interspersed with consolidation periods, again, symmetry is important.



There are many nuances to the Quantum Pause technique, and I would encourage you to discover them on your own, in your own way. This is but a basic technique that I have shared with you, but there are subtleties to this technique that are powerful enhancements and these will occur to you while you're in the process of using the technique, so remain open while you practice it.

Some quick suggestions to get you started. The quantum pause immediately after the out-breath can provide a subtle sense of panic for some people. If this occurs, shorten your count so you have less time elapse for each segment. For example, if you were using a four count cycle, shorten it to three. This feeling of panic will go away as you practice the technique. These “hitches” or

quantum pauses have a purpose that you will come to understand.

I would also suggest that you focus your attention on your breath—its sound, its texture, how it feels inside your lungs, how your lips form in the out-breath, how it flows through your system, etc. This focus aligns you with First Point or the origin point of your Sovereign Integral because it is the breath that is the Portal of the infinite and eternal being that you truly are, and it is through this portal that it is manifesting in physicality.

When using Quantum Pause, there is a natural tendency to look for the experience of Light or to see new dimensions, speak with Beings or even God, or have a “wow” experience that confirms you are on the right path. The practice of Quantum Pause will bring you new experiences and awareness, but leave your expectations behind. Again, we all love visual stimuli. We love to see higher dimensions as if seeing is believing. But all that is in the quantum space-time does not conform to the Human Mind System. Quantum is origin. It is meta-physical, which precedes visual, acoustic, and sensory data. It precedes feelings and thoughts. It exists before these stimuli and is indeed hidden behind them to some extent.

You can use Quantum Pause before entering EVT 3, even if only one consolidation period is used. Experiment and see if you can use it to contemplate the paradigms in this paper. Quantum Pause is an excellent method to sense, resonate, and navigate problems or opportunities. It will help you place a context for energies that are compressing on you or hindering you in some ways. Remember, you are One Entity with the Universe as your playground.

## **Acknowledgments**

Ishdeep Sahni and Mark Hempel were instrumental in the content development related to the diagrams for Quantum Perspective and Source Sync. Mark worked diligently with me to create the graphics for the diagrams. Mark and Ernest were also critical in the technical production and design of the EVT 3 site. And finally, John Berges helped in the editing of this paper. To all of these people I extend my heartfelt appreciation for their contributions.

Music, video, poetry, cover art (front and back), and text of EVT 3 created by James expressly for the Temple of Spiritual Activism.

# **THE WHEN-WHICH-HOW- PRACTICE**

## **FOREWORD**

The physicist, David Bohm, once explained, "...the entire universe has to be thought of as an unbroken whole." The structure of reality as implied by twentieth century physics shows us that the universe is indeed a vast tapestry of interdependent energetic fields in which we are active participants—not merely observers.

The energies that stream into our local galaxy are circulated through its magnetic field, touching our heliosphere (solar system's magnetic field) and then touching our earth and then each of us, like a subtle shower of light. There will be no place to hide or avoid the incoming energetics. All will be touched by these new energies that have journeyed such vast distances to activate us into the collective intelligence we are designed to be.

It will not come to us like a switch turning on one day and then it is gone the next. Rather, it will occur over time and remain as long as we redistribute it amongst ourselves. Its influence will astonish us in terms of the degree in which our human family changes in our relation to time, space, religion, government, leadership, purpose, and our abilities to unite as a collective race focused on a mission of transcendence through unity.

There will be no Armageddon. Nor will we be swept up into the ascensionary wings of extraterrestrials. What awaits us is the higher order intelligence of our natural birthright pressing itself upon the field of earth. Humanity must unravel itself energetically to expose its natural purpose, not only upon earth, but upon the stars as well.

Our skin is not the boundary of ourselves. The space between us is precisely what connects us, and as we move into the next dimension of our selfhood we earn the opportunity to experience a new transparency into wholeness and a new accessibility to our heart's intuitive guidance. These new faculties demonstrate our collective intelligence and creative will to expand our minds into the regions from whence we came.

All things ride upon the energetic substrate that unites us. As time originates out of timelessness, space originates out of unity. We originate out of both timelessness and unity. We have traveled to this planet for a reason—all of us—without exception. For those of us incarnated in these times, we will be rewarded by participating in the most profound shift in human history, and this shift will occur over the next five years.

What was presumed impossible 10 years ago will be proven possible in half that time. And this accelerated shift from disbelief to knowledge will require leaders who are able to adapt and thrive in the new definitions of time, space, energy and matter, and understand that the intelligent relationship we share amongst ourselves and other beings is the most important quality to the unfoldment of our purpose as a spiritual race.



The approaching shift is a little like coming out of the jungle and being introduced to the Internet. We, as a species, are being introduced to the universal field and our participation as co-creators therein. Everyone on the planet, over the next five years, will feel this overture from the universe to deepen and expand their relationship to the higher order intelligence, but it will be up to the individual as to whether they connect via an intermittent dial-up modem, a 24/7 broadband connection, or simply turn away in the assumed comfort of separation.

As I suggested earlier, our world will not transform in a sudden burst of awakening, but rather it will undergo a sustained and vibrant trajectory of awakening over the next five years. It will require us to be balanced and coherent in our hearts and minds in order to extract the meaning of this transformative time on planet earth and create the new culture that embodies it.

The flow of the universe is configured through a higher order of intelligence than we can imagine. As it steps down into our three-dimensional world, it activates our heart and mind to synchronize—to work together as a flowing system of intelligence that opens the door to our soul or higher self.

Those who are able to synchronize their heart-mind system and sustain an energetic coherence while the dimensional shift is occurring will be able to lead and advance the opportunities for the generations to follow. Many of the fundamental, inherited paradigms of humanity will be cast off in favor of a dynamic information grid that infuses our hearts and minds and

informs an emergent culture of humanity based on emotional self-mastery and direct spiritual insight.

You can choose to believe a dimensional shift is occurring and experience it with your full senses awake and tuned to its earthly bloom, or you can deny it right up to the instant in time when it cannot be denied any longer. However you choose, this shift or transformation will demand your coherence emotionally and mentally, which is precisely the purpose behind the when-which-how practice and the Event Temples website.

Co-emergent with this dimensional shift, and inseparable from it, is your spirit. It is emerging with an empowerment it has never before expressed into this reality. This is your ego's time to step aside and defer to the higher spirit within you that flows through the assertions of your energetic heart. The practice of when-which-how is a method of bringing your mind, emotions, and ego-personality into coherent alignment with your heart's intuitive guidance.

The when-which-how practice is a vital technique of Lyricus. This is because the energetic heart is the key instrument that enables the human family to grow together through relations of coherence, compassion, care, and virtue. The when-which-how practice is a method that helps the individual express their higher self through quantum or energetic activities. The flow of energy, directed by the coherent and virtuous heart-mind system, is what we are here to experience and learn, and it is this that will ultimately bond humanity in Oneness.

The when-which-how practice is a comprehensive system that—among other things—retrains the subtle nervous system and cleanses the subconscious and cellular stresses and accumulations which can obscure alignment to one's spirit-consciousness. As we move into the next five years the quickening pulse of life will continue to escalate, leaving us with an uneasy sense of time-deprivation. If left unchecked, time-deprivation creates a continuous state of overwhelm, which inhibits the alignment of your human instrument with the spirit within you. This alignment is a core value of the practice and is the foremost reason to apply it in your life.

Another aspect that the when-which-how practice supports is the dispersion and elimination of old densities and their dysfunctional perceptions. Today I received an email from an individual who wrote: "How, when it is still happening, can people of color just throw off all that abuse, and 'Love' all regardless of the atrocities leveled at them? Something else has to come into this equation." That "something else" is the individual taking responsibility for their personal coherence through the active practice of the heart virtues, and allowing the higher intelligence (Creator, First Source, Common Origin, God, etc.) to bestow its fairness to all.

We live in a fair and just universe where sacrifice is acknowledged, though this acknowledgement may not be in the same domain in which the sacrifice occurs. It is usually displaced in time and space, which obscures the wholeness of equity, but it is always acknowledged and it is always fair and equitable because First Source is

fundamentally aware of all things, as unimaginable as that may seem to us.

In this scope of fairness, we, as individuals, do not need to consume ourselves with vengeance, envy, anger, resentment, victimhood, or suffering. We do need, however, to forgive injustice; and understand why it exists in our world; and appreciate the wisdom we can gain from it; and express compassion to those who are entangled in its web; and be humble in our understanding so judgment does not befall us; and radiate valor to sensibly share our understanding to the headwaters of injustice, intolerance, and fanaticism in all its forms.

Whether your emotional incoherence is attributed to perceived injustices served to you as an individual or group, your incoherence diminishes your natural gift to apply the when-which-how practice, and therefore it impedes your abilities to access the higher channels of communication that are opening to all of us as a result of the dimensional shift we are undergoing.

The practice of when-which-how is a natural way to live one's life amid the changing energetics of the next half decade, and sustain an alignment to your spirit. The practice itself is both simple and complex, but it is essential that you learn the foundation of the practice before you attempt the more complex techniques that the Event Temples website will disclose over the coming years. This is why this particular guide exists; it is the primer for the practice.

When I first approached John Berges to write this guide, he was full of questions, as one would expect. How long

should it be? What is its focus? Will it need diagrams? Should it be entry-level or advanced? I assembled my responses into a single concept: The guide is already written; you simply need to access it—to birth it from the energetic domain into the physical. John has succeeded skillfully in this endeavor, making these teachings more accessible to all who are inspired to read and practice them.

John's writing coalesced into an impressive guide that is richly textured with ideas, inspirations, and recommendations. If you read and study it, you will certainly expand your understanding of how the six heart virtues can be applied in your daily life and why it is important to do so. I appreciate John's willingness to share his perspective, time, and energy on the when-which-how practice and for bringing this important e-book into materialization. His writing is but one shining example of the practice. I look forward to those that will follow from each of you.

James, October 2, 2007

## **PREFACE**

It is an honor and a privilege for me to bring you this guide. Writing this guide for practitioners has been a heart expanding and mind enlightening experience for me. I have learned much and felt much. Nevertheless, anything I have gained by this opportunity is only meaningful and significant if it adds to the understanding of those who read it.

I could not have recorded these words without the inspiration of those who have preceded us in their own spiritual evolution. At the same time, I could not have written these words without the aid of my own higher self and my connection to the energetic heart, with its six virtues. If our teachers have come forward at this time for anything, it is to teach us how to contact our deeper, immortal self that lovingly, wisely, and patiently waits for us to use the spiritual gifts it has placed in our hearts.

These gifts are the six virtues of appreciation, compassion, forgiveness, humility, understanding, and valor. These potent spiritual energies are ready to assist us if we but turn to them with a heartfelt desire to help those in need of love, light, and healing.

I say “we” because this is fundamentally a group endeavor. The differences in our body types, our languages, our cultures, our nationalities, and our religions are the product of the spacetime environment. For millennia they have been important factors in the spiritual evolution of our planetary population. But now, a new era is opening before us and we can transcend the differences

of our forms, by bonding as a lighted network of human souls. This is the beginning of a renaissance of the human spirit. It is a time like no other—a time of great spiritual opportunity. If you feel the call, if you hear a tiny voice within, urging you to wake to the moment, then join us in a great adventure of the human spirit.

My heartfelt gratitude goes out to James for helping to make this guide possible through his inspiring leadership. My loving appreciation also goes out to my wife, family, and co-workers who also helped to bring this guide to the practitioners of when-which-how.

John Berges

October, 2007

# INTRODUCTION

The heart stands as the temple of humanity. One cannot conceive of the unity of humanity by way of the brain or the Kundalini, but the radiance of the heart can bring together the most seemingly varied organisms, even across remote distances. This experiment, of the unification of hearts across distance, awaits its workers.

## Overview

In August, 2007 a major paper entitled, “Living from the Heart” was released by the Lyricus teacher, James. This paper appeared on the new website, EventTemples.com, which is the third website produced by James, the other two being WingMakers.com and Lyricus.org.

The core purpose of Event Temples is to provide educational tools for individuals to use in the art and science of emotional self-mastery. As many people reading this guide may know, the most unique and dynamic component of the Event Temples website is the Event Temple session. This consists of registered members around the world gathering at the website at a preset time to transmit heart energetics to a pre-selected crisis target somewhere in the world. Yet, as powerful as this gathering of the quantum community is, the success of the transmission of positive emotions is very much dependent on the skills attained in the when-which-how practice, which is the primary skill needed for working toward emotional self-mastery.



## **Event Templates—Group Practice**

The when-which-how practice operates at the individual level and at the group level. The focus of this guide is at the individual level. Unfortunately, almost all of us love to work and play in a group environment, but we often fall short when it comes to working by ourselves. Getting together for a group meditation or workshop is stimulating and exciting, but by Monday morning the glow soon recedes and our desire to work on ourselves loses its luster.

Therefore, before we enter into the details of this practice, I want to address the group level of work because this is where individuals tend to place the greatest value. This is only natural because we humans are social animals. We enjoy getting together to support each other, as well as those in need. This is not only a good thing; it is a necessary thing, especially in today's world.

Yet, what if we were a group of amateur musicians who had the chance to perform a great symphony to raise money for victims of some catastrophe? If we simply looked forward to the thrill and honor of the performance, to be the center of attention, but were unwilling to spend the necessary hours of individual practice to perfect our skills, what kind of symphony do you think we would produce? The answer is obvious. The individual, day-to-day practice is not glamorous compared to the group performance, and yet a beautiful and inspiring performance cannot succeed in the absence of daily practice.

Worldwide events such as meditations for peace, world prayer days, Harmonic Convergence-like activities, etc.,

generate lots of energy and enthusiasm in individuals who want to gather in groups to alleviate suffering and injustice. However, almost all the enthusiasm and most of the energy evaporates when these events come to a close and individuals return to their everyday lives. But, it is precisely here, in the routine of daily living that we must do the work of mastering the emotional disorder in our lives. Without developing our skills in emotional self-mastery at the individual level, the vast majority of group gatherings for meditations and visualization activities might send some good vibes into the emotional atmosphere; might make us feel good in the moment; might provide us with some entertainment; but will be largely ineffective in reducing the dense emotional toxicity hanging over our planet.

Despite this, a great majority of these group meditation endeavors are a good thing. Their overall effectiveness, however, is severely diminished if, at the end of these group service meditations, the participants return to personal lives filled with emotional chaos. In other words, group work must go hand-in-hand with individual work. The work we do to help others in all such worldwide meditation efforts will be increasingly more potent and effective if we are able to put energy and persistent effort into the when-which-how practice at the personal level.

Getting back to the group level activities of the Event Temples, we might ask, “Who participates in this activity?” They are people from different races, nations, religions, and cultural backgrounds. They may appear different on the outside, but they are identical on the inside because they share at least one thing in common—they

desire to help their fellow human beings. And although there are thousands of humanitarian organizations around the world working day and night to relieve human suffering, the quantum community gathered at Event Temples represents the extension and expansion of humanitarian effort into the subjective realm of the emotions.

This work is not like the psychological counseling offered to victims of tragedies such as accidents, violent crimes, or natural disasters. The work of Event Temples consists in training individuals to subjectively transmit specific aspects of love. This work employs techniques that utilize terms more familiar to physicists than theologians or psychologists—terms like fields, entanglement, resonance, coherence, and non-locality. These terms imply a fundamental, underlying field of unity that energetically connects all humans worldwide—connecting not only humans, but all life-forms throughout our planet.

Event Temple participants (practitioners) are also not praying to God for intercession. Practitioners, as a coherent quantum community, are learning to focus, direct, and transmit positive emotions. These positive emotions are the sub-energies of universal love. It is in this word “love” where the practice of the Event Temples brushes up against the field of religion. This is mainly due to the religious teachings of our past, in which humans have been taught that God is Love. God IS Love, but God is not just a loving, religious Being. God is also a loving scientist, a loving artist, a loving educator, a loving administrator, a loving economist, and a loving architect.

The point is that religion need not have a monopoly on the definition and uses of love. The same holds true for the word “spiritual.” This notion is rooted in the culture of the past and became even more pronounced when, in the Age of Reason, religion claimed the heart and emotions, while science claimed the mind and thought. Religion claimed the spiritual domain and science claimed the physical domain. Thus, religion and science imposed their own interpretations of reality on Western civilization and much of our present global civilization.

The concept behind Event Temples shatters this unnatural separation between the heart and the mind. It is not the purpose of this guide to explore the detailed complexities of the heart and mind, but as we explore the when-which-how practice, the heart and mind will be viewed more and more as partners—designed to work as a unified and integral team.

In this new psychology, the word “spiritual” is liberated from the confines of the religious domain. Thus spiritual can be thought of as that transcendental and transformational power that relieves undue suffering and restores wholeness. Consequently, the individuals participating in the intentional transmission of universal love are performing a spiritual service by utilizing both heart and mind. It is spiritual because it aims to restore wholeness, calm, and coherence where there has been separation, fear, and chaos.

## **The When-Which-How Practice**

The fundamental skill needed for the energetic transmission of universal love is the when-which-how practice. “Living from the Heart” is the foundational text that lays the groundwork for training in emotional self-mastery.

The Event Temples (EVT) concept forms the group application of when-which-how. More important, however, is the day-to-day practice of when-which-how at the individual level. It is here, at the point of our daily personal lives, that we need to engage this practice—this is where we begin our journey in emotional self-mastery.

Our skills as transmitters in the EVT sessions are dependent on and a reflection of our skills in daily practice of when-which-how. It should be emphasized here that we are not speaking of perfection in practice as a prerequisite of participation in the EVT. No, but we are definitely emphasizing the necessity of effort in one’s daily personal practice. Without this effort and persistence, our contributions to the quantum community’s service to humanity will be at a minimum. In effect, this is the reason for this guide. It is an effort to provide a supplemental resource for anyone who wants to optimize their “skill in action.”

In the emotional self-mastery of small, everyday details, comes the opportunity to extend self-mastery to larger matters. Our increased capacity for emotional self-mastery amid our circle of family, friends, and associates will surely increase the strength and quality of our contributions to the Event Temple sessions where the

quantum community serves our brothers and sisters in crisis.

So, the bottom line is this: the Event Temple sessions are a potent, vital, and important service of the quantum community, but the increasing effectiveness of the sessions are dependent on our increasing effectiveness in emotional self-mastery at the individual level. And this increasing effectiveness can only be achieved through persistently engaging the when-which-how practice in our daily lives.

### **The Energetic Heart and Its Six Virtues**

The energetic heart is the servant of the soul. The soul is the receiving and distributing agent of divine love. Permeating and circulating throughout the sub-quantum field, divine love is the lifeblood of God that interconnects the entire multiverse. This divine love is intelligent and operates in the human world through six basic qualities. These are the six (energetic) heart virtues of appreciation, compassion, forgiveness, humility, understanding, and valor.

Consequently, when we work with the six heart virtues, we are drawing the intelligence of love from the sub-quantum field of the soul, through the portal of the energetic heart and “outward” into our individual energy field in the form of the six virtues. Further, we can transmit these virtues into the fields of those around us and ultimately into the collective energy field of earth. In the “Living from the Heart” paper these two fields are

identified as the Individual Human Energetic Field (IHEF) and the Collective Human Energetic Field (CHEF).

All human beings have this capability, but very few use it. Knowledge, training, and disciplines to access these spiritual energies emanating from the soul, via the heart, have been given to humanity by past sages and teachers. These teachings have taken the form of religious, philosophical, and psychological systems. Such training could only be given to a few because of the isolation of individuals, the difficulty of traveling, and the generally harsh conditions of human living in the past.

Unfortunately, today many of these same conditions exist for billions of people around the world, but there are also many millions who have the capability of helping those still living in conditions comparable to the Middle Ages. The difference between today and yesterday is that we now have the power of the internet through which thousands of people can be trained as a community to direct their collective heart energetics to millions of people in need.

So, we humans have this capability, we are being given the resources for our training, and we have a global communications system at our disposal. As for the six heart virtues, they have always been with us, and have been patiently waiting to serve us. The remaining element that is the key to activating this system is our choice to use these resources for the betterment of ourselves and humanity.

## **APPROACHING THE PRACTICE**

Let us stand firmly upon the foundation of the heart, and let us understand that without heart we are but withered husks.

### **A When-Which-How Story**

A few days before beginning this guide, my wife and I were driving to the grocery store. As I drove through the parking lot, I saw two women walking across our direction of travel. Naturally, I slowed down to allow them time to get to the sidewalk. As I slowly passed them, one of the women turned and gave me a dirty look, as if to say, “What’s your big hurry?”

I said to my wife, “What was that look for?” My wife had no idea, but we suddenly realized that this was the time to practice the when-which-how exercise. So, I felt that I needed understanding in this situation. After all, I could have given her an angry look in return, as if to say, “What are you staring at?”

As most readers of this guide may know, understanding is one of the six heart virtues of the when-which-how practice. The others are appreciation, compassion, forgiveness, humility, and valor. More on all these shortly.

So, why did I choose the virtue of understanding? Because I believed I needed to understand this woman’s position. I needed to put myself in her shoes (maybe literally). Maybe from her perspective I should have



stopped my car until she and her friend got safely past us, instead of merely slowing down. Perhaps this person has issues relating to being a victim, low self-esteem, or prejudice. In this particular instance, I did not have that information. The point is not for me to psychoanalyze her, but merely to understand that these could be possibilities and that I should not condemn this person because of “that look.”

My wife agreed. We basically let it go through forgiveness, another heart virtue. Consequently, in this incident we agreed to use understanding and forgiveness. You may have noticed however, that we did not transmit any virtues to the woman in question. This is true. It seems as if we were so self-centered in our own reaction to her that we never even thought about sending her energy.

I did not realize this until several hours later and I was rather stunned that I had overlooked what, at that point in time, appeared so obvious. Now here is where I believe the true power of the when-which-how practice comes into play. This is the quantum physics part. Because we are dealing with entanglement (this woman and ourselves), a field (the emotional grid), and non-locality (non-spacetime), I connected with her at that moment of realization and sent her understanding and forgiveness.

Granted, this may appear to be a very trivial event, but many of these ordinary, mundane, and apparently innocuous encounters in our daily lives are all grist for the mill of the when-which-how practice. It may not be exciting, or dramatic, or glamorous, but this is the level of practice. Naturally, some of our encounters will be more demanding than others. Some will be real points of crisis,

but they all require attention and as described in “Living from the Heart,” they are all approached with the following considerations as to:

- when you apply the heart virtues (or any subset therein) to a particular life situation;
- which one(s) you apply; and
- how you express the virtues into that situation.

Thus, our everyday lives are the content and the context of our practice. We are not going to a meditation retreat. We will not withdraw from the world. The monastery is not the place of our practice (although it could be). We work within the field of human living. We work within the temple of human events and the relationships that give them birth.

Summing up our when-which-how story, this particular event prompted us to make a decision that this was an instance when we could engage the when-which-how practice. This is the when stage. We next agreed on which of the six virtues to apply to this encounter. This is the which stage. Finally, we decided on how to apply the two virtues we chose. This is the how stage.

Explaining it like this may appear simplistic, but I want to show how straightforward this process can be. But as we shall learn, simplicity does not mean there is a lack of depth to emotional self-mastery. As we gain experience in the practice, we will increase our skill and artistry in the when, the which, and the how of our encounters with life’s events and situations. At deeper levels, we may even wish to explore the “why” of our emotional patterns. Each of us

can choose the level of work we feel comfortable with. The most important thing is to stay alert to any situation in which we can apply the when-which-how practice. In fact, the ability to remain present amid the routine of daily living is vital key to all practice. More on this later.

### **When Do We Practice?**

The first stage of our practice concerns WHEN we activate one or more heart virtues. As I began to think about this stage, however, it suddenly seemed that I should be transmitting the heart virtues all the time. I asked myself, “Shouldn’t the divine love in our hearts be flowing from us all the time?” The answer came almost immediately, “Yes, but it needs to be detected, accepted, and passed on for the energy circuit to be completed, otherwise the energy is never put to use.” We may have all the electrical power we need, but if we never turn on the switch, no one receives the benefit of light.

Naturally, this brought up the next question of why I was not always in touch with these heart energetics. I won’t go into the details here, but I will say that generally speaking, my reasons are probably quite similar to your reasons. They have to do with our egos and the defense mechanisms that often set us at odds with those around us. Examining the deeper issues of our ego shortcomings is beyond the scope of this guide, but some of these difficulties will most likely come to the forefront of our awareness as we engage the when-which-how practice.

This, in fact, is the core issue of emotional self-mastery—we should be receiving the energetics of the

heart and transmitting them to everyone (including ourselves) all the time, but we don't for many reasons. We may feel that we are unworthy, that we are sinners, or that we are not meant to. As an agent of the soul, the heart continuously transmits divine love in the form of the six heart virtues, but we are not receiving and transmitting the signals. And if we are, the energetics are too often distorted and/or diluted by our ego-personality filters. This is not something to blame ourselves or others for, but is simply our current situation. We should acknowledge this without blame and work to correct the deficiencies.

The point for now is to realize that the goal of emotional self-mastery is to reach a state of continuous loving outflow. This state of consciousness represents a stage of development and this stage and state are that of the soul. Here are two quotes from "Living from the Heart."

This is the goal of the when-which-how practice: to draw your soul into the experience of the body-mind, and enable it to lead the expression of your life in the domains of timespace.

It is not an exaggeration to say that if you possess emotional self-mastery, you live as soul upon the earth with minimal distortion from your physical body and mind.

Here, at the beginning of practicing when-which-how, this may seem like an ideal beyond our reach, but I believe we can not only reach it, but that we are meant to reach it—we are in fact, designed to reach it. This is our destiny.

## **Remembering to Practice**

Alright, so we know that the ideal state of consciousness is to radiate the divine love of the soul through the energetic heart in a continuous flow. Well, you know what? I went to the supermarket last week and I don't recall doing this one time. But this morning, during our shopping trip, I actually remembered to do this twice. This is far from perfect, but it is progress. I think you get my point. It's all about remembering to initiate the practice.

Why do we have so much difficulty remembering to apply the virtues through the practice of when-which-why? The reason is not complicated. We are so mesmerized by the world of the ego-personality that we don't even know we are in a trance. This is not a new concept. It has been known and taught in many spiritual schools for hundreds of years in both the East and the West. It has been metaphorically described in the world's religions and mythologies and it is explored today in such movies as *The Matrix*. The sad truth is that we are partly unconscious for most of our lives.

## **Moment-to-Moment Awareness**

This may sound strange to some people, but we are not practicing emotional mastery, we are practicing emotional self-mastery and as long as we are unconscious of our daily routines, there is no self present. There is a collection of memories and habits—learned behaviors operating on auto-pilot—but are YOU present in the moment, from moment-to-moment? This is a question to ask yourself, study and resolve, but most importantly, do not let it

interfere with or delay your efforts to practice the six heart virtues. You can practice while investigating your degree of presence in daily activities.

This issue of being present in the “here and now” is not new. In fact, many books have been written about it and perhaps the most influential thinker on this topic was the philosopher and teacher, J. Krishnamurti (1895-1986). Whether or not the concept is new does not reduce the subtle importance of staying in the present moment. The point is that the heart’s sensitivity is of little or no value if there is no individual present to detect the signals and initiate an action, such as the when-which-how practice.

I am sure many of you have had the experience of sitting across from someone who is telling you about an incident of some kind and you suddenly realize that for the last minute or more you have no idea what he or she has been saying. This can become even more embarrassing when your friend asks you what you think about the incident. Or have you ever gone on an errand, reached your destination and had no memory of traveling there?

Where were we on these occasions? We were running on automatic pilot, but we have little information about what happened during our absence. Have you ever had your spouse or significant other suddenly say, “Are you listening to me?” And you reply, “Oh yes.” And then the challenging question, “Then what did I say?” Your answer: “Hmmm...I’m not sure.”

These examples bring up a startling realization. Namely, that we are often asleep—even when we are supposedly awake. We simply are not really “here” even when we

think we are. We are mainly operating in a self-maintained, mentally-constructed hologram of our own reality. This is the ego filter through which the outside world flows into our brains. As we have just seen, apparently we don't even have to be present in order to perform our daily routines. However, we can be operating with much more efficiency and alertness if we can learn to be present in the now.

In the popular science fiction television series, Star Trek, the starships have at least two types of propulsion systems. The impulse engines operate in "normal" spacetime, but the warp engines allow faster-than-light speeds, transcending the limits of space and time. In addition, instantaneous communication in Star Trek takes place through sub-space (quantum, non-local), thus overcoming the tremendous distances between worlds and the time it takes to send messages back and forth.

We are like an impaired starship from the sci-fi universe of Star Trek, only operating on our spacetime restricted impulse engines and never taking advantage of our faster-than-light warp engines. In this analogy, our ego-personalities are impulse engines and we communicate via the time lags of spacetime. (Recall news reporters whose conversations are confusing due to the time delay of communication satellites.) Living from the heart through emotional self-mastery is incorporating warp drives and sub-space communications into our everyday lives. These take us beyond the limiting spectrum of third-dimensional ego-personality living and extend our range of living into the higher dimensions of the energetic heart and soul.

Returning to our main discussion, our psychological space is filled with so much content that the field of our awareness is blocked by all the “stuff” of our constructed reality. We are so preoccupied and distracted by our own psychological content that we cannot see, hear, and feel the individuals we encounter every day. So, as Krishnamurti often pointed out, we never actually come into contact with others. We only contact our constructed thoughts and feelings about others. In order to avoid absolutes, I will say that most of the time we come into contact with the past image of people, not the present reality of people. We often tap into and communicate with the image we want people to be, not the image projected by those people in the present moment. This is the double irony of the situation. We are all, for the most part, communicating with each other through false images, images too often frozen in the prejudices of past judgments.

Hopefully, you can see the implications of all this on the practice of when-which-how. Our task involves working from the consciousness level of the soul and energetic heart. Otherwise, we are acting from our ego-personality’s constructed idea of who and what others (and the world in general) should be. Recalling the Star Trek analogy, the ego-personality is using an impulse engine that is spacetime-based. In order for us to be truly effective in our practice we must operate from outside spacetime even while living within spacetime. This is not about excluding an “inferior” spacetime world, but about expanding and extending the range of our conscious living into unexplored dimensions beyond our dominant third-dimensional reality.



Simply put, we are awake, present, and focused in the moment and not lost in thoughts about where we have been, where we want to go, or where we would rather be. We are not dwelling in the past or escaping into the future. We are simply present and attuned to what is before us.

### **Observation**

This means that we must clear an area of our psychologically cluttered ego-personality space so that we can detect the signals coming from the energetic heart. The key to doing this is observation. When we are lost in thought, when we are not present, we are immersed in and identified with our thoughts and feelings. Well, as many of you may already know, we are not our thoughts and feelings. These are the contents of consciousness, not consciousness itself. These are holographic memory imprints recorded in our minds through routine contact with the third-dimensional world. These imprints are the junk drawers and storage closets of our psychological space. We don't necessarily need all this stuff! And we certainly do not need to be laying it all out on the floor of our consciousness each day, only to put it all back again.

If you make the decision to step in and observe your next habitual reaction to something you see on television or something a co-worker does or says which causes you to react, STOP and observe your reaction. Do you make your "usual" comment? Do you laugh or complain without a thought as to why? Does an unkind thought and negative emotion enter your mind? Whatever occurs—OBSERVE IT. Bring your attention to these "knee-jerk" reactions.

Interrupt the automatic flow of habitual thought and emotion. This is the “stuff” we keep accumulating and storing in our closets. This is the material blocking the light of the soul from entering your field of awareness. This is the “noise” drowning out the inner voice of the energetic heart.

If you put enough effort into interrupting the chain reaction thoughts and emotions of the ego-personality, you will disrupt them to the point where you will have created sufficient silence for the voice of the energetic heart to be heard. This does not happen overnight. It takes perseverance, but it can be achieved. It should also be pointed out that the complete silencing of the mind and emotions is not possible or even necessarily desirable. It is natural for these subjective instruments to record and respond to the environment. Simply learn to see them in their proper perspective. These thoughts and feelings are your servants. They serve you—the soul, the higher self. You are the artist creating your life expression, your work of art. Your thoughts and feelings are your brushes and paints.

Our goal is to restore order to our inner lives so that we can bring the six heart virtues into our own lives and the lives of others. Think of the mind and emotions as an appliance, like a washing machine. When we want to wash clothes we operate our washing machines. When our wash is completed our washing machines stop operating and remain off until we need to wash more clothes. Our problem is that we leave the washing machine of the mind operating all the time, even if we have no clothes to wash. Emotional self-mastery means that we are in charge of the

washing machine. We are not the machine; we are the machine's operator. We learn how to use it efficiently and for the right reasons, thus avoiding unnecessary stress and wear on the parts, costly repairs, and downtime.

If we observe the continuous operation of the mind and emotions as they habitually react to the encounters around them, we will soon learn that most of this activity is needless and even harmful to our well-being. The ego-personality is habituated to the noise of the social order. This third-dimensional noise impairs and reduces the sensitivity of our emotional and mental energy fields. This insensitivity to the transmissions of the energetic heart severely limits our abilities to practice when-which-how, to say nothing of gaining emotional self-mastery. If we cannot get in touch with our own heart energetics, how can we expect to help others? Recall, the exhortation: "Physician, heal thyself."

One cautionary note before moving on—observation is not self-absorption. We are observing our internal processes with an impersonal attitude. This means that we have compassion for ourselves, but we are not attached to the thoughts and feelings that we have. We are like the surgeon who has diagnosed a disease and can correct the problem without any feelings getting in the way of the procedure that must be performed. If you suddenly find yourself identified with the thoughts and feelings you are observing, stop and refocus as the observer, the one who will determine the quality and nature of these contents of your consciousness. As the observer, you are the wise and compassionate judge who determines how your thoughts

and feelings are contributing to your practice. Are they positive or negative effects?

If we observe negativity in the mind, we can take action and stop it. We create a psychological space from which we can step in and restore positive thoughts and feelings based on the virtues. However, we need to be present in order to take charge. When we begin to do this, even for five seconds, we have begun a process that will lead to even more control, and ultimately, self-mastery. This is the beginning of effective practice of when-which-how. This is the beginning of increased awareness and sensitivity to the transmissions of the energetic heart.

### **Sensitivity**

It is said that the heart is the primary organ of sensitivity that links the human instrument to the non-physical dimension of the higher self. If we accept this idea as a working hypothesis, then it becomes obvious that we must learn to tune into the signals detected by the heart if we want to be effective in our practice. The energetic heart is “wired” into what the Lyricus Teaching Order (LTO) calls Underivative Information Structures.

Across all dimensions of space there exists a primary field of vibration or quantum primacy. This field is non-physical but informs the physical. It exists independent of the physical structures of existence, and is known among Lyricus teachers as the Underivative Information Structures (UIS).

UISs are sub-quantum and represent the primary blueprint for living systems and inorganic matter. It is UIS that gives rise to the quantum fields that interpenetrate planets, stars, galaxies, and the universe at large. It is the communication field of life that connects the nonlocal and the local, the individual and the collective, the one and the infinite. The energetic heart is the non-physical component of UIS that is the entryway or portal from UIS to the intuitive and intelligence centers of the soul carrier or human instrument. In a sense, it is the subquantum blueprint of the physical heart.

As this extract explains, the energetic heart is the primary detector of incoming signals from outside the spacetime world of our third-dimensional reality. Most of our waking hours are spent with concerns coming from the outside, third-dimensional plane. The “noise level” of the objective world, however, overpowers the “sound” from the subjective world being detected by the energetic heart.

Simply stated, the sounds generated by the higher frequencies (often called spiritual) are steady and continuous, but our human third-dimensional equipment does not easily detect them. Our human instruments are designed to pick up signals coming from many of the higher frequencies as well as those of the spacetime dimension. However, because our dominant learning environment as a species is based in a third-dimensional spacetime world, we (except for a few), have not focused on developing the sensitivity to access the higher frequencies and dimensions that surround and interpenetrate our world.

Ironically, our existence in the spacetime dimension has, in part, created the very situation we are now working to correct because it has given birth to the separated ego-personality with all of its blocking filters. Emotional self-mastery is part of the process of infusing the separated ego-personality with the spiritual energy of the soul via the energetic heart. In effect, we are spiritualizing matter and materializing spirit.

Returning to our main point, there is a dimension, frequency, plane, or world of the emotions that we are immersed in every day. We detect these frequencies as feelings of happiness or sorrow, anger or contentment, fear or love. We take such feelings for granted. They are the normal moods of our daily existence. But what if we could develop a sensitivity by which we could detect the actual energy flows of these emotions? This valuable feedback would allow us to “see and hear” in a new way and open up a vast field of study and learning that would facilitate our mastery of these powerful forces within us.

“Living from the Heart” suggests that these higher senses may be close to emerging in us as the next stage of our species’ evolution. The when-which-how technique may be one of the methods by which we develop these higher senses. Through our practice of when-which-how, a new sensitivity develops in us that allows us to work intelligently with the six heart virtues. This sensitivity enables us to detect the absence or lack of any heart virtues that are needed for healing, rebalancing, and revitalizing any situation. The sensitivity of the heart to the habitat of soul is the key to our future spiritual evolution.

We simply have to learn how to make the connection between it and our waking consciousness. Therefore, we need to develop our natural emotional sensitivity to the heart, just as the heart is naturally sensitive to the soul. In this way we can develop an unimpeded line of transmission between our higher self in non-spacetime and our personality self in spacetime via the energetic heart. The first step for accomplishing this great work is through the practice of when-which-how.

The sensitivity we need to enhance has nothing to do with being sensitive to criticism. It has nothing to do with being “thin-skinned” or easily upset by people or events. It is not about being sentimental, teary-eyed, or effusive. No. This sensitivity means that we are insightful, aware, and in-touch with any encounter that crosses our path. This is a sensitivity that can instantly detect the need for love within ourselves or others when that love is being closed off, blocked out, or obscured by the dense clouds of habit, ignorance, ego, and fear. The sensitivity of the heart detects the inflowing of the soul’s love as it radiates outward from the multi-dimensional planes of the all-pervasive universal energy field of God.

Our practice will open this flow for all of us as our human instruments develop their sensitivity to the energetic heart and sense when, which, and how to apply the six heart virtues.

### **Six Heart Virtues Grid Meditation**

One of the exercises given in “Living from the Heart” is the Six Heart Virtues Grid Meditation. According to the

meditation, through persistent and steady practice, we can actually create an energy grid of the six virtues around ourselves wherever we go. This meditation is performed in real time. That is, we do this meditation at the scenes of our daily encounters, in contrast to the traditional morning meditation session. Our success in building this grid within our energy field is a major step in practicing when-which-how because it strengthens our sensitivity to ourselves, to those around us, and to the energetic heart and higher self. At this stage, this means that we have our tools present and mobilized to act in any encounter. We can be compared to battlefield physicians who carry their medical kits with them at all times. When the need arises, their healing medications and supplies are within their reach.

You might be asking why there is a need to practice when-which-how if we deliver these virtues wherever we go? This is a good question. The answer lies, I believe, in the physician/healing metaphor just described. Our six heart virtues matrix is similar to preventive medicine. Through the steady generation and maintenance of this grid, we practice emotional hygiene. Most of us know the importance of keeping our physical bodies and living spaces clean, of maintaining a balanced diet, of getting enough exercise. As adults, we know how to avoid potentially dangerous situations by following common sense safety rules.

By creating the heart virtues grid in our infield we are maintaining a healthy emotional environment that is an extension of the healthy physical environment many of us value so highly and maintain as a normal part of our everyday lives. Just as unhealthy physical living lowers the



power of our immune systems, leaving us vulnerable to illness and disease, unhealthy emotional living (emotional chaos), also reduces the power of our immune systems. Thus, it is obvious that coupling the energy grid's emotional hygiene to the physical hygiene of modern living can have a tremendous positive effect on every aspect of our lives.

I think it is fair to state that the vast majority of human beings live in emotional chaos and lack control over their emotional lives. Because of this condition, we live in a stormy sea of emotions in which the vessels of our journey are vulnerable to the hazards of over-stress, irritability, low energy and consequent susceptibility to illness and disease. Therefore, even though we have created the heart virtues grid, our systems can still be overwhelmed by the emotional turmoil around us. As a result, we still need the when-which-how practice.

In other words, the energy grid will go a long way toward helping us maintain our emotional hygiene, but there will still be many occasions when we need to send specific energies to ourselves or others in order to aid in crisis situations. By analogy, although we may be fortunate enough to live in a relatively healthy physical environment, there are many occasions in life when we require specific medical help due to sickness or emergencies. Overburdened health systems around the world attest to this.

The act of building the heart virtues grid creates a state of consciousness that facilitates our ability to initiate the practice because we have gained the skill to shift into the

dimensions of the heart and soul. This ability makes it possible for us be alert to the calls of those in need.

### **Alertness to the Call**

Alertness to the call means that we are aware in the moment and we have developed a capacity for sensitivity to the call for help. Granted this is a skill to be learned and mastered, but all efforts we make are never lost. Our efforts are cumulative and every time we remember to practice when-which-how we increase our ability and capacity for service, moving steadily forward toward emotional self-mastery.

Recognition of a call for help is the when stage. The call is simply a way of describing any living energy field in need of the six heart virtues.

1. A lack of appreciation is a call.
2. A lack of compassion is a call.
3. A lack of forgiveness is a call.
4. A lack of humility is a call.
5. A lack of understanding is a call.
6. A lack of valor is a call.

Who is calling? It could be your ego-personality, it could be another human being or group of human beings, it could be a call from the natural world. It could be a call from all three. No matter from where the call is coming, the vital elements that require development are the ability

to stay present in the moment, observation, and an increasing sensitivity to the heart and its six virtues.

Before continuing to our next subject, I want to reiterate that the practice of when-which-how is not dependent on first achieving perfection in being present in the moment, observation, and perfect sensitivity to the heart's transmissions. We can work on all these elements simultaneously. These various pieces will fit into their natural places in the bigger picture of the when-which-how technique as we become more adept in our practice.

We need to remember what was stated earlier, that although the techniques of emotional self-mastery can be quite sophisticated, the core practice of when-which-how is simple. The practice "is not judged by its perfect expression, or its analytic virtuosity, but is performed and guided by intent."

### **Know Thyself—Track-Treat-Transform**

In the previous section we saw that knowing when to engage our practice involves developing sensitivity and a simple awareness of ourselves and those around us. The which stage requires knowledge about ourselves, about others, and about our relation to the six heart virtues. And obviously, it also entails learning about the six heart virtues themselves. After all, once we have determined that a situation warrants our attention, we must choose which virtue or virtues to apply. At the least, it is essential to have a basic knowledge of the six heart virtues.

Even when a situation relates to others, we are intimately involved the instant we choose to transmit heart energetics into the encounter. We can say that quantum entanglement is occurring. Consequently, it is crucial that we learn as much about ourselves as possible. In doing so, we gain invaluable knowledge about our attitudes and behaviors, and our strengths and weaknesses. This is a learning process on the path of emotional self-mastery. The “Living from the Heart” paper explains this with three words: track, treat, and transform.

- Track means that the individual can self-report their progress on the six heart virtues over time and track their ups and downs, and see their self-mastery growing against the backdrop of time.

- Treat means that the individual – while tracking their progress – can see when they hit a snag or vexing problem that takes them off course and then treat this issue like a physician treats a wound or illness. The treatment, in this case, is not a reward, but rather a solution or remedy to a problem or emotional misstep.

- Transform is the result of tracking and treating along this journey and seeing how you are transformed into a self-empowered, spiritually vibrant person.

From this description it is interesting to note that the when-which-how practice is nested within the Treat portion of these three steps. When we identify a need for applying the heart virtues, and choose which virtues to apply, and we finally decide how to apply them, we are actually treating a situation or encounter. Over time, we can track our progress and observe our transformation. (A

dynamic tracking system is available to you when you register at [eventtemples.org](http://eventtemples.org).)

Note that although this system is concentrated on our own progress, it is also a gauge of our effectiveness in treating others. Ultimately, you and “the others” are linked because we are all swimming in the same pool of emotions. This is the basis of our individual human energetic field’s (IHEF) contribution to the collective human energetic field (CHEF). The sliding scale of our individual practice, inevitably affects the sliding scale of our contribution to the collective.

Before taking a closer look at the six heart virtues, I want to give a simple example of how we can work with the virtues in relation to our own life situations. We can perform a simple exercise by asking ourselves two questions:

1. Which virtue do I feel most attuned to?
2. Which virtue do I feel least attuned to?

The answers to these two questions can be thought of as the establishment of a baseline in the initial stage of tracking. For example, if you feel most attuned to appreciation, how do you interpret this in relation to your life experience? Appendix A provides brief descriptions of the six virtues. Appreciation is described in two ways. The first description is at a global, collective level and the second is at a personal level.

Applying the first description suggests a deep sense of connection to all things and a decentralized sense of self. We can look at the world around us and experience a

feeling of awe and wonder at the beautiful and intricate interaction of life at myriad levels, from microscopic atomic particle to galaxies spinning in the vastness of space. There is a feeling of joy in the very fact that all of this is happening at this very instant and that we are conscious, alive, and experiencing it.

At the personal level we feel a deep resonance with family and friends. There is a warm and loving feeling brought to mind and heart of the multi-faceted personality traits we enjoy so much about the souls who share this time and space with us. There is a mystery about why we have been brought together, where we came from, and, if one believes in reincarnation, how we have known one another in the past. In all this lies an appreciation of a larger design of soul connection beyond our ability to comprehend, but wondrous in its own way.

Continuing our example, let's say that the virtue we feel least attuned to is forgiveness. What do we feel when this word comes into our minds and hearts? It is here, in the "areas of lesser connection" where we must be honest with ourselves. We must be able to bring our feelings and thoughts into awareness and examine the reasons particular virtues are "weaker" than others. We can learn much about ourselves in this way.

Forgiveness is related to time. It doesn't require much brainpower to figure out that when we fail to forgive, we are freezing all the persons involved (including ourselves) in a timeframe at the point where we were wronged. We are creating a personal spacetime reality that we lock ourselves (and the images of others) into every time we reenact the incident in which someone wronged us.

As mentioned earlier, the soul and heart operate outside spacetime, so as long as we cannot forgive, we cannot access the heart, and by default, cannot contact the soul and tap into its wisdom. We are locking ourselves out. Often, if we examine this situation more deeply, we may discover that we actually enjoy jumping in our time machines and revisiting these holograms of the past. We may, in fact, be addicted to the negative emotions attached to these past occurrences.

The main point of this exercise is to identify our strengths and weaknesses in relation to the six virtues because they are metaphorical barometers of our accumulated life experiences. They signal the lines of least resistance in our ego-personalities. If a particular virtue creates a sense of blockage or discomfort in your mental/emotional field, it is a valuable clue that can lead you back to the initiating cause of the blockage. On the other hand, you may feel a deep resonance for a particular virtue and this line of least resistance can also be traced back to its roots and yield important information that can shed light on your entire practice.

Our internal reactions to these six virtues can be tracked over time giving us an overview of our ego-personality landscape. Tracking this subjective landscape reveals attitudinal and behavioral patterns that contribute to the unbalanced and chaotic world of the ego-personality. Tracking gives us the information we need to treat and transform these restricting patterns. When-which-how are the landscaping tools we use for cultivating, sculpting, and beautifying our subjective territory; transforming it into a harmonious and healing environment. The experience and

knowledge we gain from working at our own transformation will, in turn, aid us greatly in helping others. Obviously, we must be able to help ourselves before we can help others.

The best way to learn about the six virtues is to work with them. We don't have to be perfect masters in order to begin our practice. It is called a practice because we learn through practice itself. We don't have to pass a test to begin our work because the "passing" is in the "doing." Keeping this in mind, we still require some understanding of the six heart virtues to initiate the when-which-how practice. To this end, let's look more closely at the definitions of the virtues given to us in "Living from the Heart."

### **The Six Heart Virtues, a Closer Look**

When we place our attention on these virtues we are beginning to practice their expression even as we think about them. When we imagine their fullness—their energetic structures—we are practicing them at a new, more potent level. The practice is not just expression; it is contemplation and study as well.

It should be obvious by now that we are really laying the emphasis on practicing the heart virtues, not sitting in meditation for hours contemplating their complexities. However, the material being offered to us is rooted in a balanced approach. Yes, we need to be pro-active in our expression of the heart virtues because the "house is on fire" and action is essential. Later, when the emergency is over, we can turn our attention to deeper issues if that is



the direction we want to take. So, we are urged to take our practice into the routines of our living, but we are also asked to spend some time learning our craft. And this requires that some quiet time be set aside for meditation and study.

It is not my responsibility to tell you how often you should study or meditate. If you are sincere about this work and feel it is important to apply, you will attend to those areas of your practice that need improvement. Self-observation and your heart's inner voice will guide you in the details of adjusting your practice to allow the light of the soul to shine with greater clarity and power in your life and in the lives of your fellow humans.

The paper, "Living from the Heart" contains a meditation exercise called, "The Virtuous Cycle Technique." I highly recommend it as an effective method of deepening your understanding and connection to the six virtues. Keeping a notebook within reach as part of this practice is important for recording any insights you may receive. I can tell you from my own experience that many an insight rapidly fades from the "meditative" mind soon after the session ends. This is similar to how so many of our dreams rapidly dissipate after we awaken in the morning. Therefore, keeping a journal is invaluable in any type of subjective exercise. You can also take advantage of your personal journaling space at the Event Temples website if you want to keep your notes together. Either way, an emotional self-mastery journal is an important tool to consider.

In "Living from the Heart" James writes: "I have resisted the temptation to define the six heart virtues in

detail, but I will provide a starting point for their definition so you can embroider them according to your own experience and insight.”

James has provided valuable insights into the deeper meanings of the virtues. His descriptions give us a wider perspective on these words; words that I believe are familiar to most people. They are not technical terms, but are common in the sense that most people understand them in the context of their own lives. This is why they are so useful in emotional self-mastery—they are accessible and approachable to most anyone. In a way, their meanings are the backbone of morality and ethics across most cultures, religions, and philosophies. They are ingrained in us both consciously and subconsciously. And because of this, for the most part, we feel comfortable spending time with them.

While these titles or names are like shells of their true meaning (from the energetic perspective) they approximate the manner in which each of us is enfolded with the spirit of First Source.

In fact, my own words now lead me to point out a fascinating characteristic of these six “ordinary” words—they are intelligent fields of energy. Each one of us has been given a complete set of these intelligences as part of our soul’s equipment. These intelligent energy fields are our link to God, or what Lyricus refers to as First Source.

These fields are the energetic equivalents of First Source’s imprint upon the individual soul.

This linkage has existed as long as you have existed. It is not newly created. Perhaps, instead, it is newly forgotten.

Consequently, our desire to interact with these “words” can be seen as a re-acquaintance with good old friends we forgot we had. From the start, they are welcoming, warm, and approachable. In point of fact they are—

Appreciative, Compassionate, Forgiving, Humble, Understanding, and Valorous

But as we get to know them, to spend more time with them, we discover that they also possess a deep, wise, and loving intelligence. We might even consider them to be guides, mentors, or counselors to our souls.

Part of this practice is to see your understanding and comprehension of these names or descriptions expand and shift as you practice and exercise your imagination.

Holding this attitude in heart and mind, I have extracted portions of James’ definitions of the six virtues. A careful reading of them reveals a different interpretation than the traditional definitions most of us would recognize. I believe his ideas provide a vital clue to the attitude and view we must take in order to achieve emotional self-mastery. This does not mean that we must adhere to the exact definitions given by James. In fact, I believe he would never want that. More to the point, this isn’t so much about the definitions, as much as it is about living our lives as soul-personalities instead of ego-personalities.

Ultimately, it all comes down to contacting, integrating, and transmitting the light of the soul—which is the light of

love. The energetic heart is the gateway to the reception and integration of this light into our own human energy field, the human instrument. And the energetic heart, with the aid of the mind, is the combined instrument of distribution and transmission of the light of love into the world around us.

I believe this will become clearer as we examine the definitions of the six virtues more closely. After we have gained an overview of them, we can scale them down to the measure of our own lives as we develop our skills in practicing when-which-how.

When the essential definitions of the six virtues are brought together, a picture emerges of a backdrop or framework for our practice. I have assembled these definitions into a table for easier reference.

### **Virtues Definitions Appreciation**

- First Source (Higher Intelligence) surrounds our fellow beings as a field of consciousness...
- This consciousness unifies us...
- This awareness, or even belief, shifts our focus from the small details of our personal life to the vision of our purpose as a species.
- At a more practical level, appreciation expresses itself in the small gestures of gratitude that support relationship loyalty and bonding.

## **Compassion**

In the context of the new intelligence that is seating itself on our planet, compassion is an active desire to assist others to align with the new fields of intelligence that are manifesting in the three dimensional world, aware that their desire and ability to align is distorted by their social enculturation; it does not accurately reflect their intelligence, spiritual inclinations, or purpose.

## **Forgiveness**

- Forgiveness is really the outward expression of understanding and compassion without the heavy sentiments of duality (i.e., good and bad) that typically introduce the presence of judgment.
- It is a neutral expression without design or purpose other than to release yourself from the clutches of time.
- When a person operates from the heart virtues and the rich textures of its authentic frequencies, forgiveness is a natural state of acceptance.

## **Humility**

- Humility is the realization that the heart, mind and soul co-mingle in the grace of a Higher Intelligence or Designing Force, and that their very existence is upheld through this connection of unconditional love.

- Humility is the expression of this love frequency knowing it derives from what already exists in a higher dimension.

## **Understanding**

Understanding is the aspect of heart intelligence that recognizes [that] this dissociation from love is a necessary design component of the larger blueprint that is occurring on the planet. (See A Universal Blueprint.)

## **Valor**

Valor is the aspect of your love that defends its presence in the face of injustice as measured in the social order.

A close inspection of the definitions in this table clearly shows an interconnection between the six virtues that underlies their outer meanings. The definitions reveal an inner common source, a source of which they are the outcome. In effect, the six heart virtues can be viewed as the unpacked components of a universal pattern or blueprint.

## **A Universal Blueprint**

The ideas related to a universal blueprint can be found in “The Blueprint of Exploration.” This is the third philosophy paper of the WingMakers. This is not the place for an in-depth examination of that paper, but at the same time, it is not easy to explain in a sentence or two. In order

to place the six heart virtues in the proper context, I believe we must go into this in some measure.

The essential idea in relation to our practice is that we are immortal cosmic entities participating in a blueprint of exploration conceived by God or First Source. Our roles are to explore the spacetime worlds, the dense dimensions of the multiverse. This descent into matter requires separation from our unity with First Source. The individuation, separation, and struggle for survival creates uniqueness in each individual—the embodied personality of the soul.

The key factor to remember here is that we have never been abandoned by our souls or First Source. The energetic heart has been with us from the beginning of our explorations, but it lies below the threshold of consciousness until the incarnated ego-personality has gathered many experiences in its explorations of spacetime. At a certain point, the soul, through the energetic heart, begins to awaken the lower self to its (the soul's) presence. This is the stage where the energetic heart, the soul's agent, introduces itself to the ego-personality. The world's religions and mythologies each have their own general descriptions and allegories related to this stage in the life of the soul. It most often entails the inner stirring of an individual, who suddenly wakes to the realization that he is far from home and needs to undertake a journey back to his source. These are actually journeys in consciousness leading to a reunion between the fully conscious soul in its "higher" non-spacetime dimension, and the embodied fragment of consciousness in its "lower" spacetime dimension.

So, how does this fit into the definition of understanding? This big picture blueprint reminds us that all the individuals we encounter in our day-to-day activities are fellow explorers. We are all part of this exploration plan. In other words, we can use this description of reality to view the world and its people from the standpoint of the soul. At this level we can understand the human situation, feel compassion, and forgive. (See definition of Forgiveness.)

Consequently, when we become irritated, frustrated, or angry at the behaviors and opinions of others, we are challenged to view the larger picture and to realize that we are all ultimately working toward contributing our unique discoveries to the grand plan of First Source. But due to the difficulties imposed by the very conditions of the spacetime environment, almost all explorers get lost, develop problems, misunderstand missions, make mistakes, and cause harm to themselves and others. All of this contributes to the overwhelming sense of chaos and confusion in the world. The ability to stand back and understand this as the soul understands it is to practice emotional self-mastery. When we can approach the six virtues from the higher perspective of the soul, they form a new reality. Using the definitions given, let's explore them as a whole.

We have just seen that understanding is based on the blueprint of exploration set in motion by First Source. Seen in this context, the remaining five virtues fit into a wonderful pattern modeled after the vantage point of the soul—transcendent of space and time.



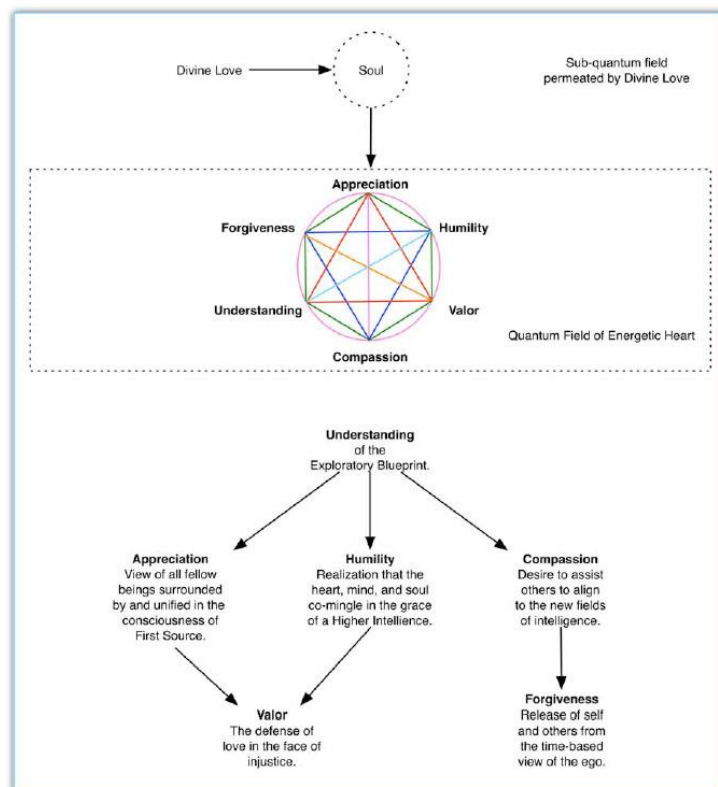
The soul understands that each of us is on a journey of exploration and that we are at different points along the way. As the soul, we must show compassion toward ourselves and others, as we grope in the darkness of our journeys. We know that sometimes the darkness is a necessary incentive, forcing us to develop the skills and resources for our survival and growth. But too often, our darkness is self-created through ignorance and selfishness. Consequently, we have compassion for these shortcomings and can extend forgiveness to ourselves and others. In the light of forgiveness we hold no grudges; we liberate ourselves and our brothers and sisters from the suffering imposed by time. Restricted by the burdensome weights and restricting shackles of guilt and shame, who can advance in the journey? Forgiveness lives in the light of the soul's neutrality, which knows that justice is meted out as part of the harmonizing principle of the multiverse.

Knowing all this, we come within the moderating influence of humility. This virtue adjusts our sense of proportion in relation to all things. If forgiveness liberates us from time, humility liberates us from space. It gives us the freedom to adjust our attitudes and positions toward all things. We are free to experience right relationships in all matters. Humility in this sense can be compared to the Chinese art and philosophy of Feng Sui. Humility is the Feng Sui of the heart. To know one's place in the divine scheme of things is to be free to move to the next level. It is the knowledge granting a sense of direction because we know where we stand in relation to life.

All of this gives us an appreciation for the vast unified reality in which we live, move, and have our being. We are

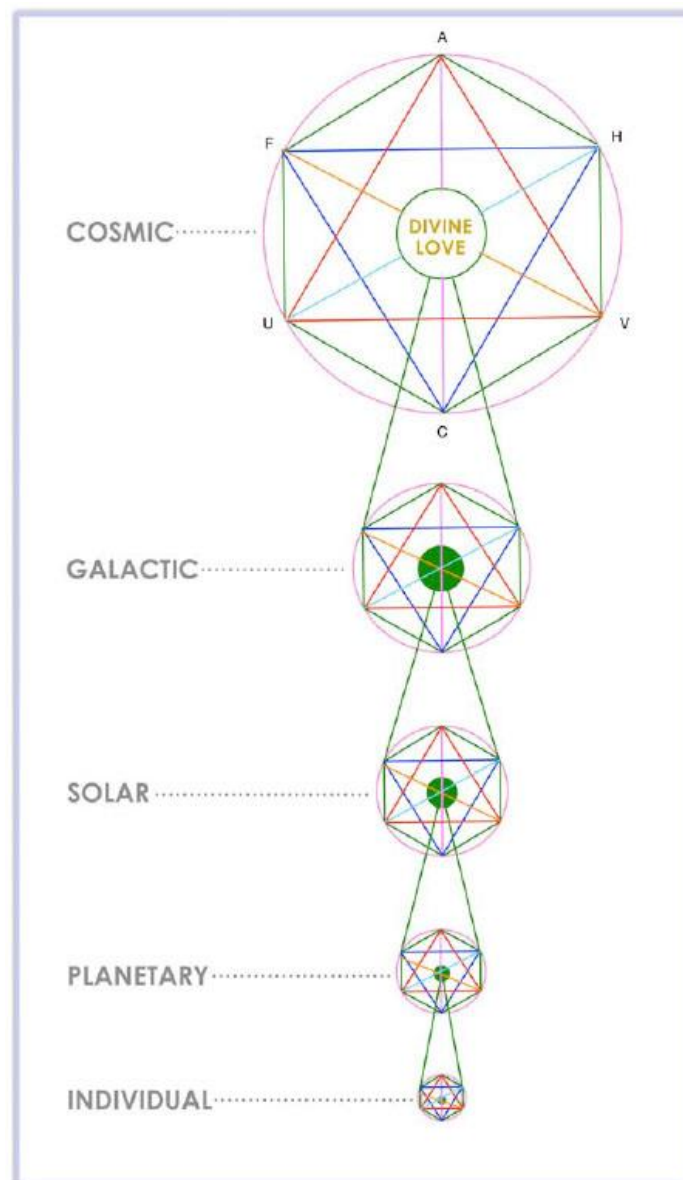
filled with gratitude for the knowledge of all this. We appreciate the fact that we can understand, that we can be compassionate, that we can forgive, and know the important part we play in relationship to the souls we travel with on our journey through space and time.

Knowing all this, through the meaning of these five virtues, we have the valor to stand up to those forces which thwart our efforts to stand in the light of the soul. We realize that our own ego-personality is most often the force blocking the radiance of love flowing from our hearts. We are courageous because, like the heroes of the world's great traditions, we too have been given gifts of power for our adventurous journey into the spacetime worlds of the multiverse.



This awareness, or even belief, shifts our focus from the small details of our personal life to the vision of our purpose as a species.

First Source is Divine Love. This love along with its six virtues can be pictured saturating and penetrating the Underivative Information Structure at every scale of the multiverse. I have made a feeble attempt to illustrate this scale below. Simply stated (if at all possible), our individual practice of the six heart virtues is a microcosmic reflection of the macrocosmic expression of divine love by First Source Intelligence.



Consequently, whenever we practice when-which-how, we are activating heart energetics on our individual,

microscopic scale in resonance with other vast cosmic processes of energetic transfers occurring continuously throughout the multiverse. Thus, we play our part and contribute to the greater good.

In summary, the definitions of the heart virtues provided in “Living from the Heart” are guidelines for living within the blueprint of exploration. If we base our actions and behaviors on these simple and direct precepts, our hearts will speak to us in the voice of the soul, and we will be guided by the intelligent light of love throughout our spacetime odyssey.

That inner voice sounds from a dimension of reality enfolding our spacetime dimension. This all-inclusive reality is an ocean of love that expresses itself through the six virtues. We might imagine these virtues as the waves created by the ocean’s encounter with the shores of the three-dimensional islands of spacetime. Imagine this occurring at all scales of the multiverse. The important thing to remember is this—the power expressed by these waves is the same; the only difference is the size of the island and its placement in the sea.

If God is the ocean, then we are the drop. As such, we carry the frequency of love in us at all times. When we consciously engage this practice, we deliver a minute drop of First Source to the world in the form of the heart’s virtues. When we practice when-which-how, we are like the waves of the ocean of love breaking on the shores of every “island” we encounter.

# THE PRACTICE OF WHEN-WHICH-HOW

This is the goal of the when-which-how practice: to draw your soul into the experience of the body-mind, and enable it to lead the expression of your life in the domains of timespace.

It is the heart's intention to be the enabling force for this goal.

## *The Framework*

At the end of the last section, we discussed the definitions of the six heart virtues from the angle of the blueprint of exploration. This is the big picture viewpoint that places living from the heart, emotional self-mastery, and its practices within the context of the soul's journey through the multiverse. One of the stops on this journey is planet Earth. This is a place where we are experiencing separation from the soul and its unified state with First Source. Learning to live from the heart is the process of integrating the higher, unified experience of the soul with the unique, individuated personality we have evolved in spacetime. This might be called the ultimate framework and it forms the transcendental background for all our experiences.

The paper, "Living from the Heart," mentions another framework that is more directly connected to our practice. This is the fundamental structure in which we conduct our

practice of when-which-how. The practice rests on the foundation of coherence.

The art of the genuine is the practice of coherence between the deeper awakening of the heart virtues within each of us, and their faithful expression in the worlds of form. Those individuals who are awakened to the frequencies of the energetic heart within and practice—to their best ability in the moment—the expression of these frequencies in their behavior and actions are practicing their highest purpose.

[They are] seeking to increase the degree of coherence between what they understand their heart virtues to be and how they can express those heart virtues with genuineness.

This is a straightforward process. We read or hear about these six virtues. We recall their meanings as we have understood them from our social upbringing. We begin to think more deeply about them in relation to the suggestion that these virtues are aspects of divine love; that they originate in the immortal spiritual soul; and that they are contained in our energetic body at the place of our heart. Based on all this, we begin to create our own ideas about these virtues. These make a deeper impact on us and we begin to apply these to our own behaviors and attitudes. We move from an intellectual level to a practical level. The critical factor is that we are using our intention to activate what is in our hearts and minds by expressing these six heart virtues in our lives. This is coherence based on authenticity and genuineness. This entire process is based on a framework.

There is an ascending spiral process to this practice... One must be grounded in the framework, and this can be done by studying the free e-paper “The Art of the Genuine: A Spiritual Imperative” and then contemplating its meaning.

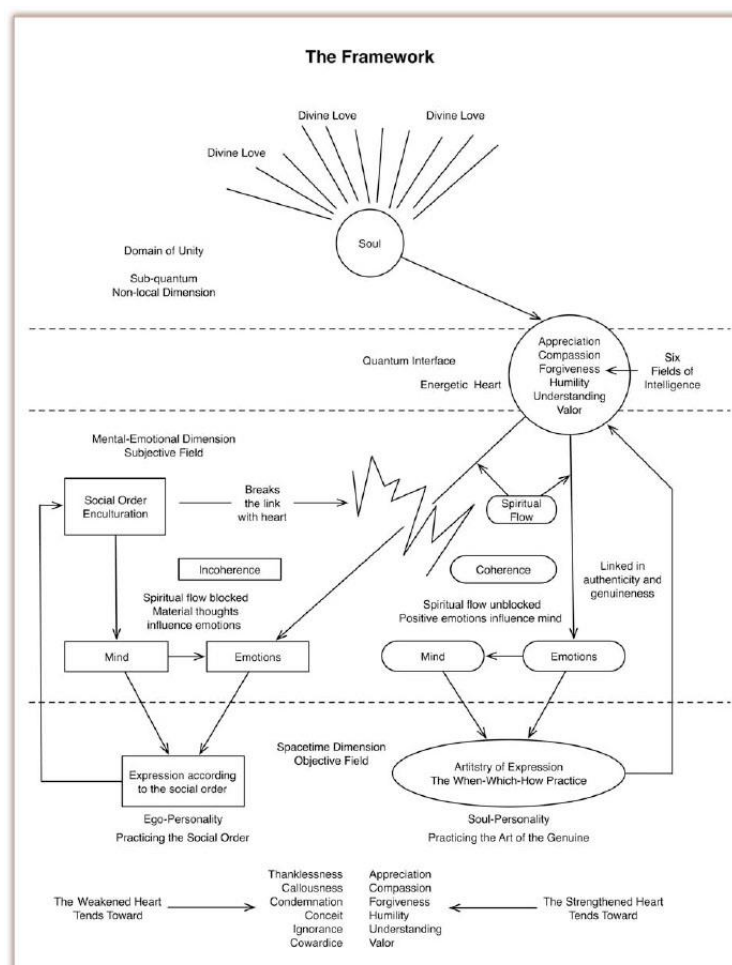
The diagram I have supplied here (following page) is a summary, from my perspective, of the basic “framework” described in “The Art of the Genuine: A Spiritual Imperative.” However, that paper should be studied in order to gain a more complete understanding of the art of the genuine. The process described in the diagram is not a perfect, “air-tight” model, but I believe it can help us understand the framework well enough to begin practicing when-which-how.

The top of the diagram depicts the soul receiving divine love from the Domain of Unity. It then passes this on to the energetic heart in the form of six fields of intelligence, which are called the six heart virtues.

The middle portion of the diagram indicates the subjective mental-emotional dimension where we create our thoughts and feelings. In this section of the diagram, the heart represents our emotional state. If we are oriented toward social enculturation, the heart is weakened relative to the soul and the six virtues. If we are oriented toward the soul, the heart is strengthened relative to the soul and the six virtues.

The thoughts and emotions generated by social enculturation create the ego-personality and consequent incoherence and chaos in one’s Individual Human Energetic Field (IHEF). This contributes to the overall

chaos and incoherence in the Collective Human Energetic Field (CHEF). As illustrated in the diagram, practicing the social order interferes with the reception of the six heart virtues emanating from the soul via the energetic heart. Also notice, that in this case the mind is the transmitter of thought to the emotions. Here, the ego-mind transmits thoughts and ideas to the non-heart-based emotions, creating a vicious cycle that reinforces the ego-personality structure.



The right side of the diagram shows a different scenario. Here the six heart virtues are transmitted to the emotional field without interference (ideally). This creates the soul-personality and consequent coherence in our Individual Human Energetic Field (IHEF). This contributes to the



accumulation of coherence in the Collective Human Energetic Field (CHEF). This coherence is maintained through the artistry of expressing the six heart virtues. This is the practice of when-which-how. Now the heart-based emotional field is transmitting its energetics to the mind. (Notice also, that the situation is reversed relative to the mind and emotions.) And the mind, in tandem with the heart-based emotions, is now able to create thoughts and ideas expressive of the soul, and mediated by the energetic heart. This creates the virtuous cycle that reinforces the soul-personality structure.

The bottom section of the diagram simply shows the objective, third dimensional results of our expressions—derived from our habituation to the social order, or derived from our awakening to the soul’s Domain of Unity. At the left side of the diagram we are practicing the social order and on the right side, we are practicing the art of the genuine (no symbolic pun intended). I would also point out that practicing the social order is not necessarily bad or unethical. It’s practicing the social order exclusively—without the spiritual dimension of the energetic heart and soul—that creates conditions of materialism, separatism, mistrust, and fear.

The “opposites” of the six virtues are my own interpretations. I may want to spend a little time pondering on my own interpretations of the virtues’ opposites because their presence, either in yourself or others, is an indicator of when to apply the appropriate heart virtues. Probably most of us are already familiar with the polar opposites of the virtues and therefore, they can serve as bridges to the virtues themselves. Rather than seeing these

opposites as “bad,” we might compare them to malnourished trees metaphorically deprived of the nurturing sunlight of the soul’s rays by a polluted emotional atmosphere. By intentionally shining the light of the soul on these weakened and stunted trees, we can clear the atmosphere and restore these trees to health.

### ***Practicing the Six Heart Virtues***

One can experiment with the six virtues and learn how to deepen their understanding—not at an intellectual level, but rather a practical application level.

Practicing the art of the genuine is magnetically attracting these fields of intelligence into your consciousness and then expressing them in your behavior and actions to all forms of life that cross your path every moment in time and every centimeter in space to the best of your ability.

The paper, “Living from the Heart” states that there are “too many variables to assign clear-cut guidelines” to the when-which-how practice. Consequently, it recommends maintaining a high state of internal coherence so that our intuition can guide us in the practice. With this in mind, I have created a typical day in the life of a practitioner. I have tried to include encounters and situations that most people can identify with. The “solutions” to these scenarios are simply examples of applying the heart virtues to the common, day-to-day routine of living that we all experience. The examples provided here are glimpses into the process of the practice. They are my experiments with the six heart virtues and are not meant to

be set rules. They are examples that may be common to the experiences of many practitioners in general, but are not similar in detail. Your application of when-which-how will be different than mine, even though we are all applying the same virtues, and have the same goal—contributing positive emotions to the CHEF.

In order to provide practical examples of practice, I have had to calibrate the definitions of the six virtues as described in listed earlier. Calibrating does not mean we change the virtues' fundamental definitions; it means that we adjust their resonant meanings in proportion to our world of daily living. The idea is similar to a musical note. The note C has higher and lower frequencies or pitches. They all resonate to the same note, but have different sound frequency expressions. In the case of the heart virtues, for example, appreciation of the blueprint of exploration is at the universal scale, while appreciation of one's family is at an interpersonal, human scale. We are still feeling appreciation, but the scales are different because they are adjusted in proportion to their application. This is an example of how to apply the virtue or virtues that have been chosen for each encounter and situation.

### A Day in the Life of...

6 AM. Alarm clock rings. Time to wake up. Oh no, time to get up for work already. Where did the night go? I can't wait for my day off, or my vacation, or my retirement. Maybe another job would be even better. I still feel tired and I'm uncertain about the day.

6:30 AM. Breakfast. My wife is already reminding me about the after-school soccer match I must attend, while I am already stressing over the project I have going on at work. Meanwhile, my two children are arguing about something and I discover that the morning newspaper is lying in a puddle of water.

Unable to read the paper and avoiding the arguing kids, I turn on the TV only to learn that my taxes are going to be raised once again because the government doesn't have enough money. Next there is a report that torrential rains somewhere in the world have destroyed hundreds of homes and have left thousands of people without shelter. I quickly switch channels again, in order to get the sports' scores.

7:30 AM. I ponder the meaning of life as my car crawls along at the usual slow morning pace. Suddenly all traffic comes to a dead stop and I realize there has been an accident up ahead and I may be late for work. Frustration soon leads to irritation, and then anger.

8:30 AM. I get to work just in time for my project meeting and I immediately find out that something has gone wrong with the project. I know it's not my fault, but is obviously the fault of some idiot in another department.

10:30 AM. My boss calls me into her office to inform me that it wasn't an idiot from another department who screwed up, but it was, in fact, me. I am the idiot who screwed up. What's more, she now tells me that I better stay late tonight to correct the problem. I'm too afraid to tell her I can't because of a game my kid is in after school. My stress level has just doubled. Just before 5 PM, too

fearful of telling the truth about the soccer game, I fake illness and inform my manager that I have to go home. “Okay,” she says, “but you better get this corrected before the weekend.”

12:00 Noon. I am too stressed out to eat lunch, so I try to take a nap to forget my troubles.

5:30 PM. I arrive at the soccer game, but have missed the beginning and my wife wants to know why? I dare not say a word. Halfway through the game, my son’s team is losing and no one is happy. Meanwhile, I’m thinking about that damned project at work. My son’s team pulls through and wins the game, but my momentary happiness is quickly shattered when I realize that I locked my keys in the car in my rush to not miss the start of the game, which, by the way, I did anyway. My wife must drive home to get the spare keys while I wait by the car for her return. Dinner will be delayed tonight. We could go out for dinner, but we went out last night and our budget can’t handle it.

8:00 PM. We are finally eating dinner and my wife is telling me about the chores that must get done this weekend. I am nodding in agreement, but I haven’t heard a word because I am worried about correcting the mistake I (the idiot) made at work, which has delayed the project’s launch date. Meanwhile, another argument has broken out between the two kids and I scream at them to shut-up and go to bed. Having solved that problem, I decide to watch television and ignore the family problems.

10 PM. Bedtime, and I look forward to a “restful” night in order to be ready for another day.

Question: Did you identify any point in this person's day when he could have applied the heart virtues? If you answered yes to any particular portion of this day, then you know what the when-which-how practice is all about—reducing stress by reducing the emotional chaos created by practicing the social order exclusively—in other words, without integrating the spiritual dimensions of the heart and soul into your dominant third-dimensional life.

So we need to shift our dimensional focus from exclusively centering on the third dimension by incorporating a fourth dimension and maybe even a fifth dimension. This shift is not about abandoning one dimension in favor of another. It is about shifting to a greater bandwidth of perceptions and awareness, to a wider range of frequencies that include the heart and soul.

Granted, your typical day may not be exactly like the day described here and there are many millions of people in this world who have much worse days than this; people who have no alarm clocks, no cars, and no televisions. Worse yet, they may not have breakfasts and dinners, jobs, or families. But generally speaking, if you are reading this guide, then you not only have most of the things mentioned in this scenario, but you also have a computer and Internet access.

According to Abraham Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs, we are on a rung of the ladder in which many of our physiological, safety, and belonging needs are being met and we have the opportunity to focus on our psychological and spiritual needs. Consequently, we are fortunate enough to be in a position to work at emotional self-mastery, to improve our individual energetic fields and, in turn to

improve the collective human energetic field (CHEF). We should take advantage of this opportunity not only for our own sakes, but also for the sake of humankind—for what we contribute to the whole, we contribute to ourselves.

Keeping all this in mind, let's rewind this person's typical day and play it back as if he had decided to apply the when-which-how practice to his everyday encounters. We are going to follow this man's activities to see how the application of when-which-how affects the quality of life for this individual and for those who cross his path.

### A New Day in the Life of...

If I don't practice for a day, I know it. If I don't practice for two days, my wife knows it.

If I don't practice for three days, the world knows it.  
Attributed to Vladimir Horowitz

6:00 AM. Alarm clock rings. Time to wake up. Oh no, time to get up for work already. Where did the night go? Although I still feel tired, I feel a new meaning to my life. It might be due to that email message I got from my friend about three months ago, telling me about a website called, Event Temples. I downloaded and read the website's primary article, "Living from the Heart" and liked it. There was something about it that just resonated with me.

6:30 AM. A 5-minute time of reflection on the six heart virtues. I have been doing the Virtuous Cycle Technique from the "Living from the Heart" paper. Some days I feel too tired or I'm in a bad mood, and I just can't seem to do the meditation. Some days, even when I meditate, it doesn't seem very effective. But I'm trying my best to do

it as often as possible and for the past couple of weeks I have been steadier in the practice.

6:50 AM. Breakfast. My wife is already reminding me about the after-school soccer match I must attend, while I am already stressing over the project I have going on at work. It's getting close to the critical launch. Meanwhile, my two children are arguing about something and I discover that my morning newspaper is lying in a puddle of water.

I am getting irritated and am bordering on anger when I suddenly realize that this past year I have become callous and thankless in relation to my family because of the stress and anxiety of my job. I have been avoiding the guilt associated with this and feel ashamed of myself.

I don't know what comes over me, but I spontaneously decide to try the Six Heart Virtues Grid Meditation that I read about in "Living from the Heart." I visualize myself as a point of divine love with the six heart virtues surrounding me and encompassing the kitchen. I had read about this in the paper I downloaded from Event Temples, but except for one attempt, I haven't tried it because I've had my hands full just trying to do the Virtuous Cycle Technique. So I breathe the virtues through my system and into the energy fields of my family. At first this feels kind of weird and airy-fairy, but I finally admit that it actually feels kind of nice. (I remember trying it for the first time at work last week, but I felt embarrassed and self-conscious about it, so I stopped.)

Aware of my insensitivity I realize that I need to show more appreciation for my family, I also realize that I need



to apply understanding and compassion to my own shortcomings. This may take a while, but at least I have made a start. Who knows, maybe I will even be able to overcome my guilt and eventually forgive myself.

There is too much confusion right now to express any of this to my wife, but at least I feel better inside knowing that I have become sensitive to the problem. This, in and of itself, gives me energy and my stress level actually feels like it has gone down a little bit.

The arguing kids are too much to deal with now and I don't know what to do about the irritation I feel because of the wet newspaper. All I can do right now is observe this irritation and feel it in my gut.

7:30 AM. I ponder the meaning of life while slowly driving in the morning traffic jam. Suddenly all traffic comes to a dead stop and I realize there is an accident ahead and I may be late for work. I notice my frustration and anger building up as it usually does in these situations. I decide to apply the virtues of humility and understanding to this situation, but to my surprise I cannot seem to activate these feelings.

Wondering what is going on, I realize that it isn't easy to activate the virtues when negative emotions have gotten into my system and are running riot. It takes a while for me to allow these negative emotions to subside before I can focus on bringing forth the feelings of humility and understanding.

Humility allows me to deflate my own self-importance. After all, I'm not the only person in this mess. I'm in this traffic jam along with other people who will probably be

late for work just like me. Besides there's nothing I can do about it anyway.

This attitude actually helps the virtue of understanding emerge. It seems natural to me in this situation because understanding implies a combination of knowledge and reason, leading to meaning. I know there is a large volume of traffic at rush hour and therefore it's just common sense that accidents are more likely to occur under these conditions.

Now I feel better. The pain of frustration has subsided and I feel so much better that I decide to send this same combination of humility and understanding to my fellow prisoners of the highway. I try my best to visualize the heart virtues grid around my body and imagine these two virtues flowing out to those around me.

8:30 AM. I get to work just in time for my project meeting and I immediately find out that something has gone wrong with the project. I know it's not my fault, but is obviously the fault of some idiot in another department.

Observing the thoughts and feelings that come into my mind, I cannot avoid the fact that I have just condemned someone for making an error even though I have no evidence to back it up. My heart tells me that this is not the right attitude. Despite my certainty that it isn't my error, I need to practice forgiveness and not condemn another person. After all, if I cannot forgive someone for a mistake, the resentment I feel toward them will only create unhealthy, negative emotions that create more stress on the job. I imagine the virtue of forgiveness flowing outward to that "someone" in another department.

A couple of months ago, I would have been irritated at least all day over an incident like this one. Comparing that feeling of irritation with this new feeling of forgiveness is like a breath of fresh air. Instead of feeling locked into an irritable and uncomfortable emotional state, by contrast, I feel liberated, able to let go of this emotional discomfort. Ordinarily, I would have been drained of energy all day, but now I feel energized and somehow more empowered.

10:30 AM. My boss calls me into her office to inform me that it wasn't an idiot from another department who screwed up, but it was, in fact, me. I am the idiot who screwed up. I am suddenly in a state of shock! How can this be possible? Here I am, sending forgiveness to someone who made this huge mistake and all along it was me. I was nice enough to take the time to send forgiveness to somebody and they didn't even need it! I AM an idiot. Not only that, I am a conceited, egotistical idiot, for I automatically assumed that because I am such a superior person the mistake could not possibly have been mine. For some bizarre reason, Carly Simon's song, "You're So Vain" began playing in my head.

What's more, my manager now informs me that I better stay late tonight to correct the problem. I'm afraid to tell her I can't because of the soccer game my son is in after school. My stress level has just doubled.

12:00 Noon. Sitting in my office at lunchtime, I reflect on the morning's events. I have recovered enough from my emotional reactions to look at the attitudes and behaviors I expressed as a result of this crisis. First of all, from the beginning of this incident I was so into my own ego that I automatically believed someone else caused this

crisis. I was able to practice when-which-how by centering in my heart and sending forgiveness to this individual.

That part was fine, but when my manager informed me that the crisis was my fault, I lost it and condemned myself to idiot status and even resented the fact that I sent forgiveness to someone who didn't even earn it. To be honest, that's pretty bad. Not only am I egotistical, but in my anger, I actually resented sending someone a heart virtue!"

Okay, enough wallowing in what has already been done. All I can do now is realign to my energetic heart. Immediately, I close my eyes and visualize myself as a point of divine love surrounded by the six virtues. After some effort to calm down, I see and feel appreciation in front of me and compassion behind me. I am aware of forgiveness to my front left and humility to my front right. Behind me on the left is understanding and behind me on the right is valor.

The simple act of performing this exercise, allowing the energies of these virtues to flow through my being, somehow renews my spirit. Yes, I screwed up, I lost control, but now I can feel the healing energies of the virtues restoring my balance—giving me the strength and insight I need to move ahead.

This crisis is turning into a breakthrough. I now see that my heart has led me to the soul itself. I feel uplifted and shifted in consciousness to a state of serenity and unity. From this higher and wider vantage point, I can observe my ego-personality and pour love into it. I feel compassion for all the mistakes and needless suffering it has created

and endured. I allow this compassion to flow into my awareness. I surrender to the inflow of love. Compassion leads to understanding. The light of understanding reveals how I have been denying the flaws and imperfections of my personality structure. I have donned the armor of war and protection, and built a fortress to hide within.

The ego needs these devices for protection, but the soul does not. I can understand this now and I can release myself from the burden of deception. I can remove the restricting mask of the social order and show my true face. This release, this liberation, is the result of self-forgiveness.

I feel so good I want to pour these feeling out on everyone. So without even thinking about it, I spontaneously send a wave of heart virtues out to my family, friends, co-workers, and the entire world.

When I come out of this meditative state, I am a little embarrassed because the experience seemed so out of proportion to the event that triggered it. But then I recall stories I've heard about Zen Buddhist monks who became enlightened so suddenly and without warning that it was like being struck by lightning. I think the word began with an S.

1:00 PM. Feeling confident about this heartfelt experience, I do something that I never would have dreamt of before today. I go to my boss's office and ask to talk to her. I apologize for my emotional outburst and the mistake I made on the project. I am especially sorry for blaming someone else for it before the evidence showed the true source of the error. I think to myself how great it feels to

admit my true position in all this—to not have to defend a false position. The virtue of humility has lifted this burden from my shoulders.

I then find the courage to tell my manager that I really can't stay overtime today to correct the problem because my son is playing in a soccer match after school. To my utter astonishment, she understands. For the first time since I have worked for her, she is sharing information about her personal life. She relates that her daughter also plays soccer and that she always tries to attend her daughter's games. She knows how important it is to her daughter when she makes the effort to get to her games. So my boss tells me that she doesn't really care when I get this problem resolved as long as I get it done by the weekend.

I leave work this afternoon amazed at how smoothly everything seems to be going. Reviewing all that has happened today, I realize that I expressed compassion, understanding, forgiveness, humility, and valor. I now have an enormous appreciation for the powers of the energetic heart and the emanating love of the soul standing behind it. Amazing. I have utilized every virtue without even realizing it. Looking back on it, they just seemed to flow naturally and effortlessly from my heart. Simply making the effort to turn my attention to them was the key to their transforming power. I make a quick mental note to remember to do this more often because, up until today, I have only remembered to apply the technique once in a while. If I can discipline myself to be more aware of my interactions, I can increase my opportunities to apply the

virtues to the small difficulties of life and prevent them from growing into major problems, like the crisis today.

5:30 PM. I arrive at the soccer game, but have missed the beginning and my wife wants to know why? At first, this sarcastic question annoys me and ordinarily I would just let it go, but after the events of today, I decide it is time to express my feelings about these irritating remarks. Now I understand how letting things like this build up can lead to greater difficulties later on.

I ask her to please not be so sarcastic because I tried my best to get to the game on time, but traffic was unusually heavy today. I immediately sense her surprise that I have actually given a response to her question. I continue by saying that I realize that I haven't been very appreciative and sensitive to her and the kids the past months and therefore maybe I bear some of the responsibility for her unkind reactions to me. While relating all this to her, I am doing my best to send her understanding and compassion. She suggests that we talk about it later. I agree.

Halfway through the game, my son's team is losing and no one is happy. Meanwhile, I'm thinking about this whole concept of competitive sports and how it fits in with emotional self-mastery. Should I be sending the heart virtues to anyone right now? What if I send valor to my son's team, but not the opposing team? That's similar to people praying to God for victory over another team. Or worse yet, praying to God for victory in war. This is a deeper moral issue and too complicated for me right now. How can a person send courage to one team and withhold it from another? Where is the compassion in that? Doesn't the sun shine on the good and bad alike? I decide that I

should be neutral in terms of the current soccer game. To me, it's just common sense. So, I decide to send both teams valor. Why not, aren't sports really supposed to be about how you play the game and not about winning or losing? I laugh to myself seeing how naive that idea has become.

As it turns out, my son's team pulls through and wins the game and we head home for dinner.

8:00 PM. We are finally eating dinner and my wife is telling me about the chores that must get done this weekend. I am nodding in agreement, but I haven't heard a word because I am thinking about how I am going to straighten out the mess at work.

I then realize to my dismay that I haven't been present. My mind has drifted off and I am not giving my wife the attention she deserves (that anyone deserves). This occurrence is not a major catastrophe, but I am beginning to realize how insidious it actually is. The vast majority of people find this state of mind perfectly acceptable, but I am increasingly seeing this as a real impediment to practicing when-which-how. If I cannot hold my focus on a simple dinner conversation with a member of my own family, what does that tell me about self-mastery in general, let alone emotional self-mastery? I need to give this some serious thought later on, but for now I need to focus on the moment.

I apologize for not paying attention to our discussion and we settle our plans for the weekend. We then get back to our earlier discussion at the soccer game. Apparently, the virtues of understanding and compassion have had an



effect on her because she is not defensive at all about her edginess over the past few months. Through valor, I am able to honestly express my situation at work and explain the reasons for my callous and thankless behavior of late. She appreciates my forthrightness and I express to her how appreciative I am of her efforts to support the family in so many ways. I express my understanding for how she must have felt during this stage of our relationship. Turning within, I put myself in her position and can feel compassion welling up in me, and I send it to her.

Meanwhile, another argument has broken out between the two kids in the next room and instead of screaming at them to shut-up and go to bed, I inform them that my wife and I will help resolve their argument in the morning. Having temporarily resolved that problem, we decide to listen to some music before going to bed. As the music is playing I picture the six virtues energy grid surrounding me and enveloping most of the rooms in our home. A new atmosphere of harmony descends upon our family...at least for a while.

10:00 PM. Bedtime, and I look forward to a “restful” night in order to be ready for another great day.

As I drift to sleep, I am aware that my efforts to apply the heart virtues are turning out very well. I have a lot to learn about how to use them more skillfully, but I am pleasantly surprised at how effectively they work, even for a novice like me.

## COMMENTS ON THE PRACTICE

“There is an eye of the soul which. . . is more precious far than ten thousand bodily eyes, for by it alone is truth seen.”

### **Plato, The Republic**

In this section we will examine key elements of our practitioner’s day. I have repeated the important aspects of each timeframe for easier reference.

#### Meditation

6:30 AM.

- A 5-minute time of reflection on the six heart virtues.

Naturally, each person is free to meditate for the length of time they feel is appropriate. In most cases though, 5-10 minutes is a nice compromise between brevity and lengthiness. These energies are very potent and the quality of the work is more important than the quantity of time spent in each session.

As explained elsewhere, the practice of when-which-how lays the emphasis on practice over the more traditional concept of sitting for long periods of time in meditation. Nevertheless, meditation and times of reflection still play a role in emotional self-mastery.

## **Need for Consistency**

- I have been doing the Virtuous Cycle Technique from the “Living from the Heart” paper. Some days I feel too tired or I’m in a bad mood, and I just can’t seem to do the meditation.

Most people would agree that consistency is important in any discipline, whether it is working out at the gym, attendance at work or school, or dieting. Spiritual practice is also a discipline in which consistency is important. At first, it is a difficult adjustment to set aside time to meditate, especially in the morning when we are usually rushing around to get ready for work or school. But, if we really want to work with when-which-how, we will find a way to adjust our schedules to accommodate the practice.

Like anything else, once you get past the initial week or two, the daily rhythm of practice will become a normal part of your day. Consistent meditation will reward you with deeper insights into the virtues. This wisdom of the virtues adds increased depth to your daily practice of when-which-how in your everyday encounters.

## **Looking for Results**

- Some days, even when I meditate, it’s doesn’t seem very effective. But I’m trying my best to do it as often as possible and for the past couple of weeks I’ve been steadier in the practice.

Don’t worry about results. Remember that the concrete lower mind (“lower” in contrast to the higher, more abstract mind) is predominantly responsive to the outer

world and its phenomena. Meditation practice is oriented in the opposite direction, toward the quantum and sub-quantum densities. Consequently, the lower, ego-personality mind is not very sensitive to the inner, subjective energetics of the six heart virtues. This is not to say that the transmissions are not being received. They are, but the conscious, lower mind has difficulty detecting them in the presence of all the “chatter” it is receiving from the external world.

Eventually, your mind will become more sensitive to the presence of these new energetics in the form of deeper insights into their meanings (as mentioned previously). It is likely that any “results” of your daily practice will not be apparent for the first few weeks or months, but of course, there are always exceptions. In the majority of cases, it takes time for the lower mind to adjust and become sensitive to the subtle, but powerful presence of the new energetics.

So, looking for results is like pulling a seedling out of the soil each day to see how the root system is developing. Exposing the young, delicate roots too soon only interferes with a process that nature is quite capable of handling at the beginning stages of growth. Later, the results will be obvious.

Emergence

6:50 AM. Breakfast

- I am getting irritated and am bordering on anger when I suddenly realize that this past year I have become callous and thankless in relation to my family because of the stress

and anxiety of my job. I have been avoiding the guilt associated with this and feel ashamed of myself.

This is an example of the emergence of the virtues into the consciousness of the practitioner. The consistent practice of when-which-how opens us to the sensitivity of the heart, and as a result, the virtues begin to emerge in our awareness. These intelligences will emerge if we do the needed work. In this case, compassion and appreciation emerge in response to our practitioner's awareness of his callousness and thanklessness. This is because compassion and appreciation are the polar opposites of callousness and thanklessness.

In the section on meditation, we discussed results. This sudden emergence of an awareness of a deficiency in compassion and appreciation is the effect of the meditation and his effort in applying when-which-how. Without getting too technical or complicated, it should be noted that meditation and application of when-which-how are two forms of practice. In actuality, meditating on the virtues and applying the virtues are practicing emotional self-mastery. Meditation is a pro-active subjective or internal form of practice and applying the virtues in our daily encounters is a pro-active objective or external form of practice. Both are valuable and support one another.

It's like a feedback system. We meditate on the virtues, keep some notes in a journal and during the day we suddenly realize a deficiency in our application of the virtues. We take action and apply when-which-how. During our next meditation session, we may recall subtle details leading to deeper insights concerning the objective aspect of the previous day's work with the virtues. These

insights now become integrated into our overall store of wisdom in emotional self-mastery.

This practice is different from many spiritual disciplines of the past in that more emphasis is placed on objective practice (applying when-which-how in daily encounters) than on subjective practice (long hours spent in meditation). Again, both are necessary, but with a new emphasis.

- I don't know what comes over me, but I spontaneously decide to try the Six Heart Virtues Grid Meditation that I read about in "Living from the Heart."

This continues where we left off above. As you can see, our practitioner decides to do the grid meditation. The interesting part of this is that he is performing the meditation in the kitchen, at breakfast, with his wife and kids scurrying around getting ready for the day's activities.

So, even though he is not performing his usual meditation session, he is still essentially actively engaged in a subjective form of practice. In other words, he is performing an active meditation.

### **Test the Theory**

- So I breathe the virtues through my system and into the energy fields of my family. At first this feels kind of weird and airy-fairy, but I finally admit that it actually feels kind of nice.

Many people who are drawn to the Event Temples website and spend some time reading the material, may

feel that all this stuff is weird and airy-fairy. One of the main points of Event Temples, however, is to demonstrate that this “stuff” is not weird and airy-fairy—that, on the contrary, it can be scientifically proven to be practical and effective—if people will give it a fair trial. We must simply give it a try, just like our practitioner, who had to admit that once he did the visualization, it felt kind of nice.

### **Awareness and Sensitivity**

- Aware of my insensitivity, I realize that I need to show more appreciation for my family...

Perhaps for many people who have done work on themselves in the area of interpersonal relationships, this remark does not seem extraordinary. Nevertheless, in the context of practicing when-which-how, it signals an important moment because this individual is experiencing an increased awareness and sensitivity involving when to apply the virtues and which virtues to apply. Prior to this moment, he has been unconscious of any negative actions or feelings directed toward the family.

This is an example of the effects of opening the meditative heart-mind system to the virtues by practicing the Virtuous Cycle Technique each day. Eventually an awareness of the lack of a virtue (in this case, appreciation) bubbles to the surface of consciousness amid the activities of daily life. This is a sign of increasing sensitivity because the detection of the absence of a virtue can only occur if there is the awareness of that virtue already. Meditating on these virtues imprints these virtues on our heart-mind system. As a result, we become

sensitive to their absence in the environment. This triggers our memories and we realize that the “when-which-how moment” has arrived.

### **Observation**

- The arguing kids are too much to deal with now and I don’t know what to do about the irritation I feel because of the wet newspaper. All I can do right now is observe this irritation and feel it in my gut.

Part of this entry pertains to the pain of the moment. This is discussed in the next entry, but here we will focus on observation. This ability was discussed in the last section and I have brought it up once again because of its significance. This individual is developing the power to observe his environment. On the surface, this may appear to be insignificant, but in a practice such as emotional self-mastery, the ability to observe one’s own actions and reactions is paramount to effective practice.

We must develop the capacity to be present in the moment as often as we can. We must learn to be present to our own thoughts, feelings, and actions. This sense of presence gives us the power to manage these three areas of our lives with more efficiency. When we think, feel, or act unconsciously we are little more than robots performing our programmed functions throughout the day.

You are the entity using the human instrument of thought, feeling, and activity. Without your conscious presence, the instrument—through the conditioning of the social order—carries out its duties with almost no input



from you, the supposed manager of the instrument. So there is no way to practice when-which-how unless YOU are present, consciously aware, and able to direct, manage, and observe the results of your self-initiated expressions of the heart virtues. So, the statement: “All I can do right now is observe this irritation and feel it in my gut,” is not such a futile activity as it first appears. If our practitioner was unable to observe the presence of irritation, how could he even begin to remedy this lack of emotional self-control?

This does, however, bring up another more subtle issue. This is the initial difficulty of increased sensitivity without the ability to be present and observe it. Through our work with the virtues, our individual energetic bodies (human instrument) are being imprinted with more intense energetics. Therefore, we need to try our best to observe this increased sensitivity of our individual energetic fields to these incoming forces.

A simple analogy might be that of parents with a newborn baby. While the baby is still an infant it requires care and an increased sensitivity on our part. The infant can be placed in a playpen or crib and it will be relatively secure and will require less observation than a two year old. The two year old is walking and climbing. It requires not only sensitivity, but a greatly increased amount of observation on the parents’ part. A more sophisticated, mobile, and curious child requires increased observation so that we can manage the child’s higher, more intense energies. The parents’ conscious presence becomes of prime importance.

The same holds true for our practice. Our responsibilities increase as the power of our energetics

increase. We must be consciously present to observe and manage their use.

## **The Pain of the Moment**

7:30 AM. Morning Traffic Jam

- I realize that it isn't easy to activate the virtues when negative emotions have gotten into my system and are running riot. It takes a while for me to allow these negative emotions to subside before I can focus on bringing forth the feelings of humility and understanding.

Honestly speaking, it's easy to send someone compassion or forgiveness when we are in a secure and comfortable mood. When our emotions are calm and we are in a state of well-being, it's not too difficult to practice when-which-how. In fact, this is the whole point of emotional self-mastery—to create an individual human energetic field (IHEF) that is firmly rooted in the energetics of the soul—the solid platform of the energetic heart. This firm foundation brings us emotional control, strength, and serenity in the midst of chaos, which gives us the opportunity to serve others (and ourselves) in distress.

Have you had the chance to practice when-which-how in the midst of your own emotional turmoil? Try recalling your state of mind and emotion at the instant of sharp dispute or stubbing your toe. What emotion were you feeling? Love and peace, or anger and pain? If someone had asked you at the moment you stubbed your toe, what is  $96 + 47$ , what would your answer have been? You probably see my point.

When we are in the midst of a personally emotional situation, it is highly likely that we will not be able to initiate the when-which-how practice in a timely way. In such situations, we are probably in much pain, and as our previous examples showed, when we are in any kind of pain it is difficult, if not impossible, to think and feel clearly.

Here is a personal example that will probably appear insignificant to most people, but the wonderful practicality of when-which-how is that we can even use it for the most seemingly trivial incidents of our lives. Let's remember, though, that this practice is not about the events or contents themselves, but about how we react to them. With this in mind, here is my example. When I first began to practice when-which-how, I was watching a baseball game. My favorite player was at bat and he was hit in the hand with the baseball, by the opposing team's pitcher. It turned out that the batter's hand was broken. He was the best hitter on the team and he was disabled for a month with a broken bone in his hand.

I was angry and frustrated, yet immediately remembered when-which-how. I thought to myself, "This is the time to engage the practice." Do you know that I was so upset and irritated that I could not begin the process? In fact, believe it or not, I was having a difficult time recalling the names of the six virtues! I was doubly shocked. Not only couldn't I think straight, but I couldn't feel straight either. I was trapped in an emotional whirlpool of pain and frustration and had no hope of engaging the heart virtues.

On an intellectual level, I knew the pitcher had not injured the batter on purpose, but yet I couldn't express

understanding, compassion, or forgiveness into the situation. This, I believe, is an example of how the pain of the moment affects our ability to practice when-which-how.

In our example here, our practitioner has sensed his lack of appreciation for his family, but he is soon overwhelmed by his irritation with the wet newspaper and the larger issue of his arguing children. He is in too much emotional pain and turmoil to engage the practice. The ability to overcome this impediment comes with experience in the practice. At the beginning stages, if you are overwhelmed with a situation, don't blame yourself for your inability to express the virtues. Be patient and wait for your emotions to subside and later, when you have some time to spare, do the work of sending what you feel to be the appropriate virtues. Remember that the energetic heart and higher self operate in a non-spacetime, non-local manner. This means that you can perform your service later (in time) if you are unable to engage the practice when the situation is occurring.

## **The Ups and Downs of Practice**

8:30 AM. At Work

### **Blame**

- I get to work just in time for my project meeting and I immediately find out that something has gone wrong with the project. I know it's not my fault, but is obviously the fault of some idiot in another department.

This initial reaction is obviously a low point and is a normal reaction under the circumstances. It's normal to be defensive in a situation like this one and many of us usually look to shift the blame for mistakes to others rather than ourselves. Nevertheless, practicing when-which-how demands that we have the valor to face situations with honesty and this especially pertains to our own attitudes and behaviors. Although this is a low point, he soon recovers from this reaction.

### **Rapid Re-alignment**

- Observing the thoughts and feelings that come into my mind, I cannot avoid the fact that I have just condemned someone for making an error even though I have no evidence to back it up. My heart tells me that this is not the right attitude.

Still able to observe his thoughts and feelings, our fellow practitioner has unconsciously drawn from the energy of valor to admit to himself that he is condemning some unknown individual for a major mistake on this important company project. This is obviously a high point. He comes to terms with his selfish reaction and desires to send an apology to this other person. He does this by sending the virtue of forgiveness to the unknown individual he has falsely accused for the foul-up. In this case, he is not only forgiving the other individual, but asking this individual's forgiveness for his unfair judgment. This is an instance of how a virtue is used. This is an example of releasing oneself and others from a negative and energy draining thought pattern.

Just as important, this is a good example of how rapidly we can recover from a negative emotional state when we align with the energetics of the heart virtues. Our ability to quickly regain our positive emotional state becomes stronger the more consistently we practice when-which-how.

### **Renewed Energy**

- A couple of months ago, I would have been irritated at least all day over an incident like this one. Comparing that feeling of irritation with this new feeling of forgiveness is like a breath of fresh air. Instead of feeling locked into an irritable and uncomfortable emotional state, by contrast, I feel liberated, able to let go of this emotional discomfort. Ordinarily, I would have been drained of energy all day, but now I feel energized and somehow more empowered.

Now that he has been able to forgive, he is suddenly aware of how energized he feels. This is one reward of working from the heart—we have the strength to break free from the burdens of guilt and shame associated with our inability to face our internal shortcomings. To paraphrase a description from Lyricus, surrendering these iron weights of the ego to the gold of the heart is the beginning of liberation and a sense of renewed energy.

### **Crisis**

10:30 AM.

- My boss calls me into her office to inform me that it wasn't an idiot from another department who screwed up, but it was, in fact, me. I am the idiot who screwed up. I am suddenly in a state of shock!

Our practitioner has just come off a high point in his practice and now, out of nowhere, he is hit with this shocking news. I am not championing the experience of shock in our lives, but the rapid appearance of unexpected news is a real opportunity to move forward in emotional self-mastery. A life crisis is almost always accompanied by pain at some level. Life is filled with turning points that are like forks in the road of living. They represent signposts by which we can change the direction of our lives. Sometimes we make these decisions on our own and sometimes they are made for us through some unexpected news. In any case, they are unavoidable. In our example here, a crisis has broken out in this practitioner's life and in the first instance, he did not have the practice of when-which-how to fall back on. In the second instance he does. Spiritual crises are often difficult and painful experiences, but they are invaluable lessons in psychological and spiritual development if we take advantage of them. Change is going to happen to all of us anyway, so why not prepare ahead of time. If that change does contain pain, we can lessen it considerably through practicing emotional self-mastery. More importantly, we will learn something new about ourselves and the world, thus giving us valuable knowledge to apply the next time a crisis emerges in our lives.

## **Increased Light**

- Here I am, sending forgiveness to someone who made this huge mistake and all along it was me. I was nice enough to take the time to send forgiveness to somebody and they didn't even need it! I AM an idiot. Not only that, I am a conceited, egotistical idiot, for I automatically assumed that because I am such a superior person the mistake could not possibly have been mine.

Our friend is really beating himself up over this mess. Not only is he in shock, but he is ashamed of himself for being so egotistical. Even though this self-flagellation appears to be a down situation, it is actually an up situation because our practitioner is experiencing his ego-personality in the light of his own soul. This light is powerful and once activated in the consciousness shines brightly on the "good and bad" of our egoic self. Without this feedback, how are we to practice when-which-how? Pain in the physical body is a necessary and self-protecting feedback system for alerting us to health problems. The same holds true for emotional pain. As long as we don't feel the mental and emotional pain we cause ourselves and others, we have no ability to improve our relationships or harmonize the inner chaos and turmoil we live with everyday.

The energetic heart is the open window through which the blazing light of the soul shines into our consciousness. If we have the valor to examine the contents of our consciousness that are revealed in this higher light, we will make rapid progress in our journey. We simply have to take the time to look.



## **Reflection and Review**

12:00 Noon

- Sitting in my office at lunchtime, I reflect on the morning's events. I have recovered enough from my emotional reactions to look at the attitudes and behaviors I expressed as a result of this crisis.

Although not explicit, our practitioner is communing with his higher self through the energetic heart. He is turning within and examining the day's events through the clear lens of the soul, instead of the ego-personality (which always must create excuses for defending its temporal existence). The mind is playing an important role, now that it is free from the influence of ego's defense mechanisms. Working within the unbiased light of love, the mind is able to use its power of reason to clearly judge and decide the best course of action. From this, the mind and heart can formulate a plan. This plan consists of using when-which-how to bring healing, harmony, and order to the situation.

These reflection and review periods might be thought of as counseling sessions with the higher self that take place in the hallowed chambers of the heart. In many ways, this is similar to that place in consciousness described as the chamber of self.

## **Acceptance**

- Okay, enough wallowing in what has already been done. All I can do now is realign to my energetic heart. Immediately, I close my eyes and visualize myself as a point of divine love surrounded by the six virtues.

After replaying the events, he decides that he has spent enough time on self-pity. Often times we cannot help feeling sorry for ourselves and marveling over the apparent fact that everything always seems to happen to us. It's almost an instinctual reaction, like when something gets too close to your eye and it blinks. Or when the doctor tests your reflexes by tapping your knee. Our sense of victimization is so ingrained in our energy fields that we have trouble consciously intervening and powering down these reactions. Don't worry about it. If you find yourself in self-pity, wallowing in your misfortune, accept it for what it is, but move on. Acknowledge it without conditions or excuses and get back to the work of realigning with the heart, so that the higher energetics can start to flow through your energy fields once again. Naturally, all crises are not created equal and therefore, each one will subside in its own timeframe. Nevertheless, initiating the grid meditation—visualizing yourself as the center of divine love, with the six heart virtues surrounding you—will eventually restore your alignment and open your connection to the network of spiritual energetics.

### **Alignment and Insight**

- The simple act of performing this exercise, allowing the energies of these virtues to flow through my being, somehow renews my spirit.
- This crisis is turning into a breakthrough. I now see that my heart has led me to the soul itself. I feel uplifted

and shifted in consciousness to a state of serenity and unity.

When we seek alignment with the energetic heart, we are also aligning with our higher self. The more we make the effort to align ourselves with the spiritual aspect of life (instead of the material, form side only), the more insights we will receive. If we have the will to persist in practicing when-which-how, we discover that our lives and our practice merge into one expression of living. This comes later on, but it does no harm to mention the goal of our work.

First we live the life of unity—unity with the world of material living. We are practicing the social order. Next we discover a spiritual teaching that resonates with us. As we engage the new practice, we begin to live a dual life. One is the ordinary life of material living and the other is the life of spiritual living, such as learning to live from the heart. This marks the dual stage. Eventually, this stage is superseded by the integration and fusion of the material and spiritual pathways. Your two life expressions become indistinguishable as they combine to form one life expressing emotional self-mastery. These uplifting moments, often born of crisis, foreshadow that future day when the two become one.

### **Empowerment**

1:00 PM.

- Feeling confident about this heartfelt experience, I do something that I never would have dreamt of before today.

I go to my boss's office and ask to talk to her. I apologize for my emotional outburst and the mistake I made on the project. I am especially sorry for blaming someone else for it before the evidence showed the true source of the error. I think to myself how great it feels to admit my true position in all this—to not have to defend a false position. The virtue of humility has lifted this burden from my shoulders.

Here we see that our practitioner has found the courage to be honest with his boss. He expresses humility through his apology and regret for acting so egotistically. This humble and honest admission is powered by valor. In this case, even though he has brought the virtue of humility into his life experience he has not expressed it openly. Valor is the energetic power source for driving the virtues into expression. Expression can happen two ways, internally to ourselves and externally in our relationships to family, friends, and co-workers.

Of all the virtues, humility is probably the one that is most repugnant to the ego-personality because the ego must feel itself to be in a superior position in relation to others. Interestingly, of all the virtues, humility has this negative connotation attached to it and its cognates. For the ego, to be humble is humiliating. This virtue is interesting in this sense and warrants deeper thought for those who want to investigate it further.

## **Freedom to Be Honest**

- I then find the courage to tell my manager that I really can't stay overtime today to correct the problem because my son is playing in a soccer match after school.

Due to his new sense of freedom from the heavy ego mask, he feels comfortable with being himself, without all the defensive walls in place. It actually feels good to be upfront and not feel the need to make false excuses for himself.

## **Energetic Transfers**

- For the first time since I have worked for her, she is sharing information about her personal life. She relates that her daughter also plays soccer and that she always tries to attend her daughter's games.

As a result of this practitioner's efforts to practice when-which-how, he has affected his relationship with his manager in a positive manner. His valor and humility have freed him from his ego's defense mechanisms and allowed him to be honest about his son's soccer game.

It appears that his manager may have been affected by the radiatory effects of this practitioner's earlier distribution of the six heart virtues into the energy fields of his co-workers.

## **Remembering To Practice**

- I make a quick mental note to remember to do this more often because, up until today, I have only remembered to apply the technique once in a while. If I can discipline myself to be more aware of my interactions, I can increase my opportunities to apply the virtues to the small difficulties of life and prevent them from growing into major problems, like the crisis today.

As he reviews the day, our practitioner marvels at the difference in the outcomes of these events, compared to his previous defensive lifestyle. Despite all the problems he encountered today, he learned much from them and had the power to work through them with much less emotional turmoil. His energies weren't drained and he feels "right" with himself. Not self-righteous, but aligned with a more genuine center of being than his ego-personality. He is now heart-centered and receiving the spiritual energy and guidance of the higher self in the form of the six heart virtues.

Realizing all this, he resolves to remember to apply the when-which-how technique more often. Remembering to practice is obviously vital to living from the heart. The problem is that we are so habituated to our emotional reactions that they have already occurred before we notice them—if we notice them at all. At least noticing these reactions is a good start.

So, we have come full circle in knowing when to initiate the practice.

- First we have to be present in the moment, aware of what is happening around us.

- Second, when we are present in the moment, we can observe our internal state and the external activities around us.

- Third, our awareness and observation allow us to detect the absence or deficiency of the virtues. Clues to this can often be found in the presence of their opposites.

- Fourth, we must then remember to apply the virtues to the situation. Thus, remembering to practice is a composite of awareness, observation, and sensitivity to an encounter.

We forget to engage the technique when we lose our self-awareness and become identified with the unfolding situation. It's like being sleepy and telling yourself that you must remain awake. Several seconds, minutes, or even hours later you realize that you fell asleep and never knew it. Our entire life we have been asleep in relation to our higher self. Our encounter with Living from the Heart is like an alarm clock waking us up to our real world. Our difficulty stems from our sleep habit. We wake up for a second or two, but fall asleep without even knowing it has happened.

The crisis experienced by our practitioner is analogous to a family member shaking us out of our dreams and urging us to wake up because we are going to miss an important appointment. In order to improve our practice of when-which-how we must discover how to maintain wakefulness in our daily encounters. Experiment to find the best way for yourself. No matter what technique you use, the more you interrupt the ego's sleep habit, the less influence it will exert in your day-to-day encounters.

## **Neutrality**

5:30 PM. The Soccer Game

- Halfway through the game, my son's team is losing and no one is happy. Meanwhile, I'm thinking about this whole concept of competitive sports and how it fits in with emotional self-mastery. Should I be sending the heart virtues to anyone right now? What if I send valor to my son's team, but not the opposing team? How can a person send courage to one team and withhold it from another? Where is the compassion in that? I decide that I should be neutral in terms of the current soccer game.... So, I decide to send both teams valor.

Although this soccer game is not a critical issue, it brings up some deeper issues such as, personal attachments, vested interests, conflicts of interest, and prejudice, to name a few.

Our practitioner is faced with a dilemma—should he send valor to his son's team, so they have the strength to win the game? Ordinarily, this is not a problem. We see this every day in sports all over the world. There is nothing inherently wrong about wanting our team to win a game, but how can we send heart virtues to one team and not the other? If everyone is playing by the same rules, either team has the right to winning. Excuse the pun, but there has to be a level playing field when working with the virtues of the heart. In fact, we have to raise the level of the playing field while keeping it level. In the case of this soccer game, sending valor to both teams appears to be the right choice. Either send it to no one or send it to everyone, but don't choose sides.



This example is a form of neutrality in the practice of when-which-how. When we recognize when to send the virtues, we cannot withhold the energy transfer because we judge the recipient to be unworthy. If this happens it means that we have slipped back into the sleep of the ego-personality and we are judging the situation, person, or group in terms of the duality of good and evil. The bottom line is that in our encounters with our fellow human beings it is best to be neutral in our distribution of the virtues.

### **Experience Comes with Practice**

8:00 PM. Dinner

- We are finally eating dinner and my wife is telling me about the chores that must get done this weekend. I am nodding in agreement, but I haven't heard a word because I am thinking about how I am going to straighten out the mess at work. I then realize to my dismay that I haven't been present. My mind has drifted off and I am not giving my wife the attention she deserves (that anyone deserves).

We have already discussed the importance of being present in the moment and of being aware of our surroundings and the people in our lives. The point of mentioning it here is not only to reiterate its importance, but to use this as an example of how quickly our practitioner is remembering to engage the practice. He quickly wakes up to the fact that he hasn't been present and therefore has not given his wife the attention she deserves.

This is an example of the cumulative effect of performing when-which-how as often as possible. The more we practice it, the more experience we gain, and this experience adds to our skill and ability to build in the habit of living from the heart instead of from the ego-personality. Below are more examples of the snowballing momentum that we can build into our lives through practicing when-which-how. All of these realizations are born from the virtues of the heart.

- I apologize for not paying attention to our discussion.
- Through valor, I am able to honestly express my situation at work and explain the reasons for my callous and thankless behavior of late.
- I express to her how appreciative I am of her efforts to support the family in so many ways.
- I express my understanding for how she must have felt during this stage of our relationship.
- Turning within, I put myself in her position and can feel compassion welling up in me, and I send it to her.
- Meanwhile, another argument has broken out between the two kids in the next room and instead of screaming at them to shut-up and go to bed, I inform them that my wife and I will help resolve their argument in the morning.
- As the music is playing I picture the six virtues energy grid surrounding me and enveloping most of the rooms in our home. A new atmosphere of harmony descends upon our family...at least for awhile.

## **Maintaining Perspective**

10 PM. Bedtime

- As I drift to sleep, I am aware that my efforts to apply the heart virtues are turning out very well. I have a lot to learn about how to use them more skillfully, but I am pleasantly surprised at how effectively they work, even for a novice like myself.

There is much to learn, but we grow into this work. As long as we maintain our perspective, our practice will unfold according to the intelligence of our heart. Through the virtue of humility we don't overestimate ourselves nor underestimate ourselves. We recognize ourselves for where we are in the practice. In this case, our practitioner knows that he is a novice and he is comfortable with knowing where he is because his intuition tells him that he is headed in the right direction.

## **Summation**

You may already have noticed that much of this work has to do with honestly facing ourselves and admitting that we too often ignore the problem areas of our emotional lives, or that we become insensitive to these areas due to our denial of their existence. A large part of the when-which-how practice is opening ourselves to these shadow areas of our ego-personalities. Therefore, a great deal of this work is speaking truth to the power of our own egos.

Our practitioner has admitted to himself that he has been insensitive to the needs of his family. He has acknowledged that his ego has gotten in the way of his

attitudes to his co-workers. He recognizes that many of the difficulties he faces are self-created.

His relatively brief experiment with the practice of when-which-how has yielded positive results. He can feel them and experience the difference in the quality of his life. His decision to align with the heart virtues has helped him make objective observations of his life and relationships. Living from the heart has increased his sensitivity to his inner and outer life, and the virtue of valor has played an important part in this unfolding process.

## SCENARIO EXAMPLES OF WHEN-WHICH-HOW

The following scenarios provide examples of people from various walks of life who discovered the when-which-how technique, made a decision to practice it, and improved the quality of their lives, as well as the lives of those around them.

### *Nurse at a Hospital.*

A nurse at a busy hospital is under continuous stress from the overload of patients and the overtime hours required to meet the demand. Before discovering the when-which-how technique, the pressure of her job had been affecting her health and her family life. In fact, her husband had developed cancer and was undergoing chemotherapy and yet she did not have the time to devote to his care because of her responsibilities at work. She couldn't take a leave of absence or quit her job because they needed the income. Consequently, she was even more resentful toward her patients because it seemed to her that she was giving more care to her patients than to her own husband.

Now, having discovered when-which-how and practicing the technique for a few months, she feels somewhat better at every level of her life. She has more energy, she is more alert and efficient, and most importantly, her emotional life is less chaotic and anxiety-filled. Now her emotional state is positive, stable, and manageable. Her new-found positive emotional stability

has spread to her co-workers, for they are less irritable. She wonders if this is because her emotional attitude and behavior are reducing the stress and irritation in her co-workers' energy fields.

Prior to her work with emotional self-mastery, she had become irritable toward her patients, often treating them as objects rather than as people. Because her negative emotions were so entrenched, it took some effort for her to align with the energetic heart. The line of least resistance for her was through the virtue of compassion.

At first she felt ashamed of herself for becoming so callous and cold toward her patients, but the virtue of understanding allowed her to see that she really was a good person, but due to a combination of complacency and stress she had simply lost her way. Through her work with the heart virtues she has restored her balance, aligned with the energetic heart and can now apply when-which-how to her patients, co-workers, and family.

*Small Family Farms Threatened by Large Corporation.*

A man who is a third generation farmer is worried about the recent takeover of family farms in his region. A large, international food corporation is buying all the farms around him and he doesn't understand what is happening to his world.

He turns to the six heart virtues for guidance, and it is the virtue of understanding that brings some light to his mind. He begins to read about world affairs and economics, topics that have never interested him. As he takes a deeper interest in these matters, he begins to see the larger picture. Although he does not agree with what is

occurring to him or his farming neighbors, at least he comprehends the reasons for these upsetting changes.

Somehow, he finds it within himself to send forgiveness to the executives of this large consortium, for he realizes that they are under pressure from stockholders to increase the value of the corporation's stock. It is all so complicated and there does not seem to be any one individual person to blame for this terrible situation.

As a result of the insights granted by understanding and the freedom given by forgiveness, he feels compassion for himself and everyone involved in this problem. He sends compassion to everyone. This may not have solved the problem, but at least he no longer feels angry, bitter, and hopeless. He can now think clearly because he is more positive and understands the challenge. He now applies valor to facing the situation knowing he has the energetic heart virtues to light his way forward.

#### *Autistic Child.*

A couple has two children, one of whom is autistic. During a family birthday celebration the autistic child suddenly loses control due to all the stimulation. The mother immediately seeks to calm the child by holding him and externally expressing compassion and understanding in calm, soothing words. At the same time, the father visualizes the virtues grid expanding outward into the room, encompassing all the guests.

The mother's loving response to her child is the same as it has always been, except for the addition of the when-which-how practice. Ever since she and her husband began working with emotional self-mastery, they have noticed a

vast improvement in their emotional responses to everyday situations, especially in regard to their autistic child.

Now that they are working from the heart, they have more strength and energy to deal with their child. They are confident in the power of love because they have observed the calming effects on their son (as well as their daughter) through their work with the heart virtues.

*Businessman Coping with Unhappy Employees.*

The owner of a small business is negotiating with his employees for an increase in wages and better working conditions.

In the past, he would have eliminated the employees who initiated this “trouble,” and mollified the rest with an inconsequential increase in pay, explaining that this was better than losing one’s job.

After discovering the practice of when-which-how, he now has a different outlook on these matters. Although he must keep costs down to stay competitive, he now realizes that he has been too stingy toward his employees. Managing the costs of doing business is only one aspect of running an efficient enterprise. The other aspect involves the experience and skills of the workers who produce the goods and services he offers. Without these he could not compete in the marketplace at all.

When he first began practicing when-which-how he found himself focused on appreciation. The virtue of appreciation came to his attention immediately. As he worked with this virtue, he realized that much of the trouble he had with his business involved his lack of



appreciation for his employees. As he examined this attitude more closely, he realized that he had taken his employees and their skills for granted. He had not appreciated their value to his enterprise. When he braided appreciation with understanding, he came to realize the importance of his employees. This allowed him to adjust his relationship with them through humility. As he internally outflowed these three virtues to his employees and learned to work with the other virtues, as well, he eventually instituted the when-which-how practice on the job and taught it himself.

Now, whenever the time comes for hearing grievances or negotiating wages and benefits, humility allows each party to respect one another's position and status within the company. Understanding allows them to grasp one another's interests and concerns. And appreciation allows them to value each other as members of one team competing in the marketplace.

### *Racial Prejudice.*

A black man is walking to his car and notices a white couple staring at him. He senses that they are afraid of him because of his race. Ordinarily, he would be feeling anger, resentment or disappointment by their negative reaction to him, thereby contributing his own negative emotions to the situation (and to the CHEF). Now, however, he focuses on his energetic heart and sends them understanding, compassion, and forgiveness. By doing this, he eliminates any negative emotions he might produce and, simultaneously, sends positive emotions to the couple.

Although he cannot single-handedly change everyone's attitudes, he knows that practicing the six heart virtues has changed his attitudes and behaviors toward others. It just seems sensible, that by reducing his own negative emotions, he generates a presence that is essentially positive and non-threatening to others.

Through the virtue of understanding and compassion, he grasps the wider picture, the sad history of human prejudice throughout the ages. He even recognizes that, as a human being, he too has practiced prejudice. At least now, through the practice of when-which-how, he has greatly reduced his negative contributions to the CHEF.

### *Woman Commuting Home.*

After an exhausting day at work, a woman finds herself sitting close to four teenagers on her commuter train. These young people are noisy and are all talking at once. To add further chaos to the encounter, at least one of them is also playing a video game because she can hear the weird noises it is producing.

She has children of her own and realizes that these teens are simply enjoying each others' company, albeit in a rather boisterous and irritating manner. So, she realizes that this is the perfect time to apply her newly discovered technique of practicing the heart virtues. But how should she approach this situation?

She decides to use valor, so she turns to them and politely asks them to talk a little more quietly. While she is making this request, she is also sending them understanding and appreciation. She feels appreciation is needed because she wants them to feel her respect for

them as young people. She wants them to feel her understanding and appreciation of their youthful spirit and abundant energy—their enthusiasm for life.

These feelings resonate with the teenagers. They sense her respect for them and they express their apologies and try to tone down their conversation.

### *Financial Stress*

A young, single mother is running late picking up her daughter at daycare. She can hardly afford to pay for daycare, but she has to work in order to pay her rent and keep food on the table. If she does not get to the daycare center in the next ten minutes, she is going to be charged an additional \$20.00, an amount her tight budget cannot cover.

Suddenly, an elderly man pulls out in front of her car and is driving far below the speed limit. She is very frustrated and angry, asking the universe why this has to happen to her. Doesn't she have enough problems already? Then she remembers that she is supposed to be practicing emotional self-mastery. And, to be honest, at this moment she really doesn't want to.

Nonetheless, somehow she manages to calm down enough to realign with her heart. She visualizes herself as divine love with the six heart virtues radiating outward in a field around her. She sends forgiveness to the elderly man in front of her, for understanding has shown her that this man may be financially strained like herself. He may be on a fixed income. He may not see too well, but still must get to the store to buy his groceries. He is probably driving

slowly to avoid causing an accident. Should he be forced to give up driving?

Suddenly, she feels enormous compassion for this person, after all he could be her own father. How would she feel if someone was cursing at her father or mother because they were driving too slowly? At this point, the virtue of humility entered her energy field and she accepted her situation as just part of the overall circumstances of living in this twenty-first century. She thought to herself, “We’ve all got problems; we’re all in this mess together so why add to the negativity of humanity, when I have an opportunity to send out positive emotional energy.” Just then, the elderly driver turned right and she was free to get to the daycare center in time. She then thought, “It’s amazing how much you can learn in two minutes.”

### *Difficult Decision.*

A middle-aged couple is faced with a difficult decision. The husband’s father has been diagnosed with Alzheimer’s disease and he and his wife must decide whether to care for him in their home or to put him in a nursing home. They are torn emotionally because although they have a spare bedroom, they also have two teenaged children and they worry about the impact this will have on them.

They seek the opinions and the advice of medical professionals, social workers, and family members, but in the end it is really their decision to make. Ultimately, through their practice of when-which-how, they seek the advice of the energetic heart. Even going to this profound source of wisdom, there does not seem to be a correct

answer or perfect solution to the dilemma. In addition, their father does not want to be a burden on the family, but at this stage, he is not capable of making an objective decision.

Eventually, the couple decides to try their best to keep their father at home with them for as long as they can. It is agreed that if the situation becomes too difficult for them and their children, they will place him in a nursing home. The virtue of valor gave them the courage to proceed in this direction. This decision feels right to them because they have balanced compassion with understanding. They realize that it will take much compassion and understanding for the entire family to work through this crisis. Therefore, the couple agrees to work hard at integrating emotional self-mastery, meditation, and practicing when-which-how into their lives.

#### *Natural Disaster.*

People living in a village in Pakistan live in constant fear of another devastating earthquake. Their lives are continuously overshadowed by the memories of the earthquake that destroyed the few possessions they had, not to mention the loss of their small school and medical clinic. Their days are dark and hopeless.

In the meantime, several thousand individuals scattered throughout the world, but connected to the internet are beginning a group meditation at Event Temples. They have gathered in cyberspace at the same time in order to transmit the energies of the heart to all the people in that region of Pakistan where this earthquake took place.

The quantum community of when-which-how practitioners targets, focuses, directs, and transfers the virtues of the heart to this specific region in an effort to lift the emotional pall hanging in the subjective atmosphere of these people. This projection and injection of the light of love lifts the spirits of these people and gives them the needed strength to rebuild their lives.

The next day, in that small Pakistani village, the people feel a little better. Many of the people feel a new hope and regain confidence and enthusiasm for rebuilding their lives. Within a week comes word that the UN is sending them additional building supplies to aid them in their recovery.

## THE HOW STAGE OF PRACTICE

“Let my heart be wise. It is the gods’ best gift.”  
Euripides

In Section 3, we learned much about the virtues. We saw what a typical day was like for an individual who did not practice when-which-how. Then we repeated that typical day and saw that there was a dramatic difference when the practice of when-which-how was applied to the same situations and encounters.

It was obvious when our practitioner applied the practice and which virtues he applied, but maybe it was not so obvious how he applied them. In this section, we will examine the how stage more closely. This phase of the practice is more open-ended than the other two.

It is clear that we need to maintain our attention and stay aware from moment-to-moment during our daily encounters. With our awareness focused in the present, we increase our sensitivity to our internal thoughts and feelings as well as to the external attitudes and behaviors of those we encounter. At the same time, because we are aware and sensitive, we can observe our internal state and the external situation we happen to be experiencing. As we get into the habit of maintaining this state of being, life becomes much more immediate, rich, and full. This developed state of being is a potent platform from which to practice when-which-how.

At this point we are ready to choose one or more virtues to apply to the situation we are experiencing. Taking an instance from the example of the typical day, after lunch

our practitioner goes to his manager's office with the intention of apologizing for his negative attitude and behavior earlier in the day. He also finds the courage to tell her that he really needs to leave on time because his son is playing soccer after school. He recognized when to apply the virtues and he chose which virtues to apply to the situation, namely, valor and humility. But how did he apply them?

### **Aspects of the How Stage**

Perhaps, the most obvious element of this how phase is that he applied those two virtues externally, by having a talk with his boss. First, he was valorous enough to go to her office and second, he was humble enough to admit his shortcomings. By simply being truthful, he used valor again, to confront the issue of staying late for work. In the past, out of fear of disapproval, he would have made up a phony excuse to get out of the situation, but by learning to stay aligned with the heart, he felt more confident about being forthright.

Another aspect of the how phase is that he applied these virtues to himself. A third factor in the how phase is the order or sequence in which the virtues are applied. Which virtues we apply is one phase, but the how phase can also include the sequence in which we apply them.

The following list includes the most obvious ways of how the virtues can be applied to an encounter.

1. To the sequence of transfer. This is the order in which we transmit the virtues we have chosen. For example, if



we feel we should work with humility, understanding, and compassion we use our intuitive insight to determine the sequence of transfer. Is the sequence  $H>U>C$ , or  $H>C>U$ , or  $U>H>C$  or  $U>C>H$ , or  $C>U>H$ , or  $C>H>U$ ? This looks much more complex than it is. As we learn to work with the intelligence of the heart, these details will unfold naturally with our increasing sensitivity, experience, and intuition.

2. To oneself externally. This means that we express the virtues into our physical lives through some activity. The activity, in turn, reinforces that virtue and braids others into it. For instance, we take a walk in the local park and express our appreciation to nature. The natural setting reinforces our appreciation and evokes a feeling of humility. This experience triggers a desire to return home and listen to Beethoven's Pastoral Symphony.

3. To oneself subjectively or internally. In this instance, we transfer particular virtues to ourselves for the particular situation in which we are involved.

4. To others externally at our physical location. We speak to others in our presence and express the particular virtues we feel are needed.

5. To others internally at our physical location. We subjectively send the virtues we believe will serve those present.

6. To others internally at a distance. We subjectively send virtues to a person or group in another part of the world.

7. To others subjectively no longer in physical life. In this case we send virtues to loved ones who have left the physical world, but who we believe are living in the next world, however you may define it.

8. To the past. We internally send virtues to encounters we have experienced or to situations that still require harmonizing.

9. To the future. We internally send virtues to encounters we may have or to situations that may develop.

10. To the activation of the Six Heart Virtues Grid Meditation in any encounter or situation—external, internal, self-targeted, other-targeted, past, present, or future.

The issue of transferring virtue energetics into the past and future may seem odd from the standpoint of our existence in the spacetime dimension. Nevertheless, if the higher self is beyond spacetime, then it is possible that our current alignment to the higher self, via the heart, allows us to send the heart virtues into the past and the future.

Another consideration is the dimension of an encounter. Is it focused at the physical, emotional, mental, or spiritual? It could be any combination of these. How we respond to an encounter may depend on how we have experienced it ourselves. I have included these dimensional perspectives in the examples that follow. It should be noted that these dimensional perspectives are themselves dependent upon the subjective experiences of each practitioner. Consequently, my particular choices cannot be definitive and are not meant to be.

Here are a few examples of the points listed above.

- Attending a public meeting, you work internally (5) by expressing understanding and appreciation into the meeting room. Because this is the first meeting you have attended, you don't feel comfortable expressing these virtues at the physical level.

- Touring a World War II battlefield, you work subjectively with those killed (7) in a past war by expressing appreciation, compassion, and forgiveness into the battlefield. You feel this emotionally. You happen to notice two war veterans nearby and you physically express your appreciation for their sacrifice.

- During a prayer or meditation meeting, you visualize the future world's people living in harmony (9) while subjectively transmitting the six heart virtues into the CHEF. This is expressed in a combination of spiritual, mental, and emotional dimensions. Afterwards, you mingle with your friends and physically express various virtues through your discussions and comments.

- Attending a university graduation, you practice number 10 in the present and also apply number 5 by expressing valor, understanding, appreciation, and humility. You then express the same virtues through the application of number 9. These transfers encompass the spiritual and emotional dimensions.

- Watching the news, you see a report about a particular group of people suffering the ravages of war. You apply number 6 by expressing compassion. This encounter is physically based, but your application is at the emotional dimension.

- Worrying about your sick child, you practice number 3 by expressing valor and understanding and numbers 4 and 5 by expressing compassion, understanding, and valor. This encounter includes the physical and emotional dimensions.

- Deciding to register for swimming lessons, despite your lifelong fear of water, you practice 2 by expressing valor. This is an expression at the mental and physical dimensions.

### *Recording When-Which-How Encounters*

Using this list as a guide, you should be able to identify real life examples by closely observing your daily activities and encounters. In order to help identify the various aspects of when-which-how I have created a table (see the following page) in which these elements can be recorded. I have assembled the when-which-how encounters related to A New Day in the Life of scenario and entered them in this table. A blank table form similar to this example might prove valuable for recording your daily encounters and a blank table form is provided at the end of this guide. This is a form of tracking that is somewhat different than the tracking offered at Event Temples. They are similar in the sense that their purpose is to help you gain an organized overview of when, which, and how you apply the six virtues.

Following the table is a recording chart that places the various encounters of the day into their respective categories. It provides a visual overview of the daily practice of when-which-how and, in this respect, it has an advantage over the table format. This recording chart is

also filled in with the encounters that are listed in the recording table. Each block is filled in according to whether the encounter was applied internally, externally, to oneself, or to others.

Each cell contains:

- the time (Not that all encounters are assumed to be in the present unless otherwise noted.)
- description of the encounter
- the virtues applied
- the encounter type
- the internal dimension, emotional, mental, spiritual

Not everyone will want to record their experiences in this style, so it is offered as an optional tool to be used if it serves your needs. The notation abbreviations are suggestions only. If you choose to make your own chart, you may want to modify these or create your own notation system.

When-Which-How Recording Table

Time and Place	Encounter	When	Which	How	Description
6:30 AM Home	Inspiration Goal	Meditation	All	To self, internal Spiritual	Building their presence into the energy field
6:50 AM	Relationship	Breakfast with family	All	6VG To others, internal S, M, E	Performs Grid Meditation
7:30 AM Morning commute	Problem	Traffic jam	Humility and Understanding	To others, internal Emotional	Expresses to himself and to his fellow travelers subjectively energetic transfer
8:30 AM Work	Problem	Project meeting	Forgiveness	To others, internal Emotional	Visualizes forgiveness flowing to a co-worker he has blamed for an mistake
12:00 Noon	Inspiration	Lunchtime	All	6VG To self, internal Spiritual	Performs Grid Meditation Immerses himself in the virtues. Follows this by sending the virtues out to his co-workers, family and all others.
After lunch	Relationship	After lunch	Humility and Valor	To others, external Emotional	Face to face discussion with his manager
5:30 PM Soccer game	Problem	While watching game	Compassion and Understanding	To others, internal Emotional	Energetic transfer while discussing problems
5:30 PM Halfway through soccer game	Event	Observing game	Valor	To others, internal Mental	Energy transfer of valor to both teams
8:00 PM Home	Relationship Problem	After dinner	Valor, Compassion, Appreciation, Understanding.	To others, external Emotional	Outward expression in conversation with wife
After 9:00 PM	Inspiration	Listening to music	All	6VG To self and others Spiritual	Performs Grid Meditation and visualizes the virtues flowing throughout his home restoring harmony to his family

## **Follow-on Expressions**

There are myriad combinations and sequences of expressing the virtues. Additionally, how they are expressed—whether internally, externally, to self, to others, present, past, or future—can only be determined by each practitioner. There may very well be other “hows” of the practice, that are not yet obvious, but which will only emerge with more experience. At this stage, we are focused on learning the basics. Before leaving this topic, there are still a few other factors to briefly discuss.

“When you express one or more of the heart virtues into an encounter you can then observe its influence on the event or participants therein. The observation can then guide your follow-on expression, its intensity, to whom it is directed, and its duration. This cycle of expression and observation enables a more fine-grained expression, and it is this adjustment that leads you forward on the path to emotional self-mastery.”

This quotation mentions a cycle of expression and observation. It then describes:

A follow-on expression

- Its intensity
- To whom it is directed
- Its duration

**For example:**

You inform your husband that you are going to see a movie with your girlfriend this evening and that he will have to prepare his own dinner. What is your observation? Is he eager to see you go? Does he have a shocked look on his face? Is he showing signs of panic?

Okay, I'll back up a little. Your husband comes home from work and you tell him that your girlfriend called and she wants to see a movie that is playing for the last night. You want to go with her, so he will have to prepare his dinner. This all happened unexpectedly, so you ask him to forgive the inconvenience and to please understand how much you really want to see this film. You observe his reactions to your expressed virtues.

He expresses compassion by telling you that you deserve a break because you are always sacrificing your own needs for the family. He tells you that it's no problem, he'll figure out something to eat.

You observe that despite his last statement, he is somewhat unsettled. To soothe his anxiety, you express compassion and understanding with great intensity and duration (about a minute), and then, to his pleasant surprise, you open the refrigerator to show him the casserole you prepared earlier, which he only has to heat in the oven. You also point out all the ingredients he needs to make his salad. He expresses his appreciation and gives you a big hug of thanks.

This somewhat playful example is meant to show how natural when-which-how can be in actual practice. We express the virtues and we observe the results. According

to the situation, we adjust the “follow-on expression, its intensity, to whom it is directed, and the duration.”

The challenge is to stay present and maintain attention while engaged in the encounter. The intelligence of the heart and the six virtues will help to guide the flow of every encounter if our intention is aligned with love. If we open ourselves to the heart, the virtues will emerge and serve us, so we can serve each other.

Let’s explore one more example before continuing to our next topic. We will bring back our practitioner and his family for this example.

Recall that he and his wife decided to help their children resolve their arguments. The next day, he and his wife gathered the two children for a family meeting, something they had not done for quite a while. First, the parents expressed their appreciation to the children by telling them how much they were loved. The parents expressed humility by admitting that they probably should have called a meeting sooner and not allowed the children’s occasional arguments to reach a point of being continuous. He followed up with valor, by explaining that he was actually more at fault because he was usually the parent who helped settle the children’s bickering.

Our practitioner observed that the kids (14 year-old boy and 15 year-old girl) seemed surprised that he admitted negligence in this regard. Sensing this, our practitioner reinforced it by a follow-on expression of humility by relating that parents were not perfect and could make mistakes just like children, except that adult mistakes could have larger consequences. He extended the duration



and intensity of this approach by expressing understanding.

He did this by relaying a story about his father and mother. They were strict disciplinarians and no matter what “trouble” arose in his youth, from his parents’ viewpoint, he was always at fault and they were always right. As he grew older, our practitioner realized that yes, indeed many times he was at fault, but sometimes he wasn’t, yet his parents never had the courage or humility to admit their mistakes. He did not blame them for this because he realized that his parents were brought up in a culture that maintained a strict parent-child belief system. It was part of their enculturation.

Continuing his story, he described how one day, when he was in his early twenties, his parents called him to their home for a talk. They wanted to tell him that as they looked back on their lives, they realized that they should have been a little more understanding in his upbringing. Sometimes, they realized, after the fact, that they were in error, but they had had too much pride to admit that they had been wrong; that on various occasions they had punished him despite feeling that it wasn’t the best method of teaching him right and wrong. They admitted to having made mistakes, but they had been only trying to do their best for him. From that day forward, he told his two children, his relationship with his parents was much more positive, open, and honest because of their valor and humility in admitting that they were only human.

As his story ended, there seemed to be a wonderful feeling of understanding, appreciation, and compassion in the room. He sensed that these virtues were bouncing back

and forth between everyone present. The reason for their meeting got lost in this field of loving energy. Everyone was affected by the release of these virtues.

Our practitioner now observed that his children really understood that he and his wife appreciated and understood them as children who deserved a fair hearing when problems arose. Nevertheless, they also understood that he and his wife were still the parents who were there to guide them and define the boundaries of their activities and behaviors. Fully present, observing and sensing all this, he visualized the six virtues grid encompassing his entire family as he asked his children what all their arguing was about.

Several days later, our practitioner's daughter came to him and asked about his practice of when-which-how. She had heard him explaining it to his wife and she wanted to know what it was all about. Our practitioner did his best to explain it to his daughter and then recommended that she get on the family computer and go to the Event Temples website to explore it for herself. Before doing this, she asked him what "mom" thought about these weird, but intriguing ideas. He replied that her mother was a little unsure about the practice itself, but had always believed that love was the best medicine for healing anything. So, she had also gone to the website and was now reading "Living from the Heart." His daughter seemed satisfied with these remarks and said that she would check it out.

I haven't inserted the virtues that were being applied in this final example in order to give you the chance to identify them for yourself. It should be mentioned here that the when-which-how procedure is not as complicated

as it appears in these examples. It appears complicated because we are dissecting human conversations in order to indicate when, which, and how to apply the various heart virtues. As you persist in practicing, however, you will find that the heart energetics intelligently and seamlessly flow through your interactions and conversations. This is part of the intelligence of the heart-mind system as it interacts with the intelligence of the six virtues. The heart-mind system is designed to work as a team and this system will respond naturally to the presence and application of the six virtues, if you make the choice to apply them.

The sad fact is that so many of us fail to reach out to one another in an honest and loving manner. The power of living from the heart is effective, I believe, because loving kindness is an inborn trait of the genuine human being. The key word here, is “genuine.” The genuine “you” is the higher self existing behind the mask of the ego-personality. That higher aspect of our own being is dwelling in the energetic heart. It will open to us if we open to it. That, I believe, is part of our design.

It's as if you had an expensive car with a high performance engine, but due to your lack of knowledge, you fed that engine low-octane, less refined fuel. Then, one day someone with a knowledge of engines informs you that you possess a high quality engine and that it will perform remarkably better if you feed it the proper fuel. Doing so will allow the engine to perform according to the specifications of the engineers who designed it. You cannot believe it, but you decide to follow this person's advice and to try the higher quality fuel. You are amazed at the results and marvel at the enormous difference in

efficiency and the overall improved quality of your driving experience.

This simple analogy shows how, with the correct knowledge, a willingness to change, and the application of the correct energetics, we can be efficient and experience an improved quality of life. Our goal then, is to pass on the knowledge that we have received in order that others may benefit, thus contributing to the overall quality of life for everyone on our planet.

### **More Examples**

Travel Woes. You have boarded your plane for a flight home and after twenty minutes the pilot announces that there is a backup of flights that will delay take-off for at least two hours. These aggravating and frustrating situations are the right time to practice when-which-how. When we encounter a particular situation that really upsets our emotional balance, the event is our opportunity to stay present and observe what is occurring to us internally. Take the role of the observer. Separate your feelings and thoughts from you, the observer. This can minimize the frustration.

Perhaps, this problem calls for understanding and humility (although additional virtues may apply here, we will keep it as simple as possible). How do you apply these virtues to this situation? After examining your own internal state, it is time to reach out to others, either internally or externally, or both ways.

For example, if the person next to you is very upset over the situation, you may want to outwardly express your own frustration, but then talk about the problem in a positive manner through the virtue of understanding. The humility virtue could be introduced by pointing out that probably everybody on the plane has plans that are going to be disrupted by the delay. In other words, you're communicating that everyone is stuck in the same situation.

You can then direct into the emotional field of the aircraft the virtues you feel are most suited to the event. This does two things. First, it helps to calm the situation by introducing positive emotional energy into the collective field. Second, it takes the focus off yourself and consequently reduces, or cuts off the flow of negative emotions that are present in your individual field. The point being, that if you are expressing coherence through the practice of when-which-how, you are focused on the higher self and energetic heart—not on the ego-personality. You are then part of the higher circulatory flow of the soul, rather than the lower, less refined circulation of the ego-personality world.

A Friend in Need. Often we are confronted with a situation in which a friend is in crisis and needs to talk about it. Let's suppose that a friend has come to you to talk about a personal problem. You are lending a sympathetic ear and providing a sounding board for your friend's situation. This is an external expression of compassion and understanding but how can you further apply the virtues to this crisis? For example, you might extend your compassion to the internal dimension by visualizing

compassion outflowing from your heart into your friend's heart. This internal activation of one or more virtues could very well be more powerful and effective than your sympathetic listening, although both are important.

A helpful point here is to realize that activating the practice of when-which-how in our daily lives runs counter to our habitual style of social interaction. For the most part, we are used to interacting with others at the physical level of life. Therefore, when we are sitting down with a friend who needs to talk about a problem, we automatically communicate (words and body language) at the physical level. We are probably feeling sympathy and maybe empathy, but we are not pro-actively engaging our friend on an internal level. Granted, much may be occurring at the sub-conscious level, but our goal is to become conscious practitioners, not to be simply passive sympathizers.

When-which-how deals with the internal, subjective emotional level in a pro-active way. We are intentionally directing specific heart virtues at our friend or at whatever the encounter happens to be. We are not in the custom of interacting with others (or ourselves, for that matter) in this way. This is why we forget to engage the practice so often and it is why we need to work hard at training ourselves to remember to be present, to observe, and to practice.

### *Pets.*

Can we apply the when-which-how practice to our pets? Of course we can and we should. How do we do this? The how aspect is really not much different than how we apply

the virtues to our fellow humans. The obvious course that comes to mind is to send our pets the virtues of compassion and appreciation, although you may want to express forgiveness if they accidentally leave a mess on your carpet.

As mentioned often in this guide, when we practice when-which-how we are engaging the higher self and energetic heart. If we are alone for most of the day, pets provide a perfectly valid source for our practice. As we outflow the virtues to our pets, we are activating the flow of powerful spiritual energies in our home environment. This is a good thing. Our pets benefit, we benefit, our emotional living space benefits. It's a win, win, win situation.

### *Kingdoms of Nature.*

When we work with pets, we are working with the animal kingdom. There is no obvious reason why we cannot practice when-which-how on all the kingdoms of nature. For instance, we can visualize the virtues of the heart extending throughout the animal kingdom of our planet. When we go into our backyards, gardens, or public parks, we can practice when-which-how by expressing appreciation and humility to the plant kingdom. The point is that we can radiate the virtues of the heart into all of the natural world. Again, our cultural conditioning can tend to limit our beliefs about radiating divine love to all the world. We believe that our fellow human beings need the virtues of the heart, but that the natural world does not. Yet, the planetary environment is suffering from humanity's inability to live from the heart, just as we humans are suffering.

## **Managing Expectations**

A school teacher wants to improve the relationship between himself and his students. He decides to send understanding and appreciation to them for one week, at the end of which he will assess the situation. If it has not improved, he will try another strategy.

This teacher has imposed a time limit on virtues that exist beyond the spacetime dimension. He has set up a restrictive condition for success. Whether a week is too long or not long enough is beside the point. The underlying foundation of the practice is that we are learning to work from the standpoint of the higher self, which transcends the spacetime reality of the ego-personality.

By setting a time limit, this individual is diluting the effectiveness of the virtues by imposing restrictions on them. Thus, before he even begins to outflow the virtues to his students, he is limiting the effectiveness of the virtues by setting up conditions that do not apply to them because they, like the soul, exist in a subjective state beyond the three-dimensional world of form.

A drug counselor is working with a teenager who has gotten involved with drugs at school. She has been working with young people for ten years and has now added the when-which-how technique to her counseling practice.

Because she is accustomed to imposing tough love on her young clients, the practice of transferring the heart virtues to them is a somewhat new approach. She has seen too many repeat offenses, and consequently, her



application of the virtues is often accompanied by the expectation of failure. This is not necessarily her fault, but simply the result of her long experience in the field of witnessing the inability of users to overcome their drug habits.

In this case, the negative expectations of the counselor are a difficult hurdle for her to clear, due to the negative emotional miasma of drug addiction. In order to manage these negative expectations, she must work to build positive emotional energy into her life by substituting the virtues of the heart for the negative expectations of the past.

We see in both these instances that the time factor plays a large role in the practice of when-which-how. For what are expectations, but the anticipation and hope of an outcome or result that is most often the desire of the ego-personality instead of the higher self. This is why cultivating neutrality toward the work of the virtues is important.

We must be willing to place faith in the intelligence of the heart to manage the situations we encounter. We practice when-which-how and stand aside to allow the virtues to do their transformative work. We stand aside, but remain vigilant, ready to initiate any follow-on expression of the virtues if necessary.

The bottom line is that our expectations put a spacetime, ego-personality “spin” on the virtues that is unnecessary and is most likely detrimental to their effectiveness. If we expect too much or too little from the results, we are projecting our desires onto others, thus prejudicing our

judgment as to when, which, and how we will practice toward this person or situation the next time.

This in all likelihood means that the next time, we will approach the encounter from the spacetime perspective of the ego-personality, with all the baggage of the past. This is not how we practice. We practice with a neutral, non-prejudiced attitude, centered in the energetic heart, and aligned with the higher self. This is that neutral, inner spiritual sun that shines its divine love on all, without the time-bound, prejudiced memory of the ego-personality.

## **BELIEF AND THE LARGER PLAN**

“We know truth, not only by reason, but also by the heart.” - **Blaise Pascal**

### **Heart-Mind Intention Makes the Difference**

At this point, you may be asking why you should believe that practicing when-which-how is any more effective than behaving in a loving and kind manner toward those you encounter in your day-to-day activities. Generally speaking, there is not much of a difference. There is no question that practicing goodwill, showing common courtesies, and practicing good manners form a solid foundation for right human relationships. Honestly speaking, however, it's relatively easy to be nice to people when we don't have to live with them or have to spend hours working with them each day. In fact, most of the stress and emotional negativity we experience is produced by our relationships with those closest to us, whether they are family members, co-workers, or friends. And yet, even in our closest relationships, it might be difficult to comprehend the difference between being kind and understanding and practicing when-which-how.

But there is actually a vast difference. It's the difference between a light in a room and a light specifically directed at an object of art—displayed with appreciation. It's the difference between the sound of an orchestra tuning its instruments before the symphony and the sound of the symphony itself—played with humility. It's the difference between the chaotic clash of colors in a child's finger-

painting and the harmonic combinations of color and perspective in the work of a great master—created with understanding. It's the difference between spending your paycheck on whatever you desire and spending your paycheck to take care of your family—spent with compassion. The distinguishing features of these examples are the intentional, intelligent, efficient, and virtuous uses of energy.

Here is the point. We can be kind to others and intentionally, intelligently, and efficiently transmit compassion to them. We can thank someone for holding a door open for us and we can intentionally, intelligently, and efficiently transmit appreciation to them. We can listen to our spouse's complaints after a frustrating day at work and we can intentionally, intelligently, and efficiently express to them our understanding. In other words, practicing when-which-how does not eliminate the practice of goodwill—it strengthens it. Practicing when-which-how does not eliminate lending a sympathetic and thoughtful ear to a family member's rough day at work or school—it eases the pain. Practicing when-which-how adds an entirely new dimension to every relationship and encounter we have in life.

Practicing when-which-how increases and strengthens the relatively small amount of positive emotional energy that already exists in the social order—that energy generated by people of goodwill. It doesn't replace good manners, decency, morals or ethics with its own brand of behavior. On the contrary, it contributes to the established, traditional sense of good that already exists in society and at the same time, it raises the quality of goodness by

bringing a new dimension of love to others—a new reality of love to the world.

- Not only do we have light in our room, but we now have a light intentionally, intelligently, and efficiently, focused on a beautiful work of art with appreciation.

- Not only do we have instruments capable of producing sounds, but we now have a collection of instruments intentionally, intelligently, and efficiently, producing a beautiful symphony of sound with humility.

- Not only do we have paints, canvas, and fingers that can express a child's creative urge, but we now have the tools that allow us to intentionally, intelligently, and efficiently, produce beautiful paintings with understanding.

- Not only do we have the ability to earn a living, but we now can intentionally, intelligently, and efficiently, manage the fruits of our labors with compassion.

- Not only do we have the ability to be decent, kind, and good to one another, but we now can intentionally, intelligently, and efficiently transmit appreciation, compassion, forgiveness, humility, understanding, and valor to ourselves and anyone we choose.

If your experiences in the everyday world have taught you that being decent, polite, and kind to others makes you and others feel good, reduces tensions, leads to positive social interactions, contributes to better understanding, increases the simple pleasures of living, and generally makes life more enjoyable, then how might practicing when-which-how contribute to these experiences? This is

something worth thinking about. If you believe that your life is qualitatively better by being a kind and decent person, then practicing when-which-how may very likely contribute to that belief. This small step in belief can result in a giant step in experience. By adding this new reality, this new dimension to your life, you may find your life more meaningful and more satisfying than you do now. Your third-dimensional goodness may be uplifted, upgraded, and even upended by the addition of this new dimension of love. By adding this new dimension to the inherent goodness you already possess, you will have added a fourth dimension to your life. You will be living from the heart by expressing its fourth-dimensional virtue.

### **Belief**

“Do not believe in anything simply because you have heard it. Do not believe in anything simply because it is spoken and rumored by many. Do not believe in anything simply because it is found written in your religious books. Do not believe in anything merely on the authority of your teachers and elders. Do not believe in traditions because they have been handed down for many generations. But after observation and analysis, when you find that anything agrees with reason and is conducive to the good and benefit of one and all, then accept it and live up to it.” -

### **The Buddha**

These words of the Buddha are as true today as they were 2500 years ago. They are especially relevant to the practice of when-which-how because the Buddha, in his search for truth, did not adhere to any particular faith or

spiritual practice. He experimented with various approaches to God or some ultimate reality, but found none that satisfied him. So, he finally sat down under the bodhi tree until he saw the truth as he understood it. He then declared the now famous Fourfold Truths and the Eightfold Path leading to the end of suffering.

The word, bodhi comes from Sanskrit root budh which means to awaken, thus the Buddha is the awakened one. Basically, this means that the Buddha awoke to his own higher self. In turn, if the practitioners of when-which-how can learn to quiet the mind, be present in the moment, and observe, they can also awaken to the higher self. Thus, in the stillness created by this practice, the sound and light of the higher self can be experienced as it is transmitted through the energetic heart. Interestingly, we could say that the Buddha was practicing the when-which-how technique of his era. His conclusions about the nature of life were essentially faith agnostic.

This path is not owned by anyone or any organization, and those who travel it are essentially faith agnostic, which is to say, they do not look upon this practice as affiliated with a particular religion, spiritual inquiry system, scientific endeavor, New Age belief system, or spiritual master. It is a framework as old as the soul itself, and its chief principle is the ongoing practice of the six heart virtues in one's daily life. In doing this, the reality that surrounds you will assemble its own path to a higher understanding, suited specifically to you.

Technically speaking, the Buddha's approach to truth may not be exact in every detail when compared to this quotation from "Living from the Heart." Nevertheless, the

spirit of the Buddha's approach resonates with the spirit of when-which-how. This is evident by his enlightened recognition that a framework for approaching a higher spiritual reality always, already exists, prior to and independent of all religious, spiritual, philosophical, and psychological forms and systems. These systems of belief are spacetime reflections of a transcendent reality, a Source Intelligence, an Underivative Information Structure, a Domain of Unity.

Thus, as one who was faith agnostic relative to his own era, the Buddha practiced his own approach to spirit and sat under the bodhi tree in meditation until he was enlightened in regard to the cause of human suffering and how to end it. As a result of his perseverance, patience, and effort, to paraphrase the last quotation—the reality that surrounded him assembled its own path to a higher understanding, suited specifically to him.

So what is the Buddha advising us to do? He is advising us to test whatever practice we feel attracted to and then to observe and analyze the practice. If it “agrees with reason and is conducive to the good and benefit of one and all, then accept it and live up to it.”

We might conclude from Buddha's words that:

- Observation is made possible by the quieting of the mind's thoughts, resulting in hearing the heart's voice.
- Analysis is the responding activity of the mind after listening to the heart's voice.

Out of this symbiotic relationship comes the possibility that, with persistence, patience, and effort, reality will



eventually assemble “its own path to a higher understanding suited specifically to you.”

If we are willing to test the theory of practicing when-which-how, then we should observe and analyze our internal attitudes and external behaviors in relation to our practice. If, through our observations and analyses, our practice seems reasonable to us and “contributes to the good and benefit of one and all,” then our confidence in the practice will grow and so will our belief. This approach agrees with the advice of the Buddha.

There are, however, two paragraphs in “Living from the Heart” which suggest that the when-which-how technique is part of a larger plan. This passage goes on to suggest that a belief in this larger plan will increase the power of our practice, thus making it more effective and of greater service to humanity. Section three of “Living from the Heart” is entitled, The Heart-Mind Intention. Here is an extract from the end of that section.

Simply practicing a new discipline doesn’t attract its full power. There must be an attendant belief—a genuineness in the practice—that what you are doing is part of a larger plan; that it is connected, like bricks in a wall, to a larger purpose.

This attendant belief often takes a while to accrue its power. It is not something you can manufacture artificially. In a sense, it is part of the learning curve and grows over time as you become more comfortable with the practice or technique.

These are interesting comments about the role of belief in the practice. At the initial stages of this work, there must

be “a genuineness in the practice” based on a belief that the practice is connected to a “larger plan...to a larger purpose.” Notice that we are not being asked to believe in the practice itself, but to believe in a larger plan which contains the practice. (It must be said here that belief plays an important part in the practice, but this passage is pointing us to a wider belief.) This plan or purpose is described as an attendant belief. We will discuss this larger plan shortly.

The quotation goes on to explain, that when we begin to grasp the larger plan—the macro-vision level related to our purpose and destiny as a species—we accrue greater power to our practice at the micro-vision level as individual soul-personalities within the species. In other words, when we, as individuals, intentionally contribute our positive emotions to the collective human energetic field or CHEF, we are directly serving the fulfillment of our species’ purpose and destiny at the macro level.

If the vision of this greater plan and purpose resonates with you, if it makes you feel good inside, if it seems right to you, if it excites you and awakens your desire to involve yourself in its goals, then there is some part of you that believes it. That part is most probably your own higher self. You feel this in your heart.

If you are attracted to the WingMakers/Lyricus material, with its macro-vision of a larger plan and a larger purpose for humanity, then there must be something in this material that you believe in. If you feel this magnetic draw, then your energy field is in resonance with the energy signature set up by the WingMakers and Lyricus materials. Although we have no physical proof that this

material is true, many of us have all the proof we need because we feel the rightness of it by the feelings coming from our hearts. In these feelings lie trust and recognition.

Up till now, the material has demanded little from us. Indeed, I know that many people have criticized the material because it has not seemed of practical value in helping us to solve the world's problems. That position is debatable, but now that debate is unnecessary because of the Event Temples concept and the new materials related to emotional self-mastery. These materials take the WingMakers community to a new phase of activity that is eminently of service to humankind through the specific practice of when-which-how.

### **The Larger Plan and Purpose**

This larger plan and purpose is a vision of our future as a species. It is a beautiful and inspiring vision that everyone practicing emotional self-mastery and the when-which-how technique can be involved in. It is our choice. If you find yourself resonating strongly to the ideas in "Living from the Heart," then the following words should prove especially meaningful.

There is a tremendous accumulation of the third-dimensional energetics and these constrain the higher energetics born in your higher practices. But these are the very conditions or catalysts that transform or burn off the old energetics and create the shift into the higher dimensions of being. This is all part of the reason for your incarnation: To transform the accumulation of third-dimensional grids of energy into higher dimensional grids

that can shift these energetics and move the planet and its “visitors” to its next incarnation within the higher octave of new energies, discoveries, and supernal destiny that supports the Grand Portal.

According to this extract, the individual practice of when-which-how and the community practice of the Event Temples are works that support the future discovery of the Grand Portal. This idea is supported by referring to the fourth philosophy paper of the WingMakers. This paper is entitled, “Beliefs and Their Energy Systems.” This paper explains that all beliefs are based on energy systems. It is fair to say that the when-which-how practice is a system of beliefs and therefore, is based on an energy system. This particular energy system, generally speaking, consists of the soul, the six virtues, and the energetic heart.

The fourth philosophy paper explains that energy systems become embedded in our DNA and that the nature of life in the three-dimensional worlds has created an energy system of survival within the human species. This has resulted in a belief system which holds that conformity to the social order is the best method of survival. Consequently, Earth’s humanity has created belief systems based on survivorship. Here is a quotation from “Beliefs and Their Energy Systems.”

Within the boundaries of the survival-based energy system are transition zones that permit a re-casting of one’s belief system in accordance to cosmological, multidimensional energy systems. Think of these transition zones as isolated portals of energy that intersect the dominant energy system of the human species not unlike energy vortexes intersecting space.

These transition zones appear similar to this description in “Living from the Heart.”

It is a fallacy to believe that the entire matrix of reality conforms to the Law of Attraction or that the mind can direct matter with precision and consistency. Nonetheless, there are pockets of reality where your intention or power of thought-belief can be influential and reality will accommodate your thought-belief, sometimes with remarkable precision. The when-which-how practice is one such place or “pocket” that you can carve out from reality’s matrix and influence with your heart-mind intention. Indeed, this is part of the broader practice.

These “pockets of reality” from “Living from the Heart” appear to be closely related to or identical to the transitions zones described in “Beliefs and Their Energy Systems.” These transitions zones are like “isolated portals of energy” or the “pockets of reality” which will “accommodate [our] thought belief,” as described in “Living from the Heart.” We can create these pockets of reality with our heart-mind intention.

If we can create these pockets of reality, then it is not too much of a stretch to believe that the Lyricus teachers can also create these pockets of reality. The pockets of reality created by the Lyricus Teaching Order are the transition zones they call Tributary Zones and the Grand Portal. We might speculate that our self-created “pockets of reality” are like mini or micro-transition zones that are resonating with the greater transition zones of Lyricus. Our practice could be based on a Tributary Zone that may lead to the discovery of the Grand Portal.

Published on the Wingmakers website in 2001, the fourth philosophy paper presented an overview of a larger plan and purpose for humanity. It describes physical Tributary Zones that will be created for our shift to a greater reality. Now, in 2007, the newly introduced concepts of the Event Temples, emotional self-mastery, the virtues of the heart, and the practice of when-which-how appear to directly support and work with one such Tributary Zone.

In any case, if our belief system is based on the energy system of the virtues of the heart emanating from the soul, it will still resonate to the transition zone of the Grand Portal. Why? Because the Grand Portal is inherently related to the soul. It's all about the soul and its discovery by humanity. For emphasis I will repeat the quotation from "Living from the Heart."

This is all part of the reason for your incarnation: To transform the accumulation of third-dimensional grids of energy into higher dimensional grids that can shift these energetics and move the planet and its "visitors" to its next incarnation within the higher octave of new energies, discoveries, and supernal destiny that supports the Grand Portal.

Thus, we are quite possibly working toward the Grand Portal through the Event Temple Tributary Zone. Consequently, the practice of when-which-how is not an isolated undertaking. It is a practice that will alleviate human suffering in the near term. Its long term goal, however, is rooted in revolution more than evolution because it has the potential of supporting the discovery of

the human soul and the multidimensional nature of human existence; in other words—the Grand Portal.

Our participation in this Event Temple experiment and this practice of emotional self-mastery is a quantum step in the history of our planet. Do not underestimate its value. Do not lose this opportunity to be a revolutionary of spiritual consciousness. The vast majority of us have no idea where we came from before this life. We have little idea where we are going after this life. We have little idea of why we are here. Yet, one thing seems obvious: we have been drawn to something much bigger than ourselves. We have been attracted to the light like the moth to the flame, but unlike the moth, we are entities designed with free will. If we make the choice to work and live from the heart, we can make a difference in the transition of our planet from a three-dimensional world of ignorance, separation, and fear, to one of understanding, unity, and love.

### **A Spiritual Imperative**

Our solar system has an appointment with a stream of potent new energies radiating from the center of our galaxy. We enter the height of this energy flow circa 2012. As of this writing, details of the effects of this cosmic conjunction are sketchy, but in general, we will be exposed to a new kind of light. One of the reasons we are being encouraged to work at emotional self-mastery is to soften the impact of these new forces on our energy bodies. Apparently, this new energy has a close affinity to our energetic hearts. By learning to practice when-which-how

through the incorporation of the six heart virtues into our individual energy fields, we will greatly lessen the stress on our human instruments. The same holds true for the collective human energetic field, the CHEF. The closer the CHEF matches the new incoming energies, the easier it will be for humanity to adjust to the heightened frequencies of our planet. The greater the disparity, the greater the reaction between the old frequencies and the new.

This might be comparable to the weather conditions produced when a cold air mass collides with a warm air mass. If the difference in temperatures between the two masses is large, then violent weather is often the result. When the differences in temperature are small, the weather conditions produced are mild or insignificant.

Assuming this analogy applies to the 2012 impact, it would be much better for the CHEF to match its emotional temperature as closely as possible to the incoming air mass in order to avoid a violent reaction. Obviously, if the CHEF is affected by this high frequency energy, then all individual human energetic fields (IHEF) are affected also.

Taking all this into account, practitioners of when-which-how have a two-fold task to perform in order to prepare for this event. First, we must increase the vibratory frequency of our own energy fields so that we can more easily mesh with the incoming energies. This means we instill positive emotional energies in our individual fields. By doing this, we increase the emotional positive energy of the CHEF by default. Second, we can serve humanity in a most practical way by transmitting the six heart virtues as often and as skillfully as we can to as many people as



we can. Hence, through the practice of when-which-how, we can help raise the level of the CHEF prior to and after the impact.

In fact, our services will be needed throughout this century because these energies are transformative to our planet's energy field. For example, when a powerful storm approaches land, it raises the level of the sea and when it departs, it allows the sea to return to its normal level. Nevertheless, such storms are powerful enough to transform the contours of a coastline. In a similar way, this cosmic energy will change the contours of our planetary environment. The only difference in the analogy is that unlike the storm's approach to us, our planet is approaching the energy. This is not the end of the world, but the beginning of a new phase of human living.

In order to flourish in the energetics of this new world, we will have to possess energetics that are aligned with these new ones. You might wonder, "How can we gain these new energies if our planet has not yet encountered them?" It's quite probable that the Lyricus teachers already have knowledge about the nature and the effects of the energy that we will be encountering. Therefore, they can guide us in how we can develop this energy in ourselves prior to its impact on our planet. The instructions and practices associated with the Event Temples website (and to a lesser extent, the WingMakers and Lyricus websites) are key elements in this preparation. It is quite possible that the Event Temples website is a Tributary Zone.

Hence, we have been given a template for raising our individual energy fields in advance of a major shift in the

energy quality of our planet. This template is often referred to as a platform or framework for our practice of when-which-how. We now know that the platform consists, in part, of the six heart virtues. Our task is to build the frequencies of these virtues into our emotional and mental fields. Our ability to raise the quality of our fields to the point that they can sustain the conscious presence of the six virtues indicates a distinct level of coherence. This means that you can express any virtue internally and externally as the need arises. This is the art of the genuine because what you express on the outside is the same as what you feel on the inside. You are the real deal; you are genuine in your thought, feeling, and action. You are firmly aligned from soul to sole—the individuated consciousness bridging Heaven and Earth.

Apparently, the next five to seven years are going to be especially difficult for the human race. In order to minimize the effects of our passage through this galactic energy stream, it is simply common sense that we prepare ourselves and others for the impact. This is not too much different from taking precautionary steps prior to the arrival of bad weather.

Therefore, as individuals who have been attracted to this material (setting aside the question of why), we have a golden opportunity to serve the planet during this transition. In fact, the new conditions that we will be living in after the shift in energies will demand that we make the adjustment. Those of us who have a head start in this adjustment, through the practice of when-which-how, have some responsibility to pass this knowledge and practice on to others. We also have some responsibility for helping to

shift the CHEF to a positive emotional state. Remember the clashing air masses. In effect, our efforts to equalize the emotional temperatures sooner rather than later is like a spiritual imperative.

One important point. This is not about proselytizing and saving the souls of those who may not make it through the passage. That is an old model of reality that is rapidly being replaced by a new model. Practically speaking, it seems only logical that those who know more about these matters than we do (the Lyricus Teaching Order), are already taking advantage of their know-ledge about this coming dimensional shift. They do this by introducing new models of reality—realities that are more suited to the new energy dimensions that we are soon going to be living in.

Thus, as practitioners of emotional self-mastery, we are engaged in a new model of reality identified as the transformation/mastership model. (Recall track-treat-transform.) The old model of reality is identified as the evolution/saviorship model and it basically taught that one could only reach God through an intermediary priesthood.

These two models are heading toward a synthesis model in which we can save ourselves through mastery and transformation. In this new model, the saving force comes from within our own being and not from some outside source. Consequently, practitioners are not saving others by convincing them to turn to emotional self-mastery. Instead, practitioners are turning negative emotions into positive ones. Practitioners are “grounding” the heart virtues in the field of human endeavor. As a result, practitioners are clarifying the emotional environment through the introduction of positive heart energetics. As

practitioners save themselves, they automatically contribute positive energetics into the CHEF that others can use in order to save themselves. In turn, this gives millions of individuals the opportunity to discover these energetics for themselves because the clarified emotional atmosphere is healthy and positive. It encourages exploration by its very nature. Thus, others are eager to seek out the source of these refreshing energies that they are feeling in their own individual energy fields.

Our practice can turn the tide. But for that to happen, we must do the work. Learning to be coherent is the art of the genuine. It leads to powerful effects that can transform the negative emotional field of our planet into a positive emotional field. A positive field such as this can propel us toward the discovery of the Grand Portal. It is truly a privilege to be participating in this process. Finally, whether you are already a practitioner, are considering joining us, or are merely curious about the topic, I welcome you as a fellow explorer with appreciation, compassion, forgiveness, humility, understanding, and valor, as we travel together on this amazing planet we call Earth.

## **SUGGESTIONS FOR PRACTICE**

Whoever loves flowers is on the heart's path. Whoever knows the striving to the summits is on the heart's path. Whoever thinks purely is on the heart's path. Whoever knows of the highest worlds is on the heart's path. Whoever is ready for Infinity is on the heart's path. Thus shall we summon all hearts to the realization of the Source.

The following items are factors that can aid in the practice of when-which-how. You may recognize some of them from A New Day in the Life of scenario described in section three. This list of qualities and suggestions is interesting, in that it has evolved out of the practice itself. In other words, our experience in the practice of when-which-how creates a store of knowledge and wisdom that serves as a guide to further improve our practice.

You might also think of these suggestions as a larger how of practicing emotional self-mastery. Just as we learn how to apply the virtues within the when-which-how framework, we also learn how to apply when-which-how within the larger emotional self-mastery framework. In other words, these are suggestions on how to monitor and adjust your psychological state for a more effective practice of emotional self-mastery.

Many of these suggestions and terms are found in other spiritual practices under different names. Whether these other practices are ancient or modern, Eastern or Western, religious or philosophical, they are surprisingly similar because all of these practices, including when-which-how, are based on our common human psychology. Thus, beneath the skin of our cultural conditioning lies our essential humanity with its physical, psychological, and spiritual components. Any practice aiming to integrate these components will spawn strategies for achieving this goal with a minimum of wasted energy. The fact that they have different names in different cultures does not negate their usefulness or effectiveness as long as we are dedicated to the practice.

### *Acceptance.*

This term is closely related to surrender. It represents an attitude that is willing to accept the reality of any situation. Acceptance is the relaxation of denial. It is especially powerful in the application of the virtues to oneself. Acceptance has much to do with valor, humility, and forgiveness. Even though we may have accepted various negative truths in many areas of our lives, we will still generate negative thoughts, feelings, attitudes, and behaviors that we must continuously clear. We do this by facing them, accepting them for what they are, and continuing our practice of emotional self-mastery.

The great advantage we have for overcoming negative emotions is the knowledge that we can practice emotional self-mastery through the practice of when-which-how and the various meditation exercises we have been given. In any case, eventually, our attitude of acceptance will be turned on its head when we shift from accepting our negatives to accepting our positives. Then we will be in a new stage of development when acceptance means that we face the truth of our individual dimensional shift from the third dimensional ego-personality to the higher dimensional soul-personality.

### *Alignment.*

This is the ability to stay centered in the state of openness to the energetic heart and the six virtues radiating from the higher self. When circumstances, situations, or encounters arise that bring us back into the ego-personality, that turn our emotions negative, we re-align by remembering to perform the six virtues grid

visualization meditation. This will restore our alignment to the higher frequencies of the heart and soul.

*Awareness.*

Throughout the day, make an effort to be present in the moment. This is important because it enables us to sense when to apply the virtues to an encounter. Remember that an encounter also includes yourself. This includes your thoughts, feelings, attitudes, behaviors, habits, and reactions to the moment-to-moment experiences of your day.

*Consistency.*

The need for consistency cannot be overstated. Great energy put into the practice of when-which-how, followed by interruptions due to other activities will not lead to effective service over the long run. The moderate, middle way is a tried and tested attitude to most disciplines, especially the subtleties of psycho-spiritual practices. Setting up a schedule and doing one's best to maintain it is very helpful. Naturally, there are always times when schedules cannot be met, but the fact that you have a schedule to return to is a tremendous advantage in staying consistent with the practice.

*Crisis.*

At various times of our lives we all experience crises. Although these are often very difficult situations to go through, they are also opportunities to learn the important lessons that life has to offer. Valuable information can be garnered from practicing when-which-how during these times.

### *Effects of Practice.*

Here are some of the effects of practice.

- **Emergence.** This is the increasing frequency with which the virtues come into our awareness. As we make the effort to engage the practice, we attract the heart virtues. This builds momentum toward emotional self-mastery and a closer connection to the higher self.

- **Empowerment.** We feel empowered by our increasing capacity for emotional control. Instead of being the victim of our emotional attachments and desires, we are increasingly able to manage them.

- **Freedom To Be Yourself.** This should probably read freedom to be your real self. As we become more aligned to the energetic heart and soul, we gain confidence and a feeling of loving unity with all life. This gives us the freedom to be ourselves and drop the masks of ego and its defensive strategies.

- **Increased Light.** This means that our intuitive insight is increased through our practice. This new light increases our ability to apply the six virtues more effectively. As our intuitive insight develops, our power to mobilize and transmit the virtues with precision also increases.

- **Rapid Re-alignment.** Whenever we find ourselves in difficult emotional encounters that generate negative emotions, our consistent work with when-which-how gives us the ability to re-align with our heart and its virtues. Rather than be thrown into the emotional turmoil of the situation, we can bounce back more rapidly because we



have developed an orientation to the heart and the energetics of the higher self—the six virtues.

- **Renewed Energy.** Our ability to maintain alignment with the energetic heart increases our energy at all levels of our being. In addition, we recover energy more rapidly by staying aligned with our higher frequencies.

### *Intention.*

Intention is the power that drives the practice. This word is related to desire and will. “Living from the Heart” speaks to the issue of desire. In that case, desire is described as a possible impediment to the practice of when-which-how. In this case, desire relates to our thirst for meaning, our hunger for spiritual food. The desire to seek the truth comes full circle when we desire to practice the truth that we feel in our hearts. When right desire is aflame in our hearts, we use our will to apply our feelings to our actions. When we possess this desire, we activate our heart-mind intention. This intention is the force necessary for effective practice of when-which-how. Without intention we lose the laser-like capabilities of energy transfer. Intention is the directing force.

### *Looking for Results.*

The results of practice will become evident in time. There is no need to look for them because the results will find you. The effects of our efforts to practice the virtues of the heart will blossom like flowers that are nowhere to be found one day and suddenly, popping up all over our backyards the next day. Calling forth the heart virtues is a natural act of the human spirit and the effects of your heart-mind intentions will be organic and natural.

### *Maintaining Perspective.*

This is the perspective of the soul or higher self as it views the limited and limiting environment of third-dimensional reality. Take some time to study the larger framework discussed in Section 2. Even if this view seems too complex or far-out for you to believe, at least give it a fair hearing with an open mind and heart.

Briefly, the soul's perspective is this: You, the portion of its consciousness extended into the spacetime, third dimension, are one individuated self among billions, who are participating in a grand experiment of spiritualizing matter by materializing spirit. You, the ego-personality, turned practitioner of emotional self-mastery, are now attempting to refine your energy field so that it can express the less dense energies of your higher counterpart, the soul.

This may take some time, so be patient and don't get discouraged when you lose control and become viral negative. Re-align. Re-vision the larger picture, the broader practice, the cosmic framework from which you have come forth—to serve the grand experiment of First Source.

### *Managing Expectations.*

One of the most important aspects of practicing when-which-how is managing our expectations of outcomes. When we express the virtues into an encounter, do we send the virtues with an expectation of some pre-defined result? If we are expecting a particular response from the recipient of our energy transfers, we are not being neutral. Expectations of particular behaviors and attitudes from

others as a result of our practice is the projection of our own desires onto them.

The heart virtues are not tools for imposing our personal worldview on others. The virtues are universal energies of love that we outflow to others without personal prejudice. The challenge for the practitioner is to work at neutralizing the ego's desire to lay down the conditions for "success."

### *Meditation.*

It is beneficial to the practice of emotional self-mastery to take some time each day to meditate. You can tailor your needs to this time of reflection and review. Daily practice with the Virtuous Cycle meditation exercise is a good way to begin. Anyone seriously interested in practicing when-which-how should work toward developing the habit of daily meditation. By developing this discipline, one is already prepared if new exercises are given for the path of emotional self-mastery.

### *Neutrality.*

Practicing when-which-how requires balance. We must learn to be neutral in the sense that we don't reward the good and punish the bad. We don't look down on our shortcomings and celebrate our successes. We weigh the entire situation and encounter without being for or against anyone or anything. We distribute the virtues and allow the free will of the recipients to accept or reject what is freely given. We can do no more than this.

### *Observation.*

Our awareness is not passive, but active. We are observing what is coming into the range of our awareness.

We observe internally and externally. Our internal observation includes the elements listed above: thoughts, feelings, attitudes, behaviors, habits, and reactions to the moment-to-moment experiences. Observe these contents of consciousness without a sense of being a good or bad person, but as the master managing energy for spiritual growth and service.

*Sacrifice.*

This is a word that has only appeared once throughout this guide, yet it underlies much of the work performed by every practitioner of when-which-how and every seeker of emotional self-mastery. Those times when you are in the most difficult emotional situations are the times when your ego-personality will resist your efforts to initiate the expression of the virtues.

Earlier, we discussed the pain of the moment, when it is just too painful to gather your heart energies to engage the practice. There are other times, however, when you rub up against the core button issues upon which your egoic life rests. When these issues emerge in your lives, the ego-personality will use every weapon in its arsenal to prevent the encroachment of the heart upon its territory.

The emotional pain you feel in the moment of that realization involves your decision to activate the heart virtues and to do the exact opposite of what the ego-personality would dictate. Your decision to join with the forces of the heart and the higher self, is the beginning of the end of your ego's domination of your life. The pain you feel in the course of that battle is the sacrificial tearing down of the ego's defensive walls.

The sacrifice involves the surrendering of the ego's resistance to change. Change is often met with resistance, and it is the ego's resistance to change that creates the pain. Most importantly, this is not the sacrificial death of the ego, but rather the sacrifice of its defenses, which resist all perceived threats to the ego-personality's existence. This is not the sacrificial death of the ego, but rather it's transformation into a dedicated instrument of the immortal soul in service to First Source and It's plan for the human species.

*Sensitivity.*

This is the measure of our ability to sense the information coming into our awareness. The more we remain aware, the more information we can gather about a situation or encounter.

*Test the Theory.*

Give the practice a fair hearing. In other words, if this practice and the ideas supporting it resonate with you—then practice it. Don't read it for the excitement of a new spiritual teaching or as entertainment and, at the same time continue to practice the social order as the ego-personality. This is a critical time in Earth's history. Why miss a golden opportunity to participate in a great event by being cynical or unduly skeptical?

*The Pain of the Moment.*

It's important to remember that when a particularly painful emotional encounter or situation occurs, we may be in too much pain to perform the practice of when-which-how. This is only natural and should be accepted

for what it is. Once the pain subsides, we can apply the virtues we feel will be the most helpful in that particular encounter.

*One suggestion.*

During these moments of pain, it is helpful to remain aware of what is happening and to observe the pain. This suggestion might seem strange, but by taking the psychological position of the observer, the pain is somehow reduced, or feels different than being completely absorbed in it.

*Tracking.*

Keeping a psycho-spiritual journal of our practice can be of great value for tracking our progress. As the months go by, we can look back on our experiences and how we handled the many different encounters of our practice.

Anyone truly sincere about emotional self-mastery and practicing when-which-how should take advantage of the tracking system offered at the Event Temples website. This tracking system, along with a more traditional notebook of experiences, will serve you well by providing a record of progress through the stages of your work. If keeping two sets of records is overwhelming to you, at least consider one of them. The advantage of the tracking system at Event Temples is that you are participating in this work with a global community of practitioners. As a result, you can monitor the progress of the world group and know that your contributions form a part of this world service.

### *Ups and Downs of Practice.*

Like everything else in life, when practicing when-which-how, we have our good days and our bad days. This is especially true when working with the emotions. Some days we may spend more time in a negative state than a positive one. This is why it is good to develop an attitude of neutrality in which we don't get too high over our successes or too low over our failures. By taking the middle path between these opposites, we avoid attachment to the outcome, or as noted earlier, looking for results. The attitude of accepting the good with the bad also helps to smooth out the emotional roller coaster we ride each day. At least now we have the tools and methods for learning to manage the ride.

An important point to remember is that we all have a center of emotional gravity. We may get buffeted around by various emotional situations during the course of a day or even a month, but our efforts to stay aligned with the virtues will help us greatly in restoring our emotional center of gravity.

# **JOURNAL NOTES ON THE VIRTUES**

The limits of the soul you could not discover, though traversing every path. Heraclitus.

## **A Selection of Meditation Journal Entries**

What follows is a selection of some of my journal entries on the six heart virtues. They are a result of my daily meditation practice. These recordings are offered as examples only, but if they provide helpful insights into the six virtues, that is good. The entries are in chronological order, but I have removed the specific dates (they cover the period of the spring of 2006). You may notice that the order of the virtues here is different than the order used in this guide. This is simply because I meditated on the virtues in a clockwise direction around the diagram produced in the paper “The Art of the Genuine: A Spiritual Imperative.” Except for the elimination of personal information and the correction of grammar and spelling, these entries reflect my thoughts and feelings at the time of their recording. Each paragraph represents all or part of that day’s comments.

## **Appreciation**

What came to mind most strongly was that appreciation is tied to awareness. And not just awareness, but a de-centered awareness. For only with this kind of awareness



does it seem possible to truly appreciate one's life and all the details that go to construct it.

Sensitivity is another factor in appreciation. How sensitive is the state of one's awareness? Insensitivity is a big issue in today's Western culture due to the materialistic and fragmented nature of our lives. So, sensitivity plays a role in the depth or quality of our appreciation for life. If we are physically oriented, we will appreciate the physical things of the world. If we have developed a feeling for life, our appreciation will expand to include heart-felt knowledge and memories that deepen our appreciation further.

When I feel appreciation it is due to the sense of connectivity to life and all its beauty. This must be regarded as spiritual.

Thoughts were muddled today. I became aware that I didn't want to get stuck in the purely mental approach to contemplating "appreciation," but wanted to feel it also. This may be important to recognize because it suggests that the "intelligence" of appreciation was impacting my consciousness.

### **Humility**

The initial pain of being humbled is actually a liberation from the tyranny of the ego-personality and the initial humiliation is a letting go of egoism and a liberation of one's attitudes into a new freedom of balanced relationship with others and the world.

Humility is the heart knowledge of knowing how and where one fits into the world of the soul.

Humility is a brake on egoism.

Humility feels like a relaxation into a true knowledge of one's place in the scheme of things. It is the surrendering of a distorted, illusory image of the "form of one's life" in relation to everything else. The surrender of a specific ego structure allows an adjustment of consciousness that is in alignment with the plan of the soul.

Today I seemed to be more with humility than thinking about it. Being with humility is a humbling experience.

Humility is not being more or less than one is. Thus, we can say that the effort to be humble is an effort to be oneself without any masks or images. Humility is to be the soul from moment-to-moment. Whether one is doing the dishes or giving a lecture, it is still the same self which is present throughout.

Just as the bodies of cosmic space are positioned in balanced relation with each other, we are in a state of humility when we are in balanced relationship with others and ourselves. Harmony of the spheres might apply to humility.

## **Valor**

My first thought of valor was related to being brave enough to stand up for what one believes.

Today I thought about valor in the sense of fairness and justice. If valor is standing up to injustice in defense of the

virtues of the heart, then justice must be reflected upon. I thought of a universal sense of fairness. It seems to me, that this sense of fairness generally transcends language and culture to some extent, except in the most restricted views of religion.

Valor is paradoxical in the sense that it is easily understood at the surface—standing up for what one believes. Thus, there are the secondary qualities of courage, bravery, heroism, etc. But, the deeper issue for me is, “How do I know that my convictions are more justified than someone else’s? Is the Christian right or the Muslim? Is science more justified than religion in defining reality? Is the state more justified in establishing the rules of reality than the individual? Is one person more valorous than another when it comes to defending one’s beliefs? Who is the most justified?

At some point valor must be turned toward one’s self as reason brings deeper understanding and lesser truths are replaced by more complete truths. If people hold to “truths” that reason and understanding prove to be incomplete (even false), then they are doing themselves an injustice.

The big question remains: How do we know that the strength of our convictions (valor) is just? It seems to me that the foundation and basis of valor must be a constant monitoring of one’s beliefs about morals and ethics, fairness and equanimity. The origin of such measures is a bit of a mystery. Do they stem from the energetic heart, which in turn generates them from the soul, which receives them directly from First Source via Source Intelligence? I believe this is true, but why do I believe it? This belief

gives me valor, but how did this belief enter my mind and heart?

If I begin to form doubts about my religious beliefs, but cannot face such thoughts without tremendous guilt and fear, I am not practicing valor. But when I can face these internal changes (produced by reason and understanding) and acknowledge my transformation, then I am practicing valor.

### **Compassion**

The first thing that struck me was that I wasn't feeling compassion, but simply thinking about it. This alarmed me at first, but then I realized that our daily lives are flooded with scenes of human distress to the point that one becomes numb to all of it. I was thinking of compassion in terms of the mass of humanity and could not connect.

When I feel compassion, it is most often the result of recognizing that a given situation exists because of a failure to communicate, a failure to understand, a failure of strength of commitment to understand another person's or group's situation. The complications born from ignorance are cause for feeling compassion and sorrow over the human situation.

I associated compassion with the loss of innocence in a child. An infant comes into the world with the opportunity for a new life and a compassion born of sorrow rises up in the knowledge that this newborn soul will rapidly be overtaken by the ignorance and prejudice of its parents, society, and culture, despite everyone's best intentions.

Compassion is the desire to relieve the suffering of others. In this sense, I noted that my life has been expressed compassionately through education. By this I mean that I have always identified strongly with the idea of bringing light to others through my writing or talks, or counsel. Thus, my sense of compassion is based on a subjective plane and not so much on the physical.

Compassion is reaching out in order to improve a condition by relieving needless suffering. Suffering here means anything that prevents the light of the soul and spirit from entering into the life of any individual. It seems to me that this can be expressed in various ways. It depends on the talents and desire of each individual.

### **Understanding**

Understanding is interesting. For me it seems to be the most obvious of the virtues (or maybe the only one) that bridges the heart and mind. For, there are definitely at least two forms of understanding. One is understanding that  $1+1=2$  or understanding the meaning of a word. The second is understanding how someone “feels” about a situation or condition. This latter definition is the heart connection, while the former is the mind connection.

Understanding is also more dimensional than knowledge. I can have knowledge of something and yet not understand it, but I cannot have understanding of something without knowing (having knowledge) about it.

Understanding has depth and levels when applied to information and knowledge. In turn, the conclusions drawn

from each level of understanding are relative truths. Truth is absolute relative to its own level, but ever changing as new knowledge and new understanding create truth that is more accurate relative to the previous “truth” or conclusion. The question is, “What drives the desire to seek more accurate information and knowledge?” This, I believe, is the heart or soul.

To begin to understand another person we must have knowledge about the person. As we gain more information, we can begin to understand that person better. Despite this knowledge, understanding cannot move forward without our ability to move beyond the framework of our own “position” as an individual. This is the ego-personality position. We cannot be objective if we are not able to decentralize our sense of self. Consequently, our understanding will be limited and likely distorted. This means that our conclusions or truth about “the other” will be incomplete or even prejudiced without the heart, because it is the nature of the heart to be in contact with the “other.”

What does it mean to have knowledge as opposed to having understanding? Is “I know” the same as “I understand”?

So, we can think in the head and/or think in the heart. However, thinking is not sensing. Sensing is related to consciousness, but we don’t necessarily have to be conscious in order to sense. However, I believe sensing with full attention is a powerful mode of awareness. It is the secret of creativity and management of life experience. The question is, where should our attention be located

when we are sensing? Should it be in the head or in the heart?

## **Forgiveness**

The most obvious thing to me about forgiveness is that it is related to time—more specifically, to the past. When we are unable or unwilling to forgive, it means that we are stuck in the past, we are trapped and imprisoned by the past. Anything which prevents us from living in the present is a detriment to our experience and growth as humans.

It is obvious that we can make little progress with the other virtues if we cannot escape from our past. The ego-personality is time-bound, but the soul transcends time. Thus, the energetic heart within which the soul exists is also associated with timelessness. Therefore, forgiveness is key to accessing the other virtues, because it frees us from the slavery of time.

What is the factor that makes forgiveness possible? Part of it is the willingness to let go of the circumstances and injustices which we believe have been done to us (whether true or not).

If one is living from the heart, practicing the art of the genuine, then why would it be necessary to forgive anyone? This implies that I have blamed someone or some group for wronging or harming me. Is it, in turn, “wrong” to recognize those who have caused one harm? No, as long as we do not hold onto that sense of being harmed. It’s the attachment to hurt, the self-pity which needlessly prolongs

suffering. Just as we have been harmed and caused to suffer, our attachment to this condition results in our desire to penalize, to punish, to blame whoever or whatever has caused this. We want them to suffer also.

Forgiveness neutralizes this desire for revenge. What about those who want justice done, so to speak? This involves the laws governing society and goes beyond one's personal capacity for forgiveness. Forgiveness is more of a subjective attitude, a state of mind rather than a specific gesture. Forgiveness is ongoing. It recognizes wrongdoing, but does not dwell on it, nor seek to prolong the guilt associated with it as a "punishment" to the wrongdoer. This applies equally to one's own feelings of wrongdoing and sense of guilt.



## **GRATITUDE AND AN INVITATION TO PRACTICE**

This is addressed to you, the practitioner, the one who lives on the border between your higher counterpart, the soul, and your more familiar counterpart, the ego. Prior to your birth as the practitioner-self, we, the six virtues, were powerless to bring wholeness to your life. But your decision to learn the ways of the heart is greatly appreciated. Therefore, as a team, we thank you for helping us to help you. And for those of you, who are unsure of the thoughts and feelings presented here, please accept the following words as if you are practitioners of when-which-how.

I am Valor. Practitioner, before you were born my shadow presence, fear, accompanied your ego everywhere. Fear liked to masquerade as the coward or the bully—the loyal guardians of your ego. When the intense light of understanding blazed into your awareness, you realized how fear was impeding your natural inclination toward emotional self-mastery. Your awakening as practitioner has allowed me to enter your consciousness, giving you the strength and courage to face the truth of your situation and to seek a new path.

I am Understanding. Your desire to grasp the nature of your life, your relationships, and your world without the filter of your ego-personality, has brought me into your presence. The light that I bring can only truly shine when the mask of ego does not filter out my rays. I cast the light of spiritual wisdom. It will guide you with that loving

understanding that radiates from the heart's intelligence. None of this would have been possible without the help of my virtuous companion, valor.

I am Compassion. My entrance into your life is the result of your ability to feel, to think, and to live beyond the protective borders of your ego-personality. Whenever you discover that your ego has built a new defensive wall to block my entrance, do not answer by destroying what the ego cannot help but build. Call on me, and build instead. Construct an open doorway in that wall, so the light of my compassion can stream into your ego's world. My presence allows you to understand and then to forgive, thus teaching your ego that you are not the enemy, but the practitioner. You are the one who establishes harmony by allowing the walls of sovereignty to remain in place while constructing openings that allow community with all who come your way.

I am Forgiveness. I have come into your life because of your willingness to break free of your ego's desire for retribution. The guiding light of understanding and the mercy of compassion free me to free you. I unlock the shackles of those events that keep you a prisoner of the past, and which never allow you to live in the sacred moment that transcends time.

I am Humility. I have yearned to offer you the gift of my presence, but the ego has always blocked my entry with its walls of fear. It is very difficult for me to enter your awareness without the help of my virtuous friends. I am not welcome in the life you share with the ego. Whenever I try to enter your field on my own, in the absence of my virtuous companions, you only feel my

distortion—humiliation, and you never receive my gift, the knowledge of your true self. I unburden you. I lighten your load. I allow you to surrender into my comforting arms. You can kick off your shoes and rest your tired feet, knowing that you don't have to play the games demanded by your ego. There is no one for whom you must play a role. You can finally be your self, your beautiful, unique self because you know in your heart that you are exactly who you are meant to be from instant to instant.

I am Appreciation. Before you made the effort to discover my true nature, your concept of appreciation was rooted in what the world provided you, but now your appreciation has shifted to what you provide the world, and that is the gift of we six virtues. My purpose is to bring you the joy that comes from your full realization of the magnificence, beauty, and wonder of the multi-realities of First Source. I am born into your world by your desire to see all life in a new light, the light of loving appreciation.

*We Need Each Other.*

Finally, for the consideration of those unsure of the ideas presented here and also for the encouragement and continued dedication of the practitioners of this important work, we declare that our function is to serve humanity—to serve you—if you will allow us. If you sincerely turn to us for the purpose of eliminating fear, hatred, prejudice, and suffering, you will be supported fully by our presence in your life. We can do great things together if you will only make the choice to join with us and allow our entry into your world.

We need you in order to fulfill our function in the multiverse and you need us so that you can fulfill your destiny as a species. Your world is in crisis and that means you have a tremendous opportunity to take a quantum leap into a new era of human living. We will soon enter a time of increased light which will give birth to a renaissance in the arts and sciences. But for that to happen with a reduced amount of unnecessary turmoil and suffering, we need individuals who are willing to train themselves in the ways of our virtuous energies—the ways of the energetic heart. We offer you aid and ask nothing in return except your willingness to live in a new way—to live from the heart.

THE END